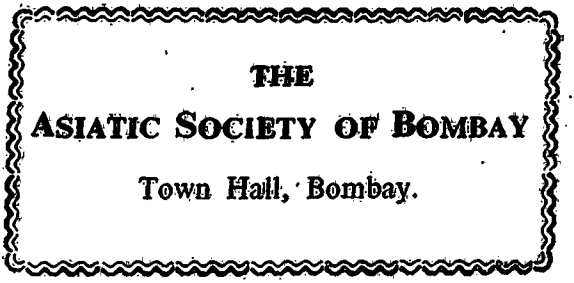
00042862



Digitized with financial assistance from

Government of Maharashtra

on 30 January, 2020

THE

Lansdowne MS

(No. 851)

OF

Chaucer's Canterbury Tales.

EDITED BY

FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL.

42862
dl

LL.n7

1884

00042862

GROUP A. FRAGMENT I.

§ 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE.

LANSDOWNE MS. 851.

[Note: after very many final o, e, f, g, k, r, s, t, there is a stroke or a tag. The number is so great, sometimes 6 or 7 in 1 line, that I am obliged to disregard all.]

Incipit prologus fabular*um* Cantuar*iensium*. [leaf 2]

WHan þat Aprille wyþe his schoures soote.
þe drought of Marche haþe p*er*ced to þe roote.
And baþes euery veyne in suche lycoure.
Of whiche v*er*tue engender is þe floure.
Whan ʒephirus eke w*ith* his swete breþe.
Inspired haþe in euery holte *and* hethe.
The tendre croppes *and* þe ʒonge sonne.
Haþe in þe Ramme his half cours ronne.
And Smal foules maken melodye.
þat slepen al nyht wiþ open. yhe.
So prikkeþ hem nature in her corages.
Than longen folke to gone one pilgrimages.
And palmeres for to seeke straungere strondes.
To ferne halowes couþe in sundre londes.
And specialy from euery schyres ende.
Of Ingelonde to Canterburi þei wende
The holy blisful Martir for to seke
That hem haþ holpen whan þei were seke
It be-fel þan in þat sesoñe vpon a daie
In Suthewerke att þe tabard as .I. laie
Redi to wende on my pilgremage.
To Canterburie wiþ ful deuoute Corage.
At nyhte was come in-to þat hostellerie
Wol Nyne and twente on a companye
Of sondre folke be auenture yfalle
In felauschipe *and* Pilgrimes were þei alle
To-warde Canterburi þat wolde ride

The Chambres *and* stables weren wyde 28
And wele weren esede at þe beste
An schortly whan þe soñ was to reste -
So had .I. spoken *with* hem euerychone
þat .I. was of her felawschep auone 32
And maade forwarde erly for to rise
To take owre waie þare as .I. ȝowe deuise
Bot naþeles while .I. haue time *and* space.
Er þat .I. forþer in þis tale pace. 36
Me þenkeþ it accordant to resōne
To tell ȝowe alle þe condicioñe
Of iche of hem so as it semed me
And whiche þei were *and* of whate degre 40
And eke in whatte araie þat þei were inne
And att a knyhte þan wold .I. furst be-ginne.
A Knyght *þere* was *and* þat a worþi manne [leaf 2, back]
That fro þe time þat he first be-ganne 44
To ryden owte he loued cheualrie
Treuþe *and* honoure fredome *and* curtesie
ffful worþi was he in his lordes werre
And þar-to had he riden no man so ferre 48
As wele in Cristendom as in heyþennesse
And euere honoured for his worþinesse.
Att Alisander he was whān it was wonne
ffful oft time he had þe borde be-gonne 52
Aboue al nacions in Pruce
In Lettowe had he reysed *and* in Ruce
No Cristeneman so oft of his degre
In Gernade att þe sege eke had he be 56
Of Algezire and riden had in Belmarye
Att Leyes was he and att Satilye
Whan þei were wonne. and in þe grete see
Att mony a noble Arme had he bee 60
Att Mortel Bal[illegible] had he be fiftene
And fow[illegible] feiþe att Tr[illegible]messene.
In lis [illegible] [illegible]leyne his foo

This ilke worþi knyhte hade bene also
Some tim wiþe þe lorde of Palatye
Aȝeine anoþer heiþen in Turkye
And euer more he had a souereine prise
And þoughe þat he was worþi he was wise
And of his porte as meke as is a maide
He neuer ȝit no velany seide
In al his life til no maner wyght
He was a verrey perfite gentil knyht
ffor to tel ȝowe of his araye
His hors was goode bot he was nouhte gaye
Off ffustion he worede a Gepoñ
Aff be-smoterde wiþ his haburgen.
ffor he was late come fro his viage
And went for to done his Pilgrimage
Wiþ hime þare was his sonne a ȝonge swiere
A louyer *and* a lusti bachellere
Wiþ lokkes crulle as þei were leide in presse
Of .xx. ȝeres of age he was .I. gesse.
Of his stature he was of euen lengeþe
And wonderly deliuer. *and* grete of strenkeþe
And he had be sume time in cheualrie [leaf 3]
In fflandres in Artoys and in Pykardie
And borne him wele as of so litel space
In hope to stonden in his lady grace
Embrowded was he as it were a mede
Al ful of frissche flowres white *and* rede
Singeinge he was or flowteinge al þe daie
He was al so fresche as is þe moneþ of maie.
Schort was his goune *with* sleues longe *and* wide
Wele couþe he sitte on an horse *and* faire ride
He couþe songes make *and* wele endite
Iuste and eke daunce *and* wele purtreie *and* write
So hote he loued þat be nyghter tale
He slepete no more þan doþe þe nyhtegale
Corteis he was lowly *and* seruisable

And karf to-for his fader att þe table
A ȝoman had he and seruantes no moo·
Att þat time for him liste ride soo
And he was cladde in cote *and* hoode of grene
A scheef of pokoke arwes briht *and* kene
Vnder his belte he bare ful preftelie
Wele coupe he drese his takel ȝemonlie
His arwes drouped nouht wiþ feþeres lowe
And in his honde he bare a myhti bowe
A notte hede had he wiþ a broune visage
Of wodecraft wele coupe he al þe vsage
Vpon his arme he bare a gaie brasere
And be his side a swerde *and* a bokelere
And on þat oþere side a gaie daggere.
Herneyste wele *and* scharpe as þe pointe of a spere
A *christ*ofur on his breste of siluer schene.
An horne he bare þe bawdrik was of grene
A forster was he soþelye as .I. gesse.
¶ Thare was also a Nonne a Prioresse,
~~That of hir smyleynge was ful simple *and* coye~~
Her grettest oþe was bot be seint Loye.
And sche was cleped Madame Englentyne
ffull wele sche songe þe seruise deuine
Entuned in hir nose ful semely.
And frenche sche spake ful faire *and* fetisly
After þe scole att Stretford att Bowe
ffor frenche of Paris was to hire vnknowe
Att mete wele ytauhte was sche *with*-all [leaf 3, back]
Sche lete no morsel fro hir lippes fall
Ne wete hir fingeres in hir sauce depe
Wele coupe sche cary a morsel *and* wel kepe
þat no drope ne fel vpon hir breste
In curtesie was sette ful muchel hir leste
Hir ouere-lippe sche wyped so clene
That in hir coppe þer was no fat yinge sene
Of grece whan sche had dronken hir drawhte

fful semelye after hir' mete sche rawhte. 136
And sekerly sche was of grete disporte.
And ful plesant *and* ful amyable of porte
And peyned hir to counterfet chere
Of Courte and to be stalyche of Manere 140
And to be holden digne of reuerence
Bot for to speke of hire Conscience
Sche was so charitable *and* so pytous.
Sche wolde wepe ȝif þat sche sawe a mouse 144
Kauht in a trape if it ware dede or bledde
Of smale houndes had sche þat sche fedde
Wiþ rostede flesche or melke or wastel brede
Bot sore wepped sche if one of hem were dede. 148
Or if men smote it wiþ a ȝerde smart
And al was conscience and tendur herte
fful semely hir' wympul pinched was
Hire nose was streihte hei' yhen was grei as glas 152
Hire mouþe ful smal. *and* þere-to soft *and* rede
Bot sekurly sche had a faire forhede
It was al-moste a spanne brode .I. trowe
ffor hardel[illegible] was nouhte vnder growe 156
fful fetis was hir' [illegible] as .I. was war'
Of smale coral about hir harme sche bar'
A peire of Bedes gauded al wiþ grene
And þere-one honge a broche of golde ful schene 160
On whiche þare was firste wreten wiþ a crowned .A.
And After Amor vincit omnia.
¶ A noþer nonne wyþ hir' had sche
þat was hir Chapeleyne *and* prestes þre 164
A monke þere was a faire for þe maistre
An owte-rider þat loued venere
A manly man to bene an Abbot Able
fful mony a daynte hors hade he in stable 168
And whanne he rode men myht his bridele here [leaf 4]
Gyngelinge in a whistelinge wynde al so clere
And eke as lowde as doþe þe chapel belle

There as þis lorde was keper of þe selle
The rewle of seint Maure or of seint Beneyte
Be cause þat it was olde *and* somdele streyte
This ilke monke lete olde þinges pace
And helde after þe newe werde þe pace
He ȝaf nouht of þe text a pulled henne
þat seiþe þat hunteres beþe nouht holy menne
Ne that a monke whan he is recheles
Is likkened til a fische þat is waterles.
That is to ȝeie A monke oute of his cloistre
Bot þilke text held he nouht worþe an hoistre
And .I. seide his opinione was goode
Whatt scholde he stodie *and* make him selfe wode
Vpon a boke in cloister al-weie to powre
Or swynke wiþ his hondes *and* laboure
As Austine bite howe schal þe werld be serued
Latte Austine haue his swynke to him rese[r]ued
Thare-for he was a prikasoure a right
Grehoundes he had as swift as foules in flyht
Of Prikinge *and* of huntynge for þe hare.
Was al his lust for no cost wolde he spare
.I. seighe his sleues purfiled att þe honde
Wiþ Gryse *and* þat þe fynest of a londe
And for to festen þe hode vnder his chynne
He had of golde wrought a ful coriouse pinne
A loue knotte on þe gretter hende þere was
His hede was balled þat schone as any glas
And eke his face as he had be anoynte
He was a lorde ful fatte *and* in goode pointe.
His yhen stepe *and* rollinge in his hede
That stemed as a furneis of a lede
His botes souple his hors in grete astate
Nowe certeynely he was a faire prelate.
He nas nouht pale as a forpyned goste
A fatte swanne loued he best of any roste
His Palfrei was as broune as is a burye

¶ A frere þare was a wanton *and* murye.
A lymitur a ful solempne manne
In alł þe orderes foure is none þat canne.
So muche of daliance *and* faire langage [leaf 4, back]
He had maade ful mony a mariage.
Of ȝonge wemmen att his owen cost
Vn-to his order he was a nobel post
fful wele be-loued *and* famulier was he.
With frankeleyns ouer al in his contre.
And wiþ worþe wemmen of þe toune
ffor he had power of confessione
As seide him selfe more þan a curate
ffor [of] his order he was licenciate
fful swetely herde he confessiōn
And plesant was his absoluciōn.
He was an hesy man to ȝef penānce
Ther as he wiste to haue a goode petānce
ffor vn-to a poure order for to ȝeue
Is singne þat a man is wel yschriue
ffor if he ȝaf he dorst make avaunt
He wist þat a man was repentaunt
ffor mony a man so harde is of his herte
He maie nouht wepe al þouhe he sore smerte
There-for in stede of wepeynge *and* preyeres
Men mote ȝiue siluer to þe poure freres
His tepet was ay farset ful of knyues
And þinnes for to ȝeue faire wyues
And certeinli he had a mery note
Wele couþe he singen *and* pleine oń a rote
Of ȝeddinges he bare witterli þe pris
His neke white was as þe floure delis
Ther-to he was also stronge as a champioune
He knewe þe tauernes wele in euery towne.
And euerych hosteler or a tapestere
Better þan a laȝar or a Begger
ffor vn-to suche a worþi man as he

Accorded nouht as be his faculte
To haue wiþ suche seke lazerz acquayntance
It is nouht honest it maie nouht avaunce
ffor to dele wiþ suche poraile
Bot al wiþ riche *and* seller of vitaile
And ouere al þare as profet schold arise
Curteise he was *and* lowly of seruyse
þer nas no man noghwere so vertuous
He was þe best begger in his hous
[. . . . . , . . .
. . . . . : . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
ffor þouhe a widowe had nouht a scho [leaf 5]
So plesande was his in principio.
3it wolde he haue a ferþinge ar he wente
His purchas was wel better þan his rent
And rage he couþe riht as it were a whelpe
In louedaies þare couþe he muchel helpe
ffor þere he was not liche a cloistrere
Wiþ a þrede-bare cope as a pouer scolere
Bot he was lyke a Maistre or a Pope
Of dowble worstede was his semy-cope
þat rounde as a belt out þe presse
Somwhat he lisped for his wantonesse
To make his yngelische swete vpon his tonge
And in his harpeinge whan he had songe
His yhen twynkeled in his heued ariht
As doþe þe sterres in þe froste nyht
This worþe Limetour was cleped Huberd
¶ A marchant was þere with a forked berde
In motteley. *and* hye on hors he satte
Vpon his heued a fflaundrisshe beuere hatte
His botes clasped faire *and* fetislye
His resons he spake ful solemplye
Scheweynge alwey þencres of his wynynge
He wolde þe se were keppede for any þinge
Be-twyx Middelburgh. *and* Orewelle

Wele coupe he in eschaunge scheldes selle
This worpi man ful wel his wit be-sette
Thare wist no white pat he was in dette
So estately was he of his Gouernance
Wip his Bargeynes *and* wip his cheuisance
ffor sope he was a worpi man wip all
Bot sothely to seine .I. note howe men him call
¶ A clerke pere was of Oxenforde also
pat vnto Logique had longe ygo
As lene was his hors as was a rake
And he was nouht riht fat .I. vndertake
Bot loked holwhe and per-to soburly
fful predebare was his ouer courteby
ffor he had geten him no benefice
Ne was so werdly to haue office
ffor him was leuer haue att his bed hede
Twenty bokes cladde in blak *and* rede.
Of Aristotle *and* his philo[so]phi [leaf 5, back]
pan Robes Riche or Phepel or gay Sautry
Bot al by pat he was a Philosophre
3it had he bot litel golde in Cophre
Bot al pat he myht on his frendes hente
On bokes *and* on lerenynge he it spente
And besily gan for po sowles preye
Of hem pat 3af him where-wip for to scoleye
Of studye toke he most cure *and* moste hede
Not a worde more spak he pan was nede
And pat was seide in forme *and* reuerence
And schorte *and* whike *and* ful of hihe sentence
Sownynge in morall vertue was his speche
And gladely wolde he leren. *and* gladly teche
A Seriant of pe lawe war' *and* wyse
pat often had bene att pe paruise
pat was also ful riche of excellence
Discrete he was *and* of grete reuerence
Him semed swyche his wordes weren so wyse

Iustice he was ful often in assise
Be Patent *and* be pleine *com*missioun
ffor his science *and* his hihe renoun
Of fees *and* robes had he manyone
So grete a purchasour was nowhere none
Al was fe symple to him in effecte
His purchasinge miht nouht be enfecte
No-wher so besy a man as he þare nas
And ȝitte he semed bisier þan he was
In termes had he cas *and* domes all
þat fro þe time of Kynge Will*iam* were fall
Thare-to he couþe endite *and* make a þinge
There couþe no whight pinche att his writeinge
And eu*ery* statut couþe he pleine be rote
He rode Rode bot homely in Medle cote
Gerde wiþ a seint of silke withe w*ith* barres smale
Of his aray tel .I. no longer tale
¶ A frankelein was in his companye
White was his berde as is þe dayse
Of his complexion he was sangwyne
Wele loued he be þe morwe a soppe in wyne
To leuen in delit euer was his wonne
ffor he was Opiournes owne sonne
That helde opinione þat pleine delite [leaf 6]
Was verrey felicite p*er*fite
An howse-halder *and* þat a grete was he
Seint Iulian he was in his countre
His brede his ale was alwey after one
A better envined man was neuer none
Wiþ owte bakemete was neuer his howse
Of ffissche of flessche *and* þat so plentiuouse
It snewide in his house of mete *and* drinke
Of al Deyntes þat men couþe þenke
After þe sondri sesons of þe ȝere
So chaunged he his mete *and* his soper
fful many a fat *par*triche had he in Mewe

And mony a breme *and* mony a luce in stewe
Woo was his coke bot his sauce were
Punyant *and* scharpe *and* redy al his gere
His table dormant in his hall alweie
Stode redy couered al þe longe deie.
Att Sessions *þere* was he lorde *and* sire
ffful oft time he was knight of þe schire
An Anelas *and* a gisper al of silke
Honge att his gerdel white as morne melke
A Schirrif had he bene *and* a comptoure
Was nowher suche a worþi vavisoure.
An Haberdassher and a Carpentere
A webbe a dyere. *and* a tapecere
And þei were cloþed all in o liuere
Of a solempne *and* a grete ffraternite
ffful frische *and* newe hire gere a-pyked was
Her'e knyues ware chaped nouht wiþ bras
Bot al wiþ siluer wrowht ful clene *and* wele
Here girdeles *and* her pouches euerydele
Wele semed iche of hem a faire burgeise
To sitten in a ȝelde hall on þe hihe dese
Euerych for þe wisdom þat he kanne
Was schapely for to bene an Alderman
ffor catel had þei ynowhe *and* rente
And eke here wyves it wolde wele assente
And elles certein þei were to blame
It is ful faire to be cleped *ma dame*
And gone to vigiles al to-fore
And haue a mantil ryaliche ybore
¶ A Cooke þei had wiþ hem for þe nones [leaf 6, back]
To Boile þe Chikenes wiþ þe mery bones
And pouder Marchant tarte *and* Galingale
Wele couþe he knowe a drawht of londen ale
He couþe roste *and* sethe *and* broile *and* frye
Maken Mortreux *and* wele bake a pye
Bot grete harme was it as it þouht me

þat on his schinne a mormal had he
ffor blankemangere þat maade he wiþ þe beste
¶ A Schipman was þere wonnynge fer be weste
ffor owht .I. wote he was of dertemouþe
He rode vpon a rounse as he couþe
In a goune of foldeynge to þe kne
A dagger hongeynge on a lace had he
Abowte his neke vnder his Arme downe
þe Hote somere had made his hiew al browne
An certeinly he was a goode felawe.
fful mony a drauht of wyne had he draw
ffrome Burdeux-warde whan þe chapman slepe
Of nice conscience toke he no kepe
If þat he fauhte *and* had þe hiher honde
Be water he sent him home be euery londe
Bot of his crafte to rekken wele his tides
His stremes *and* his dawnger him be-sides
His herberwe. *and* his mone. *and* his lodemannage
Thare was none swyche fro Hulle to Cartage
Hardy he was *and* wyse to vndertake
Wiþ mony a tempest had his berde be schake
He knewe al þe hauenes as þei were
ffro Gotelonde to þe cape Defynystre
And euery Cryke in Breteine *and* in Spayne
His barge y-cleped was þe Maudeleyne
¶ Wiþ vs þere was a doctur of Phesike
In al þis werlde ne was þere none him like
To speke of Phisike *and* of Surgerie
ffor he was grounded in Astronomye
He kepet his pacient a ful grete dele
In houres be his Magike naturele
Wele couþe he fortune þe Ascendent
Of his ymages for his pacient
He knewe þe cause of euer-yche maladie
Were it of colde of hote or moiste or drie
And where-of engenderde it. *and* of what hũnere

He was a verrey *per*fite practisere
The cause .I.-knewe *and* of his harme þe rote
A-none he ȝaue seke man his bote
fful redy had he his Apotecaries
To sende him drugges *and* his letuaries
ffor iche of hem made oþer for to winne
Here ffrindeschipe nas not newe to begynne
Wele knewe he þe olde Escalapius
And discorides *and* eke Rusus
Olde ypocras Haly *and* Galiene
Serapion. Razie *and* Auizene
Auerois Damascien *and* Constantine
Bernard *and* Gatisdene. *and* Gilbertine
Of his Dyete Mesurable was he
ffor it was of no super*fluite*
Bot of grete norsschinge *and* digestible
His study was bot litel on þe bible
In sangwyne *and* in pers he clad was all
Lyned wiþ Tafeta and wiþ sendall
And ȝit he was bot esy of dispense
He keped þat he wanne in' þe pestilense
ffor gold in phesik is accordial
There-fore he loued golde in speciale
¶ A goode wif þer was of be-side baþe
Bot sche was sumdele defe *and* þat was skaþe
Of cloþe makeynge sche had swyche an haunte
Sche passed hem of. Ipres *and* of Gaunte
In all þe parische wif ne was þere none
That to þe offringe to-forne hir scholde gone
And if þere dide certeyne wroþe was sche
þat sche was owte of al charite
Hire couerchiefs ful fine were of grounde
.I. dorste swere þei weiden ten pounde
þat on a sonday weren on hire hede
Hire hosen weren of fine scarlet rede
ffull streite tyed. and schoes ful moiste and newe

Bolde was hir' face and faire *and* rede of hewe
Sche was a worþe wo*m*man al hir lyue
Hosbondes att þe cherche dore sche had five.
Wiþ owten oþer company in hir 3ouþe
Bot þere-of nedeþ nouht to speke as nouþe
An þries had sche be att Ierusalem. [leaf 7, back]
Sche had passed many a strange streme
Att Rome sche had bene att Boloyne
In Galis att seinte Iame *and* att Coloyngne
Sche couþe muche on wandrynge be þe weie
Gate toþede was sche sothely for to seye
Vpon an Amblere ful esely sche satte
Y-wymplede wele *and* one hir heued an hatte
As brode as is a bokelere or elles a targe
A fotmantil a-boute hir hippes large
And on hir feet a paire of spores scharpe
In felauschepe wele couþe sche lawghe *and* carpe
Of remedies of loue sche couþe p*ar*chaunce
ffor sche couthe of þat arte þe colde daunce
¶ A goode man was þere of religione
And was a poure p*er*sone of a toune
Bot riche he was of holy þouht *and* werke
He was also a lernede man *and* a clerke
þat crist gospell trewly wolde preche
His p*ar*isshins deuowtely wolde he teche
Benygne he was *and* wonder diligente
And in aduersite ful paciente
And suche he was preuede oft sithes
fful loþe were him to cursen for his tiþes
Bot raþer wolde he 3euen owte of doute
Vnto his pouer perisshens aboute
Of his Offringe *and* of his substance
He couþe in litel þinge haue suffisance
Wyde was his p*ar*isshe and houses fer in sondere
Bot he ne left nowtht for reyne ne for þondere
In sekenes nor in Meschef to visite

The fferrest in his parische moste *and* lite
Vpon his fete *and* in his honde a staf
This noble ensample to his schepe he ȝaf
Þat ferst he wrouhte *and* afterwarde he tawht
Owte of þe gospel he þo wordes kauht
And þis figure eke he hadded þer-to
Þat if gold rust what schold yren do
ffor if a preste be foule of whome we truste
No wonder is a lewde man to ruste
And schame it is if a preste take kepe
A schiten schiperd to se *and* a cleyne schepe
Wel owhte a preste ensample for to ȝiue [leaf 8]
Be his clennes how his schepe scholde liue
He sett nouht his benefice to hire
And lete his schepe acumbrede in þe mire
And Ran to Londen vn-to seint poules
To seke him a chauntery to singe for sowles
Or wiþ a breþerhede to be wiþ-holde
Bot dwelte att home *and* keped wel his folde
So þat þe wolfe ne maade it nouhte myscarie
He was a scheparde *and* nouȝt a mercenarie
And þouhe he holy were *and* vertuous
He was nouht to sinful men dispitous
Ne of his speche daungerouse ne digne
Bot in his techinge discrete *and* benigne
To drawen folke to heuen be feirenesse
Be goode ensample þis was his besinesse
Bot it were any *per*sone obstinate
What so he were of hihe or lowe a-state
Him wolde he snybbe sharpely for þe nones
A better preste .I trowe þat nowhere none es
He waited after no pompe *and* reuerence.
Ne maked him a spised conscience
Bot cristes lore *and* his aposteles twelue
He tauht bot first he folowed in him selue
¶ Wiþ him þare was a plouheman was his broþer

þat had lad of donge ful mony a foþere
And a trew swinker *and* a goode was he
Lyueinge in pes *and* in p*er*fit charite
God loued he best wiþ al his herte
Att al times þouhe he gamed or smerte
And þan his neighebore riht as him selue
He wolde þresshe *and* þer-to dike *and* delue
ffor cristes sake for euery pouer white
With owte hire if it leie in his miht
His tyþes paide he ful faire *and* wele
Bothe of his proper swynke *and* of his catel
In a tabarde he rode vpon a mere
¶ Ther was al so a reue *and* a Mellere
A sompnou*r and* pardonere al so
A manciple *and* my selfe þ*er*e nare no mo
The Meller was a stowte carle for þe nones
fful big he was of braune *and* eke of bones.
That p*r*oued wele for ouer al þer he cam [leaf 8, back]
Att wrastelinge he wolde haue awaie þe ra*m*me
He was schort-scholdred a þike gnarre
There was no dore þat he ne wolde heue of harre
Or breke it wiþ a renynge w*ith* his hede
His berd as any sowe or fox was rede
And þ*er*-to brode as þouhe it were a spade
Vpon þe cop riht of his nose he had
A werte *and* þ*er*e on stode a tofte of heres
Rede as þe bresteles of a sowes Eres
His nos-þrelles blake were *and* wide
A swerde *and* a bokeler bar he be his side
His mouþe as grete was as grete furneys
He was a Iangeler *and* a goliardeys
And þat was most of sinne *and* of Harlotries
Wele couþe he stele corne *and* tolle þries
And ȝitte he had a thombe of golde pardo
A white cote *and* a blewe hode wered he
A Baggepipe wele couþe he blawe *and* sowne

And þere wiþ alle he browht vs owte of towne
A gentille Maunciple was þere of a temple
Of whiche acatours miht take goode ensample
ffor to be wise in byynge of vitaile
ffor weþer þat he paiede or toke be taile
Algate he waited so in his achate
þat he was al be-forne *and* in goode astate
Now es nouht þat of god a ful faire grace.
þat suche a lewde mannes witt schal pace
þe wisdom of an hepe of lerned men
Of Maistres had he mo þan þries ten
þat weren of lawe expert *and* curious
Of wiche þer was a doseine in þat hous
Worþe to be stewardes of rent *and* londe
Of any lordes þat is in yngelonde
To make him leue be his propre goode
In honoure detteles bot if he were wode
Or lyue as scarsely as him lust desire
And able for to helpen al a schire
In any cas þat myht fal or happe
And 3it þis manciple sette here alþere cappe
¶ The reue was a sclender Colerik man
His berde was schaue as nyhe as euere he can.
His here was be his eres rounde y-schorne [leaf 9]
His tope was dokked like a preste to forne
fful longe was [his] legges *and* ful lene
.I.-like a staf þar was no calfe y-sene
Wele couþe he kepe a gernar or a bynne
Ther was non auditoure couþe on him wynne
Wele wiste he be drowhte *and* be þe reyne
The 3eldeynge of his sede *and* of his greyne
His lordes schepe his nete his dayre
His swyne his hors his store *and* his pultre
Was holy in þis reues gouernynge
And be his couenant 3af þe rekenynge
Sen þat his lord was twenty 3ere of age

Þare couþe no man bringe him in arerage
Thare nas Baillif ne herde ne oþere hyne
That he ne knewe his sleyht *and* his Couyne
Thei were adrad of him as of þe deþe
His wonynge was ful faire vpon an heþe
Wiþ grene trees schadowed was his place
He couþe better þan his lorde purchace
fful riche he was astored priuely
His lord he couþe wele plese subtily
To ȝiue *and* leune him of his owen goode
And haue a þonke *and* ȝit a cote *and* an hoode
In ȝowþe he had lerned a good mistere
He was a wel goode wriht a carpentere
This satt vpon a fol goode stot
That was a pomely greye *and* hihte Scot
A longe surcote of peers vpon he hadde
And be his side he bare a rusti blade
Of Norþefolk was þis reue whiche .I. tell
Be-siden a towne men clepen it baldeswell
Tukked he was as is a frere abowte
And euere he rode hinderest of owre Rowte
¶ A Somynour was þer wiþ vs in þat place
þat had a firy Cherubynnes face
ffor sausefleme he was with yhen narowe
Als hote he was *and* licherous as a sparowe
Wiþ scalled browes blake *and* a pilled berde
Of his vesage childerne were aferde
Ther nas whike-siluer litarge or bremstone
Boras orsure ne oyle of tartre none
Ne oyment þat wolde clense *and* bite [leaf 9, back]
That him myht helpe of his whelkes white
Nere of þe knobbes sittinge in his chekes
Wele loued he garlike onyons *and* ȝite lekes
And for to drinke stronge wyne rede as blode
Than wold he speke *and* crie as he ware wode
And whan þat he wele drongen had þe wyne

þan wold he speke no worde bot latyne.
A fewe terems had he two or thre
That he had lerned owte of sum decre
No wonder is he herd it al þe daie
And eke ȝe knowen it wele howe þat a Iaie
Kan clepe watt as wele as kan þe pope
Bot who so coupe in oþer þinge him grope
þan had he spent al his philosophie
Ay Questio quid Iuris wold he crie
He was a gentil harlot *and* a kynde
A better felawe scholde men nouht finde
He wolde suffer for a whart of wyne
A good felaw to haue his concubyne
A twelmoupe *and* excuse him att fulle
And *pr*iuely eke a finche coupe he pulle
And. if he fonde owhere a goode felawe
He wolde techen him to haue none awe
In suche cas of þe Archedekenes Curse
Bot if [a] mannes soule were in his purse
ffor in his purs he scholde punyschede be
The purse es þe Archedekenes helȝ seide he
Bot wele .I. wote he lyede riht in dede
Of curssinge owht yche gilty man him drede
ffor curs wil sle riht as a-soyleynge sauyþe
And also war him of a significauit
In dawng*e*re had he att his owen gise
The ȝonge girles of þe diocise
And knewe her consel *and* what was al here rede
A garland had he sett vpon his hede
As grete as it were for an Alestake
A bokelere had he made him of a kake
¶ Wiþe him þ*e*re rode a gentil p*ar*donere
Of Rouncyual his frende *and* his comper
þat streyhte was co*m*me fro þe courte of Rome
fful loude he songe come hider loue to me.
This Somenoure bare to him a stif burdoune

[leaf 10]

Was neuer trompe of halfe so grete a soune
This *par*donere had here as ȝalowe as wax.
Bot smothe it henge as doþ a strike of flax.
Bi ounces henge his lokkes þat he hadde
And *per* wiþ he his scholdres ouer spradde
But þinne it leie be culpones one *and* one
But hode for Iolyte wered he none
ffor it was trussed vp in his walet
Him þouht he rode al of þe newe get
Discheuele saue his cape he rode al bare
Suche glayringe yhen had he as it were an hare
A vernicle had he sewe vpon his cape
His walet [lay] to forne him in his lappe
Bret ful of *par*don comen from Rome al hote
A voyce he had also smale as it were a gote
No berde had he ne neuer schuld haue
As smoþe it was as it were late schaue
.I. trowe he were a geldinge or a mare
Bot of his craft fro Berwike in to ware
Ne was þere suche anoþer *par*donere
ffor in his male he hadde a pylowbere
Whiche that he seide was owre lady veyle
He seide he had a gobet of þe seile
That seint Peter had whan þat he wente
Vpon þe see tiłł ihesu crist him hente
He had a croyce of Laton ful of stones
And in a glasse he hadde Pygges bones
Bot wiþe þes relikes whan þat he fonde
A pouer person dwellynge vpon londe
Vppon a daie he gat him more moneye
Than þat þe *per*son gatte in þe Monethes tweye
And þus wiþ feyned flaterynge *and* Iapes
He Maade þe *per*sone *and* þe peple his Apes
Bot trewly to tellen att þe laste
He was in þe cherche a noble ecclesiaste
Wele couþe he rede a lesson or a story

Bot alþer best he songe a offertory
fful wele he wist whan þat songe was songe
He moste preche *and* wele affile his tonge
To wynne siluer as he wele cowde
Þere-fore he songe so merely *and* loude
¶ Nowe haue .I. tolde 3owe soþely in a clause (leaf 10, back)
The estate. þe arraye. þe Nombre *and* eke þe cause
Whi þat assembled was þis companye
In Suthewerke att þis gentil Hosterie
þat hiht þe taberd fast be þe belle
Bot nowe is time to 3owe for to telle
Howe þat we beren vs þat ilke nyhte
Whan we were in þat Osterye alyhte
And after wil .I. tell of owre viage
And al þe remenant of owre pilgrenage
Bot first .I. preye 3owe of 3oure curtesie
That 3e ne ret it nowht my velenye
Thoughe þat .I. pleinly speke in þis matier
To telle 3owe her wordes *and* eke her chere
Ne þouhe .I. speke here wordes *pro*purly
ffor þis 3e knowen as wele as .I.
Who so sal tellen a tale after a mān
He mote reherce as nyhe as euer he cān
Eue*r*yche a worde if it be in his charge
Al speke he neuer so rudeli *and* so large.
Or elles he most tel his tale vntrewe
Or feyne þinges. or fynde wordes Newe
He may nouht spare al-þouhe he ware his broþer
He mot also wele seie o worde as a-nother
Criste spak him self ful brode in holy writte
And wele 3e wote no velany is itte
Eke plato seiþe who so kan him rede
The wordes most be Cosin to þe dede
¶ Also .I. preie 3owe for-3if it me
Al haue .I. not sett folke in her degre
Here in þis tale as þat þei scholde stonde

My witte is schorte ȝe maie wele vnderstonde
Grete chere maade owre oste vs eu*e*rychone
And to þe soper sett he vs anone
He serued vs wiþe vitailles att þe beste
Stronge was þe wyne *and* wele drinke vs leste
A semely man owre ost was wiþ att
ffor to bene a marschal in a lordes hatt
A large man he was wiþ eyȝen stepe
A fairer burgeis is none none in chepe
Bolde of his speche *and* wyse *and* wele y-tawht
And of manhode him lakked riht nouht
Eke þ*e*re-to he was riht a mery man [leaf 11]
And after soper pleyȝen he be-gan
And spak of Mirþe amonge o þ*e*re þinges
Whan þat we had maade owre rekenynges
And seide þus Now lordeynges trewly
ȝe bene to me welcome riht hertly
ffor be my trouþe if þat .I. schal notte lye
.I. sawe nouht þis ȝere so mery a companye
Att ones in þis herburhe as is nowe
ffayne wolde .I: done ȝowe merþe wist .I. howe
And of a merþe .I. am riht nowe be-þouhte
To done ȝowe ese *and* it schal cost nowhte
¶ ȝe gone to Canterbury god ȝowe spede
The blisful Martir white ȝow ȝowre mede
And wele .I. wote as ȝe gone be þe weye
Sche schapen ȝowe to talen *and* to pleye
ffor trewly comforþe *and* merþe is none
To riden be þe waie dom as any stone
And þer-for wil .I. maken ȝowe disporte
As .I. seide arst *and* do ȝow som comforte
And if ȝowe likeþ att be on assente
ffor to stonden at My Iuggemente
And for to werken as .I. schal ȝowe seie
To morwen whan we riden be þe weie
Nowe be Mi fader sow[l]e þat is dede

But ȝe bue Merie .I. ȝeue ȝowe Mine hede
Holde vpe ȝowre hondes wiþ-owte more speche
¶ Owre conseⁱⁱ was not longe for to seche
Vs þouhte it was not worþe to make it wise
And graunted him wiþ-oute more avise
And bad him seie his verdite as him liste
Lordynges *quod* he now herkeneþ for þe beste
Bot tak it nowhte .I. *pray* ȝowe in disdeyne
This is þe pointe to speke schort *and* pleine
That iche of ȝowe to schort wiþ owre weie
In þis viage schal tel tales tweye
To Kanterbury warde .I. mene it so
And homward he schal tellen o*þer*e two
Of aventures whilome þat hane be-fallⁱⁱ
And whiche of ȝowe þat bereþ him best of allⁱⁱ
That is to seyne þat telleþ in þis cas
Tales of best sentence. *and* most solas
Schallⁱⁱ haue a soper at owre aller cost [leaf 11, back]
Here in þis place sittinge be þe post
Whan þat we comen a-geine fro Canturbury
And for to make ȝow þe more mery
.I. wil my seluen goodely wiþ ȝow ride
Riht att myne oune coste *and* be ȝowre gide
And who so wil my Iuggement⁹ wiþ-seie
Schal paie al þat we spende be þe weie
And if ȝe vouche saue þat it be so
Tel me anone wiþ-owten wordes mo
And .I. wil erly schape me þere-fore
¶ This þinge was *gra*unted *and* owre oþes swore
With ful glad hert *and* praieyng him also
þat he wolde vouche saue for to do so
And þat he wolde be owre gouernowre
And of owre tales Iugge *and* reporture
And sett a soper att a serteine pris
And we wil rewled bene att his deuis
In hihe *and* in lowhe *and* þus be one assent

We bene accorded to þe Iuggement
And þer-vpon þe wyne was fett anone
We dronken *and* to rest went ichone
Wiþ-owten any longer' taryinge
An morwe whan þe daie gan to springe
Vp roos owre ost *and* was owre alder cok
And gederd vs to-geder in a floke
And forþe we reden a litel mor þan pas
Vnto [þe] wateringe of seint Thomas
And þere owre oste gan his hors areste
And seide lordes herkeneþ if ȝowe leste
ȝe wote ȝowre forward. *and* .I. it ȝowe recorde
If þat Euynsonge. *and* Morwsonge accorde
Lat se nowe who schal tel þe first tale
As euer mot .I. drinke wine or ale
Who so be rebel to my Iuggement
Schal paie for al·þat be þe waie is spent
Now draweþ cut or þat we ferþer wynne
Whiche þat haþe þe schortest schal be-ginne
¶ Sir' knyht q*uo*d he my maister *and* my lorde
Now draweþ Cut for þat is Myne accorde
Co*mm*eþ nere q*uo*d he Mi ladi prioresse
And ȝe sire clerke lat be ȝowre schamefastnesse
Ne studiethe nowht leie honde to euery man [leaf 12]
Anone to drawe euery wight began
And schortly for to tellen riht as it was
Were it be aventure or sort or cas
The soþe is þis þe Cut fel on þe knyht
Of whiche ful bliþe *and* glad was euery whit
And tellen he most his tale as it was resõn
Bi forward *and* be composiciõn.
As ȝe haue herde what nedeþ wordes moo
And whan þis good man sawhe þat it was so
As he þat wise was *and* obedient
To kepen his forward be his fre assent
He seide seþþe þat .I. schal beginne þe game

What welcome be þe cut one goddes name
Now lat vs ride *and* herkeneþ what .I. seie
And wiþ þat worde we riden forþe owre weie
And he be-gan wiþ riht a mery chere
His tale anone *and* seide as ȝe mai here
[No gap in the MS.]

[Notes referred to in the references to the Knightes Tale.]

[1. Boccaccio calls *Teseo* 'duca di Atene' (I. 13), and says that his father *Egeo* was 're d'Atene' (I. 6).
2. '— in giubba iscalza' (*en deshabille*). III. 8.
3. 'Co' biondi crini avvolti alla sua testa.' III. 10.
4. The whole debate in prison is an imitation of the longer debate (in the *Teseide*) when they meet in the grove.
5. 'Love cannot be given up as thou deemest: and he loves but little, who ceases loving in order to keep a promise.' V. 51.
6. Comp. *Troilus and Cressida*, IV. st. 136:
— For some men sain, that God seeth all beforne,
. . . . . .
Than mote it fallen, though men had it sworne,
That purveiaunce hath seene beforne to be—
7. Videvi storie per tutto dipinte
. . . . . .
E'l grand Ercole vide tra costoro. VII. 62.
8. 'Richezza' is Porter in the *Teseide*, VII. 64: the *Roman de la Rose* is followed here.
9. See *H. of Fame*, 198; and Albricus Philosophus in Staveren's *Auctores Mythographi*, 1702, vol. ii. p. 903.
10. Boccaccio makes the temple lighted by altar-fires, kindled from the flames of plundered cities. VII. 35.
11. 'Amyddes of the' place sat 'la virtù tristissima.' VII. 34.
12. 'La *Morte* armata vide e lo stupore.' VII. 35.
13. 'Le navi bellatrici.' VII. 37. Neither Boccaccio, nor yet his prototype Statius, speaks of any ships as *burnt*, but merely as *trophies*.
14. The points marked VI. 21, 22, are taken from the description of 'Agamemnone.'
15. The points here are from the descriptions of 'Ippodamo' (VI. 29), of 'Peleo' (VI. 17, 16), and of 'Peritoo' (VI. 41).
16. Compare also stanza 42. 'con vittime *piatose*.'
17. 'Io il diletto, e tu n' abbia l' onore.' VII. 27.
18. Arcita (in Boccaccio) comes from the quarter of 'Euro' (VII. 114): Palemone comes 'Dall' altra parte' (VII. 118). No mention is made by Boccaccio of their banners being *red* and *white*.
19. Bocc. makes many of them slain: 'Artifilio,' 'Cornisso' (VIII. 15), 'Rifeo,' 'Arione' (36), 'Narizio' (39), and others, and describes their funerals (X. 4—8).
20. Boccaccio makes only a general mention of the care and comfort bestowed on the wounded (X. 10).
21. 'But [of the wounded] Arcita alone could not be cured; so much was he shattered inwardly by his fall' (X. 11).
22. Point from Boccaccio, differently turned (X. 13).
23. Points from Boccaccio, differently turned (X. 13, 12).
24. 'I await the last kisses from thee, oh dear spouse' (X. 65).
25. . . . 'egli è gentile' (X. 62).
26. '*Niun* potea racconsolar Teseo,' says Boccaccio (XI. 9), *not* excepting 'Egeo;' but he immediately goes on to speak of the old man's attempt to console 'Palemone,' and the rest,—without the slightest success (XI. 11).—(See also XI. 33.)
27. 'Non men dolente, Emilia pur piangea,
. . . . . .
I circostanti più pianger facea' (XI. 31).
28. Right and left of Palemone (XI. 40).
29. In the hands of the noblest of the Greeks (XI. 37).]

Iam *que* domos patrias scitice *post* aspe*r*a gentis
Prelia Laurigero, &c. Incipit fabula Milit*is*

Boccaccio's Teseide.

: means translated,
| general likeness,
¦ slight likeness.

Whilome was as holde stories tellen vs
There was a Duke* þat hight Theseus [* See p. 25, *n.* 1.]
Of Athenes he was lorde *and* gouernoure
And in his time suche a conqueroure
That gretter was none vndere þe sonne
fful Mony a riche Contre had he wonne.
What wiþ wisdome and his Chiualrie
He conquered al þe Regne of ffemynye.
That whilom cleped was Scithia
And wedded þe qwene ypolita
An browht hire home wiþe him in to his contre
Wiþ muche glorie *and* grete solempnite
And eke hire ȝonge sustere Emelye
And þus wiþ victori *and* melodie
Latt .I. þis nobul Duc to Athenes ride
And all his hoste in aremes be his side
And certes if it nere to longe to here
.I. wold haue told fully þe manere
How wonnen was þe Reigne of ffemynye
By Theus *and* be his Chiualrrye
And of þe grete Bataile for þe nones
Be-twixen Athenes *and* Amaȝones
And how asseged was ypolyta [leaf 12, back]
The faire hardie quene of Scithia
And of þe fest þat was att hir weldeynge
And of þe tempest at hire home comynge.
Bot al þat þinge .I. mot at nowe for-bere
.I. haue gode wote a large felde to ere
And weike bene þe Oxen in my plouhe
The remenant of þe tale is longe y-nouhe
I. wil not letten eke none of þis route

Books I-II.

Latt euery felawe tel his tale aboute — *Teseide*
And latt see nowe who schal þe soper winne
And þere .I. laft .I. wil.aʒeine beginne
¶ This Duc of whome .I. make mensioune — II. 2-5.
Whan he was comen al-most to þe toune
In all his wele *and* his most pride
He was ware as he kast his yhe a side
Where þat þere kneled in þe hihe waie
A company of ladyes twey. *and* twaie
Iche after oþer cladde in cloþes blake
Bot suche a crye *and* suche a woo þei make
That in þis werlde is creature lyueynge
þat herd suche a noþer weymentynge
And of þis crie þei nolde neuer stenten — II. 25. (before the car.)
Till þei þe reynes of his bridel henten
What folke bene ʒe þat att myne home comynge — II. 23.
Perturbe so my fest with cryinge
Quod Theus haue ʒe so grete envie.
Of myne honour þat þus compleigne *and* crie
Or who haþ ʒow mysboden or offended
And telleþ me if it maie bene amended
And whi þat ʒe bene cloþed þus in blake
The eldest lady of hem al spake
Whan sche had swowned wiþ a dedely chere
That it was rewþe for to seen *and* here
¶ Sche seide lorde to whome ffortune haþ ʒiuen
Victorie *and* as a conqueroure to lyuen
Nat greueþ vs ʒowre honoure *and* ʒowre glorie — II. 27.
Bot we beseke ʒowe of socoure *and* of mercye
And haue merci on owre woo *and* owre distrisse
Some drope of Pyte þurgh þi gentillisse
Vpon vs wricchede wemmen latt ʒe fall
ffor certes lorde þare is none of vs all — II. 28.
That sche ne haþe b[e]ne a doches or a quene
Nowe bene we Cayteues as it is wele sene
Thonked be fortune *and* hire false whele

[leaf 18]

		Teseide
Thate none astate ensureþ for to bene wele		
Now certes lorde to abide 3owre presence		
Here in þis temple of goddes clemence	928	(mentioned in II. 17.)
We haue b[e]ne waiteinge al þis fourtenyhte		
Helpe vs lorde seþ it is in þi myhte		
.I. wriche whiche þat wepeþ *and* weyleþ þus		
Was whilom wif of Kinge Cappaneus	932	II. 28.
That starfe att Thebes cursed be þat dai		
And alle we þat bene in þis array		
And Maken att̄ þis lamentacioune		
We losten al oure hosbondes att þat towne.	936	
While þat a sege þare abowte laie		
And 3it nowe þe olde Creon weilowaie		II. 31.
þat lord is nowe of Thebes Citee		II. 30.
ffulfilled of ire *and* iniquite	940	II. 31.
He for dispite *and* for his Tirannye		
To done the dede bodies velanye		
Of att̄ oure lordes whiche þat han̄ be slawe		
Haþe al þe bodies on an hepe ydrawe	944	
And wil not suffre hem be none assent		II. 31.
Neyþere to be beride neiþer be to brent		
Bot makeþ houndes ete hem in despite		
And wiþ þat word *with*-oute more respite	948	II. 33.
þei ffellen groffe *and* criden pytouslye		
Haue on vs wrecched we*m*men sum Mercie		
And latt owre sorwe sinken in þin herte		
¶ This gentil Duc downe fro his courser sterte	952	
With hert pitous whan he herd hem speke		
Him þouhte þat his herte wolde breke		
Whan he sawhe hem so pitee *and* so mate		II. 36-9.
That whilome weren of so grete astate	956	
And in his armes he hem al vp hent		
And hem comforteþ in ful goode entent		
And swore his hoþe as he was trewe knyht		
He wolde done so ferforþelie his miht	960	
Vppon þe Tirant Creon hem al wreke		

That al þe peple of grece scholde speke — *Teseide.*
How creon was of Thoseus seruede
As he þat had his deþe ful wele deseruede
And riht anone wiþ-owten more abode — II. 50.
His Baner he displeide *and* forþe rode.
To þebes-warde *and* al his hoste be-side [leaf 18, back]
No nerre Athenes wolde he go ne ride — II. 49.
Ne take his ese fulli halfe a daie
Bot onward on his waie þat niht he laie
And sent a-none ypolita þe queene — II. 40-2.
And Emely hir ȝonge suster schene.
Vn to þe toune of Athenes to dwelle
And forþ he rideþ þer is no more to telle
¶ The reede Statue of Marce *with* spere *and* targe
So schineþ in his whigte baner large
That al þe felde gleteren vp on a doune
And by his baner borne is his pynoune
Of gold ful riche whiche was ybete
The Mynataure whiche þat he wanne in Crete
Thus riht þis Duc þus ride þide þis conqueroure
And in his host of cheuallerie þe floure
Til þat he cam to Thebes and a-liht
flaire in a felde þer as he þouht to fiht — II. 53-76.
Bot schortely for to speken of þis þinge
Wiþ Creon whiche þat was of Thebes kinge
He fawht *and* slowhe him manly as a knyht
In pleine Bateile *and* put þe folke to flyht
And be asseut he wan þe Cite after
And rent adowne boþe wall *and* sparre *and* rafter
And to þe ladies he restored a-ȝeine
The bones of þeire frendes þat were sleyne
To done þe obsequies as was þo þe gise
Bot it were al to longe for to do-vise — II. 80-1.
The grete clamor *and* þe weymentynge
þat þe ladies maade att þe berneynge
Of þe bodies *and* þe grete honoure

That Theus þe nobul conqueroure — *Teseide.*
Doþe to þe bodies whan þei from him went
Bot schortely to tellen is mynè entente
Whan þat þis worþi Duc þis Theseus — II. 71.
Haþe Creon sleine *and* wonne Thebes þus.
Stil in þat felde he toke al nyhte his rest
And dide wiþ al þe Countre riht as him lest
To ransake in þe caas of þe bodies dede — II. 86.
Hem for to strepe of herneis *and* of wede
The piloures deden þe besines *and* Cure
After þe bataile *and* þe discomfetoure
And so be-fel þat in þe caas þei founde [leaf 14] — II. 85.
Thorghe girt mony a greuous blody wounde
Two ȝonge knyhtes liggeynge .by *and* by.
Boþen in armes samen wrouht ful richely
Of whiche two Arcita hiht þe tone
And þat oþer knyhte hihte Palamone
Not fully whikke ne fulli dede þei were
Bot be her cote armures *and* by hire gere — II. 83.
The heraudes knew hem selfe in special
As þei þat weren of þe blode roial
Of Thebes *and* of sustren two yborne
Owte of þe caas peloures haþe hem torne
And haue hem caried softe vnto þe tente — II 87.
Of Theus *and* he ful sone hem sente — II. 89.
Tho Athenes to dwellen in prisone
Perpetuely hem nold nouht raunson
¶ And whan þis worþi Duc had þus ydone — II. 90-95.
He toke his hoste *and* home he rideþ anone
Wiþ Laurer Coroned as a conqueroure
And þere he leueþ in joy *and* in honoure
Terme of his lif what nedeþ wordes moo
And in a toure in Angwysse *and* in woo — III. 3.
Dwellen þis Palomon *and* eke Arcite
ffor euer more þer maie no golde hem qwyte
This passeþ ȝere be ȝere *and* daie be daie

Til it fel ones in a Morneinge of maie — *Teseide.*
þat Emelye þat fairer was to sene
Than is þe lylye vpo his stalke grene — 1036 — [See XII. 68.]
And fresscher þan þe maie wiþ floures newe
ffor wiþ þe rose coloure strofe hir hewe
.I. note whiche was feireste of hem two
Er it were daie as was hire wonne to do — 1040 — III. 10.
Sche was aresen and al redi diht
ffor Maij wil haue no sloggardye on nyght
The seson Prikkeþ euery gentil hert
And makeþ it owte of his slepe to sterte. — 1044
And siþen arise an done may obseruaunce
This Makeþ Emelye to haue remembrance
To done honoure to maie *and* for to rise
Icloþed was sche ffresche for to devise* [* See p. 25, n. 2.] 1048 — III. 8.
¶ Here ȝelowe here was browded in a tresse† [† See p. 25, n. 3.] — III. 10.
Be-hinde hire bake a ȝerde longe .I. gesse
And in þe Gardine att þe sonne vpriste [leaf 14, back] — III. 8-10.
Sche walked vpe *and* downe *and* as hir liste — 1052
Sche gedereþ flowres partie white *and* rede
To make a sotil garland for hire heuede — III. 10.
And as an Angel heuenyssly sche songe
¶ The grete toure þat was þo þike *and* stronge — 1056 — III. 11.
Whiche of þe Castel was þe chef dongeone
There as þe knyhtes weren in prison
Of whiche .I. tolde ȝowe *and* telle schaⁿ
Was euen Ioynant to þe Gardeine waⁿ — 1060
There as þis Emely had hire pleyinge
Brihte was þat sonne *and* clere in þat Morneynge
And Palamon þis woful prisonere — [*Arcita* si levo III. 11.]
As was his wonne be leue of his gaylere — 1064
Was resen *and* romed in a chambre an hihe
In whiche he aⁿ þe nobel Cite sihe
An eke þe Gardeine ful of braunches grene
Ther as þe frissche Emely þe schene — 1068
Was in hir walke *and* romede vpe *and* doune

This sorweful *pr*isonere þis Palamon — *Teseide.*
Goþe in his chambre romeynge to *and* froo
And to him selfe compleinynge of his woo 1072
þat he was borne ful oft seide alas
And so be-fel be aventure or cas
That þorghe a window þikke of mony a barre — III. 11.
Of yren grete *and* sware as any sparre 1076
He kest his Eyen vpon Emelya
And þere wiþ al he bleynte *and* criede A — . . . tutto stordito, Gridò, Omè ! III. 17.
As þouhe he stongen were vn to þe herte
And wiþ þat crie Arcite anone vp sterte 1080
And seide Cosine myne what eyleþ þe
þat ert so pale *and* dedely on to see
Whi cridest þou who haþ þe done offence
ffor goddes loue tak al in pacience 1084
Owre prisonynge for it maie none o*þer*e be
ffortune haþe ȝeue vs þis aduersite
Som wikked aspect or dispo*sicio*ne
Of Saturne be sum constillacione 1088
Haþe ȝeuen vs þis al-þowhe we had it sworne
So stode þe heuen whan þat we were borne
We most endure it þis is þe schorte *and* pleine
¶ This Palamon Ansewarde *and* seide a-gayne. 1092
Cosine for soþe of þis Opinione [leaf 15]
Thou hast a veine ymaginacione
This prisonment caused not me to crie
Bot .I. was hurte riht nowe þoruhe-oute myn eye 1096 | III. 16.
In to myne hert þat wil my bane be | III. 20.
The fairnesse of þat ladi þat .I. se
ȝonde in þe Gardeine Romeynge to *and* froo
Is cause of al my cryinge *and* woo 1100
.I. note where sche be wo*m*man or goddes
Bot venus is it soþeli as .I. ges — III. 14.
And *þer*ewiþal on knes downe he fylle
And seide venus if it be þi wille 1104
þou in þis Gardine þus to transfigure

Be-for me sorweful wriched creature — *Tescide.*
Owte of þis prison helpe þat we maie scape
And if so be my destanye be schape
Bi eterne werlde to dyȝen in prisōne
Of owre linage haue some compassiōne
þat is so lowe y-brouht be tirannye
¶ And wiþ þat worde Arcite gan aspie
Where þat þis ladi romede to *and* fro
And wiþ þat siht hire beaute hurte him so
That if palamon was wounded sore
Arcite is hurte as muche as he or more — III. 10-17. (reversing the order of the names.)
And wiþ a sike he seide Pitously
The frische bewte sleþe me sodeynly
Of hir þat romeþ in þat ȝonder place
And bot .I. haue hir merci *and* hir grace
That .I. maie seen hire att þe lest weie
.I. ne am bot dede þer nys no more to seie
This Palamon whan he þes wordes herde
Dispitusli he loked *and* and Answerde
Wheþer seistowe þou þis in ernest or in pleye
Naie q*uod* Arcite in ernest be my feye
God helpe me so me list fu yuel pleie
This Palamon gan knyte his browes tweie
Itt weere to þe q*uod* he no grete hono*ur** — [* See p. 25, n. 4.] — V. 43.
ffor to be false or for to be traito*ur*
To me þat am þi cosin *and* þi broþere
.I.-sworne ful depe *and* iche of vs to oþere
þat neuer for to diȝen in þe peyne
Til deþe haþe depa*r*te vs tweyne
Neyþer in loue to hinder oþer — [leaf 15, back]
Ne in none oþe*r*e case my leue broþer
Bot þat þou scholdest trewly forþer more
In eue*r*y case *and* .I. schal forþer þe þore
This was þine oþe *and* myne certeine
.I. wote riht wele þou darste it nouht wiþ-seine
Thus art þou of my counsel owte of dowte

And Nowe þou woldest falsely bene abowte — *Teseide.*
To loue my ladi whome .I. loue *and* se*r*ue
And eue*r* schal til þat myne hert sterue
Nowe certes false Arcite þou schalte not so
I loued hir first *and* tolde þe my woo
As to my Cosin *and* my bro*þ*er sworne
To fer*þ*er me as .I. haue tolde to forne
ffor whiche þou art bownden as a knyht
To helpe if it laie in þi myht
Or elles ert þou fals .I. dare wele seine
¶ This Arcite ful prowdeli spake a3eine
Thowe schalt q*uo*d he [be] ra*þ*er false þan .I.
Bot þowe ert false .I. tel þe witerly .
ffor p*ar*amoure .I. loued here first ar þoue
What wiltow seine þow wist it not 3it nowe
Whe*þ*er sche be a wo*m*man or a goddesse
Thine es affecione of holynesse
And myne is loue as to a creatur
ffor whiche .I. tolde þe myn aventur
As to my cosine *and* to my bro*þ*e*r*e sworne
¶ .I. pose þat þou louest had . hir to forne
Wost þowe nouht wele þe olde clerkes sawe
That who schal 3eue a louer any lawe . Quis lege*m* dat amantibu*s*
Loue is a gretter lawe be my panne
Than maie be 3eue to ani er*þ*eli manne
And þere positif lawe *and* swyche decree
Is broke al daie for loue in yche degree
A man most nedes loue maugrif his hede — [See V. 61.]
He maie not fli3en it þouhe he scholde be dede
Al be sche maide or wydow or elles wif
And eke it is nouht likely al þi lif — [See V. 45, 49.]
To stonde in hir grace na more schal .I.
ffor wele þou wost þi self verrely
That þou *and* .I. bene dampne to p*r*i*s*oñ
Perpetuely . vs geyne*þ* no Raunsoñ
We striuen as houndes for þe bone — [leaf 16]

They fouhten al daie *and* ȝit þeire parte was none — *Teseide.*
There come a kite whil þat þei were so wroþe
That bare awaie þe bone be-twex hem boþe
Ac þere-fore att þe kinges courte my broþer
Eche mon for him self *þere* is none oþer
Loue if þou list for .I. loue *and* ay schaff
And soþeli leue broþer þis is aff
Here in þis prison most we endure
And euerych of vs tak his aventure
¶ Grete was þe strif *and* longe be-twex hem tweie
If þat .I. had leiser for to seie
Bot to þis effecte it happened on a daye
To tellen it ȝow as schortly as .I. maye
A worthi Duc þat hiht. *Pe*rotheus — III. 47.
That felowe was vn-to Duc Theseus
Sen þilke daie þat þei weren childern lite
Was co*mm*en to Athenes his felawe to visite
And for to pleie as he was wont to do
ffor in þis werlde he louede no man so
And he loue him also as tendrely a-ȝeine
So wele þey loued as olde bokes seine
That whanne þat one was dede sothely to telf
His felaw went *and* sowht him downe in helf
Bot of þat stori leste me nouht to write
Duc *Pe*rotheus louede wel Arcite — III. 51-4
And him knowe att Thebes ȝere be ȝere
And ffinally. att request. *and* prayere
Of *Pe*rotheus wiþ-owten any Raunsoñ.
Duc Theseus him lete owte of prisoñ
ffrely to gone where þat him list ouer aff
In suche a gise as .I. ȝowe telle schaff
This was þe forward pleinly to endite
Be-twex Theseus *and* him Arcite
That if so were þat Arcite was fownde
Eu*er*e in his lif be daie or nyht or stownde
In any Contre of þis Theseus

And war cauht it was accorded þus
That wiþe a swerde he scholde lese his hede
Ther nas none oþere remedye ne rede
Bot takeþe his leue *and* homwarde he him spedde
Lat him be war his nek liþe to wedde
How grete a sorwe suffurþe nowe arcite [leaf 16, back]
The deþe he feleþ þoruhe his hert smite
He wepeþe he weyleþ *and* crieþ pitously
To slene him self he waiteþ priuely
He seide alas þat .I. was borne
Nowe is my prison werse þan be-forne
Nowe is me schape eternalie to dwelle
Nouht in purgatorie Bot in helle
Alas þat euer .I. knewe Perotheus
ffor elles had .I. dwelled wiþ Theseus
Ifetterd in his prison euer mo
Than had .I. bene in blisse *and* nowht in woo
Onely þe siht of hire whome þat .I. serue
Thouhe þat .I. neuere hir grace miht deserue
Wholde haue ysuffised riht .I.-nowhe for me
¶ O dere Cosine Palamon quod he
Thine is þe victorie of þis auenture
fful blisfully in prisōn mayght þou dure
In prisoñ sertes naye bot Paradise
Wele haþ fortune turned þe dise
That haþe þe siht of hire *and* .I. þe absence
ffor possible is seþþe þou hast hir presence
And art a kny[ght] a worþi and an able
That be som caas fortune is chaungeable
Thou maiste to þi desire somtime ateigne
Bot .I. þat am exiled *and* bareigne
Of al grace and in so grete dispeire
That þer nys erþe water fire ne ayre
Ne creature þat of hem Maked is
That may me helpe ne do me comford in þis
Wele owht .I. sterue In wanhope *and* distris

• *Teseide.*
• III. 64.

[Gen. resembl. See III. 76, &c.]

[. . . . . *line out : no gap in the MS.*] *Teseide.*

Alas why pleine men so in Comune
On purueance of god or of fortune
þat 3eueþe hem ful of in many a gise
Wele bet þan þei can hem self deuise
Som man desireþ for to haue richesse
þat cause is of his mordre or grete sekenesse
And som man wolde owte of his prison fayne
That in his house is of his meine sleyne.
Infinite harmes bene in þis matiere
We wote nowht what þinge we praien hiere
We faren as he þat dronken is as a mouse
A dronken man wote wele he haþe an house
Bot he note whiche þe riht waie is þedere [leaf 17]
And to a dronken man þe waie is sclepere
And certes in þis werlde so faren we
We seken fast after felicite.
Bot we gone wronge oft ful trewli
Thus maie we seine all *and* namelyche .I.
That wende *and* had a grete opinione
That if .I. myht scippe fro prisone
Than had .I. b[e]ne in Ioye *and* parfit hele
There nowe .I. am exiled fro my wele
Sen þat .I. may not sene 3owe Emelye • III. 75.
.I. am bot dede þer' nyse no remedie •
¶ Vpon þat opere side Palamon
Whan þat he wiste þat Arcite was agone
Suche sorwe he makeþ þat þe grete toure
Resouneþ of his 3ellinge *and* clamour
The pore fettres on his schinnes grete
Were of his bitter salte teres wete
Alas quod he Arcita Cosyn myne
Of al oure strif god wote þe fruyt is þine
Thow walkes now in Thebes att þi large
And of my woo þou 3euest litel charge
Thou maiste sinne þou hast wisdome *and* manhede

Assemble al þe folke of 3oure kinrede
And Maake a werre so scharpe on þis Cite
That be som auenture or sum trete
Thou maiste haue to lady *and* to wife
ffor whome þat .I. most nedes lese my life
ffor as be weie of Possibilite
Sethe þou art att þi large of *pr*ison fre
An art a lorde grete is þine avantage
More þan is myne þat steruеþe here in a cage
¶ ffor .I. mote wepe *and* waile wil þat .I. leue
With al þe wo þat *pr*ison maie me 3eue
Ande eke wiþe peine þat loue me 3eueth also
That dowbleþ al my turment *and* my wo
Thare-wiþe þe fire of Ielousie vp sterte
With-inne his breste *and* hente him be þe herte
So woodly þat he like was to be-holde
The box tree or þe asshen dede or colde.
¶ Than seide he O cruel goddes þat gouern
This werlde wiþ byndeinge of 3owre worde eterne
And wreten in þe table of Atthamaunt [leaf 17, back]
3owre p*ar*lement *and* 3owre eterne gr*a*unt
What is Mankinde More vn-to 3o holde
Than is þe schepe þat rowkeþ in þe folde
ffor sleine is man riht as anoþ*er*e beste
And duelleþe eke in p*r*ison and in areste
And haþe sekenesse *and* grete adu*er*site
And ofte time giltles p*ar*de
¶ What gouernance is in þis prescience
That giltles tormenteþ Innocence
And encreseþ þus al my penaunce
That man is bounde to his obseruau*n*ce
ffor goddes saake to letten of his wiłł
þere as a beste maie al his lust fulfiłł
And whan a beste is dede it haþe no peine
Bot after his deþe man moste wepe *and* pleyne.
Thouhe in þis werlde he haue care *and* woo

Wiþ-owten doute it maie stonden soo — *Teseide.*
The ansewere of þis lette .I. to dyuines
Bot wele .I. wote þat in þis werlde grete peine es
Alas .I. see a serpent or a þef
That mony a trewman haþ done meschief
Gone att his large *and* where him list maie turne
Bot .I. most be in prison þoruhe Saturne
An eke þoruhe Iuno Ialous *and* eke wode
That haþe destruyde nyhe al þe blode
Of Thebes wiþ his waste walles wide
And venus flieþ me on þat o*þe*re side
ffor Ialousie *and* fere of him Arcite — "paurosa gelosia" V. 2
¶ Nowe wil .I. stinte of Palamon a lite
And lat him in his prisone stille dwelle
And of Arcite forþe .I. will̃ 3owe telle
The somer passeþ *and* þe nihtes longe
Encreseth̃ dowble wise þe peynes stronge
Boþe of þe louere *and* þe prisonere
.I. note wiche haþe þe wofuller myster
ffor schortelye for to seine þis Palamon
Perpetuely is dampned to prison
In chynes *and* fettres to þe dede
And Arcit is ercilede vpon his hede
ffor euere more as oute of þat Cuntre
Ne neuere ne schal his lady see.
¶ 3owe louiers .I. aske þis questiõne [leaf 18]
Who haþ þe wers Arcite or Palamõne
The one maie se his lady. daie be daie
Bot in prison he most dwel alweie
The toþere where him liste Maie ride or goo
Bote sene his lady schal he neuer moo
Nowe demeþ as 3owe liste þat 3e canne
ffor .I. wil tel forþe as .I. be-ganne

[*No gap in the MS.*]

[*PART II. No gap in the MS.*]

Tescide.

¶ Whan þat Arcite to Thebes commen was
fful often adaie he swelte *and* seide alas
ffor seen his ladi ṣchal he neuer moo
And schortly to concluden al his woo
So muche sorwe had neuer creature
That is or schall whil þat þe werde mai dure
His slepe his mete his drinke is be-raft
þat lene he wex *and* drie as is a schaft
His yhe hollowe *and* grisely to be-holde
His hiew falowe *and* pale as asshe colde
And solitarie he was. *and* euer a lone
And weyleynge al þe nyht makinge his mone.
And if he herde songe or instrument
Than wolde he wepe he myht nouht be stent
So feble eke were his spretes and he lowe
And Chaungede so þat noman coupe knowe
His speche nor his voice þouhe men hit herde
And in his gere for al þe werlde he ferde
Not comly lyke to louers maledye
Of heres bot raþer like manye
Engenderd of humor malancolike
Be-forne his celle ffantastike
And scortly torned was al vp *and* downe
Bope Abite *and* disposicioune
Of him þis woful louer dame Arcite
¶ Wat schold .I. al daie of his wo endite
Whan he endured had a ȝere or two
This cruel torment *and* þis peine *and* woo
As Thebes in his Contre as .I. seide
Vpon a nyhte on slepe as he him leide.
Him þouht howe þat venged god Mercurie
Be-forne him stode *and* bad him to be merie
His slepi ȝerde in honde he bar vp riht
An hatte he werede vpon his heres briht

IV. 26, 27.
IV. 28.
IV. 27.
IV. 29.

Arraide was þis god as as he toke kepe — *Tesèide.*
As he was whan þat Argus toke his slepe
And seidē him þus to Athenes þow schalt wēnde [leaf 18, back]
Where is þe schapen of þi woo an ende. 1392
¶ And wiþ þat worde Arcite woke *and* stērte
Now trewli how sore þat me smerte
Quod he to Athenes riht nowe wil .I. fare
Ne for þe drede of deþe schal .I. nouht spare 1396
To se my lady þat .I. loue *and* serue
In hire presence .I. reche not to sterue
And wiþ þat worde he cauht a grete Mirroure
And sauhe þat chaunged was al his coloure 1400
And sauhe his vesage al in anoþer kinde
And riht anone it ran him in his mynde — IV. 38.
That seþ his face was so disfigurede
Of þe Maledy whiche he had endurede 1404
He myht wele if þat he bare him lowe
Leue in Athenes euer more vnknowe
An seen his lady wel ny day be daye
And riht anone he chaunged his Araye 1408
And clad him as poure laborere — *povęr valletto,* IV. 22.
An al alone saue onely o swiere — *umil garzone,* IV. 22.
That knewe his priuete *and* al his case — *povero valletto* IV. 40.
Whiche was disgised pouerly as he was 1412
To Athenes is gone þe next waye
And to þe courte he went vpon a daye
And att þe gate he proferd his seruyse
To drugge *and* drawe what so men wil deuise 1416
And schortly of þis mater for to seine
He fel in office wiþ a chamburleine
The whiche þat was dwellinge wiþ Emelye
ffor he was wise *and* sone couþe aspye 1420
ffor euery seruant whiche þat seruęþ here
Wele couþe he hewen wode *and* water bere
ffor he was ȝonge *and* myhti for þe nones
And þer-to he was stronge *and* briht of bones 1424

To done þat any whit him can devise		*Teseide.*
A 3ere or two he was in þis seruise		
Page of þe chambere of Emely þe briht		
And Philostrat he seide þat he hiht	1428	[*Penteo* IV. 3, &c.]
Bot halfe so wele be-loued a man as he		
Ne was þere neuer in Courte of his degre		
He was so gentil of condicioune		
That þoruhe-owte al þe courte was his renoune	1432	
Thei seide þat it were a charite	[leaf 19]	
That Theseus wolde en-haunse his degre		
And putten him in worschip-ful seruise		
There as he myht his vertue exercise	1436	
And þus wiþ-inne a while his name is spronge		IV. 60.
Boþe of his dede *and* his good tonge		
That Theseus haþe taken him so nere		
That of his chambre he made him a swiere	1440	
And 3aue him gold to mainteigne his degre		
And eke men brouht him oute of his contre		
ffro 3ere to 3ere so priuely his rente		
But onestly *and* sleyhtly. he it spente	1444	
þat noman wondred howe þat he it hadde		
And þrei 3ere in þis wise his lif he ladde		
And bare him so in pees *and* eke in werre		
There was no man þat Theseus hathe derre	1448	IV. 60.
And in þis blisse let .I. nowe Arcite		
And speke .I. wiht of Palamon a lite		
¶ In derkenes *and* horrible *and* stronge prisone		V. 1.
þis seuen 3ere haþe siten Palamone	1452	
ffor-pined whate for wo *and* for destresse		
Who feleþ double sore *and* heuinesse		V. 3.
Bot Palamon þat loue destreyneþ so		
That woode owte of his witte he goþ for wo	1456	
And eke þere-to he is a prisoner		
Perpetuelly not onely for a 3ere		
Who couþe rime in Englisshe propurly		
His martirdome for soþe it am not .I.	1460	

There-fore .I. passe al so lihtly as .I. maye. *Teseide.*
¶ It fel þat in þe seuent ȝere of maie
The þridde nyhte as holde bokes seine
That all þis story telleþ more pleine 1464
Were it be aventure or destanye
As whan a þinge is schape it schal bye
þat ſone after þe mydenyht Palamon V. 25-7.
Be helpinge of a frende brake prison 1468
And fleeth þe Cite fast as hé mai goo
ffor he had gif his Gailer drinke soo V. 24.
Of a clarre maade of a certein wyne
Wiþ nercotiks *and* opie of Thebes fyne 1472
That al þat nyht þouhe þat men wold him schake
The Gaillere slepe he myht nouht awake.
And þus he flieþ as fast as euere he maie [leaf 19, back]
The nyht was schort *and* fast be þe daie 1476
That nedes coste he most him self hiden
And til a groue faste fast þere be-siden V. 33.
Wiþ dredful fote þan stalkeþ Palamon
ffor schort þis was his opinion 1480
That in þat groue he wolde him hide aldaie
And in þe nyht þan wolde he take his waie
To Thebes-warde his frendes for to praye
On Theseus to helpe him to werreie 1484
Or schortly he wolde lese his lif
Ore wynnen Emely to his louely wif
This is þefecte *and* his entente pleine
¶ Now whiles turne we to Arcite aȝeine 1488
That litel wiste how nihe þat was his care
Til þat fortone hadde cauht him in his snare
The besi larke messagiere of daie
Saluep in hir songe þe morwe greie 1492
And firy phebus riseþ vp so bright
þat al þe orient lawheþ of þe sight
And wiþ his streme drieþ in þe greues
The siluer dropes hangeinge on þe leues 1496

And Arcita þat in þe courte roial — *Teseide.*
Wiþ Theseus his swier principal
Is resen *and* lokeþ on þe mery daie
And for to done his obseruance to maie
Remembringe on þe pointe of his desire
He on his coursere stertynge as fire
Is reden to þe feldes him to pleie
Owte of þe Court were it a meyle or tweye
And to þe groue of whiche as [I] ȝow tolde
Be aventur his weie he gan to holde
To Maken him a garlonde of þe greues | IV. 62.
Were it of wodebinde or of heiþorne leues
And loude he songe a-ȝein þe sonne schene
Maie wiþ al þi floures *and* þi grene
Welcom be þou feire fresche Maie
I. hop þat .I. sume grene get maie
And from his coursur wiþ a lusti herte
In to þe groue ful hastely he sterte
And in a paþe he romeþ vp *and* doune
Thar as be aventur of þis Palamon
Was in a busshe þat no man miht him see [leaf 20]
ffor sore aferde of his deþe was he
No þinge knewe he þat it was Arcite
God wote he wolde haue trowed it ful lite
Bot soþe is seide gon siþe many ȝeres
That felde haþe yȝen. *and* wode haþe eres
It [is] ful faire a man to bere him euen
ffor aldaie meteþ men att vn-sette steuen
fful litel wote arcite of his felawe
þat was so nyhe to herken of his sawe
ffor in þe busche he sitteþ now ful stiłł
Whan þat Arcite had romede al his fiłł
And songen al þe roundel lustely
In to a stody he fel sodanly
As done þes louers in hir queynte geres
Nowe in þe crope nowe downe in þe breres

Nowe vp nowe downe as a boket in a welle — *Teseide.*
Riht as þe fridaie soþeli for to telle
Nowe it schineþe nowe it reineþ fast
Riht so gan geri venus ouer cast — *1536*
The hertes of hir folke riht as hir daie
Is gerful riht so chaungeþ sche arraie
Seld is þe fridaie al þe weke ylike
¶ Whan þat Arcite had songe he gan to sike — *1540*
And set him doune wiþ-owten any more
Alas quod he þat daie þat .I. was bore
Howe longe Iuno þoruhe þi crueltee
Wiltow werien Thebes þe Citee — 1544
Alas brouht it is to confusione — See IV. 13, 14.
The blode Roial of Cadine *and* Amphione
Of Cadinus whiche þat was þe first man
That Thebes bulet or first þe toune be-gan — 1548
And of þe Cite first was Crouned kinge
Of his linage am .I. *and* of his ospringe
Be verrei ligne as of þe stok Roialle. — See IV. 31.
And Now .I. am so caitif *and* so þralle. — 1552
That he þat is my mortal ennemye — See IV. 85.
.I. serue him as his swier pouerelye
And 3it doþe me Iuno wel more schame
ffor .I. dar .I. not be-knowe myne owne name — 1556
Bot þere as .I. was wonte hiht Arcite — See IV. 84.
Now .hiht. Philostrate not worþe a myte — [*Penteo*, IV. 84.]
Allas þou fel mars Allas þou Iuno. — See IV. 17.
Thus haþe 3ower ire owre lignage al for-do. — 1560
Saue only me *and* wreched palamon — [leaf 20, back]
That Theseus Martireþ in prison
And ouer al þis to slene me vtterly — IV. 82.
Loue haþ faire his darte so brinyngly — 1564
Istiked þoruhe my trewe careful herte
That schapen was my deþ arst þan my scherte
3e slene me wiþe 3owere yhen Emelye
The be þe cause were-for þat .I. die — 1568

Of al þe remenan of myne oþere care — *Teseide.*
Ne sette .I. nouht þe mountanȝe of a tare
So þat .I. couþe do ouhte to ȝowre plesañce
And wiþ þat worde he fel doune in a trañce — 1572
A longe tim *and* he afterwarde vpstert
¶ This Palamon þat þouht þat þoruhe his herte
He felde a colde swerde sodeinly glide
ffore ire he whoke no lenger wolde he bide — 1576
And whan þat he had herde Arcites tale
As he were wode wiþe face dede *and* palo
He stert him vpe oute of þe boskes þikke
And seide Arcite. false treitoure wikke — 1580
Nowe art þow hent þat louest mi ladie so
ffor whome þat .I. haue al þis peine *and* woo
And art my blode *and* to my consel sworne
As .I. ful oft haue tolde þe here be-forne — 1584
And hast be-japed here Duc Theseus
And falsely haste þou chaunged. þi name þus
.I. wil be dede or elles þou schalt diȝe
Thou schalt nouht loue my ladie Emelye — 1588
Bot .I. will louere onely. *and* no mo
ffor .I. am Palamon þi mortal fo
And þoughe þat .I. no wepen haue *in þis place*.
Bot owte of prisoun am asterte be grace — *1592*
.I. drede nouht þat ouþer þu schal diȝe — *See V. 54.*
Or þou ne schat not louen Emelye
Ches whiche þou wilte or þou schalt nouht asterte
¶ This Arcite wiþ ful dispitouse herte — 1596
Whan he him knewe *and* had his tale herde
As fers a[s] lion he pulled owte a swerde
And seid þus be god þat sitteþ aboue
Nere it were þat þou art seke *and* woode for loue — 1600
And eke þat þou no wepen hast in þis place
Thou scholdest neuer oute of þis groue pace.
That þou ne scholdest deiȝen of myne honde — [leaf 21]
ffor .I. defie þe suyrte *and* þe bonde * [* See p. 25, n. 5.] — 1604 | V. 61.

Whiche þat þou seist .I. haue maade to þe
Whatt verreie foole þinke wele þat loue is fre
And .I. wil loue hir Maugre al þi myht
Bot for al so muche as þou ert a worþi knyht
And wilneste to darreine hir be Bataile
Haue here my trowþe to morne wil .I. nouht faile
Wiþouten weteingo of any oþere wight
That here .I. wil be founden as a knyht
And bringen herneys riht. ynowhe for þe
And chese þe beste *and* leue þe werst for me
And mete *and* drinke þis nyht wil .I. bringe
.Y.-nowghe for þe *and* cloþes for þi bedynge
And. if so be þat þou my lady wynne
And sle me in þis wode þare .I. am inne
þou maiste wele haue my lady as for me
This Palamon answerd .I. graunt it þe
And þus þei bene departid til on morwe
Whan iche of hem had leide his feiþe to borwe
Occupiede owte of al charite
¶ O regne þat wolde no felawe haue wiþ þe
fful soþe is seide þat loue ne lordeschipe
Wil not his þonkes haue no felauschipe
We finde þat of arcite *and* of Palamone
Arcite is Reden anone in to þe toune
And on þe morwe ar it were daies liht
fful *priuely* tuo herneys haþe he diht
Boþe suffisant *and* mete to darreine
The Bataile in þe felde be-tuex hem tweyne
And on his hors alone as he was borne
He carieþ al his herneyce him be-forne
And in þe groue att þe time *and* place y-sette
þis Arcite *and* Palamon ben mette
To chaungen gan þe coloure in her face
Riht as þe hunters in þe Reigne of Trace
þat stondeþ att a gappe wiþ a spere
Whan huntide is þe lyon or þe bere

Teseide. V. 61.

V. 13.

VII. 106.

And herep him come rossheinge in þe greues
And brekeþe boþe bowes *and* þe leues
And þinkeþ here comeþ my mortale enmye
Wiþþe-owte faile he most be dede or .I.
ffor eiþer .i. mote slene him att þe gappe [leaf 21, back]
Or [he] most sle me. if þat me mys happe
So ferden [þey] in chaungeinge of hire hewe
As fer as iche of hem oþer knewe
Thar nas no good daye ne no salueynge
Bot streite wiþouten worde or reherseinge
Eu*e*ryche of hem helpe to arme oþere
As frendely as he were his owen broþere
And after þat wiþ scharpe speres stronge
Thei foynen eche att oþere wonder longe
Thou mihtest wene þat this palamon
In his feihtinge were a wode lyon ·
And as a cruel tigre was Arcite
As wilde bores gunne þei to smyte
þat froþen white as fome. for ire wode
Vp to þe Ancle fouht þei in þeire blode
And in þis wise .I. lete hem feihtinge dwelle
And forþ .I. wil of Theseus ȝowe telle
Thę destanye Ministre gen*e*ral
That executeþ in þe werld oue*r*al
The Purueance þat. god haþ seie be-fore * [* See p. 25, *n.* 6.]
So stronge it is þat þeihe þe werlde had it swore
The contrarie of a þinge be ȝe or naye
ȝit some time it schal fal on a daye.
þat falleþ nouht eft wiþ-inne a þousande ȝere
ffor certeinly oure appetites here
Be it of werre of pese. or hate or loue
Alł is þis rewled be þe siht aboue
This Mene .I. nowe be myhty Theseus
That for to hunt' is so desirus
And namely att þe grete hert in maie
That in his bed þe*re* daweþ him no daie

Teseide. VII. 119.

VI. 1.

V. 77.

V. 77.

Teseide.

þat he na es clad *and* redi for to ride
Wiþ hunte *and* horne *and* hundes him biside | V. 77.
ffor in his huntynge haþe he swyche delite | V. 78.
That it is al is hope. Ioy *and* appetite 1680
To bene him self þe grete hertes bane
ffor after mars. he serueþ now Diane
Clere was þe daie as .I. haue told ar þis
And Theseus wiþ al Ioy *and* blisse 1684
Wiþ his ypolita þe faire quene
And Emely cloþed al in Grene | [See XII. 65.]
On huntyn bene þe reden Roially [leaf 22]
And to þe Groue þat stod ful fast by 1688
In whiche þer was an herte as men him tolde
¶ Duc Theseus þe streiht waie haþ holde
And to þe laun*d*e he rideþ him ful riht
ffor þeder was þe hert wonte to haue his fliht 1692
And ouer a broke *and* so forþe on his weie
This Duc wil haue a cours att him or tweie
Wiþ houndes suche as him lust co*m*maunde
And whan þis Duc wa[s] come vn to þe launde 1696
Vnder þe so*n*ne he loked And a-none
He was war of Arcite *and* Palamone.
þat fowhten breme as it wer boly two
The briht swerdes wenten to *and* foo. [þ MS. fro] 1700
So hydously þat wiþ þe lest stroke
It semeþ þat it wald fel an oke
Bot whate þei were noþinge he wote
This Duc his Coursur wiþ his spores smote 1704 | V. 82.
And att a sterte he was be-twix hem two
And pulled owte a swerde And cride ho
No more vpon peine of leseynge of ȝoure hede
Be myhti Mars he schal a-none be dede 1708
That smyteþ any stroke. þat .I. maie seen
Bot telle me what mester men ȝe been | V. 83.
That bene so hardy to feihten here
Wiþ-owten Iugge or oþer officere 1712

As it were in a litel list roiallie — *Teseide.*
¶ This Palamon aneswerd hastelye
And seide sire what nedeþ wordes mo
We haue þe deþ deserued boþe tuo
Two wofull wreches be we tuo Caytyues
That bene encumberde of owre owen liues
And as þou art a riht-ful lorde *and* Iuge
Ne ȝif vs neyþer mercy ne refuge
Bot sle me first for seinte Charite
And sle my felaw eke as wele as me
Or sle him for þouhe thou knowest it lite
þis is þi mortal fo þis is Arcite
That fro þi londe is banysshed on his hed — See V. 91.
ffor whiche he haþe deserued to be dede
ffor þis is he whiche come vn to þi gate
And seide þat he hiht Philostrate.
Thus haþe he Iaped þe ful mony a ȝere — [leaf 22, back]
And þou hast maade him þi chef swyere
And þis is he þat loueþ Emelye
ffor seþ þat daie is come þat .I. schal diȝe
.I. make pleinely my confessione
þat .I. am þilke woful palamone
þat haþe þi prisone broken wikkedly. — See V. 91.
.I. am þi mortale foo *and* it am .I.
þat loueþe so hote Emelye þe brihte
That wil diȝe present in hire sihte
Where-fore .I. ax deþe *and* my Iuyse — V. 90.
Bot sle my felawe in þe same wise
ffor boþe we haue deserued to be sleine
¶ This worþi Duc aneswerd anone aȝeine
And seide this is a schort conclusione
ȝowre owren mouþe be ȝowre confessione
Haþe dampne ȝow *and* it wil recorde
It nedeþ nouht to pyne ȝowe wiþ corde
ȝe schal be ded be myhti Mars þe rede
The qweene anone for verrei wommanhede

Gan for to wepe *and* so dide Emelie
And al þe ladies in þe companye
Grete pite was as hem þouht alle
That euer suche a chaunce shold falle
ffor gentilmen þei were of grete astate
And noþinge bot for loue was þis debate
And sauhe hire blody woundes wide *and* sore
And al criden boþe lasse *and* more
Haue merci lorde vpon vs wemmen alle
And on her bare knees downe þei falle
And wolde haue kist his fote þere as he stode
Til att laste a-slaked was his moode
ffor pite renneþ sone in gentil herte
And þouhe he firste fore Ire quoke *and* sterte
He considered schortly in a clause
The trespas of hem boþe *and* eke þe cause
And al-þouhe þat his Ire hir gilte accusede
ȝit in his reson he hem boþ excusede
And þus he þouht wele þat euery man
Wil helpe him selfe in loue if þat he can
And eke deliuere him self owte of prisone
And eke his herte had compassione
Of wemmen for þei wepen euer in one [leaf 23]
And in his gentill hert. he þouht anone
And soft vn to him self he seide fie
Vpon a lorde þat wille haue no mercye
Bot he be lyone boþe in worde *and* in dede
To hem þat bene in repentance *and* drede
Al so wele as to a proude dispitous man
That wil Maiten þat he first be-gan
That lorde haþ litel of discrecioñ
That in suche cas can no deuisioñ
And weieþe pride *and* humblenesse after one
And whan his Ire is þus a-gone
He gan to Loken vpe wiþ yhe liht
And spake þis same wordes al on hiht

¶ The god of loue A Benedicite — *Teseide.*
Howe myhti *and* howe grete a lorde is he
Aȝeines his myhtes þere gayneþ none obstacles
He maie be cleped a god for his miracles
ffor he cañ maken att his owen gise
Of euerych hert as þat him list deuise
Loo here þis Arcite *and* Palamon
That quytly weere owte my *pr*ison
And myht haue leued in Thebes roialye
And weten .I. am here mortale enemye
And þat hire deþe liþe in my myht also
And haþe loue Maugre here eyen two
Brouht hem hider boþ for to die
Nowe lokeþ is nouht þat an hihe folye
Who maye be a foole bot if he loue
Be-holde for goddes sake þat sitteþ aboue
Se howe þei blede be þei nouht wele araide
Thus haþe hire lorde þe god of loue ypaide
Hire wages *and* her fees for hire *ser*uise
And ȝut þei wenen for to be ful wise
That *ser*uen loue for ouht þat maie be-falle
Bot þis is ȝete þe beste game of alle
That sche for wham þei haue þis Iolite
Kan hem þerfore as muche þonke as me
Sche woote no more of alł þis hote fare
Bi god þan wote a cokkowe or an hare
Bot al mot bene assaide hote *and* colde
A man most be a foole or ȝonge or olde
.I. wote it be my selfe ful ȝore a-gone [leaf 22, back]
ffor in my time a *ser*uant was .I. one
And þare-fore seþ .I. knowe of loues peine
.I. woote howe sore it kan a man distreine
As he þat haþe bue cauht oft in his lace
.I. ȝowe for-ȝef al holely þis trespace — V. 92-3.
At þe request of þe quene þat kneleþ here
And Eke of Emely my suster dere

V. 92.

And ȝe schall Boþe anone vn to me swere — *Teseide.*
þat neuer ȝe schal my coroune dere
Ne make werre vpon me nyht ne daie
Bot bene my frendes in al þat ȝe maie
.I. ȝowe for-ȝeue þis trispaas euery dele
And þei him sworne his axen faire *and* wele — V. 93.
And him of lordeschipe *and* of Mercie preide
And hem graunteþe grace *and* þus he seide
¶ To speke of Roial lignage *and* richesse — V. 96.
Thouhe þat sche weere a queene or a Princesse
Eche of ȝowe boþe is worþi doutelesse
To wedden whan time is bot naþelesse
.I. speke as for [my] suster Emelye
ffor whom .I. haue. þis strif *and* Ialowsie
ȝe wit ȝoure selfe sche maie nouht wedden twoo — V. 95.
Att ones þouhe ȝe feihten euer moo
Bot one of ȝowe al be him loþe or leue
He mote go pipen in an yuy leue
This to sei sche maye nouht haue boþe
Al be ȝe neuer so Ielousse ne so wroþe
And for-þi .I. ȝowe pute in þis degre
That iche of ȝow schal haue his destanye
As him is schape *and* herkeneþe in whatt wise
Lo here ȝowre ende of þat .I. schal deuise
¶ Mi will is [this [1]] for plate conclusione — [1 MS. rubbed]
Wiþ-owten any replicacione
If þat ȝowe likeþ takeþ it for þe beste
That eu*er*yche of ȝowe schal gone where him leste
ffrely wiþ-owten Raunsoñ or daungere
And . þis daie fifty wekes fer ne nere — 'un anno intero,' V. 98.
Eueryche of ȝowe schal bringe an .C. knyhtes — V. 97.
Armed for lystes vp al Rihtes — 'nel *teatro* nostro.'
Al redi to darreine hir by Bataile
And þis behet .I. ȝow wiþ-owte faile.
Vpon my trouþe *and* as .I. am knyht — [leaf 24]
That wheþer of ȝowe boþe þat haþe miht

This is to seine whepher he or þou
Maie wiþ his hundreþ as .I. spak of nowe
Sle his contrarie or owte of listes driue
That schal .I. ȝeue Emelia to wif
To whome þat fortone ȝeueþ so faire a grace
The listes schal .I. maken in þis place
And god so wisly on my soule rewe
As .I. schal Euen Iuge be *and* trewe
ȝe schol none oþer ende wiþ me makene
þat one of ȝowe ne schall be dede or takene
And ȝif ȝowe þinkeþ þis is wele .I.-seide
Seiþe ȝowre avise *and* holde ȝowe wele apaide
This es ȝoure ende and ȝoure conclusione
Who lokeþ lihtly nowe bot palamone
Who springeþ vp for ioie bot arcite
Who couþe telle or who couþe it endite
The ioye þat is maked in þe place
Whan Theseus haþe done so faire a grace
But downe one knees went. euery manere wiht
And þonked him wiþ al here hert *and* myht
And namely þe Thebanes oft siþe
And þus wiþ good hope *and* wiþþe herte bliþe
Thei taken here leue *and* homward gan þei ride
To Thebes wiþ olde walles wide

Tescide. V. 98.

[no *slaying* men tioned.]

['tanta grazia,' V. 100.]

[*PART III. No gap in the MS.*]

.I. trowe men wolde it deme Necligence
ȝif .I. for-ȝate to tellen þe dispence
Of Theseus þat goþe so besily
To Maken vp þe listes roially
þat suche a noble theatre as it was
.I. dare wele saie in þe werlde *þere* nas
The circuite a Mile was aboute
Walled of stone *and* diche all wiþ-oute
Rounde was þe schappe maner of compas

• VII. 108.

[no *ditch*.]

fful of degrees þe heighte of sexti pas
That whan a man was sette on o degree
He let-it nouhte his felow for to see
Estwarde þere stoode a gate of marble white
Westward riht stoode a-noþer in þe opposite.
And schortly to conclude suche a place
Was none in erþe *and* in so litel a space.
ffor in þe londe þere nas no crafti man
That Geomatrie or arce metrik can
Ne Purtreoure ne keruer of ymages
Thas Theseus ne ȝafe mete *and* wages
The Theatre to make *and* to deuise
And for to done his riht *and* sacrifice
He Estwarde haþ vpon þe gate aboue
In worschipe of venus goddes of loue
Done maken an Auter *and* an Oratorie
And in þe westwarde in Memorie
Of Marce he Maked haþe riht suche anoþer
þat cost largeli of gold a foþer
And Northwarde in a toret on· þe walle
Of Alabastre white *and* rede Coralle
An oratorie riche for to se
In worschipe of Dyane of chastite
Haþe Theseus don wrouht in noble wise
Bot ȝite had .I. forgeten to deuise
þe noble painteynge *and* þe purtres
The schappe þe countenance *and* þe figures
That weren in þese oratories þre
fferst in þe temple of venus maist þou see
Wrouhte in þe walle fu[l] pitouse to be-holde
The broken slepes. *and* þe sikes colde
The sacrede teres *and* þe weymenynge
The firy strokes of desireinge
That loues seruantȝ in þis life enduren
The oþes þat here couenantz ensuren
Plesant *and* hope desire foolhardinesse

Teseide. VII. 110.
1892
VII. 100.
1896
[leaf 24, back]
1900
1904
1908
1912
1916
1920
VII. 69.
1924
See VII. 55-6, &

Beaute *and* ȝouþe. bauderie Richesse | *Teseide.* See VII. 56, & 61.
Charmes *and* force leseinges flaterie | See VII. 55-6, 59.
Dispense Besinesse *and* Ielowsie 1928 |
That wered of ȝalowe gowldes a garlonde
And a kokkowe sittinge on his honde
ffestes Instrumentes karoles daunces | See VII. 53, & 57.
Luste *and* arraie *and* al þe Circumstaunces 1932
Of loue whiche þat rekened *and* reken schaft
Be order were peinted on þe waft
And mo þan .I. can make of Mencione
ffor soþeli al þe mounte of Githerone 1936 | VII. 60.
There venus haþ hir principal dwellinge |
Was schewede on þe waft in purtreinge* [* See p. 25, n. 7.]
Wiþ al the Gardyne *and* þe lustinesse [leaf 25]
Nat was for-ȝete þe porter ydelnesse† [† See p. 25, n. 8.] 1940
Ne Narcisus þe faire of ȝore agone
Ne þe foly of kinge salamon
Ne ȝitte þe grete strenke of hercules‡ [‡ See p. 25, n. 7.]
Thenchauntementez of Medea *and* Circes 1944
Ne of Turnus wiþ þe hardy fiers corage
The Riche Crisus Caitif in seruage
Thus maie ȝe seen þat wisdome ne richesse
Beute ne strengeþe ne sleiht ne hardinesse 1948
Ne maie wiþ venus halde Champartie
ffor as sche liste þe werlde þan maie sche gye.
Lo al þis folke so kauht were in hire lace
Til þei ful woo ful oft seide Alace 1952
Suffiseþe here ensamples one or two
And þouhe .I. couþe rekken a þousand mo
The Statue of venus glorious for to see§ [§ See p. 25, n. 9.]
Was made fleteynge in þe large see 1956
And fro þe nauel doune al couerd was
Wiþ wawes grene *and* briht as any glas
A Citole in hire Rihte honde had sche
And on hir hede ful semely for to see 1960
A rose garland frische *and* wele smellinge

A-boue hire hede here doufes flikeringe — *Teseide.*
Be-forne hir stode hir sonne Cupido
Vpon his scholderes wenges had he tuo
And blinde he was as it is oft sene
A bowe he bare *and* arwes briht *and* kene
¶ Whi schold .I. nouht also wele eke tel þe hall
The purtratoure þat was vpon þe wall
Wiþ-inne þe temple of myhti mars þe rede
Al peinted was þe wal in lengethe *and* brede • VII. 36.
Like to þe estres of þe grisely place VII. 29, 30.
That hihte þe grete temple of mars in trace
In þilke colde frosti Regioñ
Ther as Marce haþe his soucreine Mansion
ffirste on þe wal was peinted a forest • VII. 31.
In whiche þere dwelled neyþer man ne beste
With knotty knarry baran tres olde
Of stubbes scharpe *and* hidouse to be-holde
In whiche þer ran a rombel in a swouhe.
As þouhe a storme scholde berste euery bouhe.
And douneward̃e from an hill vnder a bent [leaf 25, back]
Ther stode þe temple of Mars armipotent • VII. 32.
Wrowht al of Burnede stele of wyche þentre
Was longe *and* streite *and* gastly for to see
And þere owte come a rage *and* suche a veze • VII. 33.
That maade al þe gates for to rese
The Northern liht in att þat dore schone* [* See p. 25, n. 10.]
ffor windowe on þe [walle] was þere none.
Thoruhe whiche men myht any liht discerne
The dores waren all of Attemant ete[r]ne • VII. 32.
Ychenchede ouereþwart *and* enlonge
Wiþ yren toughe *and* for to make it stronge
Euery peler þe temple to susteine • VII. 33.
Was tune grete of yren briht *and* schene
There sawe .I. first þe derke ymaginynge
Of felony an al þe compassinge
The Cruele Ire as rede as any glede

(but a *real* forest there, not a *painted* one.)

The Pike-purs *and* eke þe pale drede
The smyler wiþe þe knyf vnder þe cloke
The Shepen birneinge *with* þe blake smoke
The Treson of þe Morþeringe in þe bedde
The Open werre wiþ wondes alł be-bledde
Contek wiþ blody knyfe and scharpe manace
Alł fful of schrikeinge was þat sor place
The sleere of himself ȝit sawe .I. *þere*
His herte haþ baþed al his here
The naile y-dryue in þe schode on nyht
The colde deþe wiþ mouþe gapeand vpriht
A mides of þe temple satte Mischaunce*
With discomford *and* sori countenaunce
ȝit sauhe .I. wodenes lawheynge in his rage
Armed compleinte outehees *and* fires outrage†
The karoigne in þe buske wiþ þrote. ycorue
A. þousand ysleine *and* not of qualme ystorue
The terant wiþe preie be for þrafte
The towne destroiede. *þer* was no þinge laft
ȝete sawe .I. bernte þe schippes hoppesters‡
The hunte strangeld wiþ þe wilde beres
The sowe freteynge þe childe riht in þe Cradelł
The Coke. Iscalded for al his longe ladelł
Nouht was forȝeten be þenfortune of Marte
The Carte ouerriden wiþ his Carte
Vnder þe whele ful lowe he laie a doune
There were also of Mart*is* diuisioune
The barboure *and* þe bocher *and* þe smithe
That forgeþ scharpe swerdes on his stiþe
And al aboue depeinted in a toure
Sauhe .I. conqueste sit in grete honoure
Wiþ þe scharpe swerde ou*er* his hede
Hangeinge be a subtile twine þrede
Depeinted was þe slawhter of Iulius
Of grete Nero and of Anthonius
Al be þat ilke time þei weren vnborne

2000 2004 2008 2016 2020 2024 2028 2032

[* See p. 25, *n.* 11.]
[† See p. 25, *n.* 12.]
[‡ See p. 25, *n.* 13.]
[leaf 26]

Teseide.
VII. 33. [*not* the pickpurse.]
VII. 34.
VII. 34.
VII. 35.
VII. 36.
VII. 37.

3ite was þeire deþe depainted þere be-forne
Be Manassinge of Mars riht be figure
So was it schewde in þat purtrature.
As is depeinted in þe sertres a-boue
Who schal be sleine or elles dede for loue
Suffiseth oone ensample in stories oolde
.I. maie nouht reken hem al þouhe þat .I. wolde
¶ The statue of Mars vppon a Carte stode
Armed *and* loked grime as he war wode
And ou*ere* his heuede *þere* schines two figures
Of sterre þat bene closed in scriptures
þat on puella þat oþer Rubeus
This god of armes was arraide þus
A wolfe *þere* stode be-for him att his fete
Wiþ y3en reede *and* of a man he ete
Wiþþe sotel pensel was depeinted þis storie
In redouteinge of Mars *and* of his glorie.
¶ Nowe to þe temple of Diane þe chast
As schortli as .I. can .I. wil me haste
To telle 3owe al þe descripcio*u*ne
Depeinted bene þe walles vp *and* doune
Of huntynge *and* of schamfast chastite
There sauhe .I. howe woful Caliste
Whan þat Diane was agreued wiþe here
Was turne fro a wo*m*man to a bere Vrsa Maior
And after was sche maade þe lode-sterre
Thus was sche peinted .I. can sei 3owe no ferre.
Hir sone is eke a sterre as men Maie see
Thar sawhe [I] Dane turned til a tree
.I. mene nouht þe goddes Diane
Bot Penneus douhter whiche þat hiht Dane.
¶ Ther sawhe .I. Accheon an herte ymaked [leaf 26, back]
ffor veniaunce þat he sawhe Diane al nakede
.I. sawhe howe þat his hondes haþ him cauht
And freten him for þat þei knewe him nauht
3ite y-peinted was a litel forþermore

Howe Athalance hunted þe wilde bore — *Teseide.*
And Meliagre *and* mony an oþer moo
ffor whiche Diane wrouht care *and* woo
There sawhe .I. many a noþer wondere storie
The whiche me luste nouht drawe to memorie
¶ This Goddes on an hert ful hihe sche seete
Wiþ smalle houndes al aboute her feete.
And vnder-neþe hire feete sche had a mone
Waxinge it was *and* scholde wany sone
In gaude grene hire statue cloþed was
Wiþ bowe in honde *and* arwes in a kas
Hir yhen kest sche ful lowe adoune
Thare pluto haþ his derke Regione
A wo*m*man trauaillinge was hire beforne
Bot for hire childe was so longe vnborne
fful pitously Lucina gan sche calle
And seide helpe for þou maiste best of alle
Wele coupe he peinte lifly þat it wrouht
Wiþ many a floren he þe hewes bouht
Nowe bene þes listes maade *and* Theseus
That att his grete cost arraide þus
The temples *and* þe Teatre eue*r*y dele
Whan it was done it liked him wondere wele
Bot stinte .I. wiłł of Theseus a lite
And speke of Palamon *and* of Arcite
The daie approcheþ of hire retournynge
That eue*r*yche schold an .C. knyhtes bringe.
The Bataile to darraine as .I. 3owe tolde
And til Athenes here couenant for to holde
Haþe eue*r*yche of hem brouht an .C. knyhtes
Wele armed for þe werre att al rihtes
An sekurly þere trowed mony a man
That neuer siþþe þat þe werlde be-gan — VI. 71.
As for to speke of knyhthode of hire honde
As fer as god haþ maked see and londe
Was of so fewe so noble a compaignye — VI. 71.

ffor eu*e*ry whiht þat loued cheualrie. *Teseide.*
And wold his þonkes *and* haue a passant name [leaf 27]
Haþe preide þat he myhte be of þat game. 2108 'giuoco,' VII. 4.
And wel was him þat þ*er*e-to chosen was
ffor if þere fell to morwe suche a cas
3e knewe wele þat eu*e*ry lusty knyht
þat loueþ p*ar*amoures. And haþ his myht 2112
Were it in Ingelonde or elles where
Thei wolde here þonkes willen to be þere
To fighte for a lady benedicite
It were a lusti siht for to see 2116
And riht so ferden þei wiþ Palamon
Wiþe him þ*er*e went knyhtes manyon
Some wol ben armed in an haburgeon
And in a breste plate. And in a liht Iepon 2120
And some wil haue a paire plates large
And some wil haue a pruce schelde or a targe
Some wel bene armed on his legges wele
And haue an ax *and* some a mace of stele 2124
Thar is no new gise þat it nas holde
Armed were þei as .I. haue 3owe tolde
Eueryche after his opinione
Thare maistowe see comynge wiþ palamon 2128 [on Arcita's side *Tes.*]
Ligurge him selfe þe grete kinge of trace • VI. 14.
Blake was his berde *and* manly was his face • VI. 21. (See p. 25, *n.* 14.)
The cercles of his yhen in his hede
Thei glowde be-twix 3alowe *and* rede 2132
And like a griffon loked he a-boute
W*ith* kempe heres on his browes stoute
His limes grete. his braune harde *and* stronge • VI. 21.
His scholdres brod. his armes rounde *and* longe 2136
And as þe gise was in his contre
fful hihe vpon a chare of gold stode he • VI. 21.
Wiþþe foure white boles in þe trays
In stede of cote armoure ouer his hernays 2140 • VI. 22.
Wiþ naille 3elow *and* briht as any golde •

He had a berskinne cole-blake for olde
His longe here was kembed be-hinde his bak
As any Rauenes feþer it schane for blak
A wreþe of golde arme grete of huge wighte
Vpon his hede sette ful of stones briht
Of fine Rubies *and* of diamantz
A-boute his chare þer went white alantz
Twenty *and* moo as grete as any stere
To hunten att þe lyon or þe dere
And folowed him wiþ mosel fast bounde
Colers of golde *and* turettes filed rounde
An .C. lordes had he in his Route
Armed ful wele wiþ hertes sterene *and* stoute
¶ Wiþ Arcita in Stories as men finde
The grete Emetrius þe kinge of Inde
Vpon a stede baie trapped in stele
Couerd wiþ cloþe of gold diapred wele
Cam rideinge like þe god of Armes mars
His cote armur was of cloþe of tars
Couched wiþ perles white *and* rounde *and* grete
His sade[l] was of brent gold new ybette
A mantelet vpon his scholdere hongeynge
Breteful of Rubies rede as fire sparklinge
His crispe here like ringes was yronne
And þat was ȝalowe and gleteringe as þe sone
His nose was hihe his yȝen briht Citrine
His lippes rounde. his colour was sanguyne
A fewe fraknes in his face y-sprined
Be-twix ȝalowe *and* somdel blak ymeyned
And as lion he his lokeynge cast
Of five *and* twenti ȝere his age .I. cast
His berd was wele be-gunne for to springe
His vois was as a trompe thundringe
Vpon his hede he wered of laurer grene
A garland fresche *and* lusti for to seene
Vpon his honde he bare for his deduyte

Teseide. VI. 22.
[leaf 27, back]
VI. 20. (See p. 25, n. 15.)
VI. 17.
VI. 10.
VI. 41.

An Egle tame as any lely white — *Teseide.*
An .C. lordes had he wiþ him þere
Al armed saue hire hedes in al her gere
fful richely in al maner þinges
ffor trusteþ wele þat Dukes Erles *and* kinges — VI. 65.
Weren gaderd in þis noble compaignie
ffor loue *and* for encres of chiualrie
A-boute þis kinge þar ranne on eu*e*ry parte
fful mony a tame lion *and* lepart
¶ And in þis wise þes lordes al *and* some
Bene on þe sondaie to þe Cite come
Aboute p*r*ime *and* in þe towne a-lihte
This theseus þis duc þis worþi knyht — VI. 65.
Whan he had brouht hem in to his Citee [leaf 28]
And Inned hem eu*e*riche att his degree
He festeþ hem *and* doþe so grete la-boure
To esen hem *and* done hem al honoure
That ȝit men weneþ þat nomannes witte
Of none astate ne couþe amende it
The minstralcie þe se*r*uice att þe feste — VI. 69-70.
The grete ȝeftes to þe most *and* leste
The Riche arraie of Theseus Paleis
Ne who satt first ne last vppon þe deis
What ladies fairest bene or best daunceinge
Or whiche of hem can best daunsen or singe — VI. 70.
Ne who moste feleingelike speke þ of loue
What haukes sitten in þe perche aboue — VI. 8.
What houndes liggen on þe flore adoune
Of alt þis make .I. nowe no mencioune
Bot al þeffect þat þenkeþ me beste
Now comeþ þe pointe *and* herken if ȝow leste
¶ The sondaȝe att nyht ar day be-gan to springe
Whan Palamon þe larke herde singe
Al þouhe it nar nouht daie be houres tuo
ȝete songe þe larke An Palamon riht þo
Wiþ holy herte *and* wiþ an hihe corage

He rose to wende on his pilgrenage — Teseide.
Vnto þe blisful Citharea benigne
.I. mene venus honurable *and* digne
And in hire houre he walkeþ forþe apace
Vnto þe listes þer hir temple wace
An doune he kneled *and* wiþ humble chere
And hert sore he seide as ȝe schal here
¶ ffairest of faire O ladi myne Venus
Douhter to Ioue *and* spouse to vulcanus — VII. 43.
Thou glader of þe mounte of Citherōn
ffor þilke loue þou haddest to Adoñ
Haue pite of my bitter teres smarte.
And take myne humble preier att þine herte
Allas .I. ne haue no langage to telle — VII. 45.
The effectes ne þe torment on myn helle
Mine herte maie myne harmes nouht bi-wreie
.I. am so confuse þat .I. can nouht seie — VII. 45.
Bot Merci ladi briht þat knowest wele
Mi þouhte and seest what harmes þat .I. fele.
Considere al þis *and* rewe vpon my sore
As wisly as .I. schal for euer More
Enforþe my myht þi trewe *ser*uant be
And halden were alwaie wiþ chastite
That .I. make myne avowe so ȝe me helpe
.I. kepe nouht of armes for to ȝelpe — VII. 46.
Ne .I. ne axe not to morne to haue victorie
Ne renoune in þis caas ne veine glorie
Of p*rís* of armes blowen vp *and* doune
Bot .I. wolde haue fully possessione
Of Emelye *and* die in his *ser*uise
ffinde ȝowe þe manere howe *and* in whatt wise — VII. 47.
.I. reche nouȝt bot it better maie bue
To haue victorie of hem or þei of me
So þat .I. maie my lady in myne armes
ffor þouhe so be þat mars is god of Armes
ȝoure vertue is so grete in heuene aboue

Teseide.

þat. if þou liste .I. schal wel haue my loue
¶ Thi temple wil .I. worschipe euere mo — VII. 48.
And oñ þine autere where .I. ride or go
.I. wil dõn sacrifise *and* fires bete
And if ȝe wil nouȝt so my lady swete — VII. 49.
þan praie .I. þe to-morne wiþ a spere
þat Arcite [me] þourhe þe herte bere
Than reke .I. nouht whan .I. haue lost my lif
Thouht þat Arcite winne hire to his wif
This is þeffect *and* ende of my prayere
ȝef me my loue þou blisseful ladi dere
¶ Whan þe orison was done of Palamon — VII. 63.
His sacrifice he dide *and* þat a-none
ffull pitously wiþ al circumstances* [* See p. 25, n. 16.]
Att tel .I. not as nowe his obseruances
Bot att þe laste þe Statue of venus schooke
And Maade a signe where-bi þat he toke
That his praier was accept þat daie
ffor þoughe þe signe schewed a delaie
ȝit wist he wele þat graunted was his bone
And wiþ glad herte he went him hom ful sone
The þrede houre inequale þat Palamon
Be-gan to venus temple for to gone
Vp rose þe sonne *and* vpe roos Emelye
And to þe temple of Diane gan hye
The Maidens þat þedere wiþ hire ladde [leaf 29] — VII. 71.
ffull redely wiþ hem þe fire þei hadde
The encens þe cloþes *and* þe remenant att
That to þe sacrifice longen schall
The hornes ful of Meþe as was þe gise — VII. 71.
There lakked nouht to done hir sacrifise
Smokeinge þe temple ful of cloþes faire — VII. 72.
This Emely wiþ hert debonaire
Hir body [wessh] wiþe water of a well — VII. 72.
Bot how sche did hir riht .I. dar not tell
Bot it be any þinge in generall

And 3it it were a game to here it all — *Teseide.*
Til him þat meneþe wele it ner no charge
Bot it is goode a man be att his large
Her brihte here vn-kembed vntrussed al
A coron of a grene oke serial — • VII. 74.
Vpon hire hed sett ful feire *and* mete
Two fires on þe auter gan sche bete
And dide hir þinges as men mai be-holde
In Stace of Thebes as þes bokes olde
Whan kindeled was þe fire wiþ pitous chere — • VII. 76.
Vn to Diane sche spak as 3e maye here
¶ O chaste goddes of þe wodes grene — • VII. 79.
To whom boþe heuen *and* erþe *and* see is sene — • VII. 77.
Queene of þe regne of Pluto derke *and* lawe
Goddes of maydenes þat myn hert haste knowe
fful mony a 3ere *and* woste what .I. desire
As kepe me fro þi veniance *and* þine ire — • VII. 79.
þat Attheon abouht cruely
Chaste goddes wel woste þou þat .I.
Desire to be a maiden al my lif
Ne neuer wil .I. be no loue ne wi
.I. am þou woste 3it of þi compaignie — • VII. 81.
A mayden *and* loue huntynge *and* venerye
And for to walken in þe wodes wilde
And nouht to bene a wif *and* be wiþ childe
Note wil .I. knowe company of man — | VII. 81.
Now he[re] me ladi seþþe 3e maie *and* can
ffor þree formes þat þu haste in þe
And palamon þat haþ suche a loue to me
And eke Arcite þat loueþ me so sore
þis grace .I. pray. 3owe wiþ-owten more — • VII. 84.
And sende loue *and* pees be-twene hem two
And fro me torne awaie her hertes soo
That al her hote loue *and* desire [leaf 29, back]
And al her bysy torment *and* hire fire
Be qveynte or tornede in a noþeþer place

		Teseide.
And if so be þou wilt nouht do me grace		
Or if my destany be schapede so		• VII. 85.
That .I. schal nedes haue one of þem tuo	2324	•
As sende me him þat most desireþ me		•
Be-holde goddes of clene chastite		
The bitter teres þat oñ my cheke falle		| VII. 78.
Sen þou art Maiden *and* keper of vs alle	2328	
My maidenhede þou kepe *and* wele conserue		
And wile .I. leue a maide .I. wil ȝowe *serue*		
The fires berne vpon þe auter clere		• VII. 88.
While emely was þus in hir preiere	2332	•
Bot sodanly sche sawe a siht queynte		
ffor rihte a-none on of þe fires queynte		• VII. 91.
An quyked aȝeine *and* after þat anone		•
That oþer fire was queynte *and* al agone	2336	•
And as it queynte it maad a whistelynge		•
As done þes wete brondes in her brenynge		• VII. 92.
And att þe brondes ende oute ran anone		•
As it were blodi dropes many one	2340	•
ffor whiche so sore agaste was Emelye		
That sche was nyhe mad *and* gan to crie		
ffor sche ne wist what it signified		| VII. 92.
Bot onely for þe fere þus haþ sche cried	2344	
And wepe þat Pite was to here		
And þere wiþ aſt Diane gan a-pere		• VII. 88.
Wiþ bowe in honde riht as an hunteresse		•
And seide, douhter stinte þine heuinesse	2348	
Amonge þe goddes on hihe it is affermede		• VII. 89.
And be eterne worde wreten *and* confermede		['con eterna parola,' VII. 85.]
Thou schalt be wedded vn to one of þoo		• VII. 89.
That haue for þe so muche care *and* woo	2352	
Bot vnto whiche of hem .I. maie nouht telle		• VII. 89.
ffare wele for .I. ne maie no longer dwelle		
The fires whiche þat on myn auter berne		VII. 89.
Schole ȝe declaren arr þat ȝe gon henne	2356	
¶ Thyne auentur of loue as in þis caas		

And wiþ þat worde þe Arwes in þe caas
Of þe goddes claterne fast *and* ringe
And forþe sche wente *and* made a vanyssinge
ffor whiche þi[ng] emely astoned was [leaf 30]
And seide what a-mounteþ þis alas
.I. pute me in þi protectione
Diane *and* in þine dispocicion
And home sche goþe a-none þe next weye
þis is þeffecte þere is nomore to scie
¶ The next houre of Mars folwynge þis
Arcite vnto þe temple walke is
Of fires Mars to don his sacrifice
Wiþ all þe rihtes of his payen wise
Wiþe pitous hert *and* hihe deuocione
Riht þus to mars he sent his orison
¶ O stronge good þat in þe regne colde
Of Trace honoured erte *and* lorde .I.-holde
And hast in euery regne *and* in euery londe
Of armes al þe bridel in þin honde
And hem fortunest as þe liste deuyse
Accepte of me my pitous sacrifise
If so be þat my 3ouþe mai deserue
And þat .I. myht be worþi for to serue
Thi godhede þat .I. maie bene one of þine
þat praie .I. to þe to rewe vpon my pine
ffor þilke pine and þilke hote fire
In whiche þou whilome berneste for desire
Whan þat þou vsedest þi beaute
Of faire 3onge fressche venus fre
And haddest hir in armes att þi will
Al-þouhe 3e ones on a time mysfell
Whane vulcanus hadde cauht þe in his laas
And fonde þe liggynge be his wif alaas
ffor þilke sorwe þat was in þin herte
Haue reuþe as wele vpon my peines smerte
.I. am 3onge *and* vnkunynge as þou woste

Teseide. VII. 90.
VII. 93.
VII. 23.
VII. 24.
VII. 25.
VII. 25.
VII. 25.
VII. 26.

And as .I. trowe wiþ loue offendude moste
þat euer was any liues creature
ffor sche þat doþe me al þis woo endure
Ne.recche þ neuer wheþer .I. sinke or flete
And wele .I. wote ar sche me merci hete
.I. moste wiþ strenkeþ winne hir' in þe place
And wele .I. wote wiþ-owten helpe or grace
Of þe ne maie my strenkeþ nouht aveile
Than helpe me lorde to-morne in my bataile.
ffor þilke fire þat whilom brente þe [leaf 30, back]
As wele as þilke fire nowe brenneþ me
An do þat .I. to-morne haue þe victorie
Myne be þe trauayle *and* þine be þe glorie* [* See p. 25, n. 17.]
Thi sou*er*eyne temple wele most .I honouren
Of any place *and* al-wey moste labouren.
In þi pesauntez *and* in þi craftes stronge
And in þi temple .I. will Mi baner honge
And al þe armes of my compaignye
And euer more vntil þat .I. dye
Eterne fire .I. will be-for þe finde
And eke to þis a-vowe .I. wil me binde
Mine Mine here þat hongeþ longe a doune
That neuer 3ite ne felte offensione
Of Rasoure ne of schere .I. wil þe 3eue
And bene þi treu *ser*uant while .I. leue.
Now lorde haue reuþe vpon my sorous sore
3if me þe victorie .I. ax þe no more
¶ The preier stinte of Arcita þe stronge
The ringe on þe temple dore þat honge.
And eke þe dores claterden ful fast
Of whiche arcita sumwhat him a-gaste
The fires brenten vpon þe auteres brihte
That it gan al þe temple for to lihte
And swete smelle þe gronde anone vp 3afe
And Arcita a-none his hand vp hafe
And More encence in to þe fire he caste

Teseide. VII. 26.
VII. 28.
VII. 27.
VII. 28.
VII. 28.
VII. 28.
VII. 30.
VII. 40.
See VII. 40.

Wiþ o*per*e rihtes moo and at þe laste — *Teseide.*
The Statue of Marcz began his hauberk ringe — • VII. 40.
And wiþ þe sou*n*de he herde a memorynge
fful lowe *and* dimme þat seide þus victorie
ffor whiche he ȝafe to mars hono*ur* *and* glorie
And þus wiþ Ioy *and* hope wele to fare — • VII. 41.
Arcite a-none vn to his Inne he is fare
As feine as fowle is of þe briht so*n*ne
And riht anone ffrissche strife is be-gu*n*ne — • VII. 67.
ffor þilke *gr*auntynge in þe heuen a-boue
Be-twix venus þe goddes of loue
And marce þe steren god Armipotentent
That Iubiter was besie it to stent
Til þat þe pale Saturnus þe colde
þat knewe so mony of aventures olde
ffond in his olde exp*er*iens an arte [leaf 81]
That ful sone haþe pleside eu*er*y parte
A soþe is seide Elde haþ grete auantage
In Elde is boþe wisdome *and* vsage
Men Maie þe olde att-renne *and* nouht atȝede
Saturne a-none to stint strif *and* drede
Al be it þat it is aȝeines his kinde
Of Al þis st[r]if he gan remedi finde
Mi dere Douhter venus q*uo*d Saturne
Mi course þat haþe so wide for to turne
Haþ more powere þan haþ any manne
Mine is þe drynchinge in þe see so wanne
Mine is þe p*ri*sone in þe derke cote
Mine is þe strangle *and* hongeinge by þe þrote
The murmure *and* þe cheles rebellinge
The groneynge *and* þe p*ri*ue enprisoneinge
.I. do vengeance *and* pleine correctione
Wil .I. dwelle in þe signe of þe leone
Myne is þe ruyne of þe hihe halles
The fallynge of þe toures *and* of þe walles
Vpon þe minor *and* þe Carpenter

I slowhe Sampson schakinge þe piler — *Teseide.*
And myne bene þe Maladies colde
The derke tresoures *and* þe Costes olde
My lokeynge is þe fader of pestelence
Nowe wepe nomore .I. schal do diligence
þat palamon þat is þine owen knyht
Schal haue his lady as þou him hihte
Mars schal helpe his knyht naþeles
Be-twix 3owe þere mot be sum time pes
Al be nouht boþe of on complexione
þat causeþ al daie suche diuisione
„I. am þin ayeſt rede att þi wiſt
Wepe nowe no more þi lust .I. wil fulfiſt
Nowe wiſt .I. stente of þe goddes aboue
Of Mars *and* of venus goddes of loue
And teſt 3owe also pleinely as .I. can
þe gret effecte of whiche that .I. be-gan

[*PART IV. No gap in the MS.*]

¶ Grete was þe feste in Athenes þat daie
And eke þat lusti seson of þat maye
Maade euery knyht to bene in suche plesaunce
That al þat monday Iousten þei *and* daunce.
And spende it in hihe venus *ser*uise [leaf 31, back]
Bot be þe cause þat þei scholde rise
Erly for to seen þe grete fighte
Vnto her reste went þei att nihte
And on þe morwe whan þe dai gan springe
Of hors *and* herneys noyse *and* clateringe
There was in hostries al a-boute
And to þe Paleys rode þer' mony a route
Of lordes vpon stedes *and* palfreis
There maist þou seen diuiseinge of harneys
So vnkouþe *and* so riche *and* wrouhte so wele
Of gold smyþerie of brondeinge *and* of stele

[General imitation of VII. 95-99.

The Scheldes briht testeres *and* trappures — *Teseide.*
Gold hewen helmes hawberkes cote armures — 2500
Lordes in paramentes on hir' courseres
Knyhtes of Retenu *and* eke swieres
Naillinge þe speres *and* helmes bokelynge
Gideinge of scheldes wiþ layners lasinge — 2504
There as nede is þei were no þinge ydel
The fomy stedes on þe golden bridel — • VII. 97.
Gnawen *and* faste þe armureres also — •
Wiþ file *and* hamur prikinge to *and* fro — 2508
Ȝomen on fote *and* comune mony one
Wiþ schort staues riht as þei mai gone
Pipes trompes nakers clarions
þat in þe retaile blewe blodi sownes — 2512
The Paleis ful of peple vp *and* doune — | VII. 99.
Here þre þer ten holdeinge her questioune — • VII. 98.
Deuyneinge of þis thebane knyhtes tuo — •
Som seide þus sum seide it schal be so — 2516 |
Some holden wiþ him wiþ þe blake berde
Some wiþ þe balle som*e* wiþ þe þikke herede
Some seide he loked gri*m*me *and* he wolde fihte
He haþ a sparþe of .xx. pounde of wihte — 2520
Thus was þe hal ful of diuineinge
Longe after þat þe so*n*ne gan to springe
The grete Theseus þat of his slepe awaked — • VII. 96.
Wiþ mynstralcye *and* noys þat was maked — 2524
Held ȝite þe Chambres of his palays riche — •
Til þat þe Thebanes knyhtes boþen yliche
Honorable weren in to þe Palays ffette
Duc Theseus is att þe window sette — 2528
Arraide riht as he were a god in Throne — [leaf 32]
The peple p*re*sed þederwarde ful sone
Him for to seyn *and* done hihe reuerence
And eke to herken his heste *and* his sentence — 2532
An heraude on a scafold maad an hoo
Til att þe noys of þe peple was. y-doo

And whan he sawe þe peple of noyse al stiłł — *Teseide.*
Thus schewed he þe myhty dukes wiłł
¶ The lorde haþ of his hihe discrecione — See VII. 7-13.
Considered þat it were destructione
To gentil blode to fihten in þis gise
Of Mortaile bataile nowe in þis emprise — VII. 7.
Whare-for to schapen þat þei schal not deye
He wiłł his first purpos modefye
No man þar-fore vpon peine on his lif — VII. 12. [*no lances allowed in Boccaccio*]
No manere schotte ne polax ne schorte knyfe
In to þe listes sende ne þeder bringe
Ne schort swerde for to stoke wiþ pointe biteinge.
No man ne drauhe ne bere it be his side
Noman schal vn to his felawe ride
Bot oo cours wiþ a scharpe ygrounde spere
ffoyne if him list on fote him self to were
And [he] þat is att Meschef schal be take — VII. 131-132.
And nouht sleine bot be brouht vnto þe stake
That schal bene ordeined on eyþer side
But þider he schal be force *and* þare abide
And if so fal þe Cheftaigne be take
On eyþer side or elles sleine his make
No longer schal þe tornynge last
God sped 3ow go forþe *and* laie on fast
Wiþ longe swerdes *and* wiþ maces fihten 3oure fiłł — VII. 12 [and with 'bipenne'].
Go nowe 3oure weie þis is þe lordes wiłł
The voice of þe peple touched heuen — VII. 14.
So loude cried þei wiþ mery steuene
God saue suche a lorde þat is so goode
He wilneþ no destruction of mannes blode
Vp goþe þe trompes *and* þe melodie
And to þe listes rydeþ þe compaignie
Be ordinance þoruhe oute þe Cite large
Honged wiþ cloþe of golde *and* nouht wiþ sarge
fful like a lorde þis noble Duc gan ride — See VII. 100-102.
The tuo Thebanes vpon eyþer side.

And aftere rode þe queene and Emely [leaf 32, back] — *Teseide.* VII. 113-4.
And after þat an oþer compaignie
Of one *and* oþer after here degre
And þus þei passen þurgh oute þe Citee
And to þe listes come þei be time
It was nouht of þe daie ȝit fulliche prime
¶ Whan sette was Theseus ful riche *and* hihe
Ipolita þe queene and Emelye
And oþer ladyes in degres a-boute
Vn-to þe setes preseþ alt þe route.
And westwa þoruhe þe gates vnder Marte* [* See p. 25, n. 18.] — VII. 114.
Arcite *and* eke þe hundreþ of his parte
Wiþ baner rede is entred riht anone
And in þat selfe moment Palamon. — VII. 118.
Is vnder venus est-warde in þe place
Wiþ banere white *and* hardy chere *and* face
In al þe werlde to seken vpe *and* doune — VII. 19.
So euen wiþ-oute variacioune
þer ner suche companyes tweye
ffor þere was none so wise þat couþe seye
þat any had of oþere auantage
Of worþinesse ne of state of age!
So euen were þei Chosen for to gesse
And in to Rynges faire þei hem dresse
¶ Whan þat here names were rad euerychone
That in hir nombre gile were þere none
Tho was þe gates schette *and* cried was lowde
Do nowe ȝowre deuere ȝonge knyhtes prowde
The herawdes left he prikinge vpe *and* downe
Nowe ringen trompes loude *and* clarioune — VIII. 5.
The[r] is no more to seine west or est
In goþe þe speres ful sadly in a rest
In goþe þe scharpe spere in to þe side — VIII. 7.
Ther seen men who kan Iusten *and* who can ride
Ther schyueren schaftes vp on scheldes þikke
He fileþ þoruhe þe hert spone þe prike

Vp springeþ speres. twenty fote on hiht — *Teseide.*
Oute gone þe swerdes as þe siluer briht
The helme þei to-hewen *and* to-schrede
Oute brosteþ þe blode. wiþ steren stremes rede
Wiþ myhty Maces þe bones þei to-breste — See VIII. 14, 2, 33, 40, 69, 81, &c.
He þoruhe þe þikkest on þe þronge gan þreste
Ther stumbles stedes stronge *and* downe gone al
He rolleþ vnder fote as doþe a bal
He foyneþ on his fote wiþ his tronchon [leaf 33]
And he him hurteþ wiþ his hors adoune
He þoruhe þe body is hurte *and* sithen take
Maugre his hede *and* brouhte vnto þe stake
As forward was riht þere he must abide
An oþer is lad on þat oþer side
And som time doþe hem Theseus to reste
Hem to refresche *and* dringen if hem lest
¶ fful oft a day haue þese Thebanes two — VIII. 12.
To-gedere ymet *and* wrowht his felaw woo
Vnhorsede haþe yche oþere of hem tweie
þere nas no tigre in þe vale of golgopheie
Whan þat hir whelpe is stole whanne it is lite — VIII. 20.
So cruel on þe hunt as is Arcite
ffor Ialouse herte vpon þis Palamon
Ne in Belmary ne is so fel lyoñ
That huntid is or for his hunger wode
Ne of his preie desireþ so þe blode
As Palamon is to sle is fo Arcite
The Ielous strokes on hire helmes bite
Oute renneþ þe blode on boþe hir sides rede
Some time an ende þere is of euery dede
ffor or þe sonne vnto þe rest wente
The stronge kinge Emetrius gan hente
This palamon as he fauht wiþ Arcite
And made his swerde depe in his flesche bite
And be þe for[ce] of twenty is he take
Vn-ȝolden *and* drawen to þe stake

Teseide.

And in þe rescous of þis Palamon
The stronge kinge Ligurge is borne a doune
And kenge Emetrius for al his strenkeþ
Is borne owte of his sadel a swerdes lengeþ
So it him Palamon ar he were take
Bote al for nouht brouht he was to þe stake
His hardy herde myht him helpe nouht
He moste abide whan þat he was cauht
Be force *and* eke be composicione
Who sorewþe nowe Bot woful palamone | VIII. 123.
That moote no more gone aȝeine to fiht
And whan þat Theseus had seen þis siht
He criede ho no more for it is done
Ne none schal longer to his felowe gone.
.I. will be trewe Iugge *and* not p*ar*tie [leaf 83, back]
ArCite Of Thebes Schal haue Emelye
That be his fortune haþe hire faire ywonne
Anone þer is a noise of peple be-gunne
ffor Ioy of þis so lowde *and* lihte wiþ al
It semed þat þe listes scholde fal
¶ Whan kan nowe faire venus done aboue
What seiþe sche nowe what doþe þis queene of loue
Bot wepeþ so for wantynge of hire wille
Til þat hire teres in þe listes fille
Sche seide .I. am aschamede dowteles
Saturnus seide douhter holde þi pes
Mars haþ his wil his knyht haþe al his bone
And be my hede þou schalte bene esed sone
¶ The trompoures wiþ þe loude menstralcie
The heraudes þat ful loude ȝelle *and* crie
Ben in here wele for ioye of dann Arcite
Bot herkeneþ me *and* stinte noy a lite
Whiche a miracle þere be-fel anone
This fers Arcite haþe of his helme. y-done | VIII. 131.
And on a koursou*r* for to schewe his face
He Prikkeþe endlonge þe large place

Lokeynge vpward vpon þis Emely — *Teseide.*
And sche a-ʒeine him kest a frendeliche eye — VIII. 131. VIII. 124-6.
ffor wemmen as to speken in comune
The folowen al þe fauoure of fortune
And was al his chere as in his herte
Owte of þe grounde a fire infernale sterte — [a *Fury*, raised by Venus, IX. 4.]
ffrom Pluto sent att þe request of saturne
ffor whiche his hors for fere gan to torne — IX. 7.
And leped on side *and* foundrede as he leppe
And ar þat Arcite mai taken kepe
He Piht him on þe Pomel of his hede
That in þe place he leie as he were dede — IX. 8.
His breste to-brusten wiþ his sadel bowe
As blake he laye as any cole or crowe
So was þe blode ronne in his face
Anone he was borne owte of þe place — IX. 47.
Wiþe hert sore to Theseus paleys
Tho was he coruen oute of his herneys — IX. 13.
And in a bede ybrouht ful faire *and* blyue — IX. 48.
ffor he was ʒit in memorie *and* a lyue
And alweie cryeinge After Emelye — [leaf 34]
Duc Theseus whiþe alł his companye — IX. 38.
Is comen to Athenes his Citee
Wiþ alle blisse *and* grete solempnite
Al be it þat þis a-ventur was falł
He nolde nouht discomford hem alł
Men seinden eke þat Arcite schal not deye — IX. 20.
He schal bene heled of his maladie
And of anoþere [þing] þei were as feine
That of hem alle was þere none sleine* [* See p. 25, n. 19.]
Al were þei sore hurte *and* namely one
þat wiþe a spere was þrelled his breste bone
To oþere woundes . *and* to broken armes
Some hadden salue *and* somme hadden charmes† [† See p. 25, n. 20.]
ffermacies of herbes *and* eke saue
Thei dronke for þei wolden hir liues haue

ffor whiche þis noble duc as he wele canne — *Teseide.*
Comforteþe *and* honoureþe eu*e*ry man. 2716
And makeþ reuel al þe hole nyht | IX. 61.
Vnto þe straunge lordes as it was riht
Ne þer was holden no descomfytinge
Bot as a Iustenes or a torneyinge 2720
ffor Sothely þere was none disconfiture
ffor fallinge nys bot aventure
Ne to [be] ladde be force to þe stake
Vn-3olden *and* wiþ twenty knyhtes take 2724
A p*er*sone al a-lone wiþ-owten mo
And haried forþ by arme fote *and* to
And eke his stede dreuen forþe wiþ staue
Wiþ foote men boþe 3emen *and* knaves 2728
It was aritted him no velanie
Ther maie no man clepe it cowardie
ffor whiche a-none Duc Theseus lete crie
To stinte al rancor *and* envie 2732
The gree as wele of þe o side as of þe oþere | IX. 54.
And eyþer side ylike as oþere broþere |
And 3af hem 3eftes after here degree | XII. 80.
And fully helde he feste daies þree 2736 | *Fifteen* days.
And Conveiede þe kynges worþelye
Oute of his toune a Iourney largely
And home went euery man þe riht weye | XII. 83.
There was no more bot fare wele *and* haue good daie 2740
Of þis bataile .I. wil no more endite [leaf 34, back]
Bot speke of Palamon *and* of Arcite
¶ Swelleþe þe breste of Arcite *and*. þe sore* [* See p. 25, *n.* 21.] | See X. 11.
Encreseþ att his hert more *and* more 2744 |
The clotred blode for any leche-crafte
Corrupteþ *and* is in his bouke. ylefte
þat neyþer veinblode ne ventusinge
Ne drinke of herbes maie be his helpinge† [† See p. 25, *n.* 22.]
The vertue expulsif or anymal 2749
ffro þilke vertue cleped natural

Ne maie þe venime voide ne expelle — *Teseide.*
The pipes of his longes gan to swelle* [* See p. 25, n. 23.] 2752
And euery lacert in his breste adowne
Is schent wiþ venim *and* corrupcione
Him gayneþ neyþer for [to] gete his life
vomet vpwarde ne donewarde laxatif 2756
Aſt is to-bruston þilke Regiõ
Nature haþe no *domi*nacioñ. † [† See p. 25, n. 25.]
And certeinly. þer nature wil nouȝt wirche
ffare wele Phisike go bere þe man to chirche 2760
This aſt *and* some þat Arcita most deye | X. 12.
ffor whiche he sendeþ after Emelye | X. 37, 61.
And Palamon þat was his cosine dere
¶ Than seide he þus as ȝe schal after here 2764
Nouht may þe woful speret in myne herte | X. 54-5.
Declare a pointe of al my sorwes smarte
To ȝow my lady þat .I. loue moste
Bot .I. be-queþe þe *ser*uise of my goste 2768 | X. 61.
To ȝowe a-boue euery creature
Sen þat my life may no longer dure
Alas þe woo alas þe peynes stronge | X. 102.
That .I. for ȝowe haue suffred. *and* so longe 2772
Alas þe deþ alas myne Emelye | X. 103
Alas dep*ar*tyinge of owre compaignie
Alas myn hertes queene Alas my lif
Mine hert-is lady endere of my lif 2776
What is þis werlde what axed men to haue
Nowe wiþ his loue nowe in his colde graue
Alon wiþ-owten any compaignie
ffare wele my swete foo myne Emylye 2780
And soft take me in ȝoure armes tweye‡ [‡ See p. 25, n. 24.]
ffor þe loue of god *and* herken what .I. seye
.I. haue here my Cosin Palamon [leaf 35] | X. 60-2.
Had strif *and* rancoure mony a day agone 2784
ffor loue of ȝowe *and* for my Ielousye
And Iubiter so wisse my sowle gye

To speken of a seruant propurlye
Wiþ circumstance al trewlye
That is to seine treuþe honour knyhthede
Wisdome humblesse estat *and* hihe kinrede
ffredom *and* al þat longeþ to þat arte
So Iupiter haue of my soule parte
As in þis werlde riht nowe knowe .I. none
So worþi to be loued as Palamone
That serueþ 3ou *and* wele done al his lyue
And 3ef þat euer 3e schall be a wiue
ffor-3ete not Palamon þe gentilman*
And wiþ þat worde his speche faile gan
ffor frome his fete vn to his breste was come
The colde of deþe þat had him ouercome
And 3ite more ouer for in his armes tuo
The vital strengeþ is loste *and* al a-go
Onely þe intellecte wiþthe-owten more
That dwelled in his hert sik *and* sore
Gan faylen whan þe hert felte þe deþe
Busked his yen two *und* failed breþe
But on his lady 3it kaste he his eye
His laste worde was mercy Emelye
His sprete chaungede house *and* wente þere
As .I. cam neuer .I. can nouht tel where
There-fore .I. stinte .I. am no diuinistre
Of soules fynde .I. nouht in þis registre
Ne me ne liste þilke opinions to telle
Of hem. þouhe þat þei wreten where þei dwelle
Arcite is colde lat mars his soule guye
¶ Nowe wil .I. speken forþe of Emelye
Shrighte. Emelye *and* houleþ Palamone
And Theseus his suster he toke anone
Swonynge *and* bare hire fro þe cors awaie
What helpeþ it to tarien forþe þe daie
To telle howe sche wepe boþe eue *and* morwe
ffor in suche caas wemmen han suche sorwe

[* See p. 25, n. 25.]

Teseide.
X. 62.
X. 63.
• X. 111, 112.
See XI. 1-3, at the end of *Troilus & Cressida.*
XI. 6.

Whan þat her husbondes bene fro hem a-go — *Teseide.*
That for þe more part þei sorwen so
Or elles fallen in suche a maladie — [leaf 35, back]
þat att last certeinly þei deye
Infinite bene þe so[r]wes *and* þe teres — XI. 8.
Of olde folke. *and* folke of tendur ȝeres
In all þe toune for deþe of þis Thebanne
ffor him þere wepeþ boþe childe *and* manne
So grete wepeynge was þere none certeine — XI. 7.
Whan Ector was brouhte *and* frissche y-sleine
To troye Alas þe pite þat was þere
Craccheinge of chekes rendinge eke of here
Whi woldest þou be dede þis wemmen crye
And haddest golde y-nouhe *and* faire Emelye
No man myht glad Theseus* [* See p. 25, n. 26.] — XI. 9.
Saueynge his olde fader Egeus
That knewe þis werlde transmutacione — XI. 10, 11.
As he had seine it vp *and* doune
Ioy after woo *and* woo after gladnesse
And scheweþ hem ensample *and* likkenesse
Riht as þere dide neuer man quod he — XII. 6.
That he ne leuede in Erthe in sum degre
Riht so þere leued neuer man he seide
In Al þis werlde þat sum time he ne deide
This werlde is nouht bot a þoruhe-faire ful of woo
And we bene Pelgremes passinge to *and* fro
Deþe is an ende of euery werldly sore
And ouer al þis ȝitte seide he muche more
To þis effect ful wisly to enhorte
The peple þat þei scholde him recomforte
¶ Duc Theseus wiþ al his besi cure — XI. 13.
Cast nowe where þat þe sepulture
Of goode Arcite y best ymakede be
And eke moste honurable in his degre
And att þe laste he toke conclusione
That þere as first Arcite *and* Palamone

Had for loue þe bataile hem be-twene — *Teseide.* XI. 13.
That in þe selfe groue swete *and* grene
Thare as he had his amorous desires
His compleinte *and* for loue his hote fires
He wolde make a fire in whiche þe office
ffuneral he myht hem al complice
He lete anone command to hakke *and* hewe — XI. 14.
The okes olde *and* leine hem on a rewe
In culpons wele arraide for to berne [leaf 30]
His officers wiþ swift foote þei renne
And ride a-none att his commaundement
And aftere þis Theseus haþ .I.-sent — XI. 15.
After a bere a bere *and* it al ouere spradde
Wiþ cloþe of golde þe richest þat he hadde
And of þe same suyte he cladde Arcite
Vpon his hondes his gloues white
Eke on his hede a coroune of Laurel grene
And in his honde a swerde brihte *and* kene
He laide him bare / þe visage on þe bere
There-wiþe he weppe þat pite was to here
And for þe peple schold seen him aſt — XI. 16.
Whan it was daie he brouhte hem in to þe haſt
That roreþ of þe crie *and* þe soune — XI. 30.
¶ Tho come þis woful Palamone
Wiþ flotery berde *and* ruggy asshi heres
In cloþes blakke dropped al wiþ teres
And passinge oþere of wepeinge Emelye* [* See p. 25, n. 27.] — XI. 31.
The reufulleste of al þis compaignie
In as mulche þat þe seruise schold be
The more noble *and* riche in his degre
Duc Theseus lete forþe þrei stedes bringe — XI. 36.
þat trappede were in stele al gleteringe
And couerde wiþ þe armes of Dan Arcite
Vpon þese stedes grete *and* white
There sitten folke of whiche on bar his schelde
Anoþere his spere vppon his hondes helde

The þrede bare him wiþ his bowe turkeys | *Teseide.*
Of brente golde was þe caas *and* eke þe herneys 2896 XI. 35.
And riden forþe a pas wiþ sorweful chere
To-warde þe groue as ȝe schol after here
The noblest of þe grekes þat þere were · XI. 38.
Vpon her scholdres Cariden þe bere 2900 ·
Wiþ slake paas *and* yȝen rede *and* wete
þoruhe-oute þe Cite be þe maistre strete
þat sprad was al wiþ blake *and* wonder hihe
Riht of þe same is þe strete y-wrye 2904
Vpon þe rihte honde went olde Egeus* [* See p. 25, n. 28.] · XI. 40.
And on þat oþer side Duc Theseus ·
Wiþ vesseles in hir honde of gold ful fine† [† See p. 25, n. 29.] · XI. 37.
Al ful of hony melke *and* blode *and* wyne. 2908 · XI. 40.
Eke Palamon wiþ fulle grete compaignye [leaf 36, back] ·
And efter þat cam woofulle Emelye ·
With fire in honde as was þat time þe gise ·
ffor to done þe Office of fune*r*ale *ser*uise 2912 ·
Hihe Laboure *and* fulle app*ar*aillinge · XI. 18.
Whas att þe *ser*uise *and* att þe fire makeinge ·
That whiþe his grene top þe heuen rauhte | XI. 26.
And twenty faþome on brede þe armes strauhte 2916
This to seine þe bowes were so brode
Of stre first þer was leide mony a lode | XI. 27.
Bot howe þe fire was maked vp on hihte | XI. 22-25.
Ne eke þe names howe þe trees hihte 2920
As oke. fir. beche. aspe. alder holme popelere
Wylowe. elme. plane. asshe. Box. chasteine Binde Laurere
Mapul. þorne. berche. hasul. ewe. whipiltre
Howe þei were felde schal nouht be tolde for me 2924
Ne howe þe goddes ronnen vp *and* doune.
Disherited of here habitacio*u*ne
In whiche þe wonden in rest *and* pes
Nimphes faunes and amadries 2928
Ne howe þe bestes *and* þe birdes alle · XI. 21.
ffledden for ferde whan þe [wood] was falle · ·

			Teseide.
Ne howe þe grounde agast was for þe liht			XI. 21.
That was nouht wonte to se þe sonne briht	2932		
Ne howe þe fire was cowched first wiþ stree		•	XI. 27.
And þan wiþ drye stikkes clouen a three		•	
And þan wiþ grene wode. *and* spicerie		•	
And þan wiþ cloþe of golde *and* of Perrye	2936	•	XI. 29.
And garlondes hongeinge wiþ ful mony a floure		•	XI. 27.
The mirre Thensens wiþ also swete odoure		•	XI. 28.
Ne howe Arcite lay amonge al þis			XI. 30.
Ne what riches abowte his body is	2940		
Ne howe þat Emelye as was þe gyse			XI. 40.
Putte in þe fire of funeral seruise			
Ne howe sche swownede whan maade was þe fire			XI. 41-46.
Ne what sche spak ne what was hir desire	2944		
Ne what Iuels men in þe fire cast			XI. 48, 50.
Whan þat þe fire was grete *and* brende fast			
Ne howe som kast hir schelde *and* som hir spere		•	XI. 56.
And of her vestementes which þat þei were	2948	•	XI. 50.
And coppes ful of melke wyne *and* blode			XI. 60, 61.
In to þe fire þat brente as it were wode			
Ne howe þe Grekes wiþ an huge route [leaf 87]			XI. 62.
Thries riden al þe fire aboute	2952	•	XI. 63.
Vppon þe lefte hand. wiþ a bowe scheteinge			
And þries wiþ here speres Clateringe		•	
And þrie howe þe ladies gan crye			XI. 64.
Ne howe þat ladde was homward Emelye	2956		
Ne howe Arcite is bernte to asshe colde			XI. 67, 68.
Ne howe þat liche wake was yholde			XI. 69-67.
Al þilke nyht. ne howe þe grekes pleie			
The wake playes ne kepe .I. nouht to seie	2960		
Who wersteleþ beste nakede wiþ oile anoynte			
Ne who þat bar him best in no disioynte			
.I. wil nouht tellen al howe þei gone			
Home til Athenes whan þe pleie was done	2964		
Bot schortly to þe point þan wil .I. wende			
And maken of myne longe tale an ende			

¶ Be proces *and* be lengthe of certein ȝeres — *Teseide.* XII. 3, '*giorni*,' instead of *years*.
Al stinte is þe morneynge and þe teres
Of Greges be one general assent
Than semede þare was A parlement
Att Athenes vppon a certeine pointe *and* caas
A-monge þe whiche poyntes spoken was
To haue wiþ certein crontres alliaunce
And haue fully of Thebane obeisaunce
ffor whiche þis noble Theseus a-none
Lete sende after gentil Palamone — XII. 4.
Vnwiste of him whatt was þe cause *and* whie
Bot in his blake cloþes sorwfully
He came att his commandement in hye.
Tho sente Theseus for faire Emelye
Whan þei were sett *and* huyst was in þe place — XII. 5.
And Theseus abiden haþ a space
Or any worde cam fro his wise breste
His eyȝen sett he þere as was his leste
And wiþ a sadde visage he siked stille
And af[t]erward riht þus his wille
¶ The firste mouere of þe cause aboue — IX. 51.
Whan he first maade þe faire cheine of loue — *mondo*, for 'cheine of loue.'
Grete was þeffect. *and* hihe was his entente
Wele wiste he whi. *and* what þere-of he mente — IX. 51.
ffor wiþ þat faire cheine of loue he bonde
The fire þe Aire. þe watere *and* þe londe.
In certeine boundes þat þei maie nouht fle — [leaf 37, back]
That same prince *and* þat meuer quod he — [See IX. 51, 52, and XII. 6.]
Haþ stabled in þis wrechede werlde a-doun
Certeine daies *and* d[omi]nacioun
To al þat ben engrendred in þis place
Ouere þe whiche daie þei maie nouht pace
Aft mowe þei ȝute þo daies a-brugge
There nedeþ none auctorite to lugge.
ffor it is proued be experience
Bot þat me lust declaren my sentence

Than maie men wele by þis order discerne — *Teseide.*
That þilke mouere stable is *and* eterne
Wele maie men knowe bot it be foole
That euery p*ar*tie darrained fro*m*me his hoole
ffor nature haþe nou3t take his begynnynge
Of no p*ar*tie nor of cantel of a thinge
Bot of a thinge þat p*ar*fite is *and* stable
Descendeinge so to it be corrumpable
And þere-for for. his wise purueance
He haþ so. wele. be-sette his ordenance
That specie of þinges and p*ro*gressions
Schullen endure be successions
And nouht eterne wiþ-oute any lye
þis maystowe vnderstonden *and* seen att eye
Lo þe oke þat haþe so longe a norissheynge — XII. 7.
ffro þe time þat it first biginneþ to springe
And haþ so longe a lif as 3e maye see
3ut att þe laste wasted is þe tree
Considereþ eke howe þat þe harde stone
Vnde[r] owre fote on whiche we trede *and* gone
3it wasteþ it as it liþe be þe weie
The brode riuer som time waxeþ dreie
The grete townes see we wane *and* wende
Than 3e see þat al þis þinge haþ ende
Of man *and* womman see we wele also — XII. 8.
þat nedeþ in oone of þe teremes tuo
þis is to seine in 3ouþe or elles age
He mote be dede þe kinge as schal a page
Som in his bede some in þe depe see. — XII. 10.
Some in þe large felde as 3e maie see.
There helpeþ nouht al goþe þat ilke weie
þan may .I. seie þat al þis þinge mote deie
What makeþ þis bot Iubiter þe kinge [leaf 88]
That is prince: *and* cause of al þinge
Conue*r*tynge all vn-to his p*ro*pre wille
ffro whiche it is darreyned soþe to tylle

		Teseide.
And here a-geynes non creature on lyue		
Of no degre aveileþ for to striue	3040	XII. 6.
Than is it wisdome as þenkes me		XII. 11.
To make vertue of necessitee		
And take it wele þat we maye nouht eschewe		
And name þat to vs al is dewe	3044	
And who gruccheþ ouȝt he doþe folye		XII. 13.
And rebel is to hinr þat al maie guye		
And serteinly a man haþ most honoure		XII. 9, 12.
To deyen in his excellence *and* floure	3048	
Whan he is seker of his good name		
Than haþe he done his frendes ne him no schame		
And gladder ouhte his frendes bene of his deþe		
Whan wiþe honoure is ȝolden vp þe breþe	3052	
Than whanne his name apalled is for age		
ffor al forȝeten is his vessellage		
Than is þe best as for a worþi fame		
To deyȝen whan he is best of name	3056	
The contrarie of al þis is wilfulnes		XII. 13.
Whi grucchen we whi haue we heuynes		XII. 14-17.
That good Arcite of chiualrye þe floure		
Departed is wiþ dewte *and* wiþ honoure	3060	
Owte of þis foule Prisone of þis life		
Whi gruccheþ here his cosine *and* his wife		
Of his welfare þat loueþ him so wele		
Kanneþ he hem þonke nay. god wote neuer a dele	3064	
That boþen his soule *and* eke hinr offende		
And ȝit þei mowe her lustes nouȝt amende		
What. may .I. conclude of þis longe serie		
Bot after woo .I. rede vs to be merie	3068	XII. 19.
And þanke Iubiter al his grace		
And er we depar*t*en frome þis place		
.I. rede we make of sorwes two		
O p*ar*fite Ioye lasteinge euermo	3072	
And lokeþe nowe whe[r] moste sorwe is inne		
Ther wil .I. firste amenden *and* be-gynne.		

¶ Suster quod he þis is my ful assente — Tesside.
Wiþ al þau-ys here of my parlemente. 3076
That gentill Palamon ȝoure owen knyht. [leaf 38, back]
That serueþ ȝowe wiþ will and herte and myht
And euer haþe do seþ firste ȝe him knewe
That ȝe schall of ȝowere grace vpon him rewe 3080
And taken him for husbonde and for lorde
Lene me ȝowre honde for þis is oure accorde
Lat see nowe of ȝowre wommanly pyte
He is a kinges broþer sonne parde 3084
And þouhe he weere a pouer bachellere
Sen he haþe serued ȝowe so mony a ȝere
And had for ȝowe so grete aduersite
It moste be considered leueþ me 3088
ffor gentil mercye oute to passen riht
þan seide he þus to Palamon þe knyht
I trowe þere nedeþe litul sermonynge
To make ȝowe assente to þis þinge 3092
Comeþ nere and takeþ ȝowre lady be þe honde
Be-twexen hem anone was maade þe bonde — XII. 69.
þat hiht Matrimoigne or mariage
Be al þe counsel and þe Baronage 3096
And wiþ al blis and melodye — XII. 72.
Haþe Palamon ywedded Emelye
An god þat haþe al þis werlde wrouht
Sende him his loue þat haþ it dere bouht 3100
ffor nowe is Palamon in al his wele — XII. 83.
Leueinge in blis richesse and hele
And Emely him loueþ so tenterly
And he hir se[r]uith so gentilly 3104
That þere no worde was hem be-twene
Of Iolousy or any oþer tene
Thus Endeþ Palamon and Emelye
And god saue al þis faire compaignye 3108

Explicit fabula mylitis.

Incipit prologus Melendenarij

Whan þat þe knyht had þus. his tale y-tolde
In al þe company nas þere ȝonge ne holde
That he ne seide it was noble storye
And worþi for to drawen in memorie 3112
And nameliche þe gentils euerychone
Owre oste louhe *and* swore so mot .I. gone
This goþe ariht vnboklede is þe male
Lat see nowe who schal tel anoþer tale 3116
ffor trewly þe game is wele be-gunne [leaf 39]
Now telleþ ȝe sire monke if ȝe kunne
Somewhat to white wiþ þe knyhtes tale
¶ The Mellere þat for dronken was al pale 3120
So þat vnneþ vpon his hors he sat
He nolde a-valen neyþe hode ne hat
Ne abide noman for his curtasie
Bot in Pilates voice he gan to crie 3124
And swore be armes *and* be blode *and* bones
.I. can a noble tale for þe nones
Wiþ whiche .I. wil nowe qvite þe knyhtes tale
Owre oste sauhe þat he was dronken of ale 3128
And seide abide Robin leüe broþere
Som better man schal tel us firste a-noþer
Abide *and* late vs werken þreftely
Be goddes sowle *quod* he þat wil nouht .I. 3132
ffor .I. wil speken or elles go my weye
Oure Oste answerd. tell on þan a deuelweye
Thowe ert a fole þi witte is ouer come
Nowe herken *quod* þe Mellere al *and* some 3136
Bot first .I. make a *pro*testacio*un*
Þat .I. am dronken .I. knowe it be my sowne
And þere if .I. speke or mys saie
Wiyte it þe ale of Souþewerk .I. ȝowe praie 3140

ffor .I. will tell a legende *and* a lif
Boþen of a carpenter *and* his wif
Howe þat a clerke haþe sette þe wrihtes cappe
The reue ansewerde stinte þi clappe
Latt bue þi lewed dronken harlotric
It is a sinne *and* eke grete folye
To appeiren any man or him defame
And eke to bringe wiues in suche fame
þou maist ynouhe of o*þer*e þinges saine
This dronken Meller spak ful sone a3eine
And seid leue broþer oswolde
Who haþe no wif he is no cokewolde
But .I. seiẽ nou3t *þer*e-fore þat þou art oon
Ther bene ful gode wives Many on
[. . . . . .
. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
Whi ert þou angri wiþ my tale nowe
I. haue a wife p*er*de as wele as þowe
3ete nolde .I. note for þe oxen in my plouhe
Tak vpon me more þan .I. nowhe
As demen of my self þat .I. were oone [leaf 39, back]
.I. will beleue þat .I. am none
An husbonde schal nouht be inquisitif
Of goddes p*ri*uetees ne of his wif
So he may finde goddes foyson þere
Of þe remenant nedeþ nouht to enquere
What schold .I. more seie? Bot þis Mellere
He nolde his wordes for noman forbere
Bot [sayde] his cherles tale in his manere
Me aþenkeþ þat .I. schal reherce hem here
And þer-for euery gentil whight .I. preie
Demeþ nouht for goddes loue þat .I. seie
Of yuel enten bot þat .I. mot reherce
Her tales al be þei better or werse
Or elles falsen so*m*me of my matiere
And þere-fore who so list nouht to here

Torne ouere þe leue *and* chese a-noþer tale
ffor ȝe schal finde. y-nowe grete *and* smale
Of storial þinge þat toucheþ gentillesse
And eke moralite *and* holynesse
Blameþ nouȝt me if þat ȝe chesen a-mys
The meller is a cherle ȝe knowe wele þis
So was þe reue eke *and* oþer mo
And harlotrye þei tolden boþ tuo
Auiseþ ȝowe *and* putte me owte of blame
And eke men schal nouȝte make ernest of game

Explicit prologus.

[*No gap in the MS.*]

Incipit fabula

WHilom þere was dwellyng att Oxenford
A riche gnof *þat* gestis helde to bord
And of his craft he was a Carpentier
With him *þer*e was dwellinge a pouer scolier
Hadde lerne arte bot al his fantasie
Was torned for to leren astrologie
And couþe a certeine of conclusions
To demen be interrogaciones
If þat men axed him in certeine houres
Whan men schold haue drouht or elles schoures
Or if men axed him what schal be-falle
Of c̄uery þinge .I. may nouht reken alle
This clerke was cleped hende Nicholas
Of derne loue he couþe *and* of solas
And *þer*e-to he was sleight *and* wele p*r*iue
And like a maide meke for to see
A chambre had he in þat hostellerie [leaf 40]
Alone wiþ-oute any compaignie
fful fetisly diht wiþ herbes swote
And he him selfe as swete as is þe rote
Of lycoris or of any settewale
His almag̈iste and bokes grete *and* smale
His Astrelabre longeinge to his arte
His augrim stonés leyen faire a parte
On schelues chowched as his beddes hede
His prisse . ycouerid wiþ a foldeynge rede
And al aboue *þer*e leie a gaie sawtrie
On whiche he made a nyht melodie
So swetely þat al þe chambre ronge
And Angelus ad virginem he songe
And after he songe þe kinges note
fful oft blissed was his mery þrote

And þus þe swete clerke his time spente
Affeter his frendes findeynge *and* his rente
This Carpenter had wedded newe a wif
Whiche þat he loued more þan his lif
Of .xviij. ȝere sche was of age
Ielous he was *and* helde hire narwe in cage
ffor sche was wilde *and* ȝonge *and* he was holde
And demed him self bene like a cokewolde
He knewe nouȝt Caton for his witte was rude
That bad men wedde his similitude
Men scholde wedde after hire astate
ffor ȝouþe *and* elde is often att debate
Bot seþen þat he was fallen in þe snare
He moste endure as oþ*er*e folke his kare
ffaire was þis ȝonge wif *and* þ*er*to wiþ al
As any wesel[1] hir bodi gente *and* smal
A seinte sche wered barred al of silke
A barmecloþe as white as any morwes mylke
Vppon hire lendes fol of mony a gore
White was hire smôke *and* broude al be-fore
And eke be-hinde on hire colere aboute
Of cole blak silke w*ith*in *and* eke w*ith*-oute.
The tapes of hir white volupere
Were of þe same sute of hire colere
Hire felet broode of silke *and* sitt ful[1] hihe
And sekurly sche had a lykuruse eye
ffull smaſt y-pulled was hire browes two.
And þo were bente. *and* blake as any. slo.
Sche was ful more blisfuſt for to see
Thane is þe newe perionet tree
And softer þan wolle is of a weþer
And be hir gyrdel[2] hinge a purs of leþere
Tassilde wiþ selke a[n]d p*er*lid wiþ laton
In al þis werlde to seken vpe *and* downe
þere is noman so wise þat couþe þenche
So Gaye a popelote or swiche a wenche

[1 1: *later*]
[2 gyrdel: *later*]
[leaf 40, back]

fful brihter was þe schineinge of hir hewe
Than in þe toure þe noble forgode newe
Bott of hir songe it was so lowde *and* ȝerne
As any swalowe Chiterynge on a berne
There-to sche couþe skippe *and* make a game
As any kide or calfe foloweynge his dame
Hir mouþe was swete as braket or þe meþe
Or horde of appeles layde in haye or heþe
Wynsinge sche was as a Ioli colte
Longe as a maste *and* vpriht as a bolte
A broche sche bare on hire loue colere
As brode as is þe boos of a bokelere
Hir schoes were laced on hir legges hihe
Sche was a *pr*imerol a pigges nye
ffor any lorde to liggen in his bedde
Or ȝit for any good ȝoman to wedde
¶ Nowe sire *and* eft sire so be-fell þe cas
That on .a. daie þis hende Nicholas
fful wiþ þis ȝonge wif to rage *and* to pleie
While þat hire husbond was att Osenaye
As clerkes ben ful sotel *and* ful wheinte
And *pr*iuelye he cauht hire be þe queynte
And seide. ywis bot if .I. haue my. will.
ffor derne loue of þe le*m*man .I. spill
And held hire harde be þe haunche bones
And seide le*m*man loue me wele att ones
Or .I. wille deyen also god me saue
And sche spronge as a colte doþ in þe traue
And wiþ hire hede sche wried fast a-waie
Sche seide .I. wil nouht kisse þe be my. faie.
Whi labbe q*uo*d iche lat be nycholas
Or .I will crie out harrowe *and* alas
Do weie ȝoure hondes for ȝowre curtesie
This Nicholas gan mercie for to crie.
And spake so faire *and* proferd him so fast [leaf 41]
That sche hire loue *gr*auntide him att last

And swore an he-oþe be seinte Thomas of Kent
That sche wolde be att is *com*mandement
Whan þat sche maie hir leisere wele aspie
Mine husbonde is so ful of Ielousye
That bot .I. weite wele *and* be *pri*ue
.I. whote riht wele .I. name but dede q*uod* sche
Ȝe motte be ful derne as in þis cas
Nay *þere*-of care þe nouht q*uod* Nicholas
A clerke hadde liþerli be-sette his while
Bot if he couþe a carpenter begile
And þus þei attorden and. y-sworne
To wayte a tyme as .I. haue tolde be-forne
Whan Nicholas hadde þis euery dele
And þakked hire aboute þe lendes wele
He kiste hire swete *and* takeþ his sautrie
And plaieþ fast *and* makeþ melodie
¶ Than fel it þus þat to þe P*a*rissche cherche
Cristes owen werke for to werche
This good wife went on an haly daie
Hire forhed schone as briht as any daie
So was it whassche whan sche lete hir werke
Nowe was þere of þat chirche a parische clerke
The whiche þat was ycleped Absolon
Crull was his here and as ȝe gold it schone
And strouted as a ffan large *and* brode
fful streighte *and* euen lay his Ioly schode
His rud was rede his yen grei as goos
Wiþ poules wyndowe coruen on his schoos
In hoses rede he went fetisly
Y-cladde he was ful smal *and* p*ro*purly
Al in a kertell of a liht wachett
fful faire *and* ful þike be þe pointes sett
And *þere* vpon he hadd a gaie surplise
As white as is þe blossome on þe Rise
A mery childe he was as god me saue
And wele couþe he laten blode or clippe or schaue

And make a charter of londe or on quitance
In twenti manere q*uo*d he trip *and* daunce
After þe scole of Oxenforde þo
And wiþ his legges casten to *and* fro
And pleyen songes in a smalł rebibe [leaf 41, back]
Ther-to he songe some time a loude quynyble
And also wele couþe he pleie on a geterne
In alł þe toune nas brewes ne tauerne
That he ne viset it wiþ his solas
There any gailerd tapstere was
Bot soþe to seine he was sumdele squaymous
Of fartinge *and* of speche daungerous
¶ This absolon þat Ioly was *and* gaie
Goþe wiþ a censer on þe haly daie
Sensynge þe wyues of þe p*ar*ische faste
And many a louely loke on hem caste
And nameli on þis Carpent*er*es wif
To loken on hire him þouhte a mery lyf
Sche was so p*ro*pre and swete *and* licorous
I dar wele seie if sche hade bue a mous
And he a cat he wolde her hinte anone
This P*ar*iche clerce. þis Ioly Absolone
Haþe in his herte suche a loue longeinge
That of no wif toke he none offringe
For curtesye he seide he wolde none
The mone whan it was nyht ful briht schone
And absolon his geterne haþe ytake
ffor p*ar*amoures he þouhte for to wake
And for he goþ Iolif *and* amorous
Til he came to þe Carpenters hous
A litel after cokkes had. ycrowe
And drissed him vp be a schot windowe
That was vp on þe carpent*er*es walł
He singes in his voice gentilł *and* smalł
Nowe dere lady if þi willes be
.I. preie 3owe þat 3e wil rewe on me

fful wele accordant to his geterneynge
This Carpenter awoke *and* herd him singe 3364
And spake vnto his wif *and* seide anone
What Alison heres þou not Absolone
That chaunteþ þus vnder oure boures wal
And sche ansewerde hir husbonde þ*er*-wiþ-al 3368
ȝis god wote Ioħen .I. wote it eu*ery*. dele
þis passeþ forþe what wil ȝe bet þan wele
ffro daie to daie þis Ioli Absolon
So woweþ hire þat him is woo be-goon 3372
He wakeþ all þe nyght *and* al þe daie [leaf 42]
He kembed his lokkes brode *and* maade hem gaie
He woweþ hire be menes *and* brocage
And swore he wolde bene hir owen page 3376
He singeþ brokkinge as a nyhtingale
He sente hir Meþe *and* Piment *and* spyced ale
And weifres pipeinge hote vnder þe glede 3379
And for sche was of towne he proferd mede Vñ Ouidius Ictibus agrestes
For some folke wil be wonne w*ith* richesse
And sum for strokes *and* som*me* for gentilnesse
Somtime to schewe his lyhtnesse and Maistre
He plaieþ Heraude vpon a scafolde hihe 3384
Bot what aveileþ him as in þis caas
Sche loueþ soo þis hende Nicholas
That absolon maie blowe þe bokkes horne
He ne haþe for his laboure bot a scorene 3388
And þus sche Makeþ Absolon hire Ape
And al his erneste torneþ tiħ a Iape
For soþe is þis p*ro*uerbe it is no lye
Men sein right þus Alweie þe neighe Sleyȝe 3392
Makeþ þe fer leue to be loþe
For þouhe þat Absolon be woode or wroþe
Be cause þat he fer was from hir' siht
This nyhe Nicholas stode in his liht 3396
¶ Nowe bere ȝowe wele hende Nicholas
ffor Absolon may waile *and* singe Alas

And so be-fell it on a saturdaie
This Carpentier was gone to Oseneye
And hende Nicholas *and* Alison
Accorded bue to þis conclusione
That Nicholas schapen hem a wile
þese sely Ielouse husbonde to be-guyle
And if so be þe game went ariht
Sche scholde slepen in his arme al nyht
ffor þis was his desire *and* hire also
And riht anone wiþ-oute wordes moo
This Nicholas no langere wolde tarye
Bot doþe soft vn to his chambre Carye
Boþe mete *and* drinke for a daie or tweye
And to hir husbonde bad hire for to seie
If þat he axede after Nicholas
Sche scholde seie sche nyst where he was
Of al þat daie sche seihe him nouȝt *with Eye* [leaf 42, back]
Sche trowed þat he was in sum Maledye
ffor for no crye hire maide couþe him calle
He wolde ansewere for noþinge þat myht falle
This passeþ forþe al þilke Saturdaie
þat Nicholas stil in his chambur leye
And ete or slepede or dide what him liste
Til þe sonday þat þe sonday goþ to riste
This sely Carpentier haþe grete Merveile
Of Nicholas or what þinge miht him aile
And seide .I. ân adrede be seint Thomas
It stondeþ nouht a-riht wiþ Nicholas
God schelde þat he deyede sodanly
This werlde is nowe ful tekel sikurly
.I. sihe to daie a corps borne to cherche
That nowe on Monondaie last .I. sawhe him werche
Go vp *quod* he vn to [his] knaue anone
Clepe att his dore or knoke wiþ a stone
Looke howe it is *and* tel me boldely.
This knaue goþ him vp ful studely

And att þe chambre dore while þat he stode
He criede *and* knokked as þat he were wode
What howe what do ȝe Maister Nicholay
Howe maie ȝe slepen al þe longe daie
Bot al for nouht he herde nouht a worde
An hole he fonde ful longe vpon a borde
There as þe catte was wonte inne for to crepe
And att þat hole he loke in ful depe
And att þe last he had of him a siht
This Nicholas satt euer gapinge vpriht
As he had keked on þe newe mone
And doune he gope *and* tolde his meister sone
In what araie he sauhe þis ilke man
This Carpenter to blissen him be-gan
And seide helpe vs seint ffritheswide
A man whote litel what him schal be-tide
This man is fallt wiþ his Arstromye
In some wodenes or somme Agonye
.I. thouht ay wele howe it scholde be
Men scholde nouht knowe of goddes priuete
ȝe blissed be alwey a lewed man.
þat nouht bot onely his beleue can.
So ferd anoþer clerke wiþ Astronomye [leaf 48]
He walked in to þe feldes for to prye
vppon þe sterres what þere scholde befalle
Til he was in a marle pitte y-falle
He sawhe nouht þat Bot ȝit be seint Thomas
Me rewþe sore of hende Nicholas
He schal be rated of his stodiynge
If þat .I. maie be Iesus heuen kinge
Gete me a staf þat .I. maie vnder spore
While þat þou Robin heueste vpe þe dore
He schal oute of his stodiinge as .I. gesse
And to þe Chambre dore he gan him dresse
His knaue was a stronge karle for þe nones
And be þe hespe he heue it vp att ones

In to þe flore þe dore fel a-none
This Nicholas satt ay as stiłł as any stone
And euer gaped vp in to þe aire
This Carpenter wende he were in despeire
And hent him be þe scholdres myhtely
And schoke him harde *and* cried spitously
What Nicholas what howe loke a downe
Awake *and* þenke on cristes passion
.I. crouche þe from elues *and* from whihtes
There-wiþe þe nyhtes spel seide he anone rihtes.
Of foure halues. þe hous aboute
And on þe þresshewolde on þe dore wiþ-oute
Ihesu criste *and* seint bendight
Blisse þe house frome eu*e*ry wikke whight
ffor þe nyghte very þe white Pater noster
Where wentestowe þou seinte petur. soster
And att þe last þis hende Nicholas
Gan for to sike *and* seide Alas
Schałł ałł þe werlde be loste ef sones nowe
This Carpenter ansewerd what seistow
What þinke on god as we done men þat swynke
This Nicholas ansewerd ffeche me drynke
And after wiłł .I. speke in p*r*iuete
Of certeine þinge þat toucheþ þe *and* me
.I. wiłł tel it it none oþer man serteine
This Carpentier goþe doune *and* comeþ aʒeine
And brouht of myhty ale a large quarte
And whan þat iche of hem had dronken here parte
This Nicholas his dore fast schette [leaf 43, back]
And doune þe Carpentier be him he sette
And seide Iohñ myne Ostee leue *and* dere
Thowe schalt vpon þi trouþe swere me here
That to whight þou schal þis consel wriee
ffor it is cristees counsełł þat .I. seiee
And if þou tełł it man þou art for-lore
ffor þis venieance þou schalt haue þere fore

That if þou wreye me þou schalt be woode
¶ Nay crist for-beede it for his holy blode
Quod þoo þis sely man .I. nam no labbe
And þouhe .I. seie .I. ne am not leue to gabbe
Saie whatt þou wolte .I. schal it neuer telle
To childe ne wife be him þat haried helle
Nowe Iohñ quod Nicholas .I. wil nouȝt lye
.I. haue .I.-founde in myne astrologie
As .I. haue loked in þe mone brihte
þat nowe a mononday next a quarter nyhte
Schal fal a rayne *and* þat so wilde *and* wode
þat halfe so grete was neuer noes flode
This werlde he seide in lesse þan in an houre
Schal be al dreinte so hydous is þe schoure
Thus schal mankinde drenche *and* lese hir lyf
This carpentier ansewerd alas my wif
And schal sche drenche alas myn Alisoune
ffor sorwe of þis he fel almoste a-doune
And seide is no remedie in þis caas
Whi ȝis for god quod hende Nicholas
If þou wolte worchen after lore *and* rede
Thou maiste nouȝt werchen after þine owen hede
ffor þus seiþe Salomon þat was ful trewe
Werke al be counsel an þu schalt nouht rewe
And if þow worchen wilte be goode counseile
.I vnder-take wiþ-oute mast or seile
ȝit schal .I. saue hire *and* þe *and* me
Haste þow nouht herde how sauede was Noe
Whan þat owre lorde haþe warned him be-forne
That all þe werld wiþ water scholde be for-lorne
ȝis quod þis Carpentier ful ȝore a-go
Hast þou nouht herde quod Nicholas also
The sorwe of Noe wiþ his felauschep
Or þat he myht get his wif to schip
Him had leuer .I. dar wele vnder-take [leaf 44]
Att þilke time þan all his weþeres blake

That sche had a schippe al his selfe alone
And þere-fore wost þow whatt is best to done
This axeth haste *and* of an hastif þinge
Men maie nouht preche ne maake tariynge
Anone go gete vs fast in to þis inne
A knedeynge trowhe or elles a kemelyne
ffor iche of vs bote looke þat þei bene large
In which men mow swymme as in a barge
And hane their vitaile sufficeant
Bot for a day fy on þe remenant
The water schal aslake *and* gone his waie
About p*ri*me vpon þe next daye
Bot Robyne maie nouht witte of þis þi knaue
Ne eke þe maide giłł .I. maie nouht saue
Ax nouht whi for þouhe þou axe me
.I. wil nouȝt tellen goddes p*ri*uete
Suffisebe þe bot if þi wittes Madde
To haue as grete a grace as noe Hadde
Thi wif schal .I. wele saue oute of doute.
Go nowe þi weie *and* spede þe here abowte
Bot whan þou hast for hire *and* þe [*and*] me
Y-geten vs þis knedeinge tubbes þre
þan schalt þou honge hem in rofe fol hihe
þat no man of owre pureance aspie
And whan þou þus haste done as .I. haue seide
And hast oure vitaile faire in hem y-leide
Ande eke an ax to smyte þe corde a two
Whan þat þe water comeþ þat we maie go
An breke an hole on hihe vpon þe gable
Vnto þe gardeine ward ouer þe stable
That we mai freli passen forþe owre weye
Whan þat þe grete schowre is gone awaie
Th[en sch]alt þou swy*mm*e as mery .I. vnder-take
As doþe þe white duke after his drake
Than wil .I. clepe howe .Alison. howe Ioħñ
Be mery for þe flode wil passe a-none

.And þou wilt seine haile Maister Nicholay
Gode morne .I. see þe wele for it is daye
And þan schal we be lordes al oure lif.
Of al þe werlde as Noe *and* his wif.
Bot þat of o þinge .I. warne þe ful riht ' [leaf 44, back]
Bene wele avised vpon þat ilke nyht •
þat we bene entrede in to schippes borde
þat none of vs ne speke nouht a worde
Ne clepe ne crye bot bene in his praiere
ffor it is goddes owen heste dere
Thi wif *and* þou moste honge fer a twynne
ffor þat betwox 3ow schal be no sinne
Ne more in lokeinge þan þer schaft in dede
This ordenance is seide go god þe spede
To morwe att nyht whan men bene al aslepe
Into owre knedeinge tubbes wil we crepe
And sitten þere a-bideinge goddes grace
Go nowe þi weie .I. haue no longer space
To make of þis no longer sermoneinge
Men seine þus. Sende þe wise *and* sei no þinge
Thow ert so wise it nedeþ þe nouht teche
Go saue owre lif *and* þat .I. þe beseche.
¶ This sely Carpentier goþ forþ his weie
fful of of he seide. alas *and* waleweie
And to his wif he tolde his priuete
And sche was warre *and* knewe it bet þan he
What aft þis queynte cast was for to seie
Bot Natheles sche ferd as sche wold deie
And seide alas go forþe þi weie anone
Helpe vs to scape or we bene dede iche oon
.I. am þi trewe verrei wedded wif
Go dere spouse *and* helpe to saue oure lif
¶ Loo whiche a grete þinge is affection
Men may deie of ymaginacione
So depe maye impressione be take
This seli Carpentier beginneþ qwake

Him þenkeþe verraily þat he maie see
Noe flode come walkinge as þe see
To drenche Alison his owen dere
He wepeþ he weileþ he makeþ sori chere
He sikkeþ wiþ ful mony a sory swoghe
And goþe *and* geteþ him a knedeinge troughe
And after a tubbe *and* a kimlyne
And priuely he sent hem to his inne
And henge in þe rofe in p*ri*uete
His owene honde: he made eke leddres þree
To climme by þe ronges *and* þe stakes [leaf 45]
Vn-to þe tobbes hongeinge in þe balkes
And hem vitailled boþe trouhe *and* tubbe
Wiþe brede *and* chese *and* good ale in a Iubbe
Suffisinge. riht ynouhe as for a daie
Bot ar he had maade al þis araie
He sente his knaue *and* eke his wenche also
Vpon his nede to londen for to goo
And on mononday whanne it drouhe to nyhte
He schette his dore wiþ-outen candellyhte
And dressed al þinge as it schold be
And schortely clomben vpe al þre
Thei setten stille wele a forlonge weie
Nowe pater noster Clum seide Nicholaie
And clum. seide Iohñ. *and* Clum seide Alisoñ
This Carpentier seide his deuocion
And stille he sitteþ *and* biddeþe his preier
Awaiteinge on þe reine if he it here
The deþe slepe for wery bisinesse
ffel on þis Carpentier riht as .I. gesse
Aboute Corfew time or litel more
ffor traueile of his goste he groneþ sore
And eft he routeþe for his hede misleie
Doune of þe ladder stalkeþ Nicholeie
And Alison ful soft a-doune sche spedde
Wiþ-outen wordes mo þei gone to bedde

Ther as þe Carpentier is wonte to lye
There was þe reuel *and* þe melodie
And þus liþe Alison *and* Nicholas
In besines or merþe and of solas
Til þat þe bell of lawdes be-ganne to ringe
And freres in þe chauncell gonne singe
¶ This Parissche clerke þis amorous absolon
þat is for loue alwei so wo begone
vpon þe Monondaie was att Osneye
Wiþ company him to desporte *and* pleye
And axed vpon caas a cloistrere
fful priuely after Iohñ þe Carpentiere
And he droughe him a-parte out of þe cherche
And seide .I. note .I. scihe him here nouht wirche
Seþ Saturdaie .I. troue þa he be wente
ffor timbre þere oure Abbote haþ him sent
ffor he is wonte for timebre for to go [leaf 45, back]
And dwellen att þe grange a daie or tuo
Or elles he is at his hous certeine
Wher þat he be .I. kann nouȝt sothely seine
This Absolon ful Ioly was *and* liht
And þouht. Now is time to wake al nyht
For sekurly .I. sawhe him nouhte steringe
Abouten his dore sen dai be-gan to springe
So mote .I. Thriue .I. schal att þe Cokkes crowe
fful priuely knokken att his wyndowe
That stant ful lowe vpon his bowres wall
To Alison Nowe will .I. tellen all
My loue longeinge for ȝit .I. schall nouht mys
That att þe leste waye .I. schal hire kis
¶ Som manere comforþe schal .I. haue parfaie
My mouþe haþe yched all þis longe daie
That [is] a signe of kissinge att þe leste
All nyght me mete eke þat .I. was att a feste
There-fore I. wil go slepe an houre or tueye
And all the nyht þan will .I. wake *and* pleye

Whan þat þe first cokko hath crowe anone
Vp riseþ þis Ioly louer Absolon
And him arrrayeþ gaye *and* pointe deuise
Bot first he ȝeweþ greine *and* licorise
To smellen swote or he had kemped his here
Vnder his tonge a trewe loue he bere
ffor þerby wende he to be gracious
He romeþe to þe carpenteres house
And stiłł he stant vnder þe schotte wyndowe
Vnto his breste it rauht. it was so lowe
An soft he couched wiþ a seme sowne
Watt do ȝe hony combe swete Alisone
Mi faire birde mi swete Sinamome
And wakeþ lemman myne *and* spekeþ wiþe me
Wel litel þinken ȝe vpon my woo
That for ȝoure loue .I. swete ar .I. go
No wonder is þouhe þat .I. swelt *and* swete
.I morne as doþe lome after þe tete
.I.-wis l*em*man .I. haue suche loue longeinge
That ilke a turtul trewe. is my Morneinge
.I. maye note eten no more þan a maide
Go fro þe window Iak fole sche seide
¶ As helpe me god .I. will nouht be compaine [leaf 46]
.I. loue a-noþer ande elles .I. war to blame
Wele bette þan þe be ih*es*u Absolone
Go for þi waie or .I. wil cast a stone
And lat me slepe a twenti deuel weie
Alas q*uo*d Absolon and walawaie
That trewe loue was euer so yuel be-sette
Than kisse me sen it maie be no bette
ffor ih*es*u[1] loue. *and* for þe loue of me [1 MS ihūc]
Wilt þou þan go þi weie þere-wiþ q*uo*d sche
ȝe certes lemman q*uo*d þis Absolon
Than make þe redy q*uo*d sche .I. come anone
[. . . . . .
. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
This Absolon downe sett him on his knes

And seide .I. am a lorde att all degres
And after þis .I. hope þere comeþ more
Lemman þi grace *and* swete birde þine ore
The wyndow scho vndoþe *and* þat in haste
Haue do *quod* sche come of *and* spede þe faste
Leste þat owre neybores þe Asspie
This Absolone gan wipe his mouþe ful drie
Derke was þe nyhte as pyche or as þe cole
And att þe wyndowe owte sche put hire hole
And Absolo[n] him fel no bette ne wers
Bott wiþ his mouþe he kissed hir naked ers
fful sauorly or he was warre of þis
A-bakke he sterte *and* þouht it was a-mys
ffor wele he wiste a wo*m*man haþe no berde
He felte a þinge al roughe *and* longe yherede
And seide fie Alas what haue .I. doo
Tehe *quod* sche *and* clapped þe window to
And Absolon goþe forþe a sory paas
A berde a berde seide hende Nicholas
Be goddes corps þis goþe faire *and* wele
This sely Absolon herde it euery dele
And on his lippe he gan for angur bite
And to him selfe he seide .I. scal þe qwite
Who rubbeth nowe who froteþ nowe his lippes
Wiþ duste wiþ sonde. wiþ strawe wiþ cloþe wiþe chippes
Bot Absolon þat seiþe ful ofte Alas
My soule be-take .I. to sathenas
Bot me were leuere þan al þis toune *quod* he
Of þis dispite awroken for to be.
Alas *quod* he alas .I. ne hadde yblente [leaf 46, back]
His hote loue is colde *and* al yquente
ffor fro þat time þat he had kissed here ers
Of p*ar*amours he sett nouht a cres
ffor he was helede of his maladye
ffull oft p*ar*amours he gan defie
And weppe as doþe a childe þat is ybete
A soft pas he went ou*er* þe strete

Vnto a smyþe Men clepen Daun geruays
þat in his forge smyþeiþ. plouhe hernays
He scharpeþ schare *and* culter bisilie
This Absolon knokkeþ al eselye
And seide vn to geruais *and* þat anone
What who art þou. It am .I. Absolone
What Absolone. What cristes swete tree
Whi rise ȝe so raþe. ey benedicite
Whate eyleþ ȝowe some gaie gerle god it wote
Haþe brouht ȝowe þus on þe veritote
Be seint note ȝe wote wele whatt .I. mene
This Absolon ne rouht nouht a bene
Of al his pleie no worde aȝeine he ȝaffe
He had more towe on his distaffe
Than geruays knewe and seide frende so dere
The hote Culter in þe chymene here
As lene it me .I. haue þer-wiþþe to done
.I wil bringe it aȝein ful sone
Gerueys ansewerde Certes were it golde
Or in a poke nobles al vntolde
Thowe scholdest haue as .I. am trewe smyþþe
Ey Cristes foo what will ȝe do þer-wiþþe
There-of q*uo*d Absolon be as be maye
I. schal wele telne it þe to morwe daie
And cauhte þe Culter be þe colde stele
fful soft owte att þe dore he gan stele
And wente vnto þe Carpentiers wal
He koughed first *and* knokked þer wiþ al
vpon þe wyndowe riht as he dide ere
This Alison ansewarde who his þere
þat knokkeþ so .I. warant. it a þefe
Whi naye q*uo*d he god wote my swete lefe
.I. am þin Absolon þin derleinge
Of golde q*uo*d he .I. haue þe browht a ringe
Mi modere ȝafe it me so god me saue [leaf 47]
fful fyne it is *and* þarto wel y-graue

þis wil .I ȝeuen þe. if þou me kisse
þis Nicholas was resen for to pisse
And þouhte he wolde amenden al þe Iape
He scholde kisse his ers er þat he scape
And vpe þe windowe dede he hastely.
And oute his ers he put *priuelye*
Ouer þe buttok to þe haunche bone
And þer-wiþ spak þis clerke þis absolone
Speke swete birde .I. note where þu ert
This Nicholas anone lete flie a fart
As grete as it had be a þonder dinte
That wiþ þat stroke he was almost yblint
And he was rede wiþ his yren hote
And Nicholas in þe ers he smote
Of goþe þe scynne an handebrode aboute
The hote culter so brent his toute
¶ And for þe smerte he wende for to deie
As he were woode for woo he ganne to creie
Helpe water water helpe for goddes herte
This Carpentier owte of his slomere sterte
And herde one Crie water as he was wode
And þouht alas Nowe *comme*þ Noes flode
And sett him vp *with* wordes moo
And wiþe an ax he spote þe corde a twoo
And doune goþe al He fonde Neiþer to selle
No brede Nor ale til he cam to þe selle
Vpon þe flore *and* þer aswowen he laye
Vp sterte Hire Alison *and* Nicholaye
And criede oute *and* harrowe in þe strete
The neyhebores boþe smal *and* grete.
In ronnen for to gauren vpon þis man
That on swoune laie boþe pale *and* wan
For wiþ þat fal he broken haþ his arme
Bot stonde he moste vn-to his owen harme
For when he spake he was a-none borne doune
Wiþe hende Nicholas *and* Alisoune

Thei tolden eue*r*y man þat he was wode
He was a-gast so of þe Nowels flode
Thurghe fantasie þat of his vanite
He had him bouhte knedeyng tubbes þre
And had hem hongede in þe roofe aboue [leaf 47, back]
And þat he preide him for goddes loue
To sitten in þe roof *par* compaignye
The folke gan lawhen att his fantasie
An to þe roofe þei keken *and* þei gape
And torned al his harme vnto a Iape.
ffor what so þis Carpentier ansewerde
It was for nouht no man his resone herde
Wiþe oþes grete he was so sworne y-doune
That he was holden woode in alle þe toune
ffor eue*r*y clerke anone riht ichone helde wiþ oþere
Thei seide þe man is wode my leue broþere
And eue*r*y white gan lauhen att his strif
Thus swyued was þe Carpentiers wif
ffor al his kepeinge *and* his Ielouseie
And Absolon haþe keste hire hir neþer eye
And Nicholas is scalded in his toute
This tale is done *and* god saue al þe route.

Explicit fabula Molendena*rii*

[*No gap in the MS.*]

Incipit prologus.

WHan folke han lawhen att þis nyce caas
Of Absolon *and* hende Nicholas
Diuers folke diuersely þei seide
Bot for þe more parte þei lowhe *and* pleide
Ne att þis tale I. sauhe no man him greue
Bot it were onely Oswolde þe Reue
Be cause he was of Carpenteres craft
A litel ire is in his hert laft
He gan to gruche *and* blame it a lite
So þeyke quod he ful wele couþ .I. ȝow quyte
Wiþ blerynge of a proude mellers eye
If þat me liste to speke of ribaudie
Bot ik am olde me list nouht pleie for age
Gras time is done my foder is forage
This white toppe writes myne olde ȝeres
Myne herte is also moulde. as myne heres
Bot if .I. fare as doþe an openers
þat ilke fruyte is euer longe þe werse
Til it be roten in molloke *and* in stree
We olde men .I. drede so fare we
Til we be roten can we nouht be ripe
We hopen al-weie while þe werld wil pipe
For in owre wille þere stikeþ euer a naile [leaf 48]
To haue an hore here *and* a grene taile
As haþe a leke for þouhe oure myht be gone
Owre wille desireþ foly euery in one
ffor whan we maie nouhte done þan wil we speke
ȝit in owre hasschen olde is fire y-reke
ffoure gledes han we whiche .I. schal deuise
Auauntynge. lyeinge. Anger. *and* Couetise
This foure sperlkes longeþ vnto elde
Owre olde limmes Mowe wele bene vnwelde

Bot wil[1] ne schal nouht failen þat is soþe
And ȝit haue .I. alwei a coltes toþe
Aȝ mony a ȝere as it is passed henne
Sen þat my tap of lif beganne to renne
ffor sekerly whan .I. was borne a-none
Deþe drowhe þe tape of lif *and* lete it gone
And eue*r*y siþþe haþþe so þe tap .I.-ronne
Tiłł þat al-moste al empti is the tonne
The streme of lif nowe droppeþ on þe chimbe
The seli tonge maie wele ringe *and* climbe
Of wrechedenesse þat passed is ful ȝore
Wiþ olde folke saue dotage is no more
¶ Whan þat oure oste had herd þis *ser*monynge
He gan to speke as lordly as a kinge
He seide what a-mounteþ al þis witte ·
What schal we speke al day of holy writte
The deuel maade a reue for to preche
Or of souter schipman or a leche
Say forþe þi tale *and* tary nouht þe time
Loo depford *and* it is halfe weie prime
Loo grenewiche þat mony a schrewe is inne.
It were al time þi tale for to gynne
¶ Nowe sires q*uo*d Oswalde þe reue
.I preie ȝowe al þat ȝe nouht ȝowe greue
Thowhe .I. ansewere *and* sumdel sett his howue
For leueful it is wiþ force force to schowue
This dronken melle haþe .I.-tolde us here
Howe þat be-giled was a carpentier
P*ar*auentur in scoren for .I. am one
And be ȝoure leue .I. schal him quyte anone.
Riht in his cherles termes wil .I. speke
I preie to god his neke mot he breke
He can wele in myne eye seen a stalke
Bot in his owen he can nouht sene a balke

[1 A and *e* have been scratched out to reduce this word.]

þe revese tale / begynneþ here [leaf 48, back]

At Trumpyngton nouht fer' fro Cambrugge
There goþe a broke. *and* ouere þat a brugge
Vppon þe whiche broke þere stant a Melle
And þis is verrey soþ þat .I. telle
A meller was þere duellinge mony a daie
As any pekok he was proude *and* gaie
Pipe he couþe *and* fisshen *and* nettes bete
And torne coppes *and* wele wrastel *and* schete.
Ay be his belte he bare a longe Panade
And of a swerde ful trenchant was þe blade
A Ioly popper bare he in his puche
Ther was no man for perile dorst him touche
A scheffeld þwitel bare he in his hose
Rounde was his face *and* kamuse was his nose
As pilled as an hape was his Sculle
He was a Market beter att þe fulle
Ther was no whihte þat dorst honde oñ him ligge
Bot if he swore he schole anone abegge
A þefe he was for soþe of corne *and* mele
And þat a sleigh̃. *and* vsand for to stele
His name was hoten deynous symkyne
A wife he had commen of Noble kinne
The parsoñ of þe toune hir fadere was
Wiþe hire he ȝafe mony a panne of bras
For þat Simkin schold in his blode allye
Sche was yfostrede in a Nonnerye
ffor Simkin wold no wif as he seide
Bot sche were wele ynorissched *and* a maide
To saue his astate of ȝomanrye
And sche was proude *and* pert as a pye
A ful faire siht was it vppon hem tuo
On Halidaies be-forne hire wolde he go

With his tepet wonden aboute his hede
And sche cam after in a gide of rede
And simkyn hadd hosen of þe same
Thare dorste no whiht clepen hire bot dame
Was none so hardy þat wente be þe weie
That dorste with hire ones rage or pleie
Bot if he wolde be sleine of Simkynne
Wiþ panade or wiþ knyf or wiþ Boydekynne
ffor Ielous folke bene *per*lous euer mo
Al-gates þei wolde here wives wenden so
And eke for sche was somdele smoterliche [leaf 49]
Sche was as deyne as water in a diche
As ful of Hokere *and* of bismare
Hir þouht þat a lady schold spare
What for hire kinred *and* hire Nortelrie
That sche had lerned in the Nonnerye
A douhter had þei be-twexe hem two
Of twenty ȝere wiþ-outen any moo
Saueinge a childe þat was of halfe ȝere age
In cradel it ley. *and* was a *pro*pur page
þis wenche þikke *and* wele y-groue was
wiþ Camois nose and eyen. grei as glasse
wiþ buttokes brode. *and* brestes rounde *and* hihe
Bot rihte faire was hire here .I. wil nouht lye
The *par*son of þe toune for sche was so faire
In purpos was to make hire his hayre
Boþe of his Catel *and* his Mesuage
And strange he maade it for hire Mariage
His purpos was to be-stowe hire hye
In to so*m*me worþi blode of Auncestrie
ffor holy cherche goode mot be despended
On holy cherche blode þat is descended
Ther-fore he wolde his holy blode honoure
þouhe þat holy cherche scholde deuoure
Grete soken haþe þis meller oute of doute
Wiþ wete *and* malte of al þe lande aboute

And namely þer was a grete College
Men clepen þe solier halle att Cantabregge
There was hir whete *and* eke his malte ygrou*n*de
And on a daye it happide on a stounde 3992
Seeke laie þe Maunciple on a Maledye
Men wenden wisly þat he scholde deye
ffor whiche þis meller stale boþe mele *and* corne
An hundreþ time more þan be-forne 3996
ffor þere be-forne he stale bot curteysly
Bot nowe he was a þef outrageou[s]ly
ffor whiche þe wardeine chidde *and* made fare
Bot þere-of sette þe Meller nouht a tare 4000
He crakke bost *and* swore it was nouht soo
Than were þere ȝonge scolers tuo
That dwelten in þe hal of whiche .I. seye
Testif þei were *and* lusti for to pleie 4004
And oonely for her mirþe *and* reuelrie [leaf 49, back]
Vppoñ þe wardeine besely þei crie
To ȝeue hem leue bot a litel stounde
To goone to melle *and* seen her corne. y-grounde 4008
And hardely þei dorst leine her neke
þe Meller schold nouht stele hem half a pekke
Of corne ne be sleihte ne be force heme reue
And att þe laste þe wardeine ȝaf hem leue 4012
Ioñ hight þat one. *and* Aleyne hiht þat oþere
Of one towne were þei borne þat hiht stroþere
ffer in þe Norþe .I. can nouht tel where
This Aleine Makeþ redi all his gere 4016
And one an hors þis sak he cast anone
fforþe goþe Aleyne þe clerke *and* also Ione
Wiþ good swerde *and* wiþ bokeler be his side
Ioh̃n knewe þe weie him nedeþ no gide 4020
And att þe melne þe sakke adoune he laythe
Alayn spak first. al haile Simonde in fayþe
Howe fareþ þi faire douhter *and* þi wife
Alayne welcome q*uo*d Simkin be my life 4024

And Iohñ also howe nowe what do ȝe here
Be god *quod* Iohñ. Simond. nede haþe no pere
Him be-houeþ *serue* him self þat haþe no sweyne
Or elles he is a fôole as clerkes seine
Oure Maunciple .I. hope he wil be dede
Swa werkes him þe wanges in his hede
And þere-fore es .I. come *and* alswa Aleine
To grinde oure corne *and* carie it ham aȝeine
.I. prei ȝowe spede vs heþen þat ȝe maye
It schal be done *quod* Simkin be my faye
¶ What wiłł ȝe done while þat it is in hande
Bed god. riht be þe hoper will .I. stande
Quod Iohñ *and* see howe þe corne goþe Inne
ȝit sawe .I. neuer be my fader kinne
Howe þat þe hoper wagges tiłł and fra
Aleyne Ansewerd Iohñ wil-tow swa
Than wil .I. be by-neþe be my crounc
And see howe gates þe mele falles adowne
In-tiłł þe troughe þat schałł be my disporte
Quod Iohñ in faaþe .I. es al of ȝowre sorte
.I. es as il a Melnere as es ȝe
This Mellere smyled of here Nicite.
And þouht al þis nys done bot for a wyle [leaf 50]
þei weene þat no man may þem be-gile
Bot be my þreft ȝit schal .I. blere here eye
ffor al þe sleight in hire philosophie
þe moo qweinte crekes þat þei make
þe more wil .I. stele whan .I. take
In stede of flowre ȝit will .I. ȝeue hem branne
The grettest clerke ne is nouȝt þe wiseste manne
As whilome to þe wolfe þus spak þe mare
Of al hire arte counte .I. nouhte a tare
Oute att þe dore he goþe ful *priuelye*
Whan þat he sawhe his time softly
He lokeþe vp *and* doune til he haue founde
The clerkes hors *þere* as it stode bounde

Be-hinde þe Mille vnder a leuesel
And to þe hors he goþ him feire *and* wel
He strepeþ of þe bridel riht a-none
Whan þe hor[s] was laus he ginneþ to gone
Toward þe fenne þere wilde mares renne
And forþe wiþe wehe þoruho þikke *and* þoruh þenne
This mellere goþe aȝein no worde he seide
Bot doþ his note and wiþ his clerkes pleide
Til þat her corne was faire *and* wele ygrounde
And whan þe mele is sakked and ybounde
This Iohñ goþe owte *and* findeþ his hors aweie
And gan to crie harrowe *and* walaweie
Oure hors is loste Aleine for goddes banes
Steppe on þi fete man come of al att anes
Alas oure wardeine has his palfraie lorne
This Aleine al for-ȝat boþe mele *and* corne
Al was owte of his mynde his hosbandrie
What whilke waye es he gane he gan to crye
The wife cam lepeinge inwarde att a renne
Sche seide Alas ȝoure hors goþe to þe fenne
Wiþ wilde mares as faste as he may go
Vnþanke com on his hand þan bonde him so
And he þat better scholde haue knet þe Reyne
Allas quod Iohñ Aleine for cristes peine
Lay doune þi swerde. *and* I wil myne alswa
.I. es ful swift god wate as is a ra
Be goddes hert he sal not scape vs baþe
Whi ne hadde þou putte þe capel in þe laþe
Il a hayle be god aleyne þou es a grete fonne [leaf 50, back]
Thes sely Clerkes han ful fast ronne
To-warde þe fenn bothen Aleyne *and* eke Iohñ
And whan þe Meller sihe þat þei were gone
He half a busschel of her flour haþe take
And bad his wife go knede it in a kake
And seide .I. trowe þe clerkes weren aferd
ȝit can a meller Make a clerkes berde

ffor al his arte ȝit late hem gone hire weie
Lo where he goþe ȝe latt þe children pleie
Thei get him nouht so lihtly be my crowne
þeis seli clerkes rennen vp *and* doune
wiþ kepe kepe stande stande .Iossa warderere
Ga whistil þou *and* .I. schal kepe him here
Bot schortly til it was verrei nyht
þei couþe nouhte þouhe þei dide al her myht
Hir caple cache he ran alwei so faste
Til in a diche þei cauht him att þe laste
wery *and* wete as best is in þe reine
Comeþ sely Iohñ. *and with* him commeþ Aleine
¶ Alas q*uo*d Iohñ þe daie þat .I. was borne
Nowe er we dreuen til heþinge and til scoren
Owre corne is stolle Men wil vs foles calle
Boþe þe wardeine *and* owre felawes alle
And Namely þe Meller walewaye
Thus pleyneþ Iohñ as he gaþ be þe weie
Towarde þe Melle *and* bayard in his honde
The meller sittinge be þe fire he fonde
ffor it was nyht *and* ferþer myht he nouht
Bot for þe loue of god þei him be-souht
Off herboruhe *and* of ese as for her penye
The Mellere seid ageine. if þere be anye
Swyche as it is ȝute schal ȝe haue ȝoure part
Myne hous is·streite bot ȝe haue lerned arte
ȝe can be argument Make a place
A Mile brode of twenti foote of space
Latt se nowe if þis place Maie suffise
Or make it Romer wiþ speche as is ȝoure gise
Now Simond seid þis Iohñ be seint Cutberde
Ay es þou Mery *and* þat is faire ansewerde
.I. haue herde saye Men salle taken of tua þinges
Swilke as he fint or swilke as he bringes
Bot specialy .I. praie þe ooste dere [leaf 51]
Gete vs sum mete *and* drinke *and* make vs chere

And we wil payen trewly att fulle
Wiþ empti handes men maye nouhte haukes tulle
Lo here owre siluere redy for to spende
This Meller to þe toune his douhter sende
ffor al *and* brede *and* rosted hem a goos
And bonde her hors it schold no more go loos
And in his owen chambre he maade hem a bede
Wiþ schetes *and* wiþ chalons faire y-sprade
Nouht fro his owen bedde ten fote or tuelue
His douhter had a bedde al be hire selue
Riht in þe same chambre by. *and* bye
It myht be no bet *and* cause whie
Ther was no romer herboruhe in þe place
Thei soupen *and* þei speken hem to solace
And drenken euer stronge ale att þe beste
Aboute mydnyhte wente þei to reste
Wele haþe þis Mellere vernysshed his hede
fful pale he was for-dronken *and* nouht rede
He ȝexeþ *and* he speke þ þoruhe þe nose
As he war on þe quakke or one þe pose
To bede he goþe *and* wiþ him goþe his wif
As any Iay he lyht was and Iolif
So was hir Ioly whistel wele y-wette
The crade att þe bedes feete is sette
To rokken and to ȝeue þe childe to souke
And whan þat dronken was al in þe crouke
To bedde wente þe douhter riht anone
To bedde goþe Aleine *and* also Iohñ
There nas no more þem neded no dwale
This Meller haþe so wisly bibbed ale
That as an hors he snowrteþ in his slepe
Ne of his taile behinde he toke no kepe
His wif bare him a burdon a ful stronge
Men myhten here routeynge halfe a forlonge
The wenche routeþe eke *par* comopaignye
Aleyne þe clerke þat herde þis melodye

He poukede Iohõn *and* seide slepest þou
Herdest þou euer slyke a sange or nowe
Lo swilke a compline es be-tuene hem alle.
A wilde fire on þeire bodies falle
Wha herde euere slyke a ferly þinge [leaf 51, back]
3e þei schal haue þe floure of il endynge
¶ This lange myhte þer sal .I. haue na reste
Bot 3it na force al sal be for þe beste
ffor Iohñ seide he as euere mote .I. þriue
If þat .I. maye þe wenche wil .I. swyue
Some esement haþ þe lawe schapen vs
ffor Iohñ *þere* is a lawe þat seiþe þus
þat if a man in o pointe be agreuede
þat in a-noþer he sal be releuede
Oure corne is stollen soþely it is no naye
And we haue hade an yuel fitte to daye
And seen .I. schal haue none amendement
Ageyn my losse .I. wil haue esement
Be goddes saule it sal nane o*þer*e be
This Iohñ Ansewerde Aleine avise þe
The Meller is a p*ar*lous man he seide
And if þat he oute of his slepe a-breide
He myhte done vs baþe a velanye
Aleyne ansewarde .I. count him nat a flye
And vpe he reste *and* be þe wenche he crepte
þis wenche lay vpriht *and* fast sche slepte
Tyl he so nyhe was or sche myht spye
That it hadde bene to late for to crie
And schortly for to seye þei were att one
Now plaie Aleine for .I. wil speke of Iohñe
This Iohñ liþe stiłł a furlonge waie or two
And to him selfe he makeþ reuþe *and* woo
Alas q*uo*d he þis is a wikked Iape
Now may .I. saie þat .I. es bot an ape
3it haþe my felawe sum what for his harme
He haþe þe Mellers douhter i*n* his arme

He Auntre him *and* haþ his nedes spedde
And .I. ly as a draf sakke in my bedde
And whan þis Iape is tolde anoþer daie
.I. saⱡ be holden a daff a Cokeneye
.I. wil arise *and* auntre it it be my faithe
Vnhardy is vnsely þus men seyþe
And vppe he ros *and* softly he went
Vn to þe cradel *and* in his honde it hente
And bare it soft vn to his beddes fete
Sone after þe wife hire routeynge lete
An gan to wake and went hir oute to pisse [leaf 52]
And cam a-gaine *and* gan hir cradel Misse
An groped here *and* þere bot sche fonde none
Allas quod sche .I. had almost mys gone
I hadde al-moste gone to þe clerkes bedde
Ey benedicite þan had .I. foule .I.-spedde
And forþe sche goþe til sche þe cradel fonde
Sche gropeþ alwey forþer wiþ hire honde
And fonde þe bedde *and* þouht nouht bot goode
Be cause þat þe cradel by it stode
And neste where sche was for it was derke
Bot faire *and* wele sche crepe in to þe clerke
And liþe ful stiⱡ. *and* wolde haue cauht a slepe
Wiþ-in a while þis Iohñ þe clerke vp lepe
And on þis goode wife he leiþe on sore
So mery a fitte ne had sche not fulⱡ 3ore
He prikeþ harde *and* depe as he were madde
þis Ioly lif haue þese tuo clerkes ladde
Til þat þe þredde koke be-gan to singe
Aleyne wex wery in þe dawneinge
ffor he had swonken aⱡ þe longe nyht
And seide faire wele Malyn swete whight
The daie is come .I. maie no longer bide
Bot euere-mo where-so .I. go or ride
.I. am þine owen clerke so haue .I. sele
Nowe dere lemman quod sche go fare wele.

Bot or þou go oo þinge .I. will þe telle
Whan þat þou wendest homwarde be þe melle
Riht att þe entre of þe dore be-hinde
Thou schalt a cake of halfe a buscheⁱⁱ finde
That was ymaked of þin owen mele
Whiche þat .I. helpe my sire for to stele
And goode lemman *and* god þe saue *and* kepe
And wiþ þat worde almost he gan to wepe
Aleine vprist *and* þouht or þat.It dawe
.I. wil go crepen inne be my felawe
And fonde þe cradel wiþ his honde anone
Be god þouht [he] al wrange .I. haue mys gone
Myne hede is toty of my swynke to nyhte
þat makeþ me þat .I. go nouht arihte
.I. wote wele be þe cradel .I. haue mys go
Here liþe þe mellere *and* his wif al so
And forþe he goþe a twenty deuel weye [leaf 52, back]
Vnto þe bedde *þere* as þe Meller leye
He wende haue cropen be his felawe Iohñ
And by þe Meller ine he crape a-none
And kauht him be þe nekke *and* soft he spakke
He seide þou Iohñ þou swineshede awake
ffor cristes soule *and* here a noble game
ffor [by] þat lorde þat called is seinte Iame
As .I. haue þries in þis schorte nyhte
Swyuede þe meller douhter bolt vpriht
While þou hast as a cowarde bene agaste
3e false harlot q*uo*d Meller haste
A false traytur false traitur q*uo*d he
Thou schal be dede be goddes dignite
Who dorste be so bolde to disp*ar*age
My douhter þat is comen of suche lignage
¶ And be þrote bolle he cauht Aleyne
And he hinte him dispitously a-3eine
And one þe nose he smote him wiþ his fiste
Doune run þe blode streme vpon his briste

And in þe flore wiþ nose *and* mouþe to-broke
Þei walowe as tuo pigges in a poke
And vpe þei gone and doune a-ȝeine anone
Til þat þe meller sporned att a stone
And doune he fel bakwarde vpon his wif
That wist no þinge of þis nice strif
ffor sche was fal a slepe a litel wyht
Wiþ Iohōn þe clerke þat waked had al þe nyhte
And wiþ þe fal oute of here slepe sche braide
Helpe holy cros of bromeholme sche saide
In manus tuas lorde to þe .I. caſt
Awake Simonde þe fende is on me faſt
Myne herte is broken helpe .y. ne am bot dede
There one vp my wombe *and* vp myne hede
Helpe Simkyn for þe false clerkes fihte
Þis Iohn̄ stert vp al so fast as eu*er* he myhte
And grasped be þe walles to *and* fro
To finde a staf *and* sche sterte vp al so
And knewe þat estres beter þan dide þat Iohn̄
And by þe wal a staf sche fande a-none
And sawhe a litel schimeringe of a lyght
ffor att an hole in schone þe mone briht
And be þat liht sche seihe hem boþe two [leaf 53]
Bot sekerly sche nyst who wa[s] who
Bot as sche sauhe a white þinge in hire eye
And whan sche gan þis white aspie
Sche wende þe clerke had wered a volupere
And wiþe þe staf sche drowhe ay nere *and* nere
And wende haue hit þis Aleine att fuſt
And smote þe Mellere on þe pilled scoſt
That downe he goþe and cried harrowe .I. deye
This Clerkes bet him wele *and* lete him lye
And greyþen þeym *and* toke her hors a-none
And eke here mele *and* on þeire weie þei gone
And att Melle ȝit þei toke her cake
Of halfe a busschel flowre ful wel y-bake

¶ Thus is þe proude Mellere wele ybete
And haþe yloste þe grindeinge ofe þe whete
And paiede for þe sopere euery dele
Of Aleyne *and* of Iohñ þat bet him wele
His wif is swyue *and* his douhte als
Lo swyche it is a mellere to be fals
And þer-to þis prouerbe is seide ful soþe
Him þar note wene wele þat yuel doþe
A gylour schal him self be-giled be.
And god þat sitteþ hihe in Maiestee
Saue al þis compainye grete *and* smale
Thus haue .I. quyte þe Meller in my tale

Explicit fabula

[*No gap in the MS.*]

Incipit P*ro*log*us* Coce.

THe coke of london while þe reue spakke
For Ioy him þouht he clowde him on þe bakke
Ha ha q*uo*d he for cristes passione 4327
This Mellere haþe a scharpe conclusione **þe koce.**
Vpon his argument of herbegage
Wele seide Salamon in his langage
Ne bringe nouhte eu*er*y man in to þine hous
For herberwynge be nyhte is p*er*ilous 4332
Wele ouhte a man avisede for to be
Whome þat he brouhte in to his p*ri*uete
.I. prei to god so ȝeue me sorwe *and* care
If euer siþen .I. hight Hogge of ware 4336
Herd .I. mellere better sett a werke
He had a Iape of Males in þe derke
An þere-fore if ȝe wowche saue to here [leaf 53, back]
Bot god for-bede þat we stente here 4340
A tale of me þat am a por man
.I. wil ȝowe tel as wele as eu*er* y can
A litel Iape þat felle in owre Citee
¶ Owre Oste ansewerde *and* seide .I. graunt it þe 4344
Now tell on Roger. loke þat it be goode
For mony a paste haste þou laten blode
And mony a Iak of dou*er*e hast þou solde
That haþ bene twis hote *and* twis colde 4348
Of Mony a pilgrim hast þou cristes curse
For of þi p*er*celly ȝit þei fare þe wrse
Þat þei haue eten wiþ þe stoble goose
For in þi schope is mony a flie lose 4352
Nowe tell on gentil roger be þi name
Bot ȝit .I. prey þe be nouhte wrothe for game
A man maie seie ful loþe in game *and* plaie
Thou seist ful soþe q*uo*d Roger be my faie 4356

Bot soþe pleie. quade pleie as the flemynge seiþe
And þer-fore herry baillif be þi feiþe
Be þou nouht wroþe er we departen here
þouhe þat myne tale be of an Ostelere 4360
Bot naþeles .I. wil nouȝt tel it ȝit
Bot or we departe .I.-wis þou schalt be ꝗuyt
And ther wiþ al he lowhe *and* made chere
And seide his tale as ȝe schal after here 4364

Explicit prologus.

[*No gap in the MS.*]

Incipit fabula

A Prentis whilom duelled in oure Cite
And of a craft of vitaillers was he
Gaillard he was as goldefinche in þe schawe
Broune as a bery. a *pr*opur schort felawe
Wiþ lokkes blake y-kempt ful fetisly
Daunce he couþe so wele. *and* Iolyly
þat he was clepede P*er*kinne reueloure
He was as ful of loue *and* p*ar*amo*ur*
As is þe hyve ful of hony swete
Wele was þe wenche wiþ him myht mete
Att euery bridel wolde he singe *and* hoppe
He loued bett þe tauerne þan his maistier schoppe
For whan þer any rydeinge was in chepe
Owte of þe schoppe þeder wolde he lepe
Til þat he hadde al þe siht yseyne
And daunced wele wolde he nouȝt come aȝeine
And gaderd him a Meyne of his sorte [leaf 54]
To hoppe *and* singe *and* maken swiche disporte
And þere þei setten steuen for to mete
To pleine att þe dys in suche a strete
For in þe toune was þere no p*r*entis
þat fairer couþe cast a paire of dis
Than p*er*kyn couþe *and* þ*er*e-to he was fre
Of his dispense in place of p*r*iuete
¶ That fonde his Maister wele in his chaffare
For oft time he fonde his box ful bare
For sekurly a prentis reueloure
þat haunteþ dis. riot or p*ar*amoure
His Maister schal it in his schoppe a-bye
Al haue he not part of þe menstralcye
For þeft *and* ryot þei bene conu*er*tible
Al conne he plaie on geterne or ribible

Reuele *and* treuþe as in a louhe degre
Thei bene ful wroþe aldaie as men maie see
This Ioly prentis with his maister bode
Til he weer nyhe oute of his prentishode
Al were he shybbed boþe erly *and* late
And sum tyme ladde wiþ reuel to newgate
Bot att þe last his maister him be-þought
Vpon a daie whan he his paper souht
Of a prouerbe þat seiþe þis same worde
Wele better is roten appel oute of horde
Than þat it rote al þe remenant
So fareþ it be a riotous seruant
It is full lasse harme to latt it passe
þan he schende al þe seruantes in þe place
Thare-for his maister 3af him aquitance
And bad him go wiþ sorwe *and* wiþ meschaunce
And þus þis Iolif prentise had his leue
Nowe lat him riote al þe nyhte or leue
And for þere is no þef wiþ-owten a lowke
þat helpeþ him to wasten *and* to sowke
Of þat he bribe can or borwe maye
Anone he sent his bedde *and* his araie
Vnto a Conper of his owen sorte
þat loued dis *and* reuel *and* disporte
And had a wife þat helde for countinance
A schoppe *and* swyued for his sustenance.

[*No gap in the MS.*]

APPENDIX TO GROUP A.

[THE SPURIOUS TALE OF GAMELYN.]

[*Spurious Link.*]

Fye þer-one it is so foule .I. will nowe tell no forþere [leaf 54, bk]
For schame of þe harlotrie þat seweþ after
A velany it were þare-of more to spell
Bot of a knyhte *and* his sonnes My tale .I. wil forþe tell

[*Tale.*]

And þere-fore listeneþ . *and* herkeneþ þis tale ariht.
And ȝe schullen here of a douhte knyht
Sir Iohñ of Boundys was his name
He couþe of nortur *and* muchel of game [wanne
þre sonnes þe knyht had *and* wiþ his body he hem
The eldest was a muche schrewe *and* sone he beganne
His breþerne loued wele here fader *and* of him were agast
The eldest deserued his fader curs *and* had it att þe last
The good knyht his fadere leuede so ȝore
That deþe was commen him to *and* handeled him sore
The goode knyht cared sore seke þer he leye
How his children schold leuen after his deye
He had bue wide where bot no husbonde he was
Att þe londe þat he [1] had was verrey purchas [1 he *later*]
Fayne he wolde it were y-dressed a-monge hem al
That iche of hem miht have his parte as it wald fal
Tho sente he in-to Contre after wise knyhtes
To helpen delen his londes *and* drisse hem to rihtes
He sent hem worde by lettres þei scholden hihe belyue
If þei wolde speke wiþ him if þei were on lyue

Tho þe knyhtes herden seek þat he laye
Had þei no reste neyþer nyht nor daye
Til þei cam to hime þere he lay stiłłe
On his deþ bede to abide goddes wiłłe 24
Than seide þe good knyhte seke þere he lay
Lordes .I. ȝowe warne soþe wiþ-owten nay
.I. may no longer leue here on þis stonde
ffor þorwhe goddes wiłł deþ draueþ me to grounde. 28
Ther nas none of hem ałł þat herde him a-riht
That þei hadden rewþe of þat ilke knyht
And seid sir for goddes loue ne dismay ȝowe nouht
God maye done bote of bale þat is nowe ywrouht 32
Than spake þe good knyht seeke þere he[1] laie [[1] he *later*]
Bote of bale god may sende .I. wote it is no naye
Bot .I. be seke ȝow knyhtes for þe loue of me
Goþ *and* dresseþ my londes amonge myne sonnes þre 36
And for þe loue of God deleþ hem nouht a-mys
And for-ȝete nouht Gamelyn my yonge soñ þat i
Takeþ hede to þat one as wele as to þe toþer [leaf 55]
Selde ȝe see any heire helpen his broþer 40
Tho lete þei þe knyht lyen þat was nouht in hele
And wenten in to counseil his londes for to dele
ffor to delen hem al to one þat was here þouhte
And for gamelin was ȝongest he schold haue nouht 44
Ałł þe londe þat þere was þei dalten it in tuo
And leten Gamelyn þe ȝonge wiþ-owten lande go
And iche of hem seide to oþere ful loude
His breþerne mow ȝeuen him londe whan he goode coude
Whan þei hadde deled þe lond att þeire wiłł 49
They comen to þe knyht þere he laie ful stiłł
And tolde him a-none howe þei had wrouht
And þe knyht þere he laie liked it riht nouht 52
¶ Than seide þe knyht be seinte Martine
ffor al þat ȝe haue done ȝit is þe londe myne
ffor goddes loue neyboures stondeþ al stiłł
And .I. wiłł delen my londe riht after my wiłł 56

Iohñ myne eldest son schal haue ploues fiue
þat was my faders heritage while he was on lyue
And my Meddelest soñ fiue plowhes of londe
That .I. helpe for to geten wiþ my riht honde
And al myn oþere purchas of londes *and* of ledes
That .I. be-quethe Gamelyne *and* al my goode stedes
And .I. be-seeke ȝowe good men þat lawe conne of londe
ffor Gamelyn loue þat my quest stonde
¶ Thus dalte þe knyht his londe be his daye
Riht on his deþe bed seke þere he laye
And sone afterward he laye stone stiłł
And deide whan time came as it was cristes wiłł
Anone as he was dede *and* vnder gars graue
Sone þe alder broþer giled þe ȝonge knaue
And toke in-to his honde his londe *and* his lede
And Gamelin him selfe to cle *and* to fede
He cloþed him *and* fedde yuel. *and* eke wroþe
And lete his for fare *and* his housez bothe
His P*ar*kes *and* his wodes *and* dide no þinge wel
And seþþen he it abouhte on his faire fel
So longe was Gamelin in his broþers hałł
ffor þe strongest of good wiłł þei douten him ałł
Ne was þere none þer-inne ȝonge ne olde
That wold wreþþe ware he neuer so bolde
¶ Gamelyn stode vp on a daie in his broþere ȝerde [lf 55, bk]
And be-gan wiþ his honde to handel his berde
He þouhte on his londes þat layen vnsawe
And his faire Okes þat doune were drawe
His p*ar*kes were broken *and* his dere reuede
Of ałł his goode stedes was none him be-leuede
His howses weren vnhelde *and* ful yuel y-diht
Tho þouht Gamelyn it wente nouht a-riht
Afterwarde cam his broþer walkinge þere
And seide to Gamelin is oure mete ȝere
þo him wreþþed Gamelyn *and* suore be goddes boke
Thou schalt go bake þi selfe .I. wil nouȝt be þi koke

Howe broþer Gamelyn howe answeres þou nowe
Thou spak neuer suche a worde as þou dost nowe
Be my faiþe seide Gamelin now me þenkeþ nede
Of al þe harmes that .I. haue .I. toke neu*er* are hede
My p*ar*kes bene broken *and* myn dere be reuede
Of myne armoure *and* my stedes nouht is me be-leued
Al þat my ffader me be-quathe al goþe to schame
And þer-for haue þou goddes curse broþer be þi name
¶ Than be-spakke his broþer þat rape was of rees
Stond stiłł gedelinge *and* hold riht þi pes
Thou schalt be faine for to haue þi mete *and* þi wede
What spekest þou gamelin of londe or of lede
Than seide Gameline þe childe þat was ȝinge
Cristes curs mot he haue þat clepeþ m[e] gedelinge
.I. am no wers gadelyn ne no wers whyght
Bot borne of lady *and* geten of a knyht
Ne dorste he nouht to Gamelyin neere a fote go
Bot cleped to him his men *and* seide to hem þo
Goþe *and* bete þis boye *and* reueþ him his witte
And lat him leren a-noþer time to answere me bitte
Than seide þe childe ȝonge Gamelyn
Cristes curs most þou haue broþer art þou myne .
And if schal algate be beten a-none
Cristes curs must þou haue bot þou be þat one
And anon his broþer in þat grete hete
Made his men to fet staues Gamelin for to bete
Whan eu*er*y of hem had a staf ynome
Gamely was war þoo he sey hem comen
Tho Gamelyn seye hem com he loked ou*er*e alł
And was ware of a pestel stondeinge vnder a walł
Gamelyn was liht *and* þeder gan he lepe [leaf 56]
And droue al his breþes men riht on an hepe
He loked as wilde lyon *and* leide on good wone
Tho his broþer sawhe þat þei be-gan to gone
He fleyhe vpe in-til a lofte *and* schotte þe dore fast
Thus Gamelyn w*ith* his pestel made hem al a-gast

Som for for Gamelines loue *and* somme for his eye
Al þei drouhe be halues whan he be-gan to pleye
What nowe seide Gamelin yeuel mot ȝe þe
Wil ȝe beginne contik *and* so sone flye
Gamelin souht his broþere whider he was flowe
And sawh where þat he loked oute at a windowe
Broþer seide Gamelyn come a litel nere
And .I. wil teche a pleie att þe bokelere
His broþer him answerde *and* swore be seint Richere
While þe pestel is in þi honde .y. come þe no nere
Broþer .I. wil make þi pees .I. swere be goddes ore
Cast awaie þi Pestel and wraþþe þe nomore
.I. mot nede seide Gamelyne wraþþe me att ones
ffor þou wolde make þi men breke my bones
Ne had .I. had maine *and* miht in boþe myn armes
To fende hem from me þei wolde haue done me armes
Gamelin seide his broþere be þou nouht wroþe
ffor to seen þe haue harme me were riht loþe
.I. ne dide it nouht broþer but for a fondeinge
ffor to loken if þoue were stronge *and* art so ȝynge
Come a-doune þan to me *and* graunt me my bone
Of þinge .I. will þe axen and we schal sauhte sone
¶ Doune þan cam his broþer þat fikel was *and* fel
And was riht sore agast of þe pestel
He seide broþer Gameline ax me þi bone
And loke þou me blame bot .I. it graunt þe sone
Than seide Gamelyn broþe ywis
And we schol bene att one þou most me graunt þis
Aſt þat my fader me bequaþe while he was on lyue
þou most do me it haue if we schoſt nouht striue
That schalt þou haue Gamelyn .I. swere be goddes ore
Al þat þi fader þe be-quaþe þouhe þou woldest haue more
Thi londe þat lieþ ley wele it schal be sowe
And þin house reised vpe þat ben leide so lowe
Thus seide þe knyht to Gameline be mowþe
And þouht of falsenes as he wele couþe

The knyht þouht on tresoñ *and* Gamelin þouht none [lf 56, bk]
And went *and* kissed his broþer And whan þei weren att one
Alas 3onge Gamelyne no þinge he ne wiste
With suche false treson his broþer him kyst
Lysten *and* lythes *and* holdeþ 3oure tonge.
And 3e schal here talkeinge of Gamelin þe 3onge
Ther was þere be-side cride a wrastlinge
And þer for þere was sette a rame *and* a ringe
And Gamelyn was in wil to wende þer to
ffor to prouen his myht what he couþe do
Broþere seide Gameline be seint Richere
Thou moste lene me to nyht a litel coursere
þat is frische to þe spores on for to ride
.I. moste on an herande a litel here be-side
Be god seide his br[o]þer of stedes in my stal
Go *and* chese þe þe best *and* spare none of al
Of stedes or of couurseres þat stoden hem be-side
And tel me good broþer wheder þou wilt ride
Here be-side broþer is cried a warstelinge
And þer for schal be sett a ram *and* a rynge
Meche worschipe it were broþe to us alle
Might .I. þe ramme *and* þe ringe bringe home to þis halle
A stede þere was sadeled smerly *and* skete
Gamelin dide a paire of spores faire on his fete
He sete fote in þe sterep þe stede he be-strode
And to-warde þe wrastelinge þe 3in childe rode
Tho Gamelin þe 3onge was reden oute att þe gate
The false knyht his broþer lokked it after þate
And be-souht Ihesu crist þat is heuen kinge
He myht breke his neke in þat wrestlinge
As sone as Gamelin cam þer þis place was
He liht doune of his stede *and* stode on þe gras
And þere herde a frankelein walawaie singe
And be-gan bitterly his hondes to wringe
Gode man seide Gamelin. whi makes þou þis fare
Is þer no man þat maie 3ow helpen oute of þis care

Alas seide þis frankelein þat euer was .I. bore
ffor twey stalworþ sonnes .I. wene þat .I. haue lore
A champion is in þe place þat me haþ wrowht sorwe
ffor he haþ sleine my twey sonnes bot if god hem borwe
.I. wil ȝeue ten pounde be ihesu crist *and* more
Wiþe þe nones .I. fand a man to halden him sore
Gode man seide Gamelin wilt þou wele done [leaf 57]
Hold myn hors while my man draweþ of my schone
And help my man to kepe my cloþes *and* m[y] stede
And .I. wil in-to þe place gone to loke if .I. mai spede
Be god seide þe frankelein it schal be wele done
.I. wil my self be þi man to drawen of þi schone
And wende þou in-to þe place ihesu crist þe spede
And drede nouȝt of þi cloþes ne of þi goode stede
Barfor *and* vngert Gamelin inne cam
Alt þat were in þe place hede of him þei name
Howe he dorste auntre him on him to done his myht
That was so dowhti a champion in wrastelinge *and* in fiht
Vp stert þe Champion rapely anone
To-ward ȝonge Gamelin he be-gan to gone
And seide who his fader *and* who is þi sire
For soþe þou arte a grete fole þat þou com hire
Gamelione ansewarde þe champion þoo
Thow knewe wele my fader while he couþe goo
Whiles he was on live be seint Martine
Sir Iohñ of Boundes was his name *and* .I. Gamelyne
ffelaw seide þe champion so mot .I. þriue
.I. knewe wele þi fader while he was on lyue
And þi selfe gamelyne .I. wil þat þou it here
While þoue were a ȝonge boye a muche schrewe þu were
Than seide Gamelyn *and* swore be cristes ore
Now .I. am alder wax þou schalt finde me a more
Be god seide þe champion welcom mot þou be
Come þou ones in myne honde schalt þou neuer þe
It was wele wiþ-inne þe nyht *and* þe mone schone
Whan Gameline *and* þe champion to-geder gonne gone

The Champion kast tornes to Gamelin þat was prest
And Gamelin stode stil *and* bad him done his best
Than seide Gamelin to þe Champeoun
Thou ert fast a-boute to bringe me doune
Nowe haue I prouede many tornes of þine
Þou mot he seide fele on or tuo of myne
Gamelyn to þe champeon ȝed smartly anone
Of al þe turne þat he couþe he schewde him bot one
And kest on þe left side þat þre ribbes to-brake
And þere-to his one harme þat ȝaf a grete crake
Than seide Gamely smertly a-none
Schal it be hold for cast or elles for none.
Be god saide þe champion weþer þat it be [leaf 57, back]
He þat comes ones in þine hande schal he neuer þe
Than seide þe frankelein þat had his soñ þere
Blissed be þu Gamelin þat euer þou borne were
The frankeleine seide to þe champion on him stode hi*m* none eye
This is ȝonge Gamelyn þat tauht þe þis. pleie
Aȝeine anseward þe champion þat liked no þinge well
He is alþer maister *and* his pleie is riht fell
Seþþe .I. wrasteled first it is go ȝore
Bot was neuer my lif handeled so sore
Gamelin stode in þe place alone wiþ-outen serk
And seide if þere be mo let hem come to werk
The Champio*u*n þat payned him to wirche so sore
It semeþ be his countenance þat he wil no more
[. . . . . .
. 264
. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
ffor he handeled þe champion so wonderly sore
Two gentil men ȝemed þe place
Cam to gamelin god ȝeue him gode *grace*
And seide to him do on þin hosen *and* þin schone
ffor soþe att þis time þe faire is done
And þan seid Gamelin so mot .I. wele fare
.I. haue nouȝt ȝit haluendel solde my ware

Tho seide þe Champion so brouke .I. my swere
He is a foole þat þer-of byeþ þou selles it so dere
Tho seide þe frankelen þat was in muche care
ffelawe he saide whi lakkes þou his ware
Be seinte Iame in Galeys þat mony man haþ souht
ȝit it is to goode chepe þat þou hast bought
Tho þat wardeins were of þe warstelinge
Come *and* brouht Gamelin þe Ram *and* þe ringe
And seide haue Gamelin þe ringe *and* þe Ram
ffor þe best warstelier þat euer here cam
Thus whanne Gamelin þe ramme *and* þe Ringe
And went wiþ muche Ioy home in þe Morneinge
¶ His Broþer seyhe where he came wiþ þe grete route
And bad schotte þe gate *and* holde him wiþ-oute
Te porter of his lorde was sore agast
And stert a-none to þe gate *and* lokked it fast
Now liþeþ *and* listeneþ boþ ȝonge *and* olde
And ȝe schal her gamen of Gameline þe bolde
Gamelin cam to þe gate for to haue commen in
And þan was it schot fast wiþ a pin
Than seide Gamelin. Portier vndo þe gate
ffor mony goode mannes son stonden þer-ate
Than answeard þe portier *and* swore be goddes herd [leaf 58]
þou ne schalt Gamelin com in to þis ȝerde
Thou lixt said Gamelin so brouke I my chinne
He smote þe wiket wiþe his fote *and* brak awaie þe pinne
The portier sauhe þo it myht no beter bee
He sette foote on erþe *and* gan for to flee
Be my faiþe seid Gamelin þat trauel is lorene
ffor .I. am as liht on fote as þou if þat þou haddest it sworne
Gamely ouer toke þe portere *and* his teen wrake
And girt him in þe neke þat he began to brake
And toke him be þat on arme *and* þrewe him in a welle
.Vij. faþem it was depe as .I. haue herd telle
Whan Gamelin the ȝonge þus had plaide his plaie
Alt þat in þe ȝerde were drowen hem awaie

They dreden him ful sore for þe werke *þat* he wrouht
An þe faire compaignie þat he þeder brouht
Gameline ȝede to þe ȝate *and* lete it vp wide
He lete in al þat gone wolde or ride
And seide ȝe be welcom withe-outen any greue
ffor we wiłł bue Maistres here *and* aske noman leue
ȝisterdaie I. left seide ȝonge gamelyne
In my broþer seler. five tun of wyne
.I. wil nouȝt þis company parten a twynne
And ȝe wil done after me whan any sope is *þere*-inne
And if my broþer gruche or make foul chiere
Othere for spence of mete *and* drink þat we spende here
.I. am oure Catur *and* bereþ oure aller purse
He schal haue for his grucheinge seint Maries curse
Mi broþer is a negon .I. swere be cristes ore
And we wil spende largely þat we haue spent ȝore
And who þat makeþ grucchinge þat we here duelle
He schal vnto þe drawe welle
.Vij. daies *and* seuen nyht Gamelin helde his fest
Wiþþe muche solas was þer *and* none chest
In a litul ture turet his broþer steke
And sawehe him waste his goode bot dorst he nouȝt spek
Erly on a morneynge on þe .viij. daie
The gestes cam to Gamelin *and* wolde gone here waie
Lorde seide Gamelin wil ȝe soo hihe
Ałł þe wyne is nouht ȝit dronken so brouke .I. myn eye
Gamelin in his hert was ful woo
Whan his gestes toke here leue fro him for to goo.
He wolde þei had duelled longer *and* þei seide naye [lf 58, bk]
Bot be-tauht Gamelyn god *and* goode daye
Thus made Gamelin his fest *and* brouht wele to ende
And after his gestes had take leue to wende

[. . . . . .
. . . . . .
. . . . . .
. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]

¶ And all þe while þat Gamelyne helde his mangeri
His broþere þouht on him be wroke wiþ his trecheri
Whan Gamelin gestes were reden *and* gone
Gamelyne stode þan alone frende had he none
Tho þe iter-warde ful sone wiþ-inne a litel stonde
Gamelin was taken *and* ful harde ybounde
fforþe cam þe false knyht oute of selere
To gamelin his broþer he ȝode ful nere
And seide to Gamelin who maade þe so bolde
ffor streyȝ my store of myn housolde
Broþer seide Gamelin wraþþe þe riht nouht
ffor it is mony day gone seþþe it was bouht
ffor broþer þou hast had be seint Richere
Of .xv. plowhes of londe þis .xvj. ȝere
And of al þe bestes þou hast forþe bredde
þat my fader me quaþe on his dede beddo
Of al þis .xvj. ȝere .I. ȝeue þe prowe
ffor þe mete *and* þe drinke þat we han spende nowe
Than seide þe false knyhte *þere* yuel mot he þe
Herken broþer Gamelin what .I. wil ȝeue þe
ffor of my body broþer geten here haue .I. none
.I. wiłł make þe my eire .I. swere be seint Iohñ
Par ma faye seide Gamelin *and* it so be
And þou þinke as þou seiste god ȝelde it þe
No thinge wist Gamelin of his broþers gile
There-for he was be-gilede in a litel while
Gamelyn seide he o þinge .I. þe telł
Tho þou þrewe my porter in to þe drawe welł
.I. swore in þat wraþþe *and* in þat grete mote
That scholdest be bounden boþe honde *and* fote
Ther-fore .I. þe be-seche broþe Gameline
Lat me nouȝt be for-sworne broþer art þou myne
Lat me binde þe boþ honde *and* foote
ffor to holden myne avowe as .I. þe be-hote
Brother seide Gamelin so mot .I. þe
þou schalt not be for-sworne for þe loue of me

Tho maad þei Game to sitte myht he nouht stonde
Til þei hadde him bowden boþe fote *and* honde
The false knyht his broþer of Gamelin was a-gast [leaf 59]
And sent affeter fetters to fetterne him fast
His broþer maade lesinges on him þer he stode
And tolden hem þat comen inne þat Gamelin was woode
Gamelin sto' a post bounden in þe haſt
þo þat comen In. loked on him aſt
Euer stode Gamelin euen vp-riht
Bot mete *and* drinke hadde ne none neyþer daye ne nyht
Than seide Gameline broþer be my halse
Nowe .I. haue aspyede þou ert a p*ar*ty false
Had .I. wist þat treson þat þou hast founde
.I. wolde haue ȝeue strokes ar .I. hadde be bounde
Gamelin stoode bounden stiſt as any stone
Two daies *and* two nyhtes mete hade he none
þan seide Gamelin þat stode y-bounde stronge
Adam spenser me þinke .I. fast to longe
Adam spenser now .I. be-seche þe
ffor þe muche loue my fader loued þe
If þou maie come to cayes lesse me oute of bonde
And .I. wil parte wiþe þe of my fre londe
Than seide Adam þat was þe spensere
.I. haue s*er*ued þi broþer[1] þis .xvj. ȝere [[1] ?booþer]
If .I. lete gone oute of his boure
He wolde sei af[te]rward .I. were a traitoure
Adam seide Gamelin so brouke .I. myn hals
Thou schalt finde my broþe att last riht fals
There-fore Adam broþer lese oute of bondes
And .I. wiſt part wiþ þe of my fre londes
Vp suche forwarde Adam .I.-wisse
.I. wil do þer-to al þat me is
Adam seide Gamelin as mot .I. þe
.I. wil halde þe couenant *and* þou wil me
Anone as Adam lorde to bed was gone
Adam toke þe kaye *and* lete Gamelin oute anone

He vn-lokked Gamelin boþe hondes *and* fete
In hope of avauncement þat he him be-hete
Than seide Gamelin þonkede be goddes sonde
Now .I. am louse boþe fote *and* honde
Had .I. nowe eten *and* dronken a-riht'
Þere is none in þis hous schold binde me þis nyht
Adam toke Gamelin stil as any stone
And ladde him into þe spence rapeli a-none
And set him to soper riht in a priue stede [leaf 59, back]
And badd him do gladly. *and* Gamelin so dede
Anone as Gameline had ete wel *and* fine
Therto he dronke wele of þe rede wine
Adam seide Gamelin what is nowe þi rede
Where .I. go to my broþer *and* gerde of his hede
Gamelyn seide Adam it schal nouhte be so
.I. kan teche þe a rede þat is worþe tuo
.I. wote wele for soþe þat þis is no naie
We schal haue a maungeri riht on sonondaye
Abbotes *and* priours mony her schal be
And oþer men of holy cherche as .I. telł þe
Þou schalt stonde vp be þe post as þu were bounde fast
And .I. schal leue þeim vnloke þat awaye þou maie hem cast
Whan þat þei haue eten *and* wasschen her hondes
Thou schalt be-seke hem al to bringe þe oute of bondes
And if þei wiłł borwe þe þat were good gamme
Þan were oute of prison. *and* .I. owte of blame
And if iche of hem seie to vs naie
.I. schal do anoþer .I. swer be þis daie
Thou schalt haue a goode staf *and* .I. wil haue a-noþer
And cristes curs þat on haue þat faileþ þe tother
Ȝe for god seid Gamelin .I. saie it for me
If .I. faile on my side yuel mot .I. þe
.If. we schol algate assoile hem of her sinne
Warne me broþe Adam whan we schal be-ginne
Gamelin seide Adam be seinte charité
.I. wil warne þe be-forne whan it schal be

Whan .I. twynke on þe loke for to gone
And cast awaie þi fetters *and* com to me anone
Adam seide Gamelin blissed be þi bones
That is a good counsel ȝiuen for þe nones
If þei werne me to bringe me oute of bendes
.I. wil sett good strokes riht oñ here lendes
Tho þe sondaie was comen *and* folk to þe feste
ffaire þei were welcome boþe lest *and* meste
And euer as þei att þe haⁿ dore cam inne
Thei keste þeire eye on ȝonge Gameline
The false knyht his broþer *and* ful of trecherie
Al þe gestes þat þer were att þe Mangerie
Of Gamelyn his broþer he tolde hem be mouþe
Al þe harme *and* þe schame þat he telle couþe
Whan þei were *ser*ued of mete iche mese after oþe [leaf 66]
Than seid Gamelin howe *ser*ue ȝe me þat am ȝoure broþe
It is nouht wele *ser*ued be god þat al maade
þat .I. schal sitt fastinge *and* oþer men maak glade
þe false knyht his broþer þer þat he stode
Told al his gestes þat Gamelyne was woode
And Gamelin stode stiⁿ *and* anseward nouht
Bot Adames wordes he held in his þouht
Tho Gamelin gan spek dolfoly wiþ aⁿ
To þe grete lordes þat saten in þe haⁿ
Lordes he seide for cristes passione
Helpe to bringe Gamelin oute of p*ri*sone
¶ Than seide Abbote sorwe on his cheke
He schaⁿ haue cristes curse *and* seint Maries eke
That þe oute of p*ri*son beggeþ oþer borwe
Bot euer worþe him wele þat doþ þe muche sorwe
Affter þat Abbot þan spak a-noþer
.I. wolde þin hede wer of þouh þou were my broþer
Al þat þe borwe foul mote þaym faⁿ
Thus þei seiden al þat weren in þe aⁿ
Than seide A prioure yuel mote he þriue
It is muche sorwe *and* scaþe boþe þat þou art a liue

¶ Nowe seide Gamelin so brouke .I. my bone
Nowe .I. haue aspied þat frendes haue .I. none
Cursed mot he worþe boþe flesche *and* blode
þat eu*e*re doþe P*r*iour or Abbot any goode
Adam þe spencer toke vp þe cloþe
And loked vpon Gamelin. *and* sawhe þat he was wroþe
Adam on þe Pantri litel he þouht
Bot tuo goode staues to hall dore he brouht
Adam loked on gamelin. *and* he was war anone
And keste awaye þe fetteres *and* be-gan to gone
Tho he cam to Adam he toke þe toke þe to staf
And be-gan to wirche *and* goode strokes ȝaf
Gameline cam into þe hall *and* þe spenser boþe
And loked hem aboute as þei had be riht wroþe
Gamelin sprengeþ holy water *with* an oken spire
Than sum þat stod vp right ffellen in þe fire
Ther was no lewe man þat in þe hall stode
That wolde do Gamelin any þinge bot gode
Bot stoden be-side *and* lete boþe worche
ffor þei had no rewþe of men of holy cherche.
Abbot or priour Monke or Chanoune [leaf 60, back]
That Gamelin ou*e*re toke a-none þei ȝeden downe
Thar was none of hem al þat wiþ his staf mette
þat he ne maade hem ouer þrowe. *and* qwite hem his dette
Gamelin seide Adam for seint Charité
Pay good liuere for þe loue of me
And .I. kepe þe dore so euer her .y. masse
Er þei bene assoiled schal þer non passe
Dowte þe nouht seide Gamelin while we ben in fere
Kepe þou wel þe dore *and* .I. wirche here
Stere goode Adam *and* latt þere none fle
And we schol tel largely hou mony þer be
Gamelin seide Adam do hem bot goode
Thei bue men of holy cherche drawe of hem no blode
Saue wele þe croune. *and* done hem none harmes
Bot breke boþe here legges *and* sithen here armes

Thus Gamelin *and* Adam wrouht riht fast
And pleiden wiþe þe monkes *and* made hem agast
Theder þei cam rideinge Ioly *with* swaynes
And home a-ʒeine þei weren ledde in cartes *and* in waynes
Tho þei hadden al y-do þo saide a graie frere
Alas sir Abbot what did we nowe here
Tho þat we comen hider it was a colde rede
Vs had be better att home wiþ water *and* brede
While Gamelin gaf ordres to monk *and* to frere
Euer stod his broþer *and* mad foul chere
Gamelin vp wiþþe his staf þat he wel knewe
And gerd him in þe nekke þat he ouer þrewe
A litel aboue þe gardel þe rigge bot to-brast
And in þe fetters sette him þer he satt arst
Sitt þer broþer broþer seide Gameline
ffor to coly þi bodi as .I. dide myne
As swyþe as þei had wroken hem on her fone
The asked water *and* wissen anone
What som for her loue *and* sum for awe
Al þe seruantʒ serued ham of þe best lawe
The schirreue was þen bot .v. mile
And al þis was tolde him in a litel while
Howe Gamelin *and* Adam had done a sori res
Bounden *and* wounden men aʒein þe kinges pes
Tho be-gan son striff for to wake
And þe scherref aboute gameline for to take
¶ Nowe lyþes *and* listenеþ so god gif ʒow good fine [leaf 61]
And ʒe schall here good game of ʒonge Gameline
ffoure *and* twenty ʒongemen þat helde hem full bolde
Cam to þe scherreue *and* seide þat he wold
Gameline *and* Adam for to fette a-waye
The scherref ʒaue hem leue soþe as .I. ʒowe saye
Thei hiden fast wolde þei nouht linne
To þei cam to þe gate þer Gamelin was inne
Thei knokken on þe gate þe porter was nyhe
And loked out att an hole as a man þat was slyhe:

The porter had be-holde hem a litel while
He loued wele Gamelin an was drad of gile:
An lete þe wyket stonde ful stiłł
And asked hem þer-out what was here wiłł
ffor al þe grete Compaigny þan spak bot one
Vndo þe gate Portier *and* latt vs inn goone
Then seide þe porter so brouke .I. my chinne
3e schal sei 3oure erant or þat 3e comme inne
Sei to Gamelin *and* to Adam. if þeire wiłł be
We wolde speke withe hem tuo wordes or þre
ffelaw saide þe portier stonde þer stiłł
An .I. wil wende to Gamelin to weten his wiłł
In wente þe portier to Gamelin a-none
And seide sire .I. warne 3owe here be commen 3oure fone
The scherrefs men ben att gate
ffor to take 3oue boþe schal 3e nouht skape
Portier seide Gamelin. So mot .I. wel þe
.I. wiłł allowe þe þi wordes whan .I. mi time see
Go a3ein to gate *and* dwel wiþ hem a while
And þou schal see riht sone porter a gile
Adam seide Gamelin loke þe to gone
We haue fomen att gate *and* frendes neuer one
It buen þe schirreues men þa hider bue come
Þei be sworre to-geder þat we schal be nomme
Gameline seide Adam hie þe riht be liue
And if .I. faile þe þis daie yuel mot .I. þriue
And we schol so wel-come þe scherreues men
That som of hem shal make here beddes in þe fen
A good Cart staf in his honde he hent
Gamelin and att postern gate oute he wente
Adam hent sone a-noþer good staf
ffor to helpen gamelin *and* goode strokes 3af
Adam felde tweine *and* Gameline felled þre
þe toþer sett fete on erþe *and* gan to fle
What saide Adam so euer here .I. masse [leaf 61, back]
.I. haue riht goode wyne drinke ar 3e passe

Naie be god seide þei þi drinke is not goode
It wold make mannes brayne to lye in his hode
Gamelin stoode stiłł *and* loked him aboute
And sawhe þe scherreue come wiþ a grete route
Adam seidē Gameline whate be nowe þi redes
Here comeþ þe scherreue *and* wil haue oure hedes
Adam seide to Gamelin my rede is nowe þis
Abide we no longer lest we fare a mys
.I rede þat we to woode gone ar þat we be founde
Better is þer louse þan in toune bounde
Adam toke be þe honde ȝonge gamelin
And eyþer of hem dranke a drauht of wyne
And after token her cours *and* wenten her waie
Tho fonde þe scherref nest bot no naie
þe scherref lyht doune And went in to þe hałł
And fonde þe lorde fetterd fast wiþ ałł
The scherreve vnfetterd him riht sone anone
And sent after a leche to helen his rigge bone
Late we nowe þe false knyht lyhe in his care
And talke we of Gamelin *and* loke howe he fare
Gamelin in to þe wode stalkeþ stiłł
And Adam spencer loked riht iłł
Adam swore to Gamelin be seinte Richere
Nowe .I. se it is mery to be a spensere
That me were leuer kaye to bere
Than walken in þis wilde wode my cloþe to tere
Adam seide Gameline dismaie ȝe riht nouht
Many good mannes childe in care is brouht
As þei stode talkinge boþe in fere
Adam herde talkinge of men *and* nyhe hem þouht he were
Tho Gamelin vnder wode loked ariht
.Vij. score of ȝonge men he sawe wele a-diht
Ałł satt att mete compas aboute
Adam seide Gamelin nowe haue ȝe no doute
After bale comes bote þoruht goddes myht
Me þe þinkeþ þat of mete *and* drinke .I. haue a siht

Adam loked þo vnder wode bouhe
And þo he sauhe mete he was glade y-nowhe
ffor he hope to god for to haue his dele
And he was sore alonged after a goode mele
As he had seide þat word þe Maister outelawe [leaf 62]
Sawe Gamelin *and* Adam vnder wode schawe
ȝonge men seide þe maister be þe goode rode
.I. am war of gestes god send vs goode
ȝonde bene two ȝon[g]e men riht wele adiht
And *par*auentur þer bene mo who so loked ariht
Ariseþ vp ȝonge men *and* fette hem to me
It is good þat we weten what men þei be
Vpe þer sterten .vij. fro þe denere
And Metten wiþ Gamelin. *and* Adam spensere
Whan þei were nyhe hem þan seide þat one
ȝeldeþ vp ȝonge men ȝoure bowes *and* ȝoure flone
Than seid Gamelin þat ȝonge was of elde
Muche sorwe mot he haue þat to ȝowe hem ȝelde
.I. curs none oþer bot riht my selue
þough ȝe fette to ȝow .v. þat be ȝe tuelue
Tho þei herde be his worde þat myht was in his arme
Ther was none of hem þat wolde do him harme
Bot seide to Gamelin Mildely *and* stiłł
Com a-for oure maister *and* seie to him þi wiłł
ȝonge men seide Gamelin be ȝoure leute
What man is ȝoure Maister þat ȝe wiþ be
Al þei ansewerd wiþ-oute lesinge
Oure maister his crouned of owtelawes þe kenge
Adam seide Gamelin go we in cristes name
He maye neyþer mete ne drinke warne vs for schame
If þat he be hende *and* come of gentil blode
He wiłł ȝeue vs mete *and* drinke *and* do vs sum goode
Be seinte Iame seid Adam what harme þat .I. gete
.I. wil auentur me to þe dore þat .I. hade mete
Gamelin *and* Adam wenten forþe in fere
And þei grete þe maister þat þei fonde þere

Than seide þe maister kinge of owtelauwes
What seke ȝe ȝongmen vnder wodee schawes
Gamelin ansewarde þe kinge wiþ his croune
He moste nedes walke in wode þat maye nouht walke *in* toune
Sire we walke nouht here men harme to do
Bot if wee mete a dere to schete þer to
As men þat bene hungri *and* maie no mete finde
And bene harde bestade vnder wode linde
Of Gamelyne wordes þe maister had reuþe
He seide sche schal haue .I.-nouhe haue god my treuþe
He bad hem sette doune for to take rest [leaf 62, back]
And bad ete *and* dringe *and* þat of þe best
As þei eten *and* dronken wele *and* fine
Than seide þe tone to þe toþer þis is Gameline
Tho was þe Maister owtelawe into counseile nome
And tolde howe it was Gamelin was þeder come
Anone as he herde howe it was be-fal
He maade him maister vnder him ou*er*e hem al
Wiþ-inne þe þred weke him cam tidynge
Tho þe maister owtlawe þat was here kinge
þat he scholde come home his pes was made
And of þe goode tiþinge he was ful glade
Tho seide he to his ȝonge men soþe to telle
Me be commen tiþinges .I. maie no longer duel.
Tho was Gameline anone wiþ-oute taryinge
Maade Maister owteley. *and* crouned here kinge
Tho was Gamelin crounede kinge of outelawes
And walked a while vnder wode schawes
The false knyht his broþer was scherreue of þe schire
And lete his broþer endite for hate *and* for ire
Tho were his bondemen sori *and* nouht gladde
Whan Gamelin her lorde was cried wolueshed *and* maade
And sent oute of his men wher þei myht him finde
ffor to seke Gamelin vnder wode linde
To tel him tiþinge þe winde was went
And al his goode reued *and* his men schent

Whan þe hadden him founde on knees þei hem setten
And a-doune wiþ here hode *and* here lorde gretten.
Sir wraþþe 3ou nouht for þe goode rode
ffor we haue brouhte 3owe tiþinges bot þei be nou3t goode
Nowe is þi broþe scherreue *and* haþe þe baille
And haþe enditede þe *and* wolues-hed doþe þe crie
Allas seide Gamelin þat euer .I. was so slakke
þat .I. ne hadde broke his nekke. þo .I. his rigge brakke
Go greteþ wele myne husbondes *and* wif
.I. wil bene att þe next schire haue god my lif
Gamelyn cam wel redy to þe next schire
And þer was his broþer boþe lorde *and* sire
Gamelin cam boldely in to þe mote haⱡ
And put adoune his hode a-monge þe lordes aⱡ
God saue 3owe lordeinges þat nowe here be
Bot brokebakke scherreue yuel most þou þe
Whi haste þou do me þat schame *and* velanye [leaf 63]
ffor to late endite me *and* wolues-hede do me crye
Tho þouht þe fals knyht for to be awreke
And lete take Gameline most he nomore speke
Miht þere be no grace bot Gamelin att þe last
Was cast in to prison *and* fetterd fast
Gameline haþe a broþer þat hiht *sir* Ote
A goode knyht *and* hende as miht gone on fote
Anone 3ede a messagier to þat good knyht
And tolde hem al togeder howe Gameline was diht
[. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
He was riht sorie was he noþinge liht
[. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
And to his tweine breþer ful sone he came
Sir seide *sir* Ote to þe Scherref þoo
We bene bot þree breþern schal we neuer be mo
And þou hast p*r*isoned þe best of aⱡ
Suche a-noþer Iuel mot him befaⱡ
Sire Ote, seide þe false knyht lat be þi curs
Be god for þi wordes he schal fare þe wurs

To þe kinges prisoñ he his ynomme
And þere he schal abide vnto þe iustice come
Pardie seide sire Ote Better it schalt be
.I. bidde him to mainprise þat þou graunt to me
Til þe next siteinge of deliuerance
And lat þat Gamelin stonde to his chaunce
Broþe in suche a forward .I. take him to þe
And be þi faderes soule þat be-3ate þe *and* me
Bot he be redi whan þe Iustice sitte
þou schalt bere þe Iuggement for alt þi grete witte
.I. graunt wele quod sire ote þat it so be
Lat do liuer him a-none *and* tak him to me
Tho was Gameline deliuerde to *sir* Ote his broþer
And þat nyht dwelden þe tone wiþ þe toþere
On þe morwe seide Gamelin to *sir* Ote þe hende
Broþe he seide .I. mot for soþe fro þe wende
To loke how my 3onge men leden here lif
Wheþer þei leuen in ioye or elles in strif
Be gode seide sir hote þat is a colde rede
Now .I. see þat al þe carke schal fal on myne hede
ffor whan þe Iustice sitte *and* þou be nouht yfounde
.I. schal anone be taken *and* in þi stede ybounde
Broþer seide Gamelin dismaie þe nouht
ffor be seint Iame in Galeis þat mony men haþ souht
If þat god almyhty holde me my lif *and* witte [leaf 63, back]
.I. wil be þere redy whan þe Iustice sitte
Than seide *sir* Ote til gamelin god schelde þe fro schame
Com whan þou seest time *and* bringe vs oute of blame

[. . . . . .
. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]

¶ Gamelin went þo vnder wode rise
And fonde þere playinge men of prise
Tho was 3onge Gamelin riht glad ynouhe
Whanne he fonde his men vnder woode bouhe
Gamelin *and* his men talken in fere
And þei had good Game here maistor to here

His men tolden him of aventures þat þei had founde
And Gamelin hem tolde aȝein howe he was fast bounde
Whan Gamelin was outelawe he hadde no cors
Ther was no man þat for him ferde þe wors 780
Bot Abbotes *and* priours *and* monke *and* chanone
On hem left he nouht whan he myht hem nome
While Gamelin *and* his men made merþes rive
The fals knyht his broþer yuel most he þriue 784
ffor he was fast aboute boþe daie *and* oþer
ffor to hire þe queste for to honge his broþer
¶ Gamelin stode vpon a daie *and* he be-helde
þe wode *and* þe schawes in þe wilde felde 788
He þouht on his broþer howe him be-hette
þat he wolde be redy whan þe Iustice sette
He þouht wele þat he wolde wiþ-oute delaie
Com afor þe Iustice to kepen his daye 792
And seide to his ȝonge men diht ȝowe ȝare
ffor whan þe Iustice sitte we mot be þare
ffor .I. am vnder borwe til þat .I. come
And my broþer for me to p*ri*son schal be no*m*me 796
Be seint Iame seide his ȝonge men *and* þou reede þ*er*to
Ordeigne howe it schal be and it schal be do
While Gameline was cominge þer þe Iustice satt
The false knyht his broþe for-ȝate he nouȝt þatt 800
To hire men on his queste to hangen his broþer
þouhe þei had nouht þe tone he wolde haue þat oþ*er*e
Tho cam Gamelin fro vnder wode rise
And brouht wiþe hem ȝonge men of p*ri*se 804
I se wele saide Gamelin *þe Iustice is sette*
Go a-forne Adam *and* loke how *it spette*
Adam went in to þe hall *and* loke al aboute
He sawhe þere stand lordes grete *and stoute* *808*
And *sir* Ote his broþere fetterd *ful faste* *[leaf 61]*
Tho went Adam oute as he were *agaste*
Adam seide to Gamelin *and* to his felawes all
Sire Ote stant fetterd in þe mote hall 812

3onge men seide Gamelin þis here 3e alle
Howe *sir* Ote stant fetterd in þe mote halle
If god 3ife vs grace wele for to do
He schal it a-bigge þat brouht it þer-to
Than seide Adam þot lokkes had hore
Cristes curs mot he haue þat him bonde so sore
And þou wilte Gamelin do after my rede
þare is none in þe hall schal bere awaie his hede
Adam seide Gamelin we wil nouht do soo
We wil sle þe Giltif *and* late þe oþere goo
.I. wil into þe hall *and* wiþ þe Iustice speke
On hem þat ben Giltif .I. wil bene awreke
Lat none scape att þe dore takeþ 3onge men 3eme
ffor .I. wil be Iustice þis daie domes to deme
God spede me þis daye att my newe werke
Adam Com þou wiþ me for þou schal be my clerke
His men Anseward him *and* bad him done his best
And if þou to vs haue nede þou schal finde vs preste
We wil stand wiþ þe while þat we maie dure
And bot we wirken manly paie vs non hire
3onge men seide Gameline so mote .I. wel þe
As trusti a maister schal 3e finde on me
Riht þere þe Iustice satte in þe hall
In went Gamelin a-monge hem all
Gamelin lete vn-fetter his broþer oute of bende
Than seide *sir* Oke his broþer þat was hende
Thou haddest al-most gamelin dwelled to longe
ffor þe quest is oute for me þat .I. scholde be honge
Broþer seide Gamelin so god gif me gode rest
þis daie þe schal be hongede þat bene on þi queste
And þe Iustice boþe þat & þe Iugge man
And þe scherreue boþe þoruh him it be-ganne
Than seide Gamelin to þe Iustice
Nowe is þi power done þou most nedes a-rise
Thou hast 3eue domes þat bene yuel diht
.I. wil sitten in þi sette *and* dressen hem a-riht

The Iustice satt stiff *and* rose nouht anone
And Gamelin cleue his cheke bone.
Gamelin toke him in his armes *and* no more spak [lf 64, bk]
Bot þroue him ouer þe barre *and* his arme to-brak
Dorst none to Gameline seie bot gode
ffor ferde of þe compaignie þat wiþ-oute stode
Gamelin set him doune in þe Iustice sete
And sir Ote his broþer by him *and* Adam att his fete
Herke of bourde þat Gamelin dede
He þouht for to make hem riht sore adrede
¶ He lete fetter þe Iustice *and* his false broþer
And lete hem come to þe barre þe tone wiþ þe toþer
Tho Gamelin had þus done he no rest
To he had enquered who was on þe quost
ffor to demen his broþer sir Ote for to honge
Or he wiste whiche þei were he þouht ful longe
Bot as son as Gamelin wist where þei were
He dide hem euery-chon fetter in fere
And bringe hem to þe barre *and* sett hem on rewe
Be my faiþe seide Iustice þe scherreue is a schrewe
Than seide Gamelin to þe Iustice
Thou hast ȝeue domes of þe werst assise
And þe .xij. sisours þat weren on þe queste
Thei schal ben an-hanged þis daie so haue .I. goode reste
Than seide þe scherreue to ȝonge Gameline
Lorde .I. crie þe Mercye broþe art þou myne
Ther-fore seide Gamelin haue þou goddes curs
ffor and þou were Meister ȝit .I. scholde haue wors
ffor to make schort tale *and* nouht to longe
He ordeyned him a queste of his men so stronge
The Iustice *and* þe scherreue boþ hongede hiſe
To veyven wiþe þe ropes. *and* wiþ þe wynde drye
And þe .xij. sisours sorwe haue þei þat rekke
Aſt þei were hanged fast be þe nekke
Thus endeþ þe false knyht wiþ his trecherie
That euer hade ladde his lif in falsnes *and* in folye

He was hongede be þe nekke. *and* nouht be þe purce
þat was þe mede þat he had for his fader curs
Sire Ote was eldest *and* Gamelin was ȝinge
Wente wiþ here frendes *and* peȝed wiþ þe kinge 888
Thei made pes wiþ þe kinge of þe best sise
The kinge louede wele *sir* Ote *and* maade him Iustice
And after þe kinge maade Gamelin boþe in est *and* weste
Chief Iustice of his fre forest. 892
Alle his whight ȝonge men þe kinke for-ȝaue here gelte [leaf 65]
And siþen in good Office he haþe hem al pelte
Thus wan Gamelin his londe *and* his lede
And wrake him of his enemys *and* quyte hem here mede
And *sir* Ote his Broþer maade him hi[s] heire 897
And seþþe wedde Gamelin a wif a goode *and* a feire
Thei leueden to-geder while þat crist wolde
An syþen was Gamelin Grauen vnder molde 900
And so schal we al maie þere none fle
God bringe vs to þat Ioye þa euer schal be AmeN.
Explicit fabula Coci.

[*No gap in the MS.*]

[NOTICE—Inasmuch as, after the *Man of Law's Tale*, the order of the Tales in the *Lansdowne MS* differs from the right order of the Tales in which the *Six-Text* is to be arranged, the further issue of the separate Lansdowne Parts is suspended till all the Tales before the *Shipman's* in the Lansdowne MS have been issued in the *Six-Text*. Then the proper pagings of the separate Lansdowne sheets can be ascertained, and a large Part will be issued, bringing the separate issue abreast of the *Six-Text*. See the following scheme:—

Six-Text	*Lansdowne MS.*
rest of Group B: *SHIPMAN, Prioress, Thopas, Melibeus, Monk, Nun's Priest*	Group F 1: *Squire*
Group C: *Doctor, Pardoner*	Group D: *Wife of Bath, Friar, Summoner*
Group D: *Wife of Bath, Friar, Summoner*	Group E: *Clerk, Merchant*
Group E: *Clerk, Merchant*	Group F 2: *Franklin*
Group F: *Squire, Franklin*	Group G: *Second Nun, Canon's Yeoman*
Group G: *Second Nun, Canon's Yeoman*	Group C: *Doctor, Pardoner*
Group H: *Manciple*	rest of Group B: *SHIPMAN, Prioress, Thopas, Melibeus, Monk, Nun's Priest*
Group I: *Parson*	Group H: *Manciple*
	Group I: *Parson*]

1 *January*, 1871.

GROUP B. (α. FRAGMENT II.)

§ 1. MAN OF LAW'S HEAD-LINK.

LANSDOWNE MS.

Incipit prologus Legis periti. [on leaf 65]

OWre Oste sauhe wele þat þe briht sonne
The arke of his artificial dáie had ronne
The ferþe part & half an houre & more
And þouhe he were nouȝt expert in lore
He wist it was þe .xviij. daye
Of Aprill þat is messagiere of maie
And sawhe wele þat þe schadow of euery tree
Was as in lengeþ in þe same quantite
As was þe body erect þat caused it
And þere-for be þe schadowe he toke his wit
That phebus whiche þat schone so clere *and* briht
Degres was .xlv. clome on hiht
And for þat daie as in þat latitude
It was .x. att clokke. he gan conclude
And sodenly he piht his hors aboute
Lordeinges quod he .I. warne ȝou al þis route
The ferþe party of þis daie es gone
Nowe for þe loue of god *and* seinte Iohñ
Leseþ no time as ferforþ as ȝe maie
Lordeinges þe time it wasteþ nyht *and* daie
And steleþ from vs what priuely slepeinge
And what þorwhe necligence in oure wakeynge
As doþe þe streme þat turneþ neuer a-ȝeine
Descendeinge fro þe mountaigne in to þe pleine
Wele cane senec *and* mony a philosophre
Be-weylein time more þan golde in Cophre
ffor losse of cateH maie recouerd be
Bot losse of time schendeþ vs quod he

It wil nouht com aȝein wiþ oute drede
Ne mor þan wil Malkins Maidenhede
Whan sche haþe lost it in hire wantonnes [leaf 65, back]
Lat vs nouȝt moulen þus in ydelnes
Sir Man come[1] of q*uo*d he so haue ȝe blisse [1 *later*]
Tel vs a tale nowe as forward is
ȝe be submitted þorwhe ȝoure fre assent
To stonden in þis caas att my Iuggement
Acquiteþe now ȝowe of ȝoure beheste
Than haue ȝe done ȝoure deuer att leste
Ost q*uo*d he de p*ar* deux iche assent
To breke forwarde is nouht myne entent
Beheste is dette *and* .I. wil holden faine
Al my byheste .I. can no better seine
ffor suche lawe as a man ȝeueþ anoþer whihte
He scholde him selfe vsen it be riht
Thus wil oure text bot naþeles certeine
.I. can. riht nowe no trusti tale seine
þat chaucer þouhe he can bot lewdly
On metres *and* in rymeinge craftely
Haþe saide hem in suche ynglysshe as he can
Of Olde time as knoweþ mony a man
And if he haue nouht seide hem leue broþer
In o boke he haþe seide in a noþer
ffor he haþ tolde of louers vp *and* doune
Moo þan Ouide Maade Mencion
In his Epistele þat been ful olde
What schold .I. tellen hem sen þei bu tolde
In ȝouþe he maade of Ceys and Alcione
And siþen haþe he spoken of eu*er*ichone
Thes noble wifes *and* þes louers eke
Who so þat wil his large veloine seke
Cleped þe seintes Legent of Cupide
There maie he see þe large woundes wide
Of Lucres *and* of Babilan Thisbe
The swerde of dido for þe fals ene

The tree of phillis for hir demefon
The pleinte of Dianyre and of Ermyon
Of Adriane *and* of ysiphilee
The barayn ysel stondeynge in þe see
The dreynt leandre for his erro
The teres of Eleyne *and* eke þe wo
Of brixseide *and* of þe ladomya
The cruelte of quene Medea
The litil childern hongeinge be þe hals [leaf 66]
ffor þi Iason þat was of loue fals
Of ypnistra Penelope Alceste
3oure wifehode he commendeþ wiþ þe beste
Bot certeynly no worde writeþ he
Of þilke wilke ensample of Canace
þat loued hir owen broþer sinfully
Of suche cursed stories .I. saie fye
Or elles of Tiro Appolonius
How þat þe cursed kinge Anthiochus
Beraft his douhter of hir maydenhede
That is so orrible a tale for to rede
Whan he hire [1]þrewe þoruhe þe pament [1 ? yrewe]
And þer-for he of ful avisement
Nolde neuer write in none of his sermones
Of whiche vnkinde abhominaciones
Ne .I. ne wil none reherce if þat .I. maie
Bot of my tale. howe schal .I. done þis daie
Me were loþe be likned douteles
To muses þat men clepen pieriedes
Methamorphoseos woote what .I. mene
Bot natheles .I. recche nou3t a bene
þowhe .I. come after him wiþ halve bake
.I. speke in prose *and* lat him rimes make
And wiþ þat worde he wiþ a sobre chere
Began his tale as 3e schal after here.

[*No breaks in the MS between the stanzas.*]

Hic incipit fabula legis periti.

O Hateful harme condicione of pouert
With þurst. *with* colde. *with* hungre so confounded
To asken helpe þou schameþ in þine hert
If þou[1] axe *with* nede þou art so wounded
þat verrei nede vnwrappeþ al þi wound hid
Maugreue þin hede þou most for indigence
Or steele or begge or borwe þi despense

[1 *a late* none *inserted*]

þou blamest crist *and* seist ful bittirly.
He mys departeþ richesse tempo*r*al
þi neiheburghe þou witest sinfully
And seiste þou haste to litel *and* he haþ al
Per fey seys þou sum tyme he reken schal
Whan þat his taile schal berne in þe glede
ffor he nouȝt helpeþ nedeful in here nede

Herken what is þe meneynge of þe wise
Better is to dyen þan to haue indigence [leaf 66, back]
þi self neighebore wil þe dispise
If þou be pore fare wele þi reuerence
ȝit of þe wiseman takeþ þis sentence
Alł þe daies of pormen ben wikke
Be war þar fore or þou com in þat prikke

¶ If þou be pore þi broþer hateþ þee
And al þi frendes flye fro þe alas
O riche marchauntes ful of wel be ȝe
O noble prudent folke as in þis cas
ȝoure bagges bene nouȝt filled wiþ ambes aas
Bot wiþ sis sinke þat renneþ for ȝoure chaunce
Att Cristes masse mery maie ȝe daunce

¶ ȝe seken londe *and* see for ȝoure wininges
As wise folke þat knowen al þe astate
Of regnes ȝe bene faders of tiþinges
And tales bothen of pes *and* debate 130
I. was riht nowe of tales desolate
Nar þat a marchant gone is mony a ȝere
Me tauht a tale whiche as ȝe schal here 133

[*As there is no room in this print for the Latin notes in the margin of the MS, they are put here, with the numbers of the lines to which they refer.*]

l. 161. Europa *est* tercia p*ars* mundi. [MS, leaf 67.]

l. 197. ¶ Cept*ra* pharonei f*urtum* discordia thebe
¶ Flam*mam* phetonti*s* deu-calionis aque
¶ In stelli*s* p*riami*: spec*ies* audacia t*urni*
¶ Sensus vlixeus herculeus q*ue* vigor. [MS, leaf 67.]

After l. 301. **Vn*de* Tholomeus. li*bro* p*rimo* c*apitulo* 8. P*rimi* motus Celi duo su*nt* q*uorum* vnus e*st* qui mouet totu*m* semp*er* ab oriente i*n* occidentem: vno mo*do* sup*er* orbes &c. Alt*er* ver*o* mot*us* e*st* q*ui* mouet orbe*m* stellar*um* curren*cium* *contra* motu*m* p*rimum* vid*elicet*. ab occidente in orientem *super* alios duos polos &c. Om*nes* *enim* su*nt* co*n*cordati q*uod* elecc*iones* sint debiles n*isi* i*n* diuitib*us* H*abent* *enim* isti lic*et* debilite*n*t*ur* eor*um* elecc*iones* radice*m* .i. natiuitates eor*um* que co*n*fortant om*nem* planeta*m* debile*m* i*n* itiner*e* H*uc*. Philoso-*phus*. [MS, leaf 68, back, *a quotation in the middle of the text.*]

[*THE TALE.*]

In Surre some while dweled a company.
Of chap men riche *and* þer-to sadde *and* trewe
That wide where senten hire spicery
Cloþes of golde *and* satine riche of hewe 137
Here chaffer was so þrefty *and* so newe
That euery wiht haþe deynte to chaffare
Wiþe hem *and* eke to sellen hem here ware 140

¶ Nowe felle þat þe maistres of þat sorte
Hane schapen hem to Rome for to wende
Were it fo chapmanhode or for disporte
None oþer Messagier wolde þei þeder sende 144
Bot cam hem selft to rome þis es þe ende
And in swyche place as þouht hem auantage
ffor here intent þei take here herbergage 147

¶ Soiorne haue þese marchantes in þat toune
A certaine time as fell to here plesaunce
Bot so be-fel þat þe excellent renoune
Of þe Emperoure douhter dame Custance 151
Reported was wiþ euery circumstance
Vn to þis surrien Marchantez in suche wise
ffro day to day as .I. schal ȝowe deuise 154

¶ This was þe comune voyce of euery man
Owre Emperour of Rome Gode him see [leaf 67]
A douhter he haþe þat sen þe werlde beganne
To rekken as wele hire goodnes as beaute 158
Was neuer suche anoþer as is sche
.I. praie to gode in honoure hire susteigne
And wald sche were of al Europe þe quene. [*Latin note*, p. 133/159.]

In hir is hihe beaute wiþ oute pride
ȝowþe wiþ oute greuehode or foly
To al hire werkes vertue is hir gyde
Humblesse haþe slayne in ȝowe al tyranny
[. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
Hire herte is verrai chambre of holynesse
Hir hande Ministre of fredam for almesse

¶ And al þis voice was soþe as god is trewe
Bot nowe to purpos lat vs turne aȝeine
This marchantez han don frauht here schippes newe
And whan þei han þis blisseful Maiden seine
Home to surre be þei wente aȝeine
And done here nedes as þei han done ȝore
And leuen in wele .I. can say ȝow no more

¶ Nowe fel it þat þese marchantz stoden in grace
Of him þat was Souldan of Surrye
ffor whan þat þei cam from any strange place
He wolde of his benigne curtesie
Make hem good chiere *and* besilye aspye
Thinges of sundre remes for to lere
The wonderes þat þei myht se or here

¶ Amonges oþer þinges specialy
Thos Marchantz hane him tolde of dame Custance
So grete noblesse in erneste curiously
þat þis souldan haþ kauht so grete plesance
To hane hir figure in his remembrance
And al his lust *and* al his besy cure
Was for to loue hir while his lif maie dure

¶ P*ar*auenture in þe large booke
Whiche þat cleped þe heuen y-writen was
Wiþ sterres whan þat he his birþe toke
That he for loue schol haue his deþe alas

ffor in þe sterres clerer þan is þe glas
Is wreten god wote who so couþe it rede
þe deþe of euery man wiþ outen drede

¶ In sterres mony a winter þar be-forne [*Latin note*, p. 133, 159]
Was wreten þe deþe of Ector *and* achilles
Off Pompe Iulius or thei were borne [leaf 67, back]
The strif of Thebes and of Hercules
Of Sampson turnus *and* of Socrates
The deþ bot mennus wittes bene so dulle
That no whiht can wel rede it att þe fulle

¶ This Sowldan for his priue conseile sente
And schortly of þis matier for to passe
He haþe to hem declared his entent
And seide hem certeine bot if he myht haue grace
To haue Custance wiþ inne a litel space
He nas bot dede and charged hem in hihe
To schapen for his lif som remedie

¶ Diuers men diuers þinges saiden
The Argumentz custen vp *and* doune
Many a sotyl reson forþe þei leyden
Thei speken of Magik *and* abusion
Bot finalli as in conclusion
Thei can nouȝt seen in þat none auantage
Ne in none oþer waie saue Mariage

¶ Than sauhe þere suche difficulte
Be way of Reson for to speke as pleine
Be cause þat þere was suche diuersite
Be twene here boþe lawes as þei seine
Thai trowe þat no cristen prince wold feine
Wedden his childe vnder her lawes so swete
That hem was tauht bue Mahoun þe prophete

¶ And he Ansewarde raþer þan .I. lese
Constance .I. wil be cristened douteles
.I. mot bene hirs .I. maie none oþer chese
.I. *pray* 3ow holde 3oure argumentes in pes 228
Saueþ my lif *and* beþ nouht recheles
To gete hir þat haþ my lif in cure
ffor in þis woo .I. maie nouht longe endure 231

¶ What nedeþ gretter dilatacion
.I. sey be tretise *and* embassadrie
And be þe popes Medeacione
And al þe cherche *and* al þe chiualrie 235
That in destruccion of Maumetrie
And in encrese of cristes lawe dere
Thei bene accorded so as 3e schal here 238

¶ How þat þe Souldan *and* his Baronage
And alle his leges scholde cristened be
And he scal haue Constance in Mariage [leaf 68]
And certeigne gold .I. not what quantite 242
And herto founden sufficiant surtie
This same accorde was swor *in* eyþer side
Nowe faire Constance almyhti *god* þe *gide* 245

¶ Nowe wolde sum man waiten as .I. *gesse*
þat .I. schol telle al þe purueance
That þe Emp*erour* of his noblesse
Haþ schapen for his douhter Dam Custance. 249
Wele maie men knowen þat so grete ordinance.
Maie no man tellen in a litel clause
As was arraied for so hihe a cause 252

¶ Cardinals *and* Bischops bene schapen wiþ hir to wende
Lordes *and* lades *and* knyhtes of renoune
And oþer folke .I. nowe þis is þe ende
And notified is þoruh oute þe toune 256

That eu*er*y whight wiþe grete deuocione
Schold praie criste þat þis Mariage
Resceyue *in* gree *and* spede þis viage

¶ The daie is comen of hire dep*ar*teinge
.I. say þat woful daie fatal is come
That þat þere maie be no longer tariynge
Bot forþwarde þei hem dresse alle *and* so*mm*e
Constance þat wiþ sorwe is al ouer-come
fful pale a-rist *and* drisseþ hire to wend
ffor wele sche seeþe þere is none o*þer*e ende

¶ Allas what wonder is it þouhe sche wepete
That schaH be sent to so strange nacione
ffro frendes þat so tendurly hir keppete
And to be boundon vnder subiect*ione*
Of one sche knoweþ nouht his condicion
Husbondes bene al good *and* hane bu 3ore
þat knewen wives .I. dar sei 3ow no more

ffader sche seide. þi wreched childe Constance
þi 3onge douhter fostred vp so soft
And 3e my moder my sou*er*eigne plesance
Ouer al þinge oute take criste on loft
Constance 3owre childe hir rec*om*mandeþ oft
Vn to 3oure grace for .I. schal to Surrye
Ne schal .I. neuer seen 3ow more wiþ eye

¶ Alas vn to þe Barbarie Nacion
.I. most anone seþ it is 3oure will*e*
Bot crist þat starf for oure redempcione [leaf 68, back]
So 3eue me grace his hestes to fulfill*e*
.I. wriched wo*m*man no force þou .I. spill*e*
Wemmen arne born to þraldom *and* penance
And to bue vnder mannes gouernance

¶ .I. trowe att troie whan purrus brake þe wal
Or. ylion þat brende Thebes þat Citee
Noute Rome for þe harme þorwhé Hanybal
That Romaynes haþ venquissed times þre.
Nas herde swiche tender wepeinge for pite
As in þe chambre for hire depa*r*teinge
Bot forþe sche mote whereso sche wepe or singe

¶ O ferst moueynge cruel firmament
Wiþ þi diurnale sweigh þat croudest aie
And hurlist al fro est to Occident
þat naturelly wold hold a-noþer waye
Thi croudeinge sett þe heuen in suche arraie
Att þe be-ginnynge of þis fers viage
That cruel Mars haþe slayne þis mariage

[*Latin insertion*, p. 133 *of Six-Text*.]

¶ Infortunate ascendent tortuous
Of whiche þe lorde is falle alas
Out of his angle in to þe derkest house
O mars o.ataȝir as in þis caas
O feble mone vn-happy bene þi pas
Thou knettest þe þar þou ert nouht receyuede
The þou weere wele fro þens nowe ert þou weyued

¶ Imprudent emp*erour* of Rome allas
Was þere no philosopher in al þi toune
Is no time bet þan oþer in suche cas
Of viage is þere none elecc*i*on
Namely to folke of hihe condic*i*on
Nat whan a rote is of a burþe y-knowe
Alas ȝe bene to lewed or to slowe

¶ The schippe is brouht þis woful faire maide
Solempnely wiþe eue*r*y circumstance.
Nowe ih*es*u criste be wiþ ȝowe al sche saide [leaf 69]
There is no more bot fare wele faire Constance

Sche peyneþ hire to make gode continance
And forþe þei lete hir saile in þis manere
And turne .I. wil ȝeine to my matier

¶ The moder of þe Souldan wel of vices
Espied haþe hir sones pleine entent
How he wil lete his olde sacrifises
And riht a-none sche for hire conseille sent
And þei comen to knowen what sche ment
And whan assembled was þes folk in fere
Sche sett hire doune and seide as ȝe schalle here.

¶ Lordes quod sche ȝe knowen euerychone
Howe þat my sonne in pointe is so to lete
The holy lawes of owre Akkaron
ȝeuen be goddes Messagiere Makomete
Bott on avowe to grete god .I. hete
The lif schal raþer oute of my bodi sterte
Or Macometis lawe oute of myne herte

¶ What schuld vs tiden of þis newe lawe
Bot þraldom to oure bodies *and* penance
And afterward in hel to be drawe
ffor we reneyed Mahon oure creance
Bot lordes wil ȝe maken assurance
As .I. schal seine assentinge to my lore
And .I. schal make us sauf for euer more

¶ Thei sworen *and* assenten euery man
To leue wiþ hire *and* deye *and* by hire stande
And euerych in þe best wise he can
To strengþen hir schal al his frendes fonde
And sche haþe þis emprise take on honde
Whiche ȝe schal here þat .I. schal deuise
And to hem al sche spak in þis wise

¶ We schol first feyne vs cristendom to take
Colde water schal nouht greue vs bot a lite
And .I. schal suche a fest *and* a reuel make
þat as .I. trowe .I. schal þe sowdan quite
ffor þouhe his wif be crestened neu*er* so white
Sche schal haue nede to whasse awaie þe rede
Thouhe sche a fonte ful of water wiþ hire lede

¶ O sauldanesse rote of iniquite
Virago þu semiram þe seconde.
O serpent vnder femenyte [leaf 69, back]
Like to þe serpente depe in helle bownde
O feyned wo*m*man alle þat may confounde
Vertue *and* innocence þoruhe þi Malice
Is bred in þe as nest of eue*r*y vice.

¶ O Sathan envious sen þilk daie
That þou were chased from owre heritage
Wele knowes þou to wemmen þe olde waie
þou madest Eua to bringe in ser*u*age
þou wilt for-done cristen Mariage
þine instrument so welawaie þe while
Makeste þou of whan þu wilte begile

¶ This Souldanesse wham .I. þus blame *and* wery.
Lete p*r*iuely hire consielle gon here waye
What schold .I. in þis tale longer tary
Sche rideþ to þe souldan on a daye
And seide þat sche wold reney hir laye
And cristendome of p*r*estes hondes fonge
Repentynge sche heþen was so longe

¶ Besekeinge him to done hir þat honoure
þat miht haue þe cresten folke to feste
To plese hem .I. wil do my laboure
The souldan seiþe .I. wil done at 3oure heste

And knelynge þonkeþ hire of þat requeste
So glad he was he nyst what to seie
Sche kist hire sonne *and* home sche goþe hir waie

[*PART II.*]

¶ Arriued bene þis cresten folk to londe
In Surry wiþþe a grete solempne route
And hastely þis Souldan sent his sonde
ffirst to his Moder *and* al þe regne aboute
And seide his wif was commen oute of doute
And praide hir for to riden aȝein þe qwene
The honoure of his regne to suteigne

¶ Grete was þe pres *and* riche was þe raie
Of Surrys *and* Romeyns mette .I.-fere
The Moder of þe souldan riche *and* gaie
Reseiueþ hire wiþ also glad a chere
As any moder myht hire douhter dere
And to þe next Cite þere beside
A soft pas solempnyeli þei ride

¶ Nouht trowe .I. þe triumphe of Iulius
Of whiche þat lukan maade suche a boste
Was Roialer ne more corious [leaf 70]
Than was þassemble of þis blisful oste
Bot þis Scorpion þis wikked goste
This Sauldanesse for al hir flateringe
Kast vnder þis mortali to stinge

¶ The Souldan comeþ himself sone after þis
So Roialy þat wonder is to tel
He welcomeþ hire wiþ al Ioy *and* blis
And þus in merþe *and* Ioye .I. lete hem duel

þe fruyte of þis matier þat .I. tel
Whan tim com men þouht it for þe best
That Reuel stinte *and* men gon to rest

¶ The time come þis olde Souldanesse
Ordeined þe fest haþ of wich .I. tolde
And to þe feste Cristenten folke hem dresse
In gen*e*rale boþe ȝonge *and* olde
He may men feste *and* Roialte beholde
And deynteþs mo þan .I. can ȝou deuyse
Bot al to der þei bouht it er þei rise

¶ O Sodan woo þat euer art succesour
To werldly blisse spreynde is wiþ bitt*e*rnes
The ende of þe ioye of oure werldly labour
Woo occupieþ þe fine of oure gladnes
Herke þis conseile for þi securnes
Vpon þi glad daie haue in mynde
The vnwar wo or harme þat comeþ be-hinde

¶ ffor schortly for to telle att o worde
The souldan *and* þe cristen eu*e*rychone
Be al to-hewe *and* stiken att þe borde
Bot it war only Dam Custance alone
Thys olde Sauldanes cursed crone
Haþ wiþ hir frendes don þis cursed dede
ffor sche hir selfe wolde þe contrei lede

¶ Ne þere was Surreyne ne none þat was conu*e*rted
That of þe counsel of þe souldan wote
That he ne es alto-hewen or he astert-it
And Constance han þei take a-none fote hote
And in a schippe al sterles god wote
Thei hane hir sett *and* beden hire leren to saile
Owte of Surry ayeine to Itaile

¶ A certeine tresoure þat sche þeder ladde
And soþe to seine vital grete plente
Þei hane here ȝeuen *and* cloþes eke sche hadde [leaf 70, back]
And forþ sche saileþ in þe salte see
O my Custance fful of benignite
O. Emperours ȝonge douhter dere
He þat is lorde ouere fortune he þe steere

¶ Sche blisseþ *and* wiþ ful pitous voyce
Vn to þe croys of crist þus seide sche
O clere o welful auter holy croyce
Rede of þe lambes blode ful of pite
Þat whisse þe werlde fro þe olde iniquite
Me fro þe fende *and* fro his clowes kepe
Þat daie þat .I. schal drenchen in þe depe

¶ Victorious tree proteccion of trewe
Þat oonely worþi war for to bere
Þe kinge of heuen wiþ his wondes newe
Þe wyght lambe þat hurt was wiþ a spere
fflemer of frendes oute of him *and* here
On whiche þi lynes faiþfuly extenden
Me kep and ȝife me myht my lyf to amenden

¶ ȝeres *and* dayes fleteþ þis creature
Þoruhe owte þe see of grece vnto þe streite
Of Marrok as it as it was hir auenture
O many a sory mele noue maie sche baite
Affter her deþ ful oft mai sche waite
Or þat þe wilde wawes wil hir drive
Vn to þe place þare sche schal ariue

¶ Men myht axen whi sche was nouȝt sleine
Eke att þe feste who myht hir body saue
.I. answere to þat demande aȝeine
Who saue Danyel in þe horrible caue

Þere euery saue he Maister or knaue
Was wiþ þe lyons frete in a sterte
No whight bot god þa he bare in his hert

¶ God luste to schewe his wonderful miracle
In hire for sche schold see his myhty werkes
Crist whiche þat is to euery harme treacle
Be certeine Menes oft as knowen clerkes
Doþ þinge for certein ende þat ful derke is
To mannes witte þat for owre ignorance
Ne conne knowe his prȯdent purueance

¶ Nowe seþ sche was not at þe fest slawe
Who kepped hire fro þe drencheinge in þe see
Who keppet Iona in þe fisches mawe [leaf 71]
Tɒ he was spouted vp att Niniue
Wele maie men knowe it was no whight bot he
Þat keppe þe pe̅ple Ebayk fro drencheinge
Wiþ dri feete þoruhe oute þe see passinge

¶ Who had þe foure spirites of tempest
Þat power hane to anoyen londe *and* see
Boþe norþe *and* souþe *and* also west *and* este
Anoyeþ neyþer se ne londe ne tree
Soþe þe comander of þat was he
Þat fro þe tempest ay þis wo*m*man kepet
As wele whan sche woke as wen sche slepet

¶ Whare myht þis wo*m*man mete *and* drenke haue
Three ȝere *and* more how lasteþ hir vytaile
Who fede þe Egipciane Marye in þe caue
Or in desert non bot crist sans faille
ffyve þousand folke it was a grete me*r*vaille
Wiþ loues five *and* ffisches tuo to feede
Gode sente his foyson att her grete nede

¶ Sche dryueþ forþ in to owre Occeane
þoruhe oute þe wilde see tiH att þe last
Vnder an castel þat neuen .y. ne can
ffor in Norþe Humbrelond þe wawe her caste
And in þe sonde þe schippe stikked so fast
That þens wold it nouht of al a tyde
The wil of criste was þat sche scholde abide

¶ The Cunstable of þe Castel doune is fare
To seen þis wrakke *and* al þe schipe he souhte
And fonde þis wery wo*m*man ful of Care
He fonde also tresoure þat sche brouht
In hir langage Mercie sche be-souht
þe lif oute of þe body for to twynne
Hir to deliuer of woo þat sche was inne.

¶ A maner latine corrupte was hir speche
Bot algatez þer*e* by was sche vnderstonde
The Constable whan him lust no longer seche
This wooful wo*m*man brouht he to þe londe
Sche knelеþ doune *and* þonkeþ goddes sonde
Bot what sche was sche wolde no man seye
ffor foule ne faire þouhe þat sche scholde deye

¶ Sche seid sche was so mased in þe see
þat sche for-gat hér*e* mynde be hir trouþe
The constable of hir haþe so grete pite [leaf 71, back]
And eke his wif þat þei wepen for reuþe
Sche was so diligent wiþ owten sleuþe
To serue *and* plese eueryche in þat place
That al hir louen þat loken on hir face

¶ The Constable *and* dam Ermenilda his wif
Where payneins *and* þat cuntre eu*e*ry where
Bot Ermenilda loued here riht as hir lif
And custance haþ so longe soiourned þere

In orisons wiþ mony a better tere
Til ihesu haþe conuerted þoruhe his grace
Dam. Ermenilda Constablesse of þilke place

¶ In al þat lõnde dorst no kersten route
Al cresten fõlke bene fledde fro þat contre
Þoruhe payneins þat conquerden here aboute
The plages of þe norþe be þe lande *and* þe see
To Wales fledd fledde þe cristeante
Of olde bretons dwelynge in þis Isle
Ther was hire refute for þe mene while

¶ Bot ȝit was neuer cristen bretons so exiled
Þat þer nas sum in hir priuete
Honoured crist *and* heyþen folk be-giled
And nyhe þe castel þer dwel *per* dwelden þre
Þat one of hem was blinde *and* myht nouht see
Bot it weere wiþe ilke yen of his mynde
Wiþ wiche men seen after þat þei be blinde

¶ Briht was þe sonne as in þe somers daie
ffor whiche þe Constable *and* his wif also
And Constance hane ytake þe riht waie
To-warde þe se a forlonge way or tuo
To pleyen *and* to Romen to *and* fro
And in her waie blende men þaie mette
Croked *and* olde wiþ fast eyen schett

¶ In þe name of criste cried þis blinde bretoune
Dame Ermenilda ȝeue me my sihte aȝeine
This lady wex affrayde of þe soune
Lest hir husbonde schortly for to scyne
Wolde hir for ihesu cristes loue haue sleyne
Til Constance made hir bolde *and* bad hire wirche
The wil of criste as douhter of his chirche

¶ The Constable wex abassched of þat siht
And seide what amounteþ al þis fare
Custance anseward it is cristes miht [leaf 72]
þat helpeþ folke oute of þe fendes snare 571
And so ferforþe sche gan oure laye declare
þat sche constable ar þat it was eue
Conuerteþ *and* on criste maad him beleue 574

¶ This Constable was nouht lorde of þis place
Of whiche .I. spak þare he constance foũde
Bot keped it stronge mony a winter space
Vnder Allea kynge of of Northehumbrelonde 578
[. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
Aȝein þe scottes as men may wele here
Bot torne .I. wil a-ȝeine to my matier 581

¶ Sathan þat euer waiteþ vs to begile
Sauhe of Custance al hir p*er*fecciou*n*
And kast anone howe he myht white hir while
And maad a ȝonge knyht þat dwelleþ in þe toune 585
Loue hire so hote of foule affeccione
þat verraily him þouht þat he scholde spille
Bote of hir myht ones haue his wille 588

¶ He woweþe hir bot it aveileþ nouht
Sche wolde do no sinne be no weie
And for dispite he compassed in his þouht
To make hir a schameful deþe to deye 592
He waiteþ whan þe Constable was awaie
And p*r*iuely on a nyhte he crepte
In Ermenilda scambur whiles þat sche sleped 595

¶ Wery for-waked in hire orisons
Slepeþ custance *and* Ermenilde also
þis knyht þouht to p*er*forme sathanas temptacions
Al softly he is to þe bedde go 599

And kette þe þrote of Ermenylde a tuo
And leide þe blody knyf be dam Custance
And wente his weie þere god ȝiue him meschaunce 602

¶ Sone affter comeþ þis Constable aȝeine
And Eke Allea þe kenge þat was of þis lande
And sauhe his wyf dispitously sleyne
ffor whiche ful of oft he wepet *and* wronge his honde 606
And in þe bedde þe blody knyfe he fonde
Be dam Custance Alas what myht sche seye
ffor verre woo hir witte was al awaie 609

¶ To Kinge Alla was tolde al þis meschance
And eke þe time *and* where *and* in what wise
þat in a schip was founden þis Constance
As ȝe haue herde to-forne devise [leaf 72, back] 613
The kinges herte of pite gan agrise
Whan he seþe so benyngne a creature
ffal in disese *and* in mesauenture .616

¶ ffor as þe lambe towarde towarde his deþe is brouht
So stant þis Innocent be-for þe kenge
This fals knyht þat haþe þis treson wrouht
Bereþ hir on honde þa sche haþe don þis þinge 620
Bot naþeles þer was grete Morneinge
Amonge þe peple *and* sei þe can not gesse
That sche had done so grete a wikkenesse 623

¶ ffor þei haue sene hir eu*er* so vertuous
And loueinge ermenilde riht as hir lif
Of þis bare wittenes eu*er*yche in þat house
saue he þat Ermenilde slowhe wiþ his knyfe 627
This Gentil kinge haþe cauht a grete motif
Of þis wittenes And þouht he wolde enquere
Depper in þis caas he troueþ for to lere 630

¶ Alas Constance þou naste no champioun
Ne fiht cans tow nouht so walawaie
Bot he þat for oure redempcioun
And bonde Sathan. *and* lythe ȝit þere he laye
So be þi stronge champion þis daie
ffor bot if criste oopen myracle kyþe
Wiþe outen gilt þou schalt be sleyne also swyþe

¶ Sche Sett hir doune on knes *and* þus sche seyde
Immortale god þat sauedest Susan
ffrom false blam *and* þou mercyful mayde
Mary .I. mene douhter of seint Anne
Beforne whos childe Angels singe osanne
If .I. be giltles of þis felonye
Mi soker be. for elles schal .I. deye

¶ Haue ȝe nouht seen sum tyme a pale face
Amonge a pres of him þat haþe be lad
To wardes his deþ where him gat no grace
And suche a colour in his face haþ hadde
þat men miht knowe his face þat was be-stadde
Amonge al þe faces in þat route
So stant Custance *and* lokeþ hire aboute

¶ O queens leueinge in *prosperite*
Duchesses *and* ladies euerychon
Haue some reuþe of his aduersite
An Emperour douhter stant alone [leaf 73]
Sche haþe no whihte to whome to make hire mone
O blode Roial þat standest in þis drede
ffer bue þin frendes att þi grete nede

¶ This allea kinge haþ suche compassioun
As gentil hert is fulfilled of pete
þat from his yen ran þe water doune
Nowe hastely do feche a boke quod he

And if þis knyht wil swere howe þat sche
This wo*m*man slowhe ȝit wil we vs avise
Whome þat we wolde þat schal be oure Iustice

¶ A breton boke wreten wiþ þe euangelies
Was fett *and* on þis boke he swore anone
Sche giltif was in þe mene whiles
An hande him smote vpon þe nekke bone
þat doune he fel att ones as a stone
And boþe his eyȝen borst oute of his face
In siht of eue*r*y body in þat place

¶ A voice was herde in gene*r*al audience
And seide þou haste disclaundred giltles
The douhter of holy cherche in hiehe p*r*esence
Thus hast þou done *and* ȝit .I. mot hold my pes
Of þis Merueile a-gast was al þe pres
As Mased folke þei stoden eue*r*ychone
ffor drede of wreche saue Constance alone

¶ Grete was þe dede *and* eke þe repentance
Of hem þat hadden wronge suspecione
Vpon þis cely Innocent constance
And for þis miracle in conclusione
And by Constance Mediacione
The kinge *and* mony a-noþer in þat place
Conue*r*ted was þonked be cristes grace

¶ This fals knyht was sleyne for his vntrewþe
Be Iuggement of Allea Hastelye
And Constance haþe of his deþe grete rewþe
And after þis ih*esus* of his mercy
Maade Alla wedden ful solempnely.
þis holy mayden þat is briht *and* schene
And þus haþe criste maad Constance a queene

¶ Bot who was woful. If .I. schal not lye
Of þis wedynge bot Domylda *and* no mo
þe kinges moder ful of Tiranny.
Hire þouht hir cursed hert braste a two [leaf 73, back] 697
Sche wolde nouht her sonne had don so
Hir þouht a dispite þat he scholde take
So straunge a creature vnto his maake 700

¶ Me list nouht of þe chaf ne of þe stre
Maake so longe a tale as of þe corne
What scholde .I. tellen of þe royalte
Of þe Mariage or whiche cours goþ to forne 704
Who bloweþ in a trompe or in an horne
The fruyte of eu*e*ry tale is for to seie
Thei ete. *and* drinke *and* dance. *and* singe *and* pleie 707

¶ Thei gone to bed as it was skiH *and* riht
ffor þouhe þat wyues bene holy þinges
Thei must take a pacience a nyht
Suche maner necessaries as biene plesinges 711
To folke þat hane ywedded hem wiþ ringes
And laie a lite hire holines a side
As for þe time it maie non oþer betide 714

¶ On hire he gate a knaue childe anone
And to a bischop *and* his Cunstabule eke
He toke his wif to kepe whan he is gone
To scotelande ward his fomen for to seke 718
Nowe faire Custance þat is so humble *and* meke
So longe is gone wiþ childe til þat stiH
Sche halt hir chambure abideinge att cristes wiH 721

¶ The time is come a knaue childe sche bare
Mauricius att þe font þei him caHe
This Constable doþ forþe come a Messagier
And wrote to his kinge þat cleped was Alle 725

Howe þat þis blisful tiþinge was be-falle
And oþer tiþinge spedful for to seie
He takeþ þe letter *and* forþe he goþ his weie

¶ This Messagier to done his auantage
Vnto þe kinges moder rideþ swyþe
And saludeþ hire ful faire in his langage
Madame quod he he ȝe maye glad *and* bliþe
And þonkeþ god an hundreþ þousand siþe
My lady queene haþ childe wiþ oute doute
To Ioy *and* blisse of al þis regne a-boute

¶ Lo here þe lettres selede of þe tiþinge
þat .I. mote bere wiþ al þe hast .I. maie
If ȝe wille ouht vn to ȝowre sone þe kinge .
I am ȝoure seruant boþe niht *and* daie [leaf 74]
Domilda anseward as nowe at þis time
Bot here al niht .I. wil þat þou take þi rest
To morwe wiH .I. saie what me lest

¶ This Messagier dranke sadly ale *and* wyne
And stollne was his lettres priuely
Out off his box while he slepe as a swyne
And Conterfet was ful sotely
And oþer lettres wrouht ful sinfuly.
Vnto þe kinge direct of þis matier
ffro his Constable as ȝe schal after here

¶ The lettre spak howe þe queene deliuerd was
Of so horrible fendelyche creature
That in þe Castel none so hardy was
That any while dorst þer in endure
The moder was an elfe be aventure
Ycome be charmes or be sorceri
And euery whitte hateþe hir company

¶ Woo was þis kinge whan he þis *lettr*e had seyne
Bot to no white he tolde þis sorwe sore
Bot of his owen he wrote ageyne
Welcome be þe sonde of criste for euer more
To me þat am nowe lerend in his lore
Lord welcom be þi lust *and* þi plesance
Mi lust is put al in þine ordinance

¶ Kepeþ þis childe al be it foule or faire
And eke my wif vnto myne home co*m*ynge
Criste whan him liste maie sende me an heire
More Agreable þan this to my likinge
This letter he seleþ p*r*iuely wepeinge
Whiche to þe Messagier was take sone
And forþe he goþe þar*e* is nomore to done

¶ O Messagier fulfilde of dronkennesse
Stronge is þi breþe þi limmes faltern aye
And þou be-wreyest al sekurnesse
Thi mynde is lorne þu Iangelest as a Iaye
Thi face is turned in a newe arraie
There drunkennesse reygneþ in any route
þere is no counsel hidde wiþ outen doute

¶ O domilda. I ne haue non englisshe digne
Vnto þi malice *and* þi tirannye
An þer-for to þe fende .I. þe resigne.
Lat him endite þi traitery [leaf 74, back]
ffy mannysshe fy. o nay be god .I. lye
ffy fendlyche spirit for .I. dare wele telle
Thouhe þou here walke þi spirit is in helle

¶ This Messagier comeþ fro þe kinge aȝeine
And att þe kinges moder courte he liþe
And sche was of þis Messagier ful faine
And plesed him in al þat eu*er* sche myht

He dranke *and* wele his girdel vnder pyht
He slepeþ *and* he fronteþ in his gise
Alle nyht til þe son gan rise

¶ Eft was his letters stollen euerychõn
And Conterfet *lettres* in þis wise
The kinge Commandeþ his constable a none
Vppeyne of hangeynge or an hihe Iewys
þat he ne schold suffur in no wise
Constance inwiþe his regne to Abide
Thre daies *and* a quarter of a tide

¶ Bot in þe same schippe as he hir fonde
Hire *and* hire ȝonge sone *and* hir gere
He schold putte *and* croude fro þe londe
And Charger þat sche neuer eft com þere
O my Constance wele may þi goste haue fere
And slepeinge in þi dreme be in penance
Whan Domilda cast al þis ordinance

¶ This Messagier on morwe whan he woke
Vnto þe castel halt þe next waie
And to þe Constable he þe letter toke
And whan þat he þis pitous *lettre* saye
fful oft he seide alas *and* walawaie
Lord criste *quod* he howe maie þis *lettre* endure
So wooful of synne is mony a creature

¶ O myhti god. if þat it be þi wille
Sethe þowe is rlht-ful Iugge howe maie it be
þat þou wilt suffur Innocent to spille
An wikked folk reigne in *prosperite*
O good Constance alas so woo is me
þat .I. mot be þi tormento*ur* or deye
On schames deþ þere is none oþer weie

¶ Wepen boþe ȝonge *and* olde in al þat place
Whan þat þe kinge þis cursede letter sent
And Custance wiþ a dedly pale face
þe ferþe daie to warde þe schippe sche wente [leaf 75] 823
Bot Naþeles sche takeþ in goode entente
þe will of criste *and* kneleinge att' þe stronde
Sche seide lorde ay welcome be þi sonde 826

¶ He þat me keppet fro þe fals blame
While .y. was in þe londe amonges ȝowe
He can me kepe from arme *and* eke frome schame
In salt see al-þouhe .I. see nouȝt howe 830
As stronge as eu*er* he was he is riht nowe
In him trust .I. *and* in his moder dere
þat is to me my saile *and* eke my stere 833

¶ Hire litel childe laie wepeinge in hir arme
And knelynge pitusly to him sche seide
Pees litel son .I. wiH do þe none harme
Wiþ þat þe kerchef of hir hede sche braide 837
And ouer his litel yen sche it leide
And in hir arme sche lulleþ it ful fast
And in to heuen her yen vp sche cast 840

¶ Moder q*uo*d sche *and* Maiden briht Marie
Soþe is þat þoruh wo*m*mannes egment
Man kinde was lorne *and* dampned aye to deye
ffor whiche þi childe was on a crois rente 844
þi blisfully yen sawhe aH his tornement
Than is þere no compa*r*ison be-twene
þi woo *and* any woo man may susteigne 847

¶ Thowe sawhe þi so*n*ne slayne to for þin eyȝene
And ȝit leueþ now my childe pa*r*faie
Now lady to whome al woful cryȝen
Thow glorie of wo*m*manhode þou faire maie 851

þou haven of refute briht sterre of daie
Rew on my childe þat of þi gentillesse
Rewest on eu*e*ry rewful in destrisse 854

¶ O litel childe alas what is þi gilte
þat neuer wrouhtest sinne as ȝit p*ar*de
Whi wil þi hard fader haue þe spilte
O merci dere constable q*uo*d sche 858
As lat my litel childe dwel here wiþ þe
And if þou darst nouht saue him frome blame
So kesse him ones in his faders name 861

¶ Ther-wiþ sche loked bakward to þe londe
And seide fare wel husbonde rewþeles
And vp sche riseþ *and* walkeþ doune þe stronde
To warde þe schippe hir foloweþ al þe prees [leaf 75, back]
And euer sche praieþ her childe to holde his pees
And takeþ hire leue *and* wiþ an holy entent
Sche blisseþ hir *and* in to schippe sche went 868

¶ Vitailled was þe schip it is no drede
Abundantly for hire ful longe space
And o*per*e necessaries þat schold nede
Sche had .I.-nowhe heried be goddes grace 872
[. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
And bringe hire home .I. can no better saie
Bot in þe see sche driueþ forþ hire waie 875

[*PART III.*]

¶ Alla þe kinge comeþ home sone after þis
Vnto his Castel of þe whiche .I. tolde
And axeþ where his wif *and* his childe is
The Constable gan aboute his hert colde 879

And pleinly al þe man*er* he him tolde
As ȝe hane herde .I. kan tel it no better
And schewe þ þe kinge his seal *and* his letter 882

¶ And seide lorde as ȝe co*m*maunded me
Vp peine of de þ so haue .I. done certeine
This Messagier tumended was *til* he
Most be-knowen *and* tellen plat *and* pleine 886
ffrom nyht to nyht where þat he had leine
And þus be witte *and* soubtile enquereinge
Imagened was be wham þis harme gan springe 889

¶ The hande was knowe þat þe *lettr*e wrote
And al þe venym of þis cursed dede
Bot in what wise certeinli .I. note
þe effecte is þis þat oute of drede 893
His moder he slowhe þat mai men pleinli rede
ffor þat sche traito*ur* was to hire legance
Thus ende þ olde Domylda wi þ meschaunce 896

¶ The sorwe þat þis Alla nyht *and* daye
Make þ for his wif *and* his childe also
Ther is no tunge þat it telle maie
Bot now wil .I. vnto Custance go 900
þat flete þ in þe se *in* peine *and* wo
þre ȝere *and* more as liked crist sonde
Or þat hir schip approched vnto þe londe 903

¶ Vnder an hey þ en castel att þe last
Of whiche þe name in my text not .I. finde
Custance *and* eke hir childe þe see vpkast
Al myhti þat saue þ al mankinde 907
Haue on Constance *and* hire childe sum mynde [leaf 76]
That fallen is in hey þ e honde eft sone.
In pointe to spille as .I. scaH tel ȝowe sone 910

¶ Done fro þe Castel commeþ þere mony a whihte
To gauren on þis schep *and* on Constance ·
Bot schortly fro þe castel on a nyht
The lord steweard god ȝiue him meschance
A þef þat had reneyde oure creance
Com vn schip alon *and* seide he schold
Hir lemman be where sche wolde or nolde

¶ Woo was þis wreched wo*m*man woo be gone
Hir Childe cride *and* sche cried pitously
Bot blisse-ful Marye helped hir a none
ffor wiþþe hir strogelinge wele *and* myhtily
The þef fel ouere þe borde al sodanly.
And in þe se he drenched for vengance
And þus haþ crist vnvenemed keped Custance

¶ O foule lust of luxurie lo þine ende
Not onely þat þou faintest mannes mynde
Bot verraili þou wilt his body schende
The ende of þi werk or of þi lust-is blinde
Is compleigneinge howe many oone men maie finde
þat not for werke sum time bot for þe entente
To done þis sinne bene eyþer sleyne or schente

¶ Howe maie þis wayko wo*m*man haue þe strenkeþ
Hir to dofende aȝeine þis renegate
O golyas vnmesurable of lengeþe
Howe myht dauid make þe so mate
So ȝonge *and* of Armo*ur* so desolate
Howe dorst he loke vpon þi dredeful face
Wele maie men seen it is bot goddes grace

¶ Who ȝaf Iudith. Corage or hardinesse
To slene him Olefernus in his tent
And to deliuer oute of wrechednesse
þe peple of god .I. seide for þis entente

þat riht as god spiret *and* vigor sente
To heme *and* saued hem out of meschance
So sent he myht *and* vigor to Constance

¶ ffor goþe hir schipe þoruh oute þe narow mouþe
Of Iubalter *and* þens driueinge aye
Sum tim west *and* sum tim norþe *and* souþe
And som time est ful mony a wery daie.
Til cristes moder blissed be sche aye [leaf 76, back]
Haþ schapen þoruh hire endeles goodenes
To make an hende of al her heuenes

¶ Now latte vs stent of Constance bot a þrowe
An speke we of þe Romaine Emp*erour*
That oute of Surry haþe be letters knowe
The slawhte of Cristen folk *and* dishono*ur*
Done to his douhter be a fals trait*our*
.I. mene þe Curssed wikked Sawdanesse
þat att þe fest le slen boþe more *and* lesse

¶ ffor whiche þis Emp*erour* haþ sent anone
His Senat*our* wiþ roial ordinance
And oþer lordes god wote manyone
On Surriens to taken hir vengeance
Thei brennen slene *and* bri*n*gen hem to meschance
ffol mony a day bot schortly þis is þe ende
Homwarde to Rome þei schapen hem to wende

¶ This Senator repaireþ wiþ vittorie
To Romewarde seileinge ful Roialy
And mette þe schippe driueynge as seiþe þe storie
In whiche Constance sitte ful pitously.
No þinge ne knewe he what sche was ne whi
Sche was in Suche aray ne sche wil seye
Of hir estate þouhe sche schold deie

¶ He bringeþ hir to Rome And to his wif
He ȝaf hire *and* hire ȝonge sone also
And wiþ þe Senatur sche led hir lif
Thus can owre lady bringen oute of wo
Woful Constance *and* mony anoþere mo
And longe time dwelled sche in þis place
In holy werkes euer as was hire grace

¶ The Senato*ur* wif hire [1]Aunte was [1 MS *corrected*]
Bot for alþat sche knewe hire neue*re* more
.I. wil no longer tarien in þis cas
Bot to kinge Alla whiche .I. spake of ȝore
That for his wif wepeþ *and* sikeþ sore
.I. wil retorne *and* lete .I. wil Constance
Vnder þe Senato*ur* gouernance

Kinge Alla whiche þat had his moder sleyne
Vppon a daie fel in suche repentance
þat. if .I. schortly tellen schaH *and* pleyne
To Rome he comeþ to receyuen his penance
And put him in þe popes ordinan[c]e [leaf 77]
In hihe *and* lowe *and* ihesu crist be-souht
ffor-ȝeue his wikked werke þat he wrouht

¶ The fame anone þorwhe Rome toune is borne
Howe alla kinge scha com in pilgrenage
Be herberioures þat went him be forne
ffor whiche þe Senato*ur* as was þe vsage
Rode him aȝeine *and* mony of his lignage
Als wele to schewe his magnificence
As to done any kenge a reuerence

¶ Grete chiere doþe þis noble Senatour
To kinge Alla *and* he to him also
Eueriche of hem doþ to oþere grete hono*ur*
And so be-fel þat on a daie or two

This Senatur is to kinge Alla go
To feste *and* schortly if .I. schal nouht lye
Costance sone in his companye 1008

¶ Som men wald seine att þe request of Custance
This Senat*our* haþe ledde þis childe to fest
.I. maie not tel eu*er*y Circumstance
Be as be may þ*er*e he was at lest 1012
Bot soþ þis is þat att his moder hest
Be-forne Alla dureinge þe mete space
The childe stode lokeinge *in* þe kinges face 1015

¶ This Alla kinge haþ of þis childe grete wonder
And to þe Senator he seide a none
Whos is þat faire childe þat stondeþ ȝonder
.I. note q*uo*d he be god *and* be seinte Iohñ 1019
A moder he haþe bot fader haþe he none
þat .I. of wote *and* schortly schortly in a stounde
He tolde Alla howe þat þis childe was founde 1022

¶ Bot god woote q*uo*d þis Senat*our* also
So vertuouse a leuere in my lyf
Sawhe .I. neu*er* as sche. ne herd of moo
Of werldly we*m*men. Maiden or wif 1026
.I. dar wele saie sche had leuer a knyf
Thoruhe hir breste þan bene a wo*m*man wik
There is no man coupe bringe hire to þat prik 1029

¶ Nowe was þis childe as like vn to custance
As possible as is a creature to be
This Alla haþe þe face in remembrance
Of Dame Custance *and* þ*er*e-oñ mused he 1033
If þat þe childes moder weer ouht sche [leaf 77, back]
That is wif *and* p*r*iuely he siht
And sped him fro þe table þat he myht 1036

¶ P*ar* faye þouht he þe fantome is in myn hede
.I. hauht demen of skilful Iuggement
þat in þe salt se my wif is dede
And afterward he maade his Argument
What wote .I. if þat crist hire haþ hider sent
.Mi. wyf be see as wele as he hire sent
To my contre from þens þat sche was went

¶ And after none home wiþ þe Senatour
Goþe Alla for to seen þis wonder chaunce
This Senato*ur* doþ alla a grete honoure
And hastely sent after Custance
Trusteþ wele hire liste nouht to daunce
Whan þat sche wiste where for was þat sonde
Vnneþe vp vpon hire feete sche myht stonde

¶ Whan Alla sauhe his wif faire he hire grete
And wepped þat it was reuþe for to see
ffor att þe first loke he on hire sette
He knewe wele verraile þat it was sche
And for sorwe as dombe stant as a tre
So was hir hert schette in hire distresse
When sche remembred his vnkindenesse

¶ Twys sche swownede in his owen siht
He wepe *and* him excuseþ pitusly
God q*uo*d he *and* his Halowes briht
So wisly of my soule as haue mercy
That of ȝoure harme as gelteles am .I.
As. is Moris my son*e* so like ȝowre face
Elles þe fende me feche out of þis place

¶ Longe was þe sobynge *and* þe bitter peine
Or þat hir woful hertes myht cesse
Grete was was þe pite for to here hem pleine
Thoruhe whiche pleintes gan her woo encres

I. pray ȝow al my labo*ur* to relese
.I. maie nouht tel hir woo vn-to to morwe
.I. am so wery to speke of hir sorwe

¶ Bot fynally whan þat þe soþe is wist
That Alla gilteles was of hir woo
.I. trowe . an .C. times bene þei kist
And suche a blisse is þere be-tuex hem two
That saueþ þe ioy þat lasteþ euer mo [leaf 78]
There is none like þat any creature
Haþ seen or schal while þe werlde maye dure

¶ Tho praide sche hir husbond mekly
In releueinge of hir longe pitous pyne
þa he wolde praie hir fader s[p]ecialy
That he of his hihe Magestee enclyne
To vowchesaue som day wiþ him to dyne
Sche praide him eke he scholde be no weie
Vnto hir*e* fader no worde of hir seie

¶ Som men wold sey howe þat þe Childe morice
Doþ þis Message vn-to þis Emp*erour*
Bot as .I. gesse Alla was nouht so nyce
To him þat was of so*uer*eigne honoure
As he þat is of cristen folke þe floure
Sent any Childe but it is bet to deme
He went him selfe *and* so it maie wele seme

¶ This Emp*er*oure haþ graunted gentilly
To come to denere as he him besouht
And wele rede .I. he loked besyly .
Vpon þis child . *and* on his douhter þouht
Alla goþe to his Inne as him ouhte
And array for þis feste in euc*ry* wise
As forforþe as his comynge maie suffise

¶ The morwe cam and Alla gan him dresse
And eke his wif þis emp*erour* for to mete
And forþe þei redde in Ioy. *and* in gladnesse
And whan sche seyhe hire fader in þe strete
Sche lihteþ adoune *and* falleþ him to fete
ffader q*uo*d sche 3oure 3onge childe Constance
Is nowe ful clene oute of 3oure remembrance

¶ .I. am 3oure douhter Constance q*uo*d sche
That whilome 3e sente vnto Surrye
It am .I. fader þat in salt see
Was put alone *and* dampned for to dye
Goode fader to 3owe .I. crye
Sende me no more[1] in to heyþennesse [[1] re *interlined in red*]
Bot þonke my lorde here of his kindenesse

¶ Who kan þe pytous Ioy tellen all
Be-twixe hem þree seþþen þei bue þus ymett
Bot of my tale make an ende .I. schall
The day goþe fast .I. wil no longer lette
This gladde folke to denere þei hem sette [leaf 78, back]
In Ioy *and* blisse att þe mete .I. lete hem dwelle
A. þousand folde wel mor þan .I. can telle

¶ þis Childe Moris was siþen Emp*erour*
Maade be þe pope an leued Cristienly
To Cristes chirche he dide grete honoure
Bot I. lat al his storie passen bie
Of Constance is my tale sekerlie
In olde Romeyne gestes men mai finde
Moris lif .I. bere it nouht in mynde

¶ This kinge Alla whan he his time seie
Wiþ his Custance his holy wif so swete
To Ingelonde bue þei comen þe riht weie
Where as þei leue in Ioy *and* in quyete

Bot litel while it lasteþ .I. ȝowe hete
Ioy of þis werlde for time wil nouȝt abide
ffro day to nyht it chaungeþ as þe tide. 1134

¶ Who so leueþ euer in suche delite a daie
þat ne meued eyþer conscience
Or ire or talent or sumkin afraie
Envie or pride or passion or offense 1138
.I. ne saie bot þis ende þis sentense
þat litel while in Ioy or in plesance
Lasteþ þe blisse of alla wiþ Constance 1141

¶ ffor deþ þat takeþ of hihe *and* louhe his rent
Whan passed was a ȝere euen as .I. gesse
Oute of þis werlde kinge Alla he hente
ffore whome Constance haþe ful grete heuinesse 1145
Now latt vs preyne God his soule blisse
And dam Constance fynally to seye
To warde þe toune of Rome goþe hire weye 1148

¶ To Rome is comen is comen þis holy creature
And fyndeþe here frendes hole *and* soúnde
Now is sche scaped al hir a-venture
Whan sche hir fader haþ founde 1152
Doune on hir knees falleþ sche to grounde
Wepeinge for tendurnesse in hert bliþe
Sche herieþ god a .C. þousand siþe 1155

¶ In vertu *and* holy almosdede
Thei leuen al. *and* neuer a sonder wende
Til deþe depart hem þis lif þei lede
An fare nowe wele my tale is att an ende 1159
Nowe ihesu criste þat of his myht maye sende [leaf 79]
Ioy after woo gouerne vs in his grace
And kepe vs al þat bene in þis place 1162

Explicit fabula legis periti.

Incipit prologus Armigeri. [on leaf 79]

OWre Ost vpon his stereps stode anone
And seide goode men herkeneþ euerychone
This was a þrefty tale for þe nones
Sir pariche preste quod he for goddes bones
Tel vs a tale as was þi forward 3ore
.I. se welee þat 3e lerned men in lore
Can muchel goode be goddes dignite
The person him anseward benedicite
What eyley þe man so sinfuly to swer
Owr oste anseward Iankin be 3e þere
.I. smel a loller in þe wynde quod he
How good men quod oure oste herkeneþ me
Abideþ for goddes deyne passione
ffor we schal haue a predicacione
This loller will prechen her sumwhat
Nay be my fader sowle þat sal he nat
Seid þe swyere her schal he nouht preche
He schal no gospel glosen here ne teche
He leueþ al in þe grete god he
He wolde sowen sum difficulte
Or sprengen cokel in oure clene corne
And þar-for oste .I. warne þe be-forne
Mi Ioly body . schal a tale teH
And .I. schal klynken 3ow so mery a beH
þat .I. schal waken al þis compaignie
Bot it schal not bien of philosophie
Ne fisleas ne turnies queynte of lawe
There is bot litel latine in my mawe

Explicit prologus.

DRAWINGS OF THE 23 TELLERS

OF THE

24 CANTERBURY TALES;

COPIED FROM THE ELLESMERE MS,

AND CUT ON WOOD,

BY

Mr W. H. Hooper.

In this first issue, 1871, *only* 14 *of the Cuts are given. The other* 10 *will follow in* 1872. *When the print of each MS is bound, the cut of each Teller of a Tale can be put at the beginning of his Tale, as in the Ellesmere MS, or by his description in the General Prologue, to contrast the artist's hand with the poet's; or, all the cuts can be put together before or after the Prologue, or at the end of the volume (as not part of the MS), according to the fancy of each Member.*

THE MILLERE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 38, back.

THE KNYGHT.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 14.

(The brand on the horse's hip—M, ? for *Miles*—
is in ink, and probably by a later hand.)

THE COOK.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 51.

THE REVE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 46.

THE WYF OF BATHE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 76.

THE MAN OF LAWE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 54, back.

THE FRERE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 80, *back.*

THE SOMONOUR.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 85, back.

THE CLERK OF OXENFORD.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 92.

THE SHIPMAN.

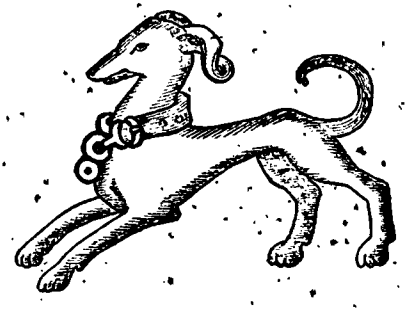
Ellesmere MS, leaf 147, *back.*

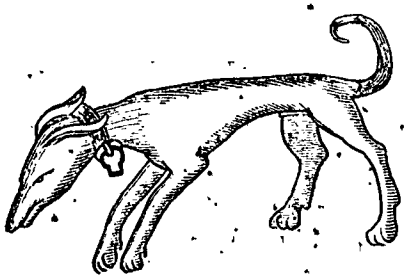
THE PRIORESSE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 152, *back.*

CHAUCER.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 157, *back.*





THE MONK.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 173.

THE NONNES PREEST.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 183.

GROUP B. (β. FRAGMENT III.)

§ 4. THE SHIPMAN'S TALE.

Incipit fabula Naute

A Marchant whilom dwelled att sein Denys [leaf 181]
That riche was for whiche men helde him wys.
A wif he hadde of excellent beaute
And compinable *and* reuerent was sche
Whiche is a þinge þat causeþ more dispence
Then worþe is al þe chier *and* reuerence.
That men haue done att festes or at daunces
Suche Salutacions *and* countenaunces
Passeþ as doþe þe schadowe on a wall
Bot woo is him þat paie most for all
The Cely husbonde algates he must paye
He moste vs cloþe *and* vs araie
Al for his owen wo[r]schip richelye
In whiche araie we dauncen Iolylye
And if þat he nouht maie *par*aduenture
Or elles luste no suche to endure
Bot þenkeþ it is waste *and* yloste
þat mot anoþere payen for owre coste
Or leue vs golde *and* þat is *par*ilous
This noble marchant helde a noble hous
ffor whiche he had al daye grete repaire
ffor his largenesse *and* for his wif was faire
That wonder is? bot herkeneþ to my tale
Amonges al his gestes grete *and* smale
Ther was a monke a faire man *and* a bolde
I. trowe. a þerte wynter he was of olde
That euere in one was draweinge to þe place
This 3onge monke þat was so faire of face

Aqweynted was so wiþ þis goodman
Seþen þatt her first knowleche began
That in his hous as famylier was he
As it is possible any frende to be
And for als muchel as þe good manne.
And eke þis monke of whiche þat .I. be-ganne.
Were boþe tuo borne in o vilage
þe monke him clayme as for cosinage
And he aȝeine he seiþ nouht ones naye
Bot was as glad þere-of as foule of daye
ffor to his herte it was a grete plesaunce
Thus bene þei knytt wiþ eterne alliaunce
And ilke of hem gan oþer to assure
Of broþerhed whiles þat þeire lyue maie endure.
ffre was dan Iohñ *and* namely of dispense [leaf 181, back]
As in þat hous *and* ful of diligence
To do plasance *and* also grete Costage
He nouht forȝate to ȝeue þe lest page
In al þat hous bot after here degre
He ȝaf þe lorde *and* seþen al þe meyne
Whan þat he cam sum maner honest þinge
ffor whiche þei were al gladd of his comynge
As foule is feine whan sonne vpriseþ
No more of þis as now for it suffiseþ
Bot so be-fel þis marchant vpon a daie
Schope him to make rede his araie
Towarde þe toune of Brugges for to fare
To byen þere a porcion of ware
ffor whiche he haþe to parische sent anone
A messagier *and* preide haþe dan Iohñ
Thas he scholde come to seinte Denys *and* pleye
Wiþ him *and* wiþ his wif a dai or tweye
Are he to brugges wente in al wise
þis noble Monke of whiche .I. ȝowe deuise
Haþ of his Abbot as him lust lycenc
Be-cause he was a man of hihe prudence

And eke an Oficere oute for to ride
To se here graunges *and* her bernes wide
And vnto Seint Denys he comeþ anone
Who was so welcom as my lorde dan Iohñe
Oure dere Cosyn ful of Curtasye
With him brouht a Iubbe of Maluese
And eke anoþer ful of goode vernage
And volatile as aie was his vsage
And þus .I. lete hem ete *and* dringe *and* pleie
þiȝ-marchant *and* his monke a daie or tweie
The þred daie þis Marchant vp he riseþ
And on his nedes sadly him a-viseþ
And vp in-to his counte hous goþe he
To reken wiþ him-self wel maie be
Of þilke ȝere howe þat wiþ him stode
And howe þat he despended had his goode
And if þat he encresed were or none
His bokes *and* his bagges many one
He leyþe be-for him on his counteingborde
fful riche was his tresore *and* his horde
ffor whiche ful fast his counterhous dore he schette [leaf 182]
And eke he nolde no man schold him lette
Of his accomptes for þe mene time
And þus he sitte til it was passed p*ri*me
Dan Iohñ was resen in þe morne also
And in gardyn wakkeþ to *and* fro
And haþe his þinges seide deuoutly
This good wif cam walkinge p*ri*uely
In-to þe Gardeine þer he walkeþ soft
And him Salueþ as sche haþ done oft
A maiden childe cam in hire co*m*paignie
Whiche att hir lust maie gouerne *and* gye
ffor ȝit vnder þe ȝerde was þe maide
O dere Cosyn myne dan Iohñ sche saide
What eyleyþe ȝowe so raþe to rise
Nece q*uo*d he hit ouht ynouhe suffise

.V. houres to slepe on a nyht
Bot it were for an olde palled knyht 1292
As ben þes wedded men þat ly *and* dare
As in a forme sitt alweie an hare
Were al for-strauht wiþ houndes grete *and* smale
Bot dere nece whi be ȝe so pale 1296
.I. trowe certes þat oure good man
Haþe ȝowe labourde seþen þe niht be-gan
That ȝowe were nede to resten hastelye
And wiþ þat worde he louhe ful merelye 1300
And of owen þouht he wex rede
þis faire wif gan to sake hire hede
And seide þus? ȝe god wote al *quod* sche
Nay cosyne myne it stant nouht so wiþ me 1304
ffor be þat god þat ȝaf me soule *and* life
In al þe reme of fraunce is *þere* no wif
þat lesse lust haþe to þat sori pleie
ffor .I. maie singe alace *and* weilewaie 1308
þat .I. was borne bot to no whight *quod* sche
Dare .I. nouht telle howe it stant wiþ me
Wherefore .I. þenke oute of þis londe to wende
Or elles of my-selfe to make an ende 1312
So fol am .I. of drede *and* of care
This monke be-gan vpon þis wif to stare
And seide alace my nece god for-bede
That ȝe for any sorwe or for any drede 1316
ffor-do ȝowre self. bot telleþ forþe ȝoure greffe [leaf 182, back]
*Par*aduenture .I. maie in ȝoure meschieffe
Counsel or helpe *and* þer-fore telleþ me
Alle ȝowre annoyȝe for it schalle be secre 1320
ffor oñ my portos .I. make an oothe
þatt neuer in my lif for leue ne lothe
Ne schal .I. of no counsel ȝowe be-wreye
The same aȝeine to ȝowe .I. seye 1324
Be god *and* be þis portos .I. swere
þouhe men wolde me al to peces tere

Ne schal .I. neue*r*e for to go in-to hell
Be-wreye a worde of þinge þat me tell
Not for no Cosinage ne alliance
Bot verreyly for loue *and* affiance
Thus bue þe sworne *and* here vpon kist
And ekke of hem tolde oþere what hem lust
Cosine q*uo*d sche if .I. had a space
As .I. haue none *and* namely in þis place
þan wolde .I. tel a legent of my lyue
What I haue sufferd seþen .I. was a wive-
Wiþe myne husbande alþeihe he be ȝoure cosine
Nay q*uo*d þis monke be god *and* be seint Martine
He nys no more cosine vn-to me
Than is þe leue þ*at* hangeþ on þis tre
•.I. clepe him so be seinte denise in fraunce
To haue þe mor cause of acqueyntance
Of ȝowe whiche .I. haue loued specialye
Abouen al we*m*men sekurlye
This swere .I. nowe on my professiouñ
Telleþ ȝoure greue lest þat he come a-douñ
And hasteþ ȝowe *and* go ȝoure weie anone
My dere loue q*uo*d sche o Doun Iohñ
fful leue me were þis counsel to hide
Bot out it mot it maie longer abide
Myne husband is to me þe werst man
þat euer was seþen þe werlde began
Bot seþen .I. am a wif it sitte nouht me
To telle no wyght of oure p*ri*uete
Neyþer a bedde ne in none oþer place
God schelde .I. scholde tel it for his grace
A wif ne schal nouȝt seine of hire husbande
Bot all honoure as .I. kan vnder-stonde.
Saue vn-to ȝowe þus muche tel .I. schall [leaf 183]
As helpe me god he ne is nouht worþe att all
In no degre þe value of a flie
Bot ȝit me greueþ most his Nygardrye

And wele ȝe wote þat wemmen naturellye
Desiren þinges seven as wel as .I.
Þey wolden þat husbondes scholden be
Hardy. *and* wyse. riche. *and per*-to fre
And buxum to his wif *and* fresche a bedde
Bot be þat ilke lorde þat for vs bledde
ffor his honour miself to araie
A sonday next .I. must paye
And hundreþ frankes or elles .I. am lorne
ȝit were me leuer þat .I. were vnborne
The me were done a sclaunder or velanye
And if myn husbonde eke myht a-spye
.I. were bot lost *and* þerefore .I. ȝowe preye
Lene me þis somme *and* elles mot .I. deye
Dan Iohñ .I. seie lene me þis hundreþ frankes
Parde .I. wil nouht fail þe my þonkes
If þat ȝow lust to do þat .I. ȝowe preye
ffor att a certeyne daye .I. wil ȝowe peye
And do to ȝowe what plesance *and* seruise
þat .I. maie do riht as ȝowe lost deuise
And bot .I. do god take on me vengeaunce
As foule as hadde Genyloñ of fraunce
This gentil monke answerd in þis manere
Nowe trewly myne owen ladi dere
.I. haue quod he on ȝowe so grete a rowþe
þat .I. ȝowe swere *and* pliht ȝowe my trouþe
þat whan ȝoure husbond is to flaundres fare
.I. wil deliuer ȝowe owet of þis werldes care
ffor .I. wil bringen ȝowe an hundreþ frankes
And wiþ þat he cauht hire be þe schankes
And here enbraced harde *and* kissed ofte
Goþe nowe ȝoure weie quod he al stil *and* soft
And latt us deyne as sone as euer we maie
ffor be my chilinder it is prime of þe daie
Goþe nowe *and* be as trewe as .I. schal be
Nowe elles god for-bede sir quod sche

And forþe sche goþe as gelous as a pye
And badde þe cokes þat þei scholde hem hihe
So þat men myht dyne *and* þat anone [leaf.183, back]
Vp to hir husbond is þis wif gone
And knokkeþ att his Counter boldely
Que la *quod* he peter it am .I.
Quod sche whatte howe longe wil ȝe fast
Howe longe time wil ȝe reken *and* kast
ȝoure *sommes* ȝoure bokes *and* ȝoure þinges
The deuel haue part on al suche rekenynges
ȝe haue y-nowhe *parde* of goddes sonde
Comme doune to daie *and* latte ȝoure bagge stonde
Ne be ȝe nouht aschamed þa[t] dan Iohñ
Schal fastinge al þis daye Elenge gone
What latt vs here Masse go we dyne
Wif *quod* þis man litel canstowe deuyne
The Corious besines þat we haue
ffor of vs chapmen so god me saue
And be þat lorde þat called is seinte Ive
Scarsely amonges tuelue tweyne schollen þriue
Continuly lasteynge vnto oure age
We maye wele make chiere *and* good visag
And driue forþe þe werld as it maie be
And kepen oure estate in *priuete*
Til we be dede or elles þat we pleie
On pilgrenage or gone out of þe weye
And þere-fore haue .I. grete necessite
Vpon þis qweinte werlde to avise me
ffor euer more we must stonde in drede
Of happe *and* fortune in myne chapmanhede
To flandres wil .I. go to morwe att daye
And Come aȝeine as sone as euer y maye
ffor whiche my dere wif .I. þe be-seke
As be to eu*e*ry wyht buxum *and* meke
And for to kepe oure goode be curiouse
And honestly gouerne wele oure house

þou hast ynouhe in eue*r*y man*er*e wyse
þat to a þrefte husbonde may. suffise
þe lakkeþ none array. ne no vitaile
Of siluer in þi purce þou maist nou3ht faile
And wiþ þat worde his counter dore he schett
[. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] .
And hastely a messe was þ*er*e seide
And spedely þe tables wer ylaide
And to þe dener fast þei hem spedde
And richely þis monke þis chapman fedde [leaf 184]
And after dener Dañ Iohñ Soburlye
This chapman tok aparte al p*ri*uely
He seide him þus Cosyn it standeþ so
þat wele .I. se to brugges wil 3e go
God *and* seinte Austine spede 3owe *and* guyde
.I. praie 3owe Cosin wisly þat 3e ride
Gouerneþ 3owe also of 3owre dyette
And temp*ar*aly. *and* namely in þis hete
Be-tuex vx tuo nedeþ no strange fare
ffare wel cosin god schilde 3owe fro care
If any þinge þ*er*e be be daye or be nyht
If it lye in my power *and* my myht
þat 3e me wil co*m*mand in any wyse
It shal be done riht as 3e wil devise
O þinge er þat 3e go if þat it maie be
.I. wolde praie 3ow for to lene me
An .C. frankes for a weke or tweyne
ffor certeine bestes þat .I. most bye
To store wiþ a palas þat is owres
God helpe me so .I. wolde þat it were 3oures
.I. schal nou3ht fail surely of my daie
Note for .a .M. frankes a myle waye
Bot lat þis þinge be secre .I. 3owe preie
[. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
And fare nowe wele myne owen Cosine dere
Graunt Mercy of 3oure cost *and* of 3oure chere

This noble Marchant gentilli anone
Ansewarde *and* seide o kosine Dan Iohñe. 1472
Nowe sekerly þis is a smaH request
Mi golde is 3oures whan þat 3ou lest
And Nouht onely my golde bot my Chaffare
Takeþ what 3owe lest god scheld þat 3e spare 1476
Bot o þinge is 3e knowe it welc y-nowhe
Of chappemen þat her mony is hir plouhe
We may creance whiles we haue a name
Bott goldelesse for to be is no game 1480
Payeþe it a3eine whan it liþe in 3oure ese
After my myht ful feine wod .I. 3ow plese
þes .C. frankes he fette forþ anone
And p*r*iuely he toke it to dan Iohñ 1484
No wyght of al þis werlde ne wiste of þis lone
Saueynge þis Marchant *and* dan Iohñ alone.
Thei dranken *and* Romen[1] *and* pleye [[1] *or* Roiuen] [lf 184, bk]
Til þat Dan Iohñ Rideþ to his Abbei 1488
The morwe cam *and* forþe þis marchant Rideþ
To flanders-ward his prentis wele him gydeþ
Til he cam in-to brugge merily.
Now go-þe þis marchant fast *and* besily 1492
Aboute his nedes *and* biþe *and* creauncеþ
He neyþer pleyþe att þe dyes ne dauncеþ
Bot as a Marchant schortly for to teH
He leteþ his lyf *and* þer*e* .I. late him dueH 1496
The sonday next þis marschant was agone
To seinte Denys y-co*m*men was Dan Ione
Whiche crowe *and* berde fresche *and* newe schaue
In al þe house *þer* nas so litel a knaue 1500
Ne no wyght elles þat he nas feyne
ffor my lorde Dan Iohne was comen a3eine
And schortly to her pointe for to gone
þis faire wif accordeþ to dan Iohñ 1504
And for þis .C. frankes he scholde al nyht
Haue hire in his armes bolte vpriht

And þis accorde parformed was in dede
In merþe al nyht a besi lif þei lede
Til it was daie þat Dan Iohñ went his weie,
And badde þe menyȝe fare wele *and* haue good daie
ffor none of heme no wight in þe toune
Haþe of dan Iohñ riht none suspecione
And forþe he rideþ home to his abbeie
Or wher him list no more of him .I. seye
This Marchant whan þat ended was þe faire
To seint Denyse he gan to repaire
And wiþ his wif he makeþ fest *and* chere
And telleþ hire þat chaffer is so dere
þat nedes most he maake a cheuesance
ffor he was bounden in a requenysance
To paye .xx. M. schildes anone
ffor whiche þis marchant is wont to gone
To borwe of certeine frendes þat he hadde
A certeine *and* somme wiþ him he ladde
And whan þat he was comeñ into þe toune
ffor grete chere *and* grete affeccione
Vn-to Dan Iohñ him first goþe to pleie
Nouht for to borwe of him no moneye
Bot for [to] wite *and* see of his welfare [leaf 185]
And for to tellen him of his chaffare
As frendes done whan þei be mette in fere
Dan Iohñ. him Makeþ fest *and* mery chiere
And him tolde aȝeine ful specially
Howe he hadde bouht ful wele *and* graciously
Thonked he god al hole his Marchandise
Saue þat he must in al maner wise
Maken a cheuesans as for his best
And þan he scholde be in Ioye *and* rest
Dan. Anseward certes .I. am feyne
þat ȝe in hele be comme home aȝeine
And if þat .I. were riche as haue .I. blisse
Off .xx. M. scheldes schold ȝe nouht mysse

ffor. ȝe so kindely þis oþer̃e daie
Lent me gold *and* as .I. kan. *and* maie
.I. þonke ȝowe be g̊d *and* be seint Iame
Bot. naþeles .I. toke vñ-to owre dam̃e
ȝoure wif att home þe same golde aȝeine
Vpon ȝoure bẽnche sche woote. it wele certeine
Be certeyne tokenes þat .I. cañ hire telle
Nowe be ȝoure leue .I. maie no longer duell
Oure Abbote will̃ oute of þis toune anone
And on his company most .I. gone
Grete wele oure dame myne owen̄ nece swete
And faire wele dere cosine til we mete
This Marchant wiþ þat was ful war *and* wise
Creanced haþe *and* eke paide in parisshe
To certeyne lombardes rede in hire hande
The summe of golde *and* gatte of hem þe bande
And home he goþe mery as a papenioye
ffor wele he knewe he stode in suche araie
þat nedes most he winne in suche a viage
A .M. frankes aboue al his costage
It wif ful rede mett him att þe gate
As sche was wonte of olde vsage algate
And al þat nyht in merþe þei be sette
ffor he was riche *and* clerely oute of dette
Whane it was daye þis Marchant gan embrace
His wife al newe *and* kist hir on hire face
And vpe he goþe *and* makeþe it wonder touhe
No more q*uod* sche be god ȝe haue ynowhe.
And wantonly aȝeine wiþ him sche pleide [leaf 185, back]
Til att þe last þis Marchant seide
Be god q*uod* he .I. am a litel wroþe
Wiþ ȝowe my wif al-þouh̃e it be me loþe
And wote ȝe whye be god as þat .I. gesse
ffor ȝe haue maade a maner strangenesse
Be-twex me *and* my Cosyne Dan Iohñ
ȝe scholde haue warned me ar .I. hadde gone

That he had ȝowe an .C. frankes payede
Be rede token *and* he him helde yuel apaide
ffor þat .I. to him spake of cheuesaunce
Me semed soo as be his countenaunce
Bot naþeles be god heuen kinge
.I. þouht nouht to axe of him no þinge
.I. praie þe wif ne do no more soo
Til me alweie are þat .I. fro þe goo
If any dettour haþe in myne absence
Ypayde þe lest þoruhe þi necligence
I myht him axe a þinge þat he haþe paide
This wif was nouht aferde ne affraide
But boldely sche seide *and* þat anone
Mary. y dify þat fals monke dan Ione
.I. kepe nouht of his tokenes neuer a dele
He toke me certeine golde þis wote .I. wele
þat ivel þedom on his monkes snowte
ffor god it wote .I. wende wiþ-outen doute
þat he it had yȝeue me be cause of ȝowe
To do þere-wiþe myn honure *and* my prowe
ffor Cosinage eke *and* for bele chere
þat he haþ hadde ful often time here
Bot seþen .I. see .I. stonde in suche disioynte
.I. wil answere ȝoue to þe poynte
Ȝe haue mo slakker dettores þan am .I.
ffor .I. wil paie ȝowe wele *and* redelye
ffro daye to day *and* if so be. þat .I. faile
.I. am ȝoure wif score it on my taile
And .I. schal paie as sone as euer y maie
ffor be my trouþe .I. haue on myne araye
And nouht on waste bestouede euerydele
And for .I. haue bestowed it so wele
To ȝoure honoure for goddes sake .I. saie
As be nouht wroþe bot lat vs hauhe *and* pleye.
Ȝe schollen my. Ioly body haue to wedde [leaf 186]
Be godde .I. wil nouht paie ȝowe bot in bedde

ffor-ȝeue it me myne owen spouse dere
Turneþe hider-warde *and* makeþ better chiere
This Marchant seyhe þer was no better remedye
And for to chide it nere bot folye
Seþen þat þe þinge maie nouht amended be
Nowe wif he seide *and* .I. for-ȝeue it þe
Bot be þi life ne be no more so large
Kepe bette my goode þis ȝeue .I. þe in charge
Thus endeþ nowe my tale *and* god vs sende
Toyleynge ynouhe vnto oure lyues ende

Explicit fabula Naute.

Incipit prologus Priorisse
[*on leaf* 186]

Wele saide be corpus dampnus seide oure Oste'
Nowe longe mot þou seile be þis coste
Sire gentil Maister gentil marinere
God 3eue þe monke a .M. last quade 3ere
A ha felaus beþe war of suche a Iape
The monke put in þe mannes hode an ape
And in his wives eke be seint Austine
Drueþ no monkes more vnto 3oure inne
Bot nowe passe ouere & lat vs seke aboute
Who schal nowe telle first of al þis route
Anoþer tale *and* wiþ þat worde he seide
As curteysly as it hadde bue a maide
My lady Prioresse be 3oure leue
So þat .I. wist .I. scholde 3ow not greue
.I. wolde deme þat 3e telle scholde
A tale next if so were þat 3e wolde
Now wil 3e vouche-saue my lady dere
Gladly quod sche *and* seide in þis manere

[*No breaks in the MS between the stanzas.*]

Incipit Priorisse ffabula

[*The Prologue.*]

O lorde oure lorde þi name howe *mer*velouse
Is in þis large werlde y-spredde quod sche
ffor nouȝt onely þi loude preciouse.
*Par*formed is be men of dignite
Bot be þe mouþe of childern þi bounte
*Par*formed is for on oure breste soukeinge
Some time schewen þei þine heriinge

Where-fore in loude as .I. kan beste or maie
Of þe *and* of þe white lylye floure
Whiche þat þe bare *and* is a maide alweie
To tel a storye .I. wil do my labo*ur* [leaf 186, back]
Nouhte þat .I. maie encrese hir' hono*ur*
ffor sche hir' self is hono*ur* *and* þer-to Rote
Of bounte next hire sonne of soules bote

¶ O moder maide o maide moder fre
O busche vnbernde bernynge in Moyses siht
þat rauisched doune fro þe deite
þoruhe þine humblesse þe gost þat in þe aliht
Of whos verteu whan he in þine hert aliht
Conceyued was þe faders Sapiens
Helpe me to tel it in þi reu*e*rence

¶ Lady þine bounte *and* þine Magnificence
þine vertue *and* þi grete humilite
þere maie no tunge expresse in no science
ffor sum time ladi ar men p*r*eye to þe
Thou gost be-forne of þine benyngnyte
And getest vs þe liht þoruhe þi praiere
To guyden vs vnto þi son so clere

¶ My konnynge is to wayke o blisful qweene
ffor to declare þi grete worþinesse
þat .I. ne may þe weyht nouht sustene
Bot as a childe of twelmoþe age or lesse
þat can vnneþ any worde expresse
Riht so fare .I. *and* þerefore .I. 3owe preye
Gydeþ my songe þat .I. schal of 3owe seye

[*THE TALE.*]

Ther was a Ce in a grete Cite
Amonge cristen folk *and* Iewre
Su[s]teynde be a lorde of þat contre
ffor foule vser *and* locre of velany
Hatteful to criste *and* to his compaignye
And þoruhe þe strete men miht ride or wende
ffor it was *and* open at eue*r*e ende

¶ A litel folke of cristen folke þe*r*e stode
Doune att þe ferþer ende in whiche þe*r*e were
Childern an hepe co*m*men of cristes blode
þat in þat scole 3ere be 3ere
Lerned þe doctrine as men vsed þere
þis is to seie to singen *and* to rede
As smale childern done in here childehede

¶ Amonge þes childern was a wedow son*n*e
A litel clergeon vj. 3ere of age
þat daye be daie to scole was his wonne
And eke also where he sawe þe ymage [leaf 187]
Of cristes mod*e*re had he in vsage
As him was tauht to knele adoune *and* saie
His Aue marie as he goþe be þe weie

¶ Thus haþe þis wedowe hire lytel childe tauht
Oure blisfol lady cristes modere dere
To worschipe aic *and* he for-ȝat it nouht
ffe Cely childe wil al daie sone lere
Bot aie whan .y. remembre me on þis Matere
Seint Nicholas stant euer in my presence
ffor he so ȝonge to criste dide reuerence

¶ This childe is litel booke lerenynge
As he satt in þe scole att his primere
He alma redemptoris herd singe
As childern lerned hir Antiphanere
And as he durste he drouhe him nere *and* nere
And erkened aye þe wordes *and* þe note
Til he þe first vers couþ al be rote

¶ Nouht wyste he what þe latine was to seie
ffor he so ȝonge *and* tender was of age
Bott on a daie his felawe he gan preie
To expounen þis songe in his langage
Or tellen whi þis songe was in vsage
This preide he him to constrewe *and* declare
fful oft time vpon his knees bare

¶ His felawe whiche þat elder was þan he
Ansewarde his þus þis songe .I. haue herd seie
Was maked of oure blissed ladi fre
Hir to salue *and* eke hir to preie
To bene oure helpe *and* socour whane we deye
.I. can no more expounde in þis matiere
.I. leren songe .I. can bott smaȝt gramere

¶ And is þis songe maad in reuerence
Of cristes moder seide þis Innocent
Nowe certes .I. wil do my diligence
To konne it ar cristenmes be went

þouhe þat .I. for my *pri*mer schal be schent
And schal be beten þries in an oure
.I. wiH. it conne oure lady for to honoure

¶ His felawe tauht him homward *pri*uely
fro day to day til he coupe it be rote.
And þanne he songe it wele *and* boldely
ffro warde to warde accordeinge to þe note [leaf 187, back]
þreys oñ a daye it passed þoruhe his þrote
To scoleward *and* homwarde when he went
On cristes moder sette was his entent

¶ As I haue seide þoruhe oute þe Iewrye
This litel Childe as he cam to *and* fro
fful merily þan wolde singe *and* crye
On alma redemptoris euer mo
The swettnesse haþe his herte *per*ced so
Of cristes moder þat to hire to preie
He can nouht stinte of singinge be þe waie

¶ Owre ferst foo þe serpent Satanas
þat haþe in Iewes his waspes neste
Vp swal *and* seide O Ebrayke peple alas
Is þis a þinge to 3owe þat is honest
þat suche a boye schal walken as him lest
In 3oure *and* singen of suche sentence
Whiche is a3eines 3oure lawes reuerence.

¶ ffrò þens forþ þe Iewes han conspirede
This Innocent of þis werlde to chace
In homicide haunt þei *pere*-to huyrede
one That in a leye hadde a *pri*ue place
And as þe childe gan forby for to pace
This cursed Iewe him hente *and* helde fast
And kutte his þrote *and* in a pute him cast

¶ I sey þat in a wardrope þei him drewe
Where as þis Iewes purgen entraile
O cursed folke o herodes al newe
What may ȝoure yuel tent ȝoue availe
Morder wil oute certein. it wil nouht faile
And namely *þere* honure of god schold sprede
The blode oute crieþ on ȝoure cursed dede

¶ O martire soundede to virginite
Now maiste þou singe folowinge eu*er* in on
The white lombe Celestial q*uo*d he
Of whiche þe grete eu*a*ungelist seint Iohñ
In Pathmos wrote whiche seiþe þei þat gone
Be-forne his lombe *and* singe a songe of new
Thet neu*ere* flexly we*mm*en þei knewe

This pouer wedowe wayteþ al þat nyht
Affter þis litel Childe bot home cam he nouht
for whome alsoune as it was daies liht
Wiþ face pale for drede *and* besy þouht [leaf 188]
Sche haþe att scole *and* elles where him souht
Til finally sche gan so fer asspye
Þat he was seyȝen last in þe Iewrye

¶ Wiþ moders pyte in hir breste enclosede
Sche goþe as sche were halue oute of mynde
To eu*ery* place where sche haþ supposed
Bo liklyhed hire childe to finde
And euer on cr[i]stes moder meke *and* kinde
Sche cried and att þe last þus sche wrouht
Amonge þe cursed Iewes sche him souht

¶ Sche freyneþ *and* sche preiþe pitously
To eu*ery* Iewe þat duelled in þilk place
[. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
Thei saiden naie bot ih*es*us of his grace

3aue in her þouht in wiþ a litel space
þat in þat place after her sonne sche cried
Thare he was cast in a putte be side 1796

¶ O grete god þat parfourmed þin laude
Be mouþe of Innocence Lo here þi myht
This gemme of chastite þis emeraude
And eke of Marterdom þe ruby briht 1800
þere he wiþ þrote ycorue leie vpriht
He Alma redemptoris gan to singe
So longe þat al þe place gan to ringe 1803

¶ The cristen folke þat þoruh þe strete wente
In Camyne to wonderne of þis þinge
And hastely þei for þe prouost sente
He cam anone wiþ-outen any taryinge 1807
And herieþ crist þat is heuen kinge
And eke his moder honoure of mankinde
And after þe Iewes lete he binde 1810

¶ This childe wiþ piteous lamentacioune
Vp taken singeinge his songe al weye
And wiþ honoure of grete processioune
Thei Carien him to þe next Abbeye 1814
His modere swoneynge be þe bere laye
Vnneþ myhte þe peple þat was þere
This newe rachel bringe fro his bere 1817

¶ Wiþ torment *and* wiþ schamful deþe ilkone
This prouost doþe þes Iewes for to sterue
That of þis morder wist *and* þat anane
He nolde none suche cursednesse obsirue. 1821
Euel schal haue þat yuel wil deserue [leaf 188, back]
There-fore wiþ wilde hors he did him drawe
And after þat he hinge him be þe lawe 1824

¶ Vpon þis bere ay lyeþ þis Innocent
Be-forne þe chief autter whiles Masse last
And after þat þe Abbot wiþ his Couent
Hadde spedde hem for to burye him fast
And whan þei haly water on him cast
And ȝit spakke þe childe whan spreynt was þe holy water
And songe O alma redemptoris mater

¶ This Abbot whiche þat was an holy man
As monkes be or elles ouhten to bee
Þis ȝonge childe to coniure he gan
And seide o dere childe .I. hailese þe
Be vertue of þe holy Trinite
Tel me what is þi cause for to singe
Sethen þi þrote is kette att myn semeinge

¶ My þrot is cutte vnto my nekke bone
Saide þis childe and as be waie of kinde
.I. scholde haue deyed longe time agone
Bott ihesu criste as ȝe in bokes finde
Wil þat his glori last *and* bue in mynde
And for worschipe of his moder dere
ȝette may .I. singe O Alma loude and cle[re]

¶ This wel of Mercie cristes moder swete
.I. loued alweie as after my coninge
And whan þat .I. my lif scholde lete
To me sche camme *and* badd me for to singe
Þis Antime verrely in my mynde deynge
As ȝe haue herd *and* whan þat .I. had songe
Me þouht sche laide a greyne vpon my tonge

¶ Wher-for .I. saie *and* singe most certeigne
In honour of cristes moder fre
Til of my tonge of taken is þe greyne
And after þat seide sche þus to me

My litel childe nowe wil .I. feche þe
Whan þat þe greine. is fro þi tonge ytake
Be nouht agast .I. wil þe nouht for-saake

¶ This Holy monke þis Abbot him mene .I.
His tonge oute cauht *and* toke awey þe greyne
And he ȝaf vpe þe gost ful softly
And whan þe Abbotte hadde þis wondere seyne
His salte teres strikled doune as reyne [leaf 189]
And gruffe he fel al platte to þe grounde
And stiH he laie as he had bene ybounde

The [Couent] Eke ley vpon þe pament
Wepeinge *and* heriinge Cristes moder dere
And after þei rise *and* forþe been went
And toke aweie þis marter fro his bere
And in a tombe of Marble stones clere
Enclosen þei his lytel body swete
There he is nowe god lene·vs for to mete

O ȝonge hewe of Lincolne sleyne also
Wiþ cursed Iewes as it is notable
ffor it nys bot a litel while a-goo
Preye eke for vs we sinful folke vnstable
þat of his Mercie god so merciable
On vs his grete mercie multiplye
ffor reuerence of his moder Marye

Explicit fabula priorisse.

[*No breaks in the MS between the stanzas.*]

Incipit *prologus* **de Thopas.** [*on leaf* 189]

Whan seide was þis tale euery mañ
As sober was þat wonder was to se
Ti þat oure Oste Iape begañne
And þan att erst he loked vpon me. .*id est.* Chaucer
And seide þus what man ert þou *quod* he
Thou lokest as þou woldest finde an hare
ffor euer vpon þe grounde .I. se þe stare

Appr[o]che nere *and* loke merely
Nowe ware 3owe sires *and* latt þis man haue place
He in þe waste is schapen as wele as .I.
This were a popet in armes to enbrace
ffor any wo*m*man smal *and* faire of face
He semeþe eluysche be his countenance
[. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]

Say nowe sum*m*what seþen oþ*er*e folke haþe seide
Tel vs a tale of merþe *and* þat anone
Oste *quod* .I. ne be nouht yuel apaide
ffor oþer tale certes can I. none
Bot of a rime .I. lerned longe agone
3e þat is good *quod* he shal we here
Sum*m*e deynteþ þinge me þenkeþ be his chiere

Explicit *prologus.*

Incipit fabula.

[*No breaks in the MS between the stanzas.*]

[*Fitte I.*]

LEstenep̄e lordes in goo[d] entent
And .I. wil tel verraiment
Of Miracle *and* of solace .
Al of a knyht was faire *and* gent [leaf 189, back]
In Bataile *and* in turnament
His name was . sir Thopas

.I.-borne he was in fer contre
In flaundre al be3onde p̄e see
Att Poperinge in p̄e place .
His fader was a man ful fre
And lord he was of p̄at cuntre
As it was goddes grace

Sir Thopas was douhty swayne
White was his face as a peyndemayne
His lippes reede as roose
His rode is like scarlet in greyne
And .I. 3owe teH in goode certeyne
He hadde a semely nose .

His here his berde was lyke safroun
p̄at to his gerdel rauht a doune
His schone of cordeweyne
Of brugges was his hosen broune
His roob was of Ciclatoune
p̄at cost mony a Iayne

He coupe hunt att wilde dere
And ride on haukeinge for þe reuer
Wiþ grey goshauke oñ honde
Therto he was a good archere
To werstelynge was *þer* none his pere
þere any man scholde stonde

fful mony a maide briht in boure
þei morne for his *paramoure*
whane þei were bette to slepe
Bot he was chast *and* no lichoure
As swete as is þe brembel floure
þat bereþe þe rede hipe

And so befel vpon a daie
ffor soþe as .I. ȝowe telle maie
Sir Thopas wolde oute ride
He worþe hup on his stede grey
And his honde a laucegaie
A longe swerde be his side

He *prikeþ* þoruhe a faire fore[st]
Ther inn is mony a wilde best
ȝe boþe bukke *and* hare.
And as he prikeþ Norþe *and* est [leaf 190]
I telle ȝowe him hadde almest
Betidde a sori care.

Ther springen erbes grete *and* smale
The lycoris *and* þe Setuale
And mony clowe gilofre
And Notmuges to putte in ale
Wheþer it be moiste or stale
Ore for to ley in Cofre

GROUP B. § 8. SIR THOPAS. **Lansdowne MS.**

The Birdes singen it is nouht naye
The sparhauke *and* þe popeniaye
þat ioye it was to here
þe þrostelkoke maade eke his laye
þe wode dowfe vppon þe spraye
Sche songe ful loude *and* clere

Sire Thopas feH in louelongeinge
An[d] whanne he herde þe þrosteH singe
And priked as he ware woode
His faire stede in his prikeinge
So swette þat men myht him wriNge
His sides were al blode

Sire Thopas eke so wery was
ffor prekinge on þe soft gras
So fers was his corage
þat doune he laide him in þat place
To maken his stede sum solace
ffor he was so sauage

A seynte Mary benedicite
What eyleþ þis loue att me
To bynde me so sore
Me dremed al þis nyht parde
Ane Elfe qvene schal my lemman be
And slepe vnder my gore

Ane Elfe queene wil .I. loue .y-wisse
ffor in þis world no womman is
Worþi to be my maake
in toune
Al oþer wemmen .I. forsake
And to an Elfe queen .y. me betake
Be dale *and* eke be doune

In-to his sadel he cam anone
And p*ri*keþ ou*er*e stile *and* stone
Ane Elfe qwene for to aspye. 1989
Tyłł he so longe haþe rydeñ *and* gone [leaf 190, back]
That he fonde in a p*ri*ue wone
The Cuntre of faire. 1992
So wilde
ffor in þat Contre was þere none
[. . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
Neyþer wife ne childe 1996

Til him þer came a Ioly geante
His name was cleped s*ir* Olyfaunte.
A p*ar*lous man of dede 1999
He saide childe be termagaunt
Bot if þou wilte p*ri*ke oute of myne haunte
Anone .I. slee þi steede 2002
wiþ mace
Here is þe queen of faire
Wiþ harpe *and* pipe *and* simphene
Dwellinge in þis place. 2006

The childe so most .I. þe
To morne wil .I. mete þe
When .I. haue myne armor 2009
And ȝit .I. hope p*ar* ma feie
That þat þou schalt wiþ þis launce leie
Abine it ful sore. 2012
Thoruhe þin mawe
Schal .I. perce .If .I. maie
Or it be fulle prime of daie
ffor here þou schałł be slawe 2016

Sir' Thopas drowhe a bak ful fast
This Geant att him stones cast
Owte of a feH staf slynge
Bot a faire ascapeþ childe Thopas
And aH it was þoruhe goddes gras
And þoruhe his faire beringe

ȝit listeneþ lordes to my tale
Meryer þan þe nyhteyngegale
ffor nowe .I. wil ȝow rowne
Howe *sir* Thopas wiþ sides smale
Prekeinge ouer doune *and* dale
Is come aȝeine to toune

His mery men comanded he
To make him boþe game *and* gle
ffor nedes most he fiht
wiþ .o. Geant wiþ hędes þree
ffor p*ar*amoure *and* Iolyte
Of one þat schote ful briht

Done come he seide myne mynstrals
An gestours for to tel vs tales
Anone in myne armeinge
Of Romans þat bene Roials
Of Popes *and* of Cardinals
And eke of loue longeinge

Thei fet him first þe swete wyne
[. . . . . .
. . . . . .
. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
And lykhirhers *and* eke Comyne
Wiþ sugre þat is trye

[leaf 191]

He dide next his white lire
Of Cloþe of lake fyne *and* clire
A breche *and* eke a schart
And next is schert an Aktoñ
And ouer þat an haberioun
ffor perceynge of his herte

And ou*er*e þat a fine hauberke
Was al y-wrouht of Iewes werke
fful stronge it was of plate
And ouer þat is cote Armo*ur*
As white as is a lely floure
In whiche he wole debate.

His schelde was al of gold so redo-
And þere in was a bores hede
A Charbokel be side
And þ*er*e he suore on ale *and* brede
That þe Gyant schulde be dede
By-tide whatt be-tide

His Iambes were of quereboly
His swerde scheþe of Ivory
His helme of Latou*n* briht
His SadeH was of Ruel bone
His BrideH as þe sonne schone
Or as þe mone so liht

His spere was of fine Cypres
þat bedeþ werre *and* noþinge pes
Thede ful scharpe y-grounde
His sted was al dappel greye
Hite enamble by þe weye
fful softly *and* rounde.

In londe
Lo lordes myne here a fitte
If ȝe wil any more of it
To tel it wil .I. fonde 2080

[*Fitte II.*]

Nowe haldeþ ȝoure mouþe *par* Charite
Boþe knyke *and* lady free
And herkeneþ to my spelle. 2083
Of Bataile *and* of Cheualry [leaf 191, back]
And of ladys loue drery.
Anone .I. wil ȝowe telH 2086

Men speke of Roman*s* of prise
Of horne Childe *and* of Ipose
Of Beuys *and* *sir* Guy 2089
Of *sir* Libeus *and* plendamour
Bot *sir* Thopas he bereþ þe floure
Of Roial Chiualry 2092

His goode steede al he be-strode
And forþe vpon his weye he glode
As sparkeles oute of þe bronde 2095
Vpon his creste he bare a toure
And þer'-in stiked a lyly floure
God schelde his corps fro schonde 2098

And for he was a knyht aunterous
He wolde slepen in none hous
Bot lygen in his hode 2101
His briht helme was his wangere
And by him baiteþ his dextrere
Of erbes fine *and* good 2104

[. . . . . .
. . . . . .
. . . . . .
. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] 2108

¶ Incipit prologus

NO mor of þis for goddes dignite [on leaf 191, back]
quod oure ost foure þou makest me
So wery of þi lewdenes
þat also wissely god me blis
Myn eres ake of þine darsti speche
Nowe suche a rime þe deuel .y. beteche .
This mai be wele ryme dogerel
whie so quod .I. whie wilt þou lette me
More of my tale þan a noþer' man
Seþen it is þe best rime .I. can
By god . quod he pleinly .I. þe seie
Thou schalt no langer rime here to daie
Thou doste nouht elles bot dispendes time
Sire att o worde þou schalt no longer rime
Late see whe þer þou canste teH ouht in geste
Or teH in prose sumwhat att þe lest
In whiche þer be sume merþe & some doctrine
Gladle quod .I. be goddes swete pine
.I. wil 3owe teH a litel þinge in prose
þat auht lyke 3owe as .I. suppose
Or elles certes 3e be to daungerous
It is a morale tale vertuouse [leaf 192]
Al be it tolde sum tyme in sundre wise
Of sundre folke as .I. schal 3owe deuise
As þus 3e wote euery euaungelist
That telleþ vs of ihesu crist
Ne saiþe nouht al þinge as his felawe doþe
Bot Naþeles her' sentence is al soþe
And al.accorden att here sentence
Al be þare in her tellinge difference

ffor somme of hemme seine more & somme seine lesse
Whan þei his pitous passion expresse
.I. mene of Mark. Matheu. luke. & Iohñ
Bot doutles her sentence is al one
There-for lordeynges al .I. ȝowe be-seche
If þat ȝe þinke .I. varye in my speche
As þus. If þat .I. telle sum what more
Of prouerbes þan ȝe haue herde to fore
Comprehendit in þis litel tretis here
To enforce wiþ þe effect of Mi Matiere
And þouhe .I. ñade þe same wordes saye
As ȝe haue herde ȝitt to al ȝowe .I. preie
Blameþ me nouht for as my sentence
ȝe schol nouht finde muche difference
ffro the sentens of þe tretys leuyte
After þe whiche þis Mery tale .y. write
And Herken whatt .I. schal seye
And lett me tale .I. preye

[*There are no line-numbers or breaks between the paragraphs in the MS. Tyrwhitt's breaks are kept here to prevent slight differences in the Six Texts throwing out many lines.*]

[*Lansdowne MS* 851, *on leaf* 192.]

Hic incipit fabula de Mellybeo *per* Chaucer.

[2157] A ȝonge man whilom called Mellibe. Mihte. & riche be-gate vpon his wyf. þat called was. Prudence. a douht*er* which was cleped Sapience.//

[2158] vpon a daie fel þat he for his disporte is went in to þe feldes hi*m* to pley: [2159] His wife & eke his douht*er* haþe he laft wiþ-in his hous. of whiche þe dores were fast yschett. [2160] Foure of his olde foos haue it aspied. And setten ledders to þe walles of his hous. & be þe wyndows entred [2161] & beten his wif & wounded his douhter *with* .v. mortale woundes *in* .v. sundre places. [2162] ¶ This is to seye. in here fete *in* hire hondes *in* hire eres & in hire nose & *in* hire mouþe. And laften hir for dede & wenten here wey.

[2163] ¶ Whan. Mellibeus returned was aȝein *in* to his hous. & sauhe al þis meschief ¶ He ylike a mad man rentynge his cloþes gan to wepe & crye.

[2164] Prudens his. ¶ Prudence his wif as ferforþ as sche dorst. be-souht him of his wepeinge for to stinte [2165] ¶ Bot not for-þi he gan to wepe & crie. eu*er* þe lengeer þe more.

[2166] þis noble wif prudence remembreþ her on þe sentence of Ouide. In his boke þat cleped is þe remedie of loue. where he seiþe. [2167] He is a. foole þat distorbleþ þe modere for to wepe *in* þe deþe of hir childe. til sche haue wepped hire fil as for certeine time. [2168] Than schal a man done his diligence wiþ amyable wordes. hir to recomford. & to preier her of

here wepeinge for to stinte [2169] ¶ For whiche resone þis noble prudence suffurd hir husbond for to wepe & crie for a certeine space. [2170] ¶ And whan sche sauhe hire time sche seide him in þis wyse /./ Alas my. lorde quod sche. whie maake ȝoure self for to be like a fole. [2171] ¶ For sothe it aperteigneþ not to a wiseman. To maak suche a sorwe [2172] ¶ ȝoure douhter wiþ þe grace of god schal be warissched & ascape ‖ [2173] And al were it so riht nowe sche were dede. ȝe ouht not as for hire deþe ȝoure self to destruye. [2174] ¶ Senec. ¶ Senec. seiþe. þe wiseman schal nouht tak to grete discomford for þe deþe of his childer. [2175] bot certe he scholde suffere it in pacience. As wele as he Abideþ þe deþ of his owen propre person.

[2176] ¶ þis Millibeus ansewarde a-none & seide ¶ What man quod he scholde of his wepeinge stinte þat haþe so grete a cause for to wepe. [2177] Ihesu criste owre lorde him self wepped for þe deþ of Lazarus his frende [2178] ¶ Prudence anseward: certez wele .I. wote atempre wepeinge is nouht defended vnto him þat sorwful is a-monge folk of sorwe. Bot it is raþer graunted him to wepe [2179] ¶ þe Apostle paule vn to þe. Romaynes writeþ. // Man schal reioyse wiþ hem þat hem þat maken ioye: & wepe wiþ suche folke as wepen. [2180] ¶ Bot þouhe atempre wepeinge be graunted: Outrageous wepeinge certes is defended. [2181] ¶ Mesurable wepeinge schold be considered after þe lore þat teche þ vs Senec [2182] ¶ Whan þat þi frende is ded lat nouht þine yen to moiste bien of teres: ne to muche drye ¶ Al þouhe þe teres commen of þine yen. lat hem nouht fallen [2183] ¶ And whan. þou hast for-gone þi frende .I. rede þou do þi diligence to gette þe a nother. And þis is more wysere þan to wepe for þi frende þe whiche þat þou hast lorne: For þer inne is no boote [2184] ¶ And þerfore if þe lust to gouerne þe be Sapience Putte awaie sorwe fro ȝoure hert. [2185] Remembreþ ȝowe þat. Ihesu Sirak. saiþe:

A man þat is ioyus & gladde in hert: it him conserueþ florischeinge in his Age. Bot soþely Sorweful hert Makeþ his bones drye [2186] ¶ He seiþe eke þus: þat sorwe in hert. sleeþe mony a man. [2187] Salamon seiþe þat riht as mouhtes in þe schepes fles anoyeþ to þe cloþes An þe smale wermes on þe tres vn to þe fruyte: Riht so anoyþe sorwe vnto þe hert /./ [2188] Wherfore we ouht as wele in þe deþe of oure childerne: as in þe losse of oure godes temperel: ¶ Haue pacience.

[2189] Remembre ȝowe vpōn þe pacient ¶ Iob. whan he hadde lost his children & his temperel substance. And in his [1]bodi endured & suffred mony a greuous temptacionz: ȝit seid he þus. [2190] ¶ Owre lorde quod he ȝaue it me. oure lorde haþ be-raft it me. Riht so as oure lorde haþe wolde: riht so be it done. yblissed be þe name of oure lorde [2191] ¶ To þis afor þinges Melibius ansewerd to his wif Dame prudence. Al þi wordes quod he bien soþe & þer-to profitable. Bot trewely Min hert is trobled wiþ þis sorwe so greuously þat .I. note what to done. [2192] ¶ Late cal quod prudence þine trewe frendes al: & þin lignage whiche þat bien wise: telle hem þin caas & herken what þei seine in conseilinge: And ȝowe gouerne þere after here sentence /./ [2193] Salomon seiþe ¶ worche al þi þinge be counsel: & þou schal neuer repent.

[2194] Than be þe conseil of his wif dame Prudence. Melibeus lete callen a grete congregacione of folke [2195] [. . . . . *no gap*] olde & ȝonge. And somme of his olde ennemys reconsiled as be her semblant in to his loue & in to his grace. [2196] And þer-wiþ-al cam somme of his neihbours þat dide him reuerence more for drede þan for loue as it happeþ oft [2197] ¶ þare commeth also ful mony a subtile flatreres and wise aduocates lerned in þe lawe.

[2198] And whan þis folk togeder assembled were This Mellibeus in sorwful wise schewde hem þis cas.

[2199] And by þe manere of speche he bare in his herte a cruel ire rede to do vengeance vpon his foos: // And sodanly desired þat werre schold / beginne [2200] ¶ Bot naþeles 3it axed he counseile vpon þis mate[re] [2201] ¶ A Surgeane / be licence / & assent of suche as were wise vp rose vn to Melibeus & seide as 3e maie here.

[2202] Sir' quod he as to vs surgeans apperteyneþ to euery whight· þe best þat we can where as we be wiþ-holde & to oure pacience þat we do no damage. [2203] Ther-for it happeþ mony time & oft. þat whan tuo men haþe eueryche wounded opere one same surgean heleþ hem boþe.. [2204] Wherefor vnto oure arte it is nouht pertinent: to norische werre ne parties to supporte [2205] Bot certes as to þe warissheinge of 3oure douhtere be it so þat sche is perilously. wounded. we shold done so entenfully be signes fro daie to nyht þat wiþ þe grace of god sche schal be sounde & hole as sone as it is possible [2206] ¶ Al men in þe same wise ansewarden &. þe Phesiciens. saue þei seiden a fewe wordes more [2207] ¶ That riht as Maladise bene heled be hire contraries /./ Riht so schal men warisshe werre be vengeance [2208] his neyhbour ful of envye: // His feyned frendes þat semed reconsiled. his flatrers [2209] maden semblant of wepeinge empaired & engreged muche of his matiere in preiseinge gretely /./ Melibeus of myht of pouere of riches & of frende. Dispiseinge þe powere of his aduersaries. [2210] & seiden outerly þat he anone scholde wreken him on his ennemys & be-ginne werre

[2211] Vp rose þan an Aduocate þat was wise & seide be leue & be counseile of oþer þat were wise. & seide. [2212] Lordeinges þe nedes for whiche we bene assembled in þis place is a ful heuy þinge. & an hihe matiere [2213] because of þe wronge & of þe wikkenesse þat haþe be done. And eke be resoñ of þe grete. damage

in time comynge. bien possible to fal for þis same cause. [2214] & eke be reson of þe grete richesse & power of þe parties boþe. [2215] For whiche resouns it were a grete perile for to erren in þis matiere [2216] ¶ Where-fore Milebeus þis is oure sentence: We counsel 3owe a-boue al þinges þat riht anone þou do þi diligence in kepeinge of þi propre persone in suche [a wise] þat þou ne wante none aspie. ne to wache þine bodie for to saue. [2217] ¶ And after þat we counseile þat þou setten in þine hous sufficeant garnyson so þat þei maie þi body also wele as þine hous defende. [2218] ¶ Botte certes for to meve werre ne sodanly to done vengeance we maie nouht deme in so litel time þat it were profitable. [2219] wherefore we Axen leyser & space to haue deliberacion in þis caas to deme [2220] ¶ For þe comune prouerbe seiþ þus ¶ He þat sone demeþ sone schal repent [2221] ¶ And eke men seine þus ¶ That ilke Iugge is wise þat sone vnderstondeþ a matier: & Iugeþe b[y] leyser [2222] ¶ For al-be-it so: þat a tariinge be a-noyeful. Algates it is not to reproue in 3eueinge of Iuggement ne in vengeance takeinge. whan it is suffisant & resonable: [2223] ¶ And þat schwde oure lorde ihesu cryste be ensample. For whan þat womman was taken in aduoutre & was browhte in his presence to knowe what schal be done wiþ hire persone ¶ Albeit so þat he wist wele him selfe what þat he wold onsewere. 3ete ne wolde he ansewere sodanly bot he wold haue deliberacione. And in þe grounde he wrote twyes. [2224] And be þis cause we axen deliberacione. And we schal þan by þe grace of god counseile þe þo þinges þat schallen be profitable

[2225] vp stert þan þe 3onge folke att ones And þe most partie of þat compaignie haþe scorned þis olde wise man. & begonnen to maken noyce & seiden [2226] riht so ¶ Al þe while þat Iren is hote men schold smyte. Riht so men scholde wreken here wronges whiles

þat þei bne frische & newe ¶ And wiþ loude voice þei criden. werre. werre.

[2227] Vprose one of þe olde wise. & wiþ his honde he maade a countenance þat þei schold holde hem stil: and 3euen hem audience [2228] ¶ lordeinge *quod* he þere is ful mony a man þat crieþ werre. werre. þat woote ful lyte what þat werre amounteþ // [2229] Werre att his begynnyng haþ so grete an entringe & so large: þat euery wiȝt maie entren whan him likeþ And lyhtly finde werre. [2230] Bot certes to whatt ende þat schal þere-of be-fal: it is note lyhtly to knowe [2231] ¶ Whan þat werre is ones begonne. þer is ful mony a childe vnborne of his moder þat schal sterue ȝonge be cause of þilke werre. Opere elles leue in sorwe & deye in wrechednesse, [2232] ¶ And þere-fore or þat any werre be-ginne men most haue grete conseile & goode deliberacion. [2233] ¶ And whan þis olde man wende to enforcen his tale be resoun. welnyhe al att ones bygonne for to rise to breken his tale. & biden him ful oft of his wordes to abrigge //. [2234] For soþely he þat *preche*þ to he*m* þat lust nouht his wordes ne his *ser*mon hem he anoyeþ. [2235] For ih*esus* Sirak seiþe. That Musike in wepeinge is anoyus þinge. Thus muche it is to seine As much anoyeþ to spek to-forne folke to wiche his speche annoyeþ as [1] it is for to singen be-forne him þat wepeþ. [2236] ¶ And whan þis wiseman sawhe þat him wanted audience al schamfast he sett him doune a-ȝeine [2237] For Salomon seiþe þere as þu mai haue none audience enforce þe nouht to speke. [2238] I. see wele. *quod* þis wiseman þat þe comen *prou*erbe is soþe: þ*at* good counseile wanteþ whan it is most nede.

[2239] ¶ ȝitte hadde þis Melebeus in his conseile many folke þat [. . . *no gap*] conseilled him p*riu*e þinge. An counseld him þe contrarie in gen*er*al audience.

[2240] Whan mellibeus hadde herde þe grettest

partie of his counseile were accorded þat he schold make werre. A-none he consentid to here counselynge. And full affermed to he[re] sentence [2241] ¶ Than dame Prudence sauhe howe þat hire hosband schope hime for to wreke him on his foos: & to be-ginne werre Sche in fulł humble wise whan sche sauhe hire time Saide him in þis wordes [2242] ¶ Mi lorde quod sche .I. ȝowe beseche as hertly as .I. dar & can /.ne haste ȝowe nouht to fast And Afore al guerdouns ȝeuef me audience. [2243] For Pers Amphoñs saiþe .O. who so doþe þe goode oþer harme haste þe nouht to qwyten it. For in þis wise þi frende wil abide And þine ennemy schal þe langere leue in drede: [2244] The prouerbe seiþe þat he hasteþe him wele þatte wele can abide. And in wikked hast is no profite.

[2245] This Melibe ansewerd to his wyf prudence: I. purpos nouht quod he to wirke be þi counseile ffor mony causes & resons: For certes euery wight wold hold me þan a foole: [2246] ¶ This is for soothe. If .y. for þin counsellynge wolde chaunge þinges þat buen ordeined & affermed be so mony a wyse: [2247] Secundly .I. saie þat al wemmen bien þikke & none goode of hem alle. ffor of a. þousand men as seiþe Salomon .I. fonde o good man bot certes of alle wemmen fonde .I. neuere good womman [2248] ¶ And Also certes if .I. gouerned me be þi counseile it schold seme þat .I. hadde .y.-ȝif to þe ouer me þe maistre. And god forbede þat it so were [2249] ¶ For Ihesus Sirake. seiþe. If þe wif haþe þe maistre sche is contrarius to hir husbonde. [2250] ¶ And Salomon. seiþe. neuere in þi lif. to þi wif ne to þi childe ne to þi frende ne ȝeue none powere ouer þine selfe: For better it were þat þine childern asken of þine persone þinges þat hem nedeþ. þan þou þi self in þe handes of þine childerne. [2251] And also if .I. wil worche be þi conseillynge. Certes my conseil most som time be secre til it wer time þat it must be

¶ Salomon

knowe? And þis ne may nouht be do? [2252. For it is written, 'þe Ianglerye of wemmen can hide [only] þinges þat þei wote nought' [2253]. Furthermore, the philosopher saith, 'in wiked counsel, wemmen venquyseþ men;' and for these reasons I ought not to make use of thy counsel. (*See Prudence's answers to Reasons 4 & 5, below.*)]

[2254] ¶ Whan dam pruden ful debonarly & [with] al pacience hadde herd al þat hire husbond lyked for to seye./ Than axe sche of him licence for to speke. And seide in þis wise. [2255] Mi lorde quod sche? as to 3oure first reson it maie lyhtly bne answerd. ffor .I. seie. it ne is folye to chaunge counseil. whan þe þinge is chaungede or elles whan þe þinge semeþ operewise þan it semed a-forne [2256] And more ouere .I. saie. þeihe þat 3e haue sworne & behi3t to performe 3oure emprise. [and natheless ye weyve to performe that same emprise] Be Iuste cause men schold nouht seine þerefore þat 3e were a lyere ne for-sworne [2257] ¶ ffor þe booke seiþe þat þe wise man makeþ no leseinge when he torneþ his corage to þe bettere [2258] ¶ An if it so be þat 3oure emprise be establisshet & ordeined be grete multitude of folke 3it þarre þe nouht accomplise þilke ordinance bot 3owe likeþ? [2259] ¶ For þe treuþe of þinges & þe profit bene rather y-founde in fewe folke þat bien wise and ful of resoune þan be grete multitude of folke þere euery man crieþ & clatereþ what hem likeþ? Suche multitude is nouht honest. [2260] And as to þe secund reson. Where as 3e seine þat al wemmen bene wikke. saue 3oure grace? for certes 3e dispisen al wemmen in þis wise. And he þat aH despiseþ. aH þinge him despiseþ as seiþe þe boke.// [2261] And Seneca. seiþe who þat woH haue sapience schaH no man despise. Bot he schal gladly teche þe science þat .I. kan. wiþ-oute presumpcioñ or pride. [2262] And suche þinges as nou3 can he schal not be ascamed to leren hem? & to enqueren of lesse

folke þan of him self: [2263] And sire þat þare haþ bue many a goode wo*m*man maie lihtly be p*r*oued [2264] ¶ Certes sire oure lorde ih*es*u crist nold neu*er* haue descended to be borne of wo*m*man if al we*m*men hadde be wikke. [2265] And after þat for þe grete bounte þat is in we*m*men oure lorde ih*esus* whan he was resen fro deþe to lyf: he appered raþer to we*m*men þan he dide to his aposteles [2266] And þouhe þat Salomon seiþ. he ne fonde neu*er* wo*m*man goode. It foulowe þ nouht þ*er*e-fore þat al we*m*men be wikke [2267] ¶ For þouhe þat he no fonde no good wo*m*man. Certes mony a no*þer* man haþ founden many a wo*m*man ful goode & trewe. [2268] Or elles p*er*auenture þe entente of Salomon was þus: That as in souereine bounte he fonde no wo*m*man [2269] ¶ þis is to seie þat þ*er*e is no wight þat haþe p*ar*fite bounte saue god alone: as he him self recordeþ in his eu*aun*geliste: [2270] ffor þ*er*e ne is no creture þat him ne wanteþ su*m*what of þe p*er*feccion of god þat is his make*r* [2271] ¶ The þred reson is þis ¶ 3e seie þat if 3e gouern 3oue be my counsel: it scholde seme þat 3e hadde 3eue to me þe maistre. & þe lordeschipe of 3oure p*er*sone: [2272] Sire: saue 3oure grace it is nouht so ¶ For if so were þat noman scholde be conseiled bot ouly of hem þat hadd lordeschip & Meistre of his p*er*soñ. Men nold nou3t be counceilled so oft. [2273] For soþely þilke man þat axeþ counsel of a purpos: 3it haþe frewiłł weþer he wil do after þat counseil or no: [2274] ¶ And as to 3oure ferþe reson. þ*er*e as 3e seine þat þe Ianglerye of we*m*men can hide þinges þat þei wote nouht. As who seiþe: þat a wo*m*man kan nouht hide þat sche wote: [2275] sire þes wordes buen vnderstonde of we*m*men þat bien Ianglers & wikked: [2276] of whiche we*m*men Men seine þat þre þinges driueþ a man oute of his house ¶ þat is to seie. Smoke. dropeinge of Reine ? & wikked wyues. [2277] ¶ And

of suche wemmen seiþe Salomon. þat him were better duelle in desert. þan wiþ a womman þat is reyetous. [2278] And sire be 3oure leue þat am nouht .I. [2279] For 3e haue ful oft assaide my grete silence & my grete pacience. And eke howe wele þat .I. can hide. & hele þinges þat men ouhten sekerly to hiden: [2280] ¶ And forþe as to 3oure fift resone: wher as 3e seie þat in wiked counsel wemmen venquyseþ men: Gode wote þilke 1reson stondeþ here in no stede: [2281] ¶ For vnder-stondeþ nowe 3e ax conseil for to do wikkednesse. [2282] And if 3e wil wirke wikkenesse: & 3oure wife restreyneþ þilke wikked purpos: And ouere-comme 3owe be resoñ & be goode counsel. [2283] Certes 3owe wif ouht raþer to be preised þan to be blamed. [2284] This schold 3e vnderstande þe Philosofre þat saiþe. In wikked conseile wemmen venquisched her husbondes. [2285] And þere as 3e blame al wemmen & here resons .I. schal schew 3oue be monye ensamples þat mony wemmen han bien ful goode & 3ut buen. ¶ An here consel holsome & profitable [2286] eke: Sommen haue seid þat counselinge of wemmen es ciþer to dere or elles to lite of prise [2287] ¶ Bot al be it so þat ful mony a womman is badde. & hire consel vile & not worþe. 3it haþe men founden mony a goode womman. & ful discrete & wise in counselinge. [2288] ¶ Lo Iacob þoruhe þe good counsel of his moder Rebec /./ whan he hadde. þe benyson of his fader. & þe lordschip ouere al his breþer. [2289] ¶ Iudiþe þoruhe hire goode counsel deliuerd þe Cite of Buþhilie in whiche sche duelte oute of þe hande of Olifernce þat hit beseged: & wolde haue al destruyed it. [2290] ¶ Abegayle deliuer Nabal hire husbonde fro dauid þe kinge þat wold haue sleyne him & apesed þe ire of þe kinge be hire witte & be hire good counseilinge. [2291] Ester be hire counseile enchauncede gretlye þe peple of god in þe reigne of Assur [2292] ¶ And þe same bounte in goode conselinge of

mony wemmen mai men tell [2293] ¶ And forþere more whan þat owre lorde hadde created Adam oure forme fadere. he seide in þis wise [2294] it is nouht good to bue a man alone Maake we an helpere semblable to him self: [2295] Here maie ȝe see þat if þat wemmen were nouht goode & here counseile goode & profitable: [2296] oure lorde god of heuen ne wold neyþer haue wrouht hem ne called hem þe helper of man. [. . . . . .] [2297] ¶ And þere seide ones a clerk in tuo vers. What is better þan golde. Iasper: what is better þan Iasper. wisdome. [2298] And what is better þan wisdome Womman /./ And whatt is bester þan womman. þat is a good womman. nopinge. [2299] ¶ And sire be monye of opere resons may ȝe seen þat mony wemmen ben goode. & eke here conseile goode & profitable also [2300] ¶ And þerfor sire if ȝe wil trust vnto mi counsel .I. schal restore ȝoure douliter hole & sounde. [2301] and eke þat .I. wil done to ȝowe so muche þat ȝe schal haue honoure in þis caas

[2302] ¶ whan Melibe hadde herde þe wordes of his wif Prudence. he seide þus: [2303] That þe wordes of salomon is sope: for he seiþe þat þe wordes þat buen spoken discretelye be ordinance bien honye combes: For þei ȝeue swetnesse to þe soule & holesomenesse to þe bodye: [2304] And wif be cause of þi swete wordes & eke for .I. haue prouede & assaide þi grete sapience & þi grete trewþe .I. wil gouerne me be þi consel in al þinge

[2305] ¶ Nowe. sire quod Dam Prudence & sepen ȝe vouche sauf to be gouernde be my counsel .I. wil enforme ȝowe how þat ȝe schal gouerne ȝoure selue In cheseinge of ȝoure counselours. [2306] ¶ ȝe schol first forme al ȝoure werkes mekely. besecheinge to þe hihe gode þat he wolde be ȝoure. [1]consellour. [2307] And schapeþ ȝowe to suche entent þat he ȝeue ȝowe consel & comforte as tauht Thobe to his son [2308] Att all times þou schalt blisse.

god & prei him to dressen þine weies. And loke also þat þi counsele ben in him for euermore. [2309] ¶ Seint Iame seiþe if any of 3owe haue nede of sapiens aske it of god [2310] ¶ And afterward þan scholne 3e take counsel in 3oure self And examine wele 3oure owen wittes of suche þinges as 3owe þenkeþ þat is beste for 3oure profit [2311] ¶ And þan schal 3e driue fro 3oure hert þenges þat bene contrarious to good conseH. [2312] þat is to so seie. Ire. couetise. & hastenesse.

[2313] ¶ First he þat askeþ counsel of him self certes he most be wiþ-outen ire [. . . . . [2314] . . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] & wrathe in him-self: He weneþ al waie þat he maie do þinge þat he maie nouht do: [2315] And secundly he þat is yrous & wroþe he may nouht wel [. . . [2316] . . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] counsel [2317] ¶ þe þredde is þis: þat he þat is Irous & wroþe as seiþe Senec ne maie nou3t speke bot blame-ful þinges. [2318] And wiþ þilke vicious wordes: he stireþ oþere folke to angur. & to Ire. [2319] ¶ And eke sir 3owe most drede couetise & put it oute of 3oure hert. [2320] ¶ For þe Apostel seiþe: þat Couetise is þe rote of al harmes [2321] ¶ And trusteþ riht wele þat a couetouse man can nou3t deme ne þinke bot only to fulfil þe ende of his couetise: [2322] And certes þat mai neuer be acomplised ¶ For euer þe mo abundance þat he haþe of riches þe more he desireþ. [2323] ¶ And sir 3oue most also driue oute of 3oure herte hastifnesse [2324] For certes 3e maie not deme for 3e best A sodan þouht þat falleþ in 3oure herte Bot 3ow mot avise on it ful oft. [2325] For as 3e haue herde here-be-forne: þe commune prouerbe is þis. That he þat son deme sone repenteþ.

[2326] ¶ Sire 3e be not alweie in like disposicione. [2327] For certes some þinge þat some time semeþ to 3owe goode for to do: Anoþer time it semeþ to 3owe þe contrarie *[A great bit is now omitted in Lansdowne.]*

[MS Reg. 17 D xv., leaf 246, bk]

[2328] [Whan ye han taken counseil vnto youre self and han demed bi goode deliberacioun suche thyng as yow semyth best [2329] than rede I yow that ye kepe it secre [2330] bewry youre counseil to no *per*sone. but if so be that ye wene sikerly that thurgh yowre be-wreyeng your condicion shalbe to youre more profitable [2331] ffor Ihe*sus* Syrak seyth neyther to thy foo ne to thy frend discou*ere* nat thi secree ne thi folye [2332] for they wil yeve the audience and lokyng and supportacioun in thi presence and scorn in thy absence [2333] Another clerk seyth that scarsly thow shalt fynde any *per*sone that may kepe thy counsaile secretly [2334] The booke seyth while that thow kepest thy counseil in thyn hert thow kepist it in thy prison [2335] and when thow bewryest thy counseil to any wight he holdith the in his snare [2336] And therfor yow is better to hide youre counseile in yowre hert than pray hym to whom ye have bewreyed youre counseil that he wil kepe it close and stille [2337] ffor Senek seyth if so be that thow ne myst thyn owne counseil hide / how darstow pray any other wight thy counseil secretely to kepe / [2338] But natheles if thow wene sikerly that thy bewreyeng of thi counseil to a persone wil make thy condicion to stande in the better plite than shalt thow telle hym thy counseyl in this wise [2339] ffirst thow shalt make no semblaunt whether the were leu*ere* pes than werre or this or that ne shewe hym nat thy wil and thyn entent. [2340] for trust wele that comunely thise counsell*ours* bien flaterers [2341] namely the counseill*ours* of grete lordes [2342] for they enforcen hem alwey rather to speke plesaunt wordis enclyneng to the lord his lust. than wordis that bien trewe or profitable [2343] and therfor men [1] seyn that the riche man hath sielde goode counseil. but if he have it of hym self [2344] and after that thow shalt considre thy friendis and thyn enemyes [2345] And as towchyng thy friendis thow shalt con-

sidre whiche ōf hem bien most feythful and most wise and most eldest and most approved in counseillyng [2346] and of hem shalt thow axe thi counseil as the caas requirith [MS Reg.]

[2347] I sey that first ye shul clepe to yowre counseil yowre friendis that bien triewe [2348] ffor Salamon saith for right as the hert of man delitith in savour that is swete right so the counseil of thy friendis yevith swetnesse to the soule [2349] he seyth also ther may nothyng be lykned to the true friende [2350] ffor certes gold ne siluer be nat so moche worth as the goode wille of a triewe friend [2351] And he seyth that a triewe friend is a stronge defence who so that it fyndith certis he fyndith a grete tresour [2352] than shul ye eke considre if that yowre triewe friendis bien discrete and wise for the booke seyth aske alwey thy counseil of hem that bien wise [2353] And be this same reason ye mow clepe to youre counseil of yowre friendis that bien of age [*qui assez ont veu*] and bien expert in many thynges and han ben approved in counseillynges [2354] ffor the booke seyth in old men is al the sapience and in long tyme the prudence [2355] As Tullius seyth that grete thynges ne be nat acompliced bi strength ne be delyuernesse of body. but by goode counseile and bi auctorite of persones and bi science The whiche .iij. thynges ne be nat fiebled bi age but certes they enforcen and encresen day bi day [2356] And than shul ye kepe this for a general rewle ffirst ye shul clepe to your counseil a fewe of youre friendis that bien especial [2357] ffor Salamon saith many friendis have thow. but among a.M'. chese the oon in especial to be thy counseillour [2358] for albe it so that thow first ne telle thy counseil but to a fewe thow mayst after-warde tel it to mo folk if it be nede [2359] but loke alwey that thy counseillours have thylk .iij. condicions that I have seyde

[MS Reg. 17 D 15, leaf 247]

before. that is to sey that they be triewe wise and old experience [2360] and werk nat alwey in euery nede be oo counseillour alone for somtyme behovith it to be counseiled be many [2361] ffor Salamon seyth saluacion of thynges is where as there bien many counseillours]

[MS Reg. extract ends]

[Lansdowne MS, on leaf 195, back]

[2362] ¶ Now haue .I. tolde 3owe of whiche folke 3e scholde be counseled Nowe wil .I. teche 3owe whiche counseil 3e owe to eschewe [2363] ¶ ffirst 3e scholne eschewe þe counseillinge of foles. Salomon seiþ: Takeþ no counseil of no foole for he wil counsel bot after his owen lust and his affeccions: [2364] ¶ The booke seiþe þat þe properte of a foole is þis. He troueþ lyhtly harme of euery whight: & lyhtly troueþ a bounte in him self [2365] ¶ Thou schalt eke eschewe þe counseileinge of al flaterers whiche enforcen hem raþer to preysen 3oure persone by flatry þan for to tel 3ow þe soþefastnesse of þe þinge.

[2366] Wherefore tullius seiþe Amonge al þe pestelence þat ben in frenschip þe grettest is flaterie: And þer-fore is it more nede þat þoue eschewe & drede flatrers þan any oþer peple. [2367] The boke seiþe þou schalt raþer [drede and] fle fro þe swete wordes of flateringe & preiseinge þat from þe egre wordes of þine frende þat seiþe þe þi soþes: [2368] Salomon. seiþe: The wordes of a flaterer is a snare to cache innocence. [2369] ¶ He seiþe also: He þat speketh to his frendes wordes of swettnesse: & al plesance: setteþ a nette to for his fete to cache him: [2370] And þerefor tullius seiþe Enclyne nou3t þine eres to flatere[r]s ne take no counsel of wordes of flaterye: [2371] And Caton Avise þe wele & eschewe þe wordes of swetenesse & of plesance: [2372] ¶ And eke þou schalt eschewe þe counsellinge of þine olde enmys þat be reconsiled [2373]. ¶ The boke seiþe þat no whiht retorneþ safly in to þe

grace of his olde enmye. [2374] And. Isope. seiþe. Ne *trust* nouht to hem to whiche some time þou hast hadd werre or enemete: ne teH hem nouht þine counseH. [2375] ¶ And Senec telleþ þe cause whi: It maie nouht be seiþ he þat where longe time fire haþe endured þat þere dwelleþ som tyme vapoure of hete: [2376] ¶ And þerefor seiþ Salomon. In þine olde foo truste þou neuere. [2377] ffor sekerly þouhe þine enmye be reconsilede & makeþ þe *pere* of humylite & louteþ to þe wiþ his hede ne trust him neu*ere*. [2378] ffor certes he makeþ þilke feyned humylite more for his *profit* þan for any humylite. or for any loue of þin *per*sone [. . . . . *no gap*] be suche feyned countenance. The whiche victorie. he myht haue be strif of werre. [2379] ¶ And Pet*er* alfons seiþe Maake no felaweschepe wiþ þine olde enmys: ffor if þou done hem bounte þei willen p*er*uerten it to wikkednesse: [2380] ¶ And eke þou most eschiewe þe counselinge of þine *ser*uantz þat beren þe grete reu*er*ence: ffor p*ar*auenture þei seine it more for drede þan for loue [2381] And þerfore seiþe a philosofer in þis wise. Ther is no wyght p*ar*fitly trewe to hime þat he to sore dredeþ: [2382] And Tullius seiþe There is no wight so grete of any emp*er*oure3 þat longe maie endure bot if he haue loue of þe peple & drede [2383] ¶ þou schalt eschewe also þe counselinge of folke þat bien dronkenlewe for þei ne can no counseH hide. [2384] Salomon seiþe. þere nys no *priuete* þere as regneþ dr*u*nkennesse [2385] ¶ 3e scholne haue also in auspecte to þe counselinge of suche folke as counsel 3owe a þinge *priuely* & counsel 3owe a thinge þat is contrarye openly [2386] ¶ ffor Cassidorie. seiþe þat it is a maner sleihte to hindren his enmye whan he scheweþ to done a þinge openlye & wirkeþ *priuely* þe cont*rar*ie. [2387] ¶ þou schalt haue also in þi suspecte þe counselinge of wikked folke [. . . . . *no gap*] þat is alweie ful

of fraude? [2388] And Dauid seiþe þat blisful is þe man þat haþe nouht foulowed þe counse[l] of schrewes. [2389] ¶ Tho schalt also eschewe þe counselinge of 3onge folke? ffor here counselinge is nouht ripe as Salomon seiþe

[2390] ¶ Nowe sire seþens .I. haue schewde 3oue of whiche folke 3e scholne take counsele & of whiche folke 3e schollen folowe þe counseli [2391] ¶ Now wil .I. techeche howe 3e scholne examyne 3oure counsele after þe doctrine of tullius [2392] ¶ In þe examenynge þan of 3oure conseloure 3e scholne considere many þinges [2393] Alþere first þou schalt considere þilke þinge þat þou purposed? and vpon what þinge þou wolte haue counsel þat verrey treuþe be seide & conseruede. þis to seie? Tel treuly þin tale. [2394] For he þat seiþe fals mayo wele be counseled in þat caas? [. . . . . .] [2395] ¶ And after þat þou schalt consideren þe þinges þat accorden to þat þou purposest for to be by þine counselloures if reson accordeþ þere to /./ [2396] And eke if þi myht maie atteigne þere to? ¶ And if þe more part & þe bettere parte of 3oure counsellours accorden þer-to or no [2397] þenne schal þou considere whatt þinge schal folowe of hire counselinge. As hate pees. werre. grace profit oþer Damage or many oþir þinges? [2398] And in al þinges þou schalt schese þe best and. And [1] weife al oþere þinges [2399] ¶ Than schalt þou considered of what rote it is engenderd þe matier of þine counsel & what fruyte it maie conceive & engendre. [2400] þou schalt eke considerer al þes causes for whiche þei bue spronge? [2401] ¶ And whan 3e haue examyne 3oure counsel as .I. haue seide and whiche partye is better & more profitable? & hast approued it be mony wise folke & olde? [2402] þan schalt þou considere. if þou maist performe it & make a good ende. [2403] For certes reson wil nouht þat any man schalt beginne a þinge bot if he myht performe it as him ouht? [2404] Ne no wight schol

taken vpon him so heuy a charge þat he ne myht bere it. [2405] ¶ For þe prouerbe seiþ: He þat to muche enbracet distreyneþ litul. [2406] And Caton seiþe Asseie suche þinge as þou hast pouere to done lest þe charge oppresse þe to sore: þat þe be-houeþ to weyve þinge þat þou hast begonne [2407] ¶ And if so be þou be in doute whebe þou maiste performe a þinge or none: chese raþer for to suffur þan for to beginne [2408] ¶ And Peter Alphon seyþe. If þou hast myht to done a þinge of whiche þou most repent. [. . . . . [2409] . . . . . *no gap*] It is better to hold þine tonge stiH: þan for to speke [2410] ¶ Then may .I. vnder-stonde be stronger resoñes þat if þou hast power to performe a werke of whiche þou schalt repent þe. Than is it better þat þou suffur þan begynne: [2411] wele seyne þei þat defenden euery whight to assaie a thinge of whiche he is in doute where he mai performe it or none: [2412] And after whan ze haue examined zoure counseH: as .I. haue seide be-forne: And knoweþe wele þat ze maie performe zoure empryse conferme it þan sadly til it be att an ende.

[2413] ¶ Nowe is it reson & time þat .I. schewe zowe whenne & where: for þat ze maie chaunge zoure counsellours wiþ-outen zoure reproue [2414] ¶ Soþely a man maie chaunge his purpos & his counsel if þe cause seseþ: or whan a newe caas be-tideþ: [2415] ffor þe lawe seiþ vpoñ þinges þat newly be-tyden be-houeþ new counsel: [2416] And senec saiþe. If þi counseH come to þe heres of þine ennemys chaunge þi counsel. [2417] [. . . . . .] if so be þat þou finde þat be errour or be any opere cause harme or damage may betide [2418] ¶ Also if þi counsel be dishoneste. or elles come of dishonest cause change þine counsel. [2419] For þe lawe seiþe þat al. behestes þat bene dishonest ne biene of no valew:

[2420] ¶ And eke if it so be þat it be impossible or maie noȝt gladly be *per*fou*r*med or kepet

[2421] ¶ And take þis for a general rewle. That eue*r*y counsel þat is enformed so strongely þat it maie not be chaunged for no condicion þat maie be tide? I. saie þat ilke counsel is wykked?

[2422] ¶ Mellibeus whan he hadde herde þe doctrine of his wif Dame Prudence. he anseward in þis wise. [2423] Dame q*uo*d he as ȝit vnto þ*is* time ȝe haue wele tauht me as in gene*r*al howe .I. schal gouerne me. & in þe cheseinge. & in wiþholdeinge of my counsellou*rs*. [2424] ¶ Bott nowe wolde .I. faine þat ȝe wolde condescende in speciale? [2425] and telleþ me howe þat likeþ ȝowe or howe þat semeþ ȝow be owre cou*n*sellou*rs* þat we haue chose in þis p*re*sent nede

[2426] ¶ Mi lorde q*uo*d sche .I. beseche ȝowe in al humblesse þat ȝo wold nouht wilfully rep*ro*uen aȝeine myn resou*n*s ne distemp*er* ȝoure herte þeihe .I. speke þinge þat ȝowe displese [2427] ¶ ffor god wote as in myne ente*n*t .I. speke it as for þe best? for ȝoure honoure &. for ȝoure p*ro*fit eke? [2428] And soþely .I. hope þat ȝoure [1]benignite wil tak it in pacience // [2429] And trusteþ to me wele þat ȝoure consel in þis ne schold nouȝt as to speke p*ro*perly be called a counsellinge; bot A mocion or ameueinge of folye. [2430] ¶ In whiche counsel ȝe haue herde in mony a ꝺondre wyse?

[2431] first & forwarde ȝe haue herde in þe assemblinge of ȝoure cou*n*sellours? [2432] ffor first ȝe schold haue cleped a fewe folk to ȝoure counseH. ¶ And after þat ȝe myht haue schewde it to mo folke if it hadd be nede? // [2433] Bot certes sodanly ȝe haue cleped to ȝoure cou*n*sel a grete multitude of peple ful chargea*u*nt & ful a*n*noyus for to here? [2434] ¶ And also ȝe haue herde forþer as ȝe scholde onely haue cleped to ȝoure counsel ȝoure trewe frendes olde & wise? [2435] ¶ ȝe haue cleped also strange folk ȝonge folke false flateres & ennemys

reconsiled. And folke þat do 3owe reu*er*ence wiþe outen loue [2436] And eke also 3e haue herde for 3e haue brouht wiþ 3ou to 3oure cou*n*seH. Ire. couetise./ & hastinesse./ [2437] ¶ þe whiche þre þinges be contrarie to eue*r*y good conseH & honest. & pro*f*itable: [2438] The whiche þre þinge 3e haue nouht anentisched oþer destruyde he*m* neyþe*re* in 3oure self ne in 3oure counsello*urs* as 3owe auht [2439] ¶ 3e haue herde also for 3e haue schewde to 3oure consello*urs* 3oure talent. 3o*ur* affeccion anone for to do vengeance: [2440] And þei haue aspide be 3oure wordes to what þinge 3e be enclyned: [2441] And þe*re* fore haue þei raþer cou*n*seld 3owere talent: þan to 3oure pro*f*itte.// [2442] 3e haue herd also for 3owe semeþ it sufficeþ to haue be counseld be þis counsello*urs* onely & be lytil avise: [2443] where as in so grete & in so hihe a nede it hadde bue necessarie mo counsello*urs* & mo delib[er]ac*i*ones to pe*r*forme 3oure emprise. [2444] ¶ Also 3e haue nou3t herde 3oure cou*n*seH in þe forseid mane*re* ne in dieu manere as þe caas requireþ. [2445] ¶ 3e haue herde also for 3e haue maade no diuision be tuex [. . . . . *no gaþ*] 3oure trewe frendes & 3oure feyned counselloures [2446] Ne 3e haue nouht knowe þe wiH of 3oure trew frendes olde & wise. [2447] Bot 3e haue cast al here wordes in an hoche poche & enclyned 3oure hert to þe more part and to þe gretter nombre [and there be ye condescended [2448] *Et tu scez bien que les fols sont tousjours en plus grant nombre que les sages,*] of foles þan of wise men: [2449] And þare for þe cou*n*sellinge þat ben at congregacioun & multitude of folk: þere as men tak more rewarde to þe nombre þan to þe Sapience. of pe*r*sones. [2450] ¶ 3e se wele þat in suche consellinge þe foles haue þe maistre. [2451] ¶ Mellibe anseward & seide a3eine .I. g*r*aunt wele þat .I. haue herde [2452] Bot þe*re* as þou hast tolde me here beforne. That he nys nouht to blame to chaunge his con-

sellours for certeine caas & for certeine & iust cause? [2453] .I. am al rede to chaunge my conseillours riht as þou woldest deuise.// [2454] for þe prouerbe seiþe ffor to do synne is manysshe Bot certes for to perseuere longe þere in is werkes of þe deuel.

[2455] ¶ To þis sentence anseward anone dame Prudence & seide [2456] examyneþ quod sche 3oure counsel. & lat vs see whiche of hem haþ spoken most resonablelye? & tauht 3oue best conseH. [2457] ¶ And for als muche þat examinacions is necessarie Lat vs beginne att surgiens & att phiciens þat first spaken of þis matiere [2458] ¶ .I. seie þat Phesiciens & sirurgiens haue seide 3owe in 3oure counsel discretely as hem ouht [2459] in here speche. & ful wisely? As to þe office of hem [1] appartenep to done to euery whiht honour & profit & nouht for to annoye [2460] And after her craft to done grete diligence vn to þe cure of hem whiche þat haue in here gouernance [2461] ¶ And sir riht as þei haue anseward wisely & discretly. [2462] riht so rede .I. þat þei ben hihelye & souereingly guerdount for here noble speche. [2463] & eke for þei scholne more do þe ententif bisenesse in þe curacione of þine douhter dere? [2464] ffor albe-it so þat þei be 3oure frendes þere for schal 3e nouht suffre þat þei serue 3oue for nouht? [2465] bot 3e auht þere after guerdon hem & payen hem here largesse [2466] ¶ And as toucheinge þe proporcion whiche þat þe phecisiens encresseden in þis caas. ¶ This is to seine [2467] þat in maladies is þat a contrarie is waressched be anoþer contrarie [2468] ¶ I. wolde faine k[n]owe howe 3e vnderstode þilke text & what is 3oure sentence [2469] ¶ Certes quod Millibeus .I. vnderstonde it in þis wise? [2470] Riht as þei haue done to me a contrarie. So scholde .I. do hem anoþere? [2471] ffor riht as þei haue venged hem vpon me & done me wronge? Riht so wil .I. venge me vpon hem

& done hem wronge? [2472] & þan haue .I. cured a contrary wiþ anoþer contrarie

[2473] ¶ Lo lo quod dame Prûdence. howe lihtly is euery man enclined to his owen desire & to his plesance. [2474] Certes quod sche þe wordes of þe Phisiciens ne schold nouht be vnderstande in þat wise. [2475] ¶ ffor certes wykkednesse is not contrarie to wikkedenesse. ne ve[n]gaunce is nouht contrari to vengaunce. ne wronge to wronge? [*mais sont semblables* [2476] *Et pour ce, vengence par vengence, ne injure par injure n'est pas curé*] [2477] bote euery of hem encreseþ & gregeþ opere [2478] Bot certes þe wordes of phesiciens scholde be vnderstonde in þis wise? [2479] ffor goode & wykkednesse bene tuo contraries? & pes & werre. vengeance & suffrance. discord & accord. & mony opere þinges [2480] ¶ Bot certes wikkednesse schal be warisched be goodenesse. discorde be acorde. werre. be pes. & so forþ & opere þinges. [2481] ¶ And here to þe Apostel sein Paule in mony place? [2482] He seiþe ne 3eldeþ nouht harm for harme ne wikked speche. [*pour maudit*] [2483] Bot do wele to hem þat done þe harme. & blesse hem þat seiþ to þe harme. [2484] ¶ And in monye opere places he amonesteþ pees & accorde [2485] ¶ Bot now wil .I. speke of þe counsel whiche was y3eue to 3owe be men of lawe þe wyse folke & þe olde folke [2486] þat seiden al be one accorde as 3e herde beforne. [2487] ¶ That ouer al þinges 3e scholne do 3oure diligence to kepe 3oure persone & to warnyssche 3oure hous [2488] ¶ And þei seiden also þat in þis caas 3owe ouhten to wirchen ful aviselie & with grete deliberacione. [2489] ¶ And sir. as to þe first pointe þat toucheþ vn to þe kepeinge of 3oure persone [2490] ¶ 3e schul vnderstonde þat he þat haþe werre schal euermore deuoutly & mekely preyen befor al þinges [2491] þat ihesus crist of his merci wil

haue him in *pro*tectione & bien his sou*e*reigne helpeinge at his nede: [2492] ffor certes i*n* þis werlde þ*er*e nys no wiht þat mai be counseld ne kepped sufficiantly *with*outen þe kepeinge of oure lor[d] ih*es*u crist: [2493] To þis sentence accordeþ þe *pro*fet dauid þ*at* seiþe. [2494] If god: nẽ kepe þe Citee. in Idel wakeþ he þat it kepeþ [2495] ¶ Now *sir* þan scholne 3e qwite þe kepeinge of 3oure *per*soñ to 3oure trewe frendes þat bene aproued & yknowe: [2496] & of hem schol 3e axen [1]helpe 3oure *per*sone for to kepe ¶ For Caton seiþe if þou hast nede of helpe ax it of þi frendes. [2497] For þ*er*e is none so good a fesicien as is þi trew frende [2498] ¶ And after þis schal 3e kepe 3owe frome al strangẽ folke & fro lyers: And alweye haue in suspect here companye [2499] ¶ For Pers Alphoñ seiþe Ne take no company beþe were of a straunge man bot it so be þou haue knowe h*im* of longer time: [2500] And if it so be þat he fal into þi compaigne *per*aduenture wiþ-outen þine assent: [2501] enquere þan as sotelly as þou canste of his co*n*u*er*sacioñ & of his lif be-fore: & feyneinge þine weie seyinge þou woldest go þeder as þou woldest not go: [2502] If he bere a spere hold þe oñ þe riht side of him. & if he bere a swerde holde on þe left side of him. [2503] & þan schal 3e kepe 3owe wislye fro al suche man*er*e of peple as .I. haue seide 3owe here be-fore. & hem & here coun-seH eschewe. [2504] And af*ter* þis þan schal 3e kepe 3owe in suche man*er*e [2505] þ*at* for any p*re*sumpcion of 3oure bodely strengeþ þat 3e dispise nouht ne acompteþ nou3t þe miht of 3oure adu*er*sarie so lit þ*at* 3e lette þe kepeinge of 3oure p*er*soñ for 3oure p*re*sumpcioñ. [2506] For eu*er*y wiseman dredeþ his enemye: [2507] ¶ And Salomon seiþe. welfuH is he þat of al haþe drede [2508] For certes he þat haþ þoruhe hardenesse of his herte: and þoruhe þe hardinesse of him self haþ so grete p*re*sumpcioñ him schal yuel betide: [2509] And þan

schal ȝe euer more enconterewaite en-buschementez *and* al espyaile [2510] ¶ ffor as seiþe þe wiseman. [. . . . . *no gap.*] [2511] he ne falleþ in no p*er*ile þat p*er*ilousnes eschewe þ [2512] ¶ And al be it so þat þou seme þat þou be in secrete place ȝit schalt þou alweie done þi diligence i*n* þe kepeinge of þi p*er*soñ: [2513] þis is to seie be nouht necligent to kepe þi p*er*soñ Nouht onely fro þi grettest enemye bot only fro þi leste enmye. [2514] Senec. seiþe. A man þat is wele a-vised he dredeþ his lest enemye: [2515] Ouide. seiþ. þat þe litel wesel wil sle þe grete bull & þe wilde hert. [2516] And þe prouerbe seiþe a litel þorne mai greue a kinge ful sore & a lite hunde wil holde þe wilde bore [2517] bot naþelesse .I. seie nouht þou schal nouht be so grete a cowarde þat þou doute where as is no drede [2518] ¶ The book seiþe: þat somme men haue grete lust to deceyue: Bot þei dred to be deceyued: [2519] [*Après, tu te dois garder de venin*] And kepe þe from þe company of scoreners: [2520] for þe boke seiþe þat scorners makeþ no company. bot fle here word as venum.

[2521] ¶ Nowe as to þe secunde point. *þere as* ȝoure counsellours conseil ȝow to warnystor ȝoure houses *with* grete diligence.// [2522] I. wold fein knowe howe þat ȝe vnderstonde þilke wordes & what is ȝoure sentence

[2523] ¶ Millebeus answerde & seide: certes .I. vnderstonde in þis wise þat .I. schal warnstore myne house wiþ toures suche as haþe casteles & o*þer*e manere edifices: & armour & archers [2524] be whiche þinge. If .I. maie my person & my hous so kepe. & defende þat myne enemys schal be in drede my hous to aproche

[2525] ¶ To þis sentence answeard a-none dame Prudens warnyscheinge quod sche of hihe toures & of hihe edifices apparteined som time to pride: [2526] And eke men make hihe toures. [*et les edifices a grant traueil et a grans*

despens / Et quant elles sont faites elles ne valent rien se elles ne sont deffendues par saiges et par loyaulz amiz & grans missions (MS Reg. 19 C xi, leaf 58, col. 2)] [2527] And vnderstand wele þat þe grettest & þe strangest garisoñ þat a riche man maie haue. [1]As wele to kepen his person & his goodes is [2528] þat he be byloued wiþ his subiectes & wiþ his neiȝbours // [2529] ffor þus seiþ Tullius: Thet þere is a manere Garnyson þat man maie veñquysschen ne discomfite And þat is [2530] a lord to be loued of his Citeȝeines And of his peple

[2531] ¶ Nowe sir as to þe þred pointe: Where as ȝoure olde & wise counsellours seiden: þat ȝow nouht not sodenly ne hastely proceden in þis nede: [2532] Bot þat ȝowe ouhten purveye & appurel ȝowe in þis caas: wiþ grete diligence & grete deliberacion: [2533] Trewly .I. trowe þat þei seiden riht wisly & riht soþe: [2534] ¶ ffor. Tullius: seiþe: In euery nede er þou be-ginne it: apparel þe with grete diligence. [2535] Than seie .I. þat in vengeance takeinge in werre. in Bataile & in warnestoringe. [2536] er þou beginne .I. rede þat þou appareile þe þere to: and do it wiþ gode deliberacion [2537] ¶ ffor Tullius seiþe: þe longe apparaileinge beforne þe Bataile Makeþ schort victorie. [2538] And Cassidorus seiþe: The garnyson is strongere whan it is longe time avisede.

[2539] ¶ Bot nowe lat vs speke of þe counsel þat was acorded be oure neihbours suche as done ȝowe reuerence wiþ-outen loue [2540] ȝoure olde enemyes reconsilede: ¶ ȝoure flaterers [2541] þat counseiled ȝowe certeine þinges priuely: & openlye counseled ȝowe þe contrarie: [2542] ¶ The ȝonge folke also þat counseld ȝowe to do vengeance and to make werre anone: [2543] ¶ And certe sir as .I. haue seide be-forne ȝe haue gretly erred to haue cleped suche manere of folke to ȝoure counseil: [2544] wiche counsellours buene ynowhe repreuede be þe resons a-forne seide [2545] ¶ Bot naþeles late vs nowe descende to

þe speciale: ¶ 3e schollen first procede after þe doctrine. of Tullius. [2546] Certes þe treuþe of þis Matier eiþere of þis counseH nedeþ nouht diligently enquiren: [2547] For it is wele wist whiche þei bien: þat haue do 3ow þis trispas & velany: [2548] & howe many trespassours & in what manere þei haue done to 3owe al þis wronge & aH þis velanye [2549] ¶ And after þis: þan schal 3e examyne þe secunde condicion: þe whiche þat Tullius haddeþ in þis matiere. [2550] ¶ For tullius. putteþ a þinge whiche att he clepeþ consentynge: þis is to seie: [2551] who buen þei & whiche buen þei & houe mony þat consenten to þi counseH in þi wilfulnes to donè hasti vengeance: // [2552] And lat vs consider also who bien þei. & how mony bien þei [*et quelz* (MS Reg. 19 C xi, lf 58, col. 4)] þat þat consenten to 3oure aduersaries [2553] ¶ And certes as to þe first pointe it is wele knowen whiche be þei þat consentine to 3oure hastif wilfulnes: [2554] For treuly al þo þat counsel 3oue to maken sodein werre ne bien nou3t 3oure frendes [2555] ¶ Lete se nowe whiche bien þei þat 3e holde so gretely 3oure frendes as to 3oure personē: [2556] For al be it so þat 3e bene myhte & riche: certes 3e bue bot alone. [2557] ffor certes 3e haue no childe bot a douhtere: [2558] ne 3e haue no breþern ne cosins germayns ne none oþere nyhe kinred: [2559] where-for 3oure enmys scholden stint to plete wiþ 3owe ne to destruyen 3oure person: [2560] ¶ 3e knowen also þat 3oure riches most be dispended in diuerse parties: [2561] And what þat euery whight [1]haþ his parte þei wolne tak litel rewarde to vengen þi deþ [2562] ¶ Bot þine enemys bien þre: & þei haue many childerne. breþern: cosins: & oþere nyhe kinrede [2563] ¶ And þouhe so were þat þou haddest sleine of hem tuo or þre: 3it dwellen þere y-nowe to awreken here deþe: & to sle þine persone [2564] & þeihe so be þat 3oure kinred be more sikere & stedfast þan

þe kinrede of 3oure aduersarie? [2565] 3it neuer þe les 3oure kinred is bot after kinrede þat bien bot litil sibbe to 3owe [2566] ¶ And þe kine of 3oure ennemys bue nyhe sibbe to hem? And certes as in þat her condicioñ is better þat is 3oures [2567] ¶ Than latt vs consideren also of þe counsellinge of hem þat counseleden 3ow to taken sodein vengeance? wepere it accordeþ to reson or none? [2568] And certes 3e knowen wele naye? [2569] ¶ For as be riht & resoñ þere maie no man take vengeance of no wyht bot þe Iuge þat haþe Iurdiction of it [2570] whan it is graunted him to take þilke vengeance hastelye or attemperellye as þe lawe requireþ [2571] ¶ And 3it more ouere of þilke worde þat Tullius clepeþ consentinge? [2572] þou schalt consent if þi myht & þi power maie consent? And sufficeþ to þi wilfulnesse & to þine counsellours? [2573] And certes þou maist wele scie þat naie? [2574] For sekerly as for to speken propurlye we maie do no þinge bot onely suche þinge as we may done rihtfully [2575] ¶ And certes rihtfully ne maie 3e take no vengeance as of 3oure propre Auctorite? [2576] ¶ þan maie 3e seen þat 3oue pouer ne consenteþ nou3t ne accordeþ nou3t wiþ 3oure wilfulnesse. [2577] ¶ Nowe latte vs examyne þe þrede pointe þat tullius clepeþ þe consequent? [2578] ¶ þou schalt vnderstonde þat þe vengeance þat þou purposest for to take his consequent? [2579] And per-for falleþ anopere vegeance. Perill. werre. & opere damage wiþ-outen nombre of whiche be nouht war as att þis time? [2580] And as toucheinge þe ferþe pointe? þat Tullius clepeþ engenderinge [2581] ¶ Thou schalt consider þat þis wronge whiche þat is done to þe? is engenderd of þe hate of þine enmys? [2582] And of þe vengeance takeing? And vpon þat wolde engender anoþer vengance & muchel sorwe & wastinge of richesse as .I. seide ere

[2583] Now sir as toucheinge þe pointe þat tullius clepeþ causes. whiche. þat is þe last pointe. [2584] ¶ þou

schalt vnderstonde þat þe wronge þat þu hast receyued haþ certeine causes [2585] whiche þat clerkes clepen. Oriens & officiens & causa longinqua & causa propinqua. þis to seine þe ferre cause [*et la prochaine* [2586] *La longtaine est dieu qui est cause de toutes choses* / [2587] *La prochaine sont ces* iij. *ennemiz* [2588] *La cause* (Reg. 19 C xi)] Accidentale. was hate. [2589] The causes Material bene þe .v. wondes of þine douhter: [2590] The cause formale is þe manere of here wercheinge þat brouht ledders And clomben in att þine wyndows. [2591] þe cause finale was for to sle þi douhter. It lakked nouht in as muche as in hem was [2592] ¶ Bot for to speken of þe ferre cause as to what ende þeie scholne come: or what schal be-tiden of hem in þis caas ne can .I. nouht deme bot be coniectinge & be supposcinge: [2593] ¶ For we scholne supp[os]e [*que Ilz en vendront*] to a wikked ende: [2594] Be cause þe booke of decrees seiþe ¶ Seldome or wiþ grete peine bene causes / [1]brouhte to an hende whan þei bene badly be-gonne.

[2595] ¶ Nowe *sir* if men axed me: whi þat ȝe suffer men to done ȝowe þis velânye: certes .I. can not wele answer as for no soþfastnesse [2596] ¶ For þe Apostele seiþe þat þe science & þe Iuggement of oure lorde god bene myhty & depe: [2597] þere maie no man comprehende ne serche ham sufficeantly: [2598] Nareþeles be serteine presumpciouns & coniettinges .I. holde & beleue [2599] þat god þat is ful of Iustice & rihtwisnes Haþ suffred þis be-tide be Iust cause resonable:

[2600] ¶ þi name is Melibe. þis is to seie a man þat drinkeþ honye: [2601] Thow hast ydronken so muche hony of þi swete temperal riches & delices & honours of þis werlde [2602] þat þou art dronken: & hast forȝeten oure lorde ihesu criste þi creatour: [2603] þou hast noȝt done to him suche honour as þe ouhte: [2604] ne þou hast nouht wele take hede to

þe wordes of Ovide þat seide: [2605] vnder þe hony of þe goodes of þi bodi: is hidde þe venym þat sleþ þi soule: [2606] And Salomon seiþe: If þou hast found Hony: ete of it what sufficiþe: [2607] For if þou ete of it oute of mesure: þou schalt spewe & be nedy & pouere: [2608] And peraduenture criste haþe in despite & haþ torne awaie fro þe his face: & his heres of Misericorde: [2609] And also he haþe suffred þat þou haste biene ypunysched in þe maner þat þou hast trespast [2610] ¶ Thou hast done sinne aȝeines oure lorde ihesu criste: [2611] for certes þe þre enemys of mankinde þat is to seie. þe flesche. þe fende. & þe werlde. [2612] Thou hast suffurde hem entre in to þine [soule] wilfully be þe windowes of þi bodyo [2613] And hast nouht defended þe sufficiantly aȝeines here defautes & temptaciouns: So þat þei' haue wounded þi soule in .v. place: [2614] þis is to seine. ¶ þe' dedely sinnes þat biene entred in to þine hert be þi .v. wittes. [2615] And in þe same manere oure lorde ihesu crist: haþe suffred þat þine þree enemys be entrede in to þine house be þe windowes: [2616] And han wounde þi douhter in þe same manere:

[2617] ¶ Certes quod Mellibe .I. see þat ȝe enforce ȝowe mechel be wordes to ouer-come me. In suche manere þat schal nouȝt avenge me of myne enmye [2618] scheweinge me þe perils & þe yueles þat myhten fal of þis vengeance [2619] ¶ Bot [who]so wolde consider in al vengeance þe perils & þe yuels þat miht sewe of vengancez takeinge [2620] a man wold neuere take veniance: And þat were harme: [2621] for be þe vengeance takeinge buen þe wikked men deseuerd fro þe good men: [2622] ¶ And þo þat han wil to done wikkednesse: restreyne here wikked purpos: Whan þei seen þe punyssheinge and þe chastesinge of trespassours

[2623] [And to this answered dame Prudence: 'Certes,' said she, 'I grant you that from vengeance come many

benefits as well as many evils; [2624] yet vengeance belongeth not to "a singulere person," but only to the judges, and to those who have jurisdiction over evil-doers.'] [2625] ¶ An 3ite saie .I. more: þat riht as a singulere person sinneþe In takeinge vengeance of anoþer manne. [2626] Riht so sinneþ þe Iuggé if he take no vengeance of hem þat hit haue deseruede: [2627] ffor Senec seiþe. That maistere is good þat reprouеþ schrewes: [2628] And as Cassidorye seiþe A man dredeþ to done outrages whan he wote & knoeþ þat it displese þe Iuge & þe souereyngnes: [2629] ¶ And anoþere. The Iuge þat dredeþ to done riht Makeþ schrewes. [2630] And seinte Poule þe Appostle seiþe in his epistle whan he writeþ vn-to þe Romayns: That þe Iuge beren nouht þe spere wiþ-owten cause [2631] bot þei beren it to punysshen þe schrewes & þe mysdoers & to [1]defende þe goode men: [2632] If 3e wilne þan take vengeance of 3oure enemys 3e schol retourne or haue 3oure recours to þe Iuge þat haþ þe Iurdiccioun vpon hem. [2633] & he schal punysshe hem as þe lawe axeþ & requireþ:

[2634] ¶ A quod Mellibe: þis vengeance lykeþ me no þinge: [2635] I be-þinke me nowe howe. fortone haþe norisched me fro my childhode And haþ holpen me to passe mony a strange place: [2636] Now .I. will assayene here troweinge wiþ goddes grace & helpe þat 3e schal helpe me my schame for to venge

[2637] ¶ Certes quod prudence if 3e wolne wirche be my counseil: 3e schol nouht assaye fortune be no weye [2638] ¶ Ne 3e schol nouht lene or borwe vnto here after þe worde of Senec. [2639] For þinges þat bene folylye done & þat biene in hope of fortune schal neuer come a good ende [2640] And as þe same Senec seiþe: The more clere & þe more and þe more schineinge þat fortune is: þe more brutel & þe sonner ybroke sche is: [2641] Tristeþ nouht in hire for sche is neyþere stedfast ne stable: [2642] ¶ For whan þou trowest to be most sekere or sure of hire

helpe: Sche wil Faile þe & deceyve þe: [2643] ¶ And where as 3e seine þat fortone haþ norissched 3ow fro 3oure child-hode: [2644] I. saie 3oue þat in so muche schal 3e þe lasse trust in hire & in hire witte: [2645] ¶ For Senec seiþe. þat what man is norisched be fortune sche makeþ him a grete foole: [2646] ¶ Nowe seþen 3e desire & axen vengeance: And þe vengeance þat is done after þe lawe & be-forne þe Iuge ne likeþ 3owe nou3t: [2647] And vengeance þat is done in hope of forton is *per*ilous & vncerteine: [2648] Than haue 3e none oþer remedye: bot for to haue 3oure recours vnto þe sou*er*eyne Iuge þ*at* vengeþ al velanyes & wronges [2649] And he schal venge 3oue after þat þi self witnesseþ: [. . . . *no gap*] [2650] Leueþ þe vengeance to me & .I. schal done it:

[2651] Mellibe anseward: I. ne venge me nouht of þe wronge þat men han done to me [2652] .I. schal somne or werne hem þat haue done þis velany to me And al oþ*er*e to done me anoþ*er*e velanye [2653] ¶ For it is wreten if þou take no vengeance of an olde velanye: þou sompnest þine adu*er*sarie to done þe a newe velanye: [2654] [*Et ainsi par mon serement en souffrant len me fera tant de villenie de toutes pars* (Reg. 19 C xi, lf 60, col. 2)] þat .I. myht neyþe ber it ne susteinge: [2655] And. so schold .I. be ou*er*esett And halden ouere lowe: [2656] For men seine in muchel suffringe schold mony þinges falle. vn-to þe whiche .I. schal nouht suffre

[2657] ¶ Certes q*uo*d prudence .I. g*r*aunte þat ou*er* muchel suffrance is nouht good: [2658] ¶ Bot 3it ne foulowe þ it nou3t þ*er*e-of: þat eu*er*y p*er*son to who*m* men doone velanye take of hit vengeance: [2659] For þat app*ar*teneþ & longeþ al only to þe Iuge. For þei schal vengen þe vilenys & þe inIuryes [2660] And þerfore þo tuo Auctoritees þat 3e haue seide aboue ben only vnderstonden in þe Iugges [2661] ¶ For whan þei suffren ou*er*e mechel þe wronges & velanys be done

with-owten punyschinge: [2662] þei sompne not a man onely for to do newe wronges: bot þe *com*maunde it [2663] ¶ Also a wise mañ seiþe: þat þe Iuge þat correcteþ nouht þe sinner': *com*mandeþe & biddeþ him to do sinne [2664] ¶ And þe sou*er*eignes & þe Iuges myhten in her' londe so muche suffure of þe schrewees & þe mysdoers: [2665] þat þei scholden be [1]suffrance be *pro*cesse of time wexen of suche powere & myht: þat þei scholde put oute þe Iuges & þe sou*er*eignes fro here places: [2666] & att þe last maken hem lesen here lordeschippes: [2667] Bot lat vs nowe put *þat* 3e haue leue to ven*ge*þ 3owe: [2668] If 3e be nouht of myht & powere as nowe to vengen 3owe: [2669] ¶ For if 3e willen maake comp*ar*ison vn-to þe myht of 3oure adu*er*saries: ye scholne finde in many þinges þat .I. haue schewde 3owe aforne þis: þat here condicion is better þan 3oures: [2670] ¶ And þ*er*efore seie .I. þat it is good as nowe þat 3e suffre & be pacient

[2671] ¶ For*þer*e more 3e knowe. þat after þe comune sawe it is a wodenesse a man to striue a3eines a stronger o*þer*e a more myhty man þan him self [2672] ¶ And for striue wiþ a man of euen strenkeþ: þat is to seie wiþ a strange man as he is it is a *per*ile. [2673] And for to striue wiþ a weyker man it is foly: [2674] And *þer*-for scholde a man fly3e striueinge as muche. as he miht: [2675] as Salomon seiþe: It is a grete worschipe a man to kepe him fro noyse & strif [2676] ¶ And if it so be-falle or happe þat a man of gretter myht & strengeþ þan þou ert do þe greuance [2677] Stodye & besye þe raþere to stille þe same greuance þan for to venge þe [2678] For Senec seiþe. þat he putteþ him in grete *per*ile þat striveþ wiþ a gretter man þan he him self is [2679] ¶ And Caton seiþe if a man of hiher astate or degre or more myhte þan þou do þe anoye or greuance suffre hime. [2680] For he þat ones haþe greued þe

maie a-nopere time releue þe & helpe þe: [2681] ¶ 3itt sett .I. caas þat 3e haue boþ myht & licence to venge 3owe: [2682] I. seie þat þere bue mony þinges þat schold reteyne 3owe. of vengeance takeinge [2683] And maake 3ow for to encline & for to suffre And for to haue paciens in þe wronges þat han be done to 3owe: [2684] first & forwarde yf 3e wolne considere þe defautes þat bene in 3oure owen person: [2685] ffor whiche defautes god haþ suffred 3owe to haue þis tribulacione as .I. haue seide 3owe here before: [2686] ffor þe poet seiþe: That we ouhten pacientlye take þe tribulacions þat comeþ to vs whan we þinken & consideren þat we haue deserued to haue hem. [2687] ¶ And seint Gregorie seiþ whan a man considereþ wele þe nombre of his defautes & of his sinnes [2688] þe peynes & þe tribulacions þat he suffreþ semen þe lasse vn-to hime [2689] ¶ And alsomuche as him þinkeþ his sinnes þe more heuy & greuous. [2690] In so muche semeþ his peine. þe lihter & þe esier vn-to him: [2691] ¶ Also 3e owen to enclyne & to bowen 3oure herte to taken þe pacience of oure [lord] ihesu crist. As seiþe seint Peter in his Epistles: [2692] ¶ Ihesu crist he seiþ haþe suffred for vs & 3euen ensample vn-to euery man for to folowe & to sewe him: [2693] ffor he dide neuer sinne. ne neuere ne came a veleyns worde out of his mouþe: [2694] ¶ Whan men cursed him · he cursed hem nouht. And whan men betene him he manessed hem nouht [2695] ¶ Also þe grete paciens whiche þe seintez þat bien in paradise haue hadde in tribulacions þat þei haue sufferd wiþ-outen her desert or gilt [2696] ouht muche to stire. 'Þowe to pacience: [2697] [*Aprez moult te dois encliner a pacience ce* (Reg. 19 C xi, lf 60 bk, col. 2)] [2698] consideringe þat þe tribulacions of þis werlde bot litel while endureþ: & sone passed biene & gone: [2699] And þe Ioye þat man sekeþ to haue by pacience in tribulacione is perdurable After þat þe

Apostele seiþe in þis epistle [2700] ¶ The Ioye of god he seiþe is *per*durable þat is to seie eu*er* lasteinge/:/ [2701] Also troweþ & beleueþ stedfastlye þat is nouht wele y-norisched ne wele y-tauht þat can nouht haue pacience. [. . . . . *no gap*] [2702] ¶ For Salomon. seiþe; þat þe doctrine of þe witte of man it knowen be pacience: [2703] And in anoþere place he seiþe. He þat is pacient gouerneþ him be grete prudence: [2704] And ȝut Salomon seiþe. þe Angry & þe wuþful man makeþ noys: and þe pacient man attempreþ him & stille him [2705] ¶ He seiþe also it is more worþe to be riht pacient þat to be riht stronge: [2706] And he þat may haue þe lorschip of his owen hert is more to preise: þan he þat be his force & strengeþ takeþ grete Citees [2707] ¶ And þerfor seiþ seint Iame in his apistle þat pacience is a grete vertue of *per*feccione.

[2708] ¶ Certes q*uo*d Mellibe .I. graunte ȝowe dame prudence. þat pacience is a grete vertue of *Per*feccione. [2709] Bot euery man maie not haue þe *per*fecc*i*on þat ȝe sechen [2710] ¶ Ne .I. ne am not of þe nombre of riht *per*fite me[*n*]. [2711] ffor myne herte may neuer bue *in* pees vnto þe time it be venged.// [2712] And al be it so þat it was grete *per*ile to myne enemys to done a velany in tąkeinge vengeance vpon me. [2713] ȝit token þei none hede of þe *per*ile bot fulfilden here wikked wil & here corage [2714] ¶ And þ*er*e-fore me þenkeþ þat men ouht not to rep*r*oue me þeihe .I. putte me in-to a litel *per*ile for to avenge me: [2715] And þouhe .I. do a grete excesse: þat is to saie: þat .I. do a vengeance outrage be a-noþer:

[2716] ¶ A q*uo*d Dame prudence ȝe seyne ȝoure wil & as ȝoue likeþ [2717] ¶ Bot in no caas of þe werlde a man schold nouht done outrage ne excesse for to avengen him [2718] ¶ For Cassidori seiþe: That as yuel doþe he þat avengeþ him be outrage: As he þat doþe þe

outrage? [2719] And þere-fore ȝe schollen venge ȝow after þe order of riht? þat is to seine be þe lawe? nouht be excesse ne be outrage? [2720] Also If ȝe wil venge ȝow of þe outrage of ȝoure aduersaries in oþere manere þan riht commandeþ ȝe synnen? [2721] ¶ Therefore seiþe Senec That a man schal neuere venge schrewnesse by schrewdnesse? [2722] a[n]d if he seie þat riht axeþ to defende violence be violence? An feihtinge be feyhtinge? [2723] Certes ȝe seie soþe whan þe defence is done riht anone wiþ-outen interualle or with-owten tarynge or delaye [2724] for to defenden him & nouht for to vengen him? [2725] And it be-houeþ þat a man putte suche temperance in his defense [2726] þat men haue no cause ne Matire to reproue him þat defendeþ him of excesse & outrage. [*Car autrement Ce seroit contre droit et contre raison* (Reg. 19 C xi)] [2727] ¶ Parde ȝe wote wele þat ȝe maake no defense as nowe for to defende ȝowe. bot for to venge ȝowe [2728] ¶ And so seweþ it þat ȝe haue no wil to ȝoure dede attemperally? [2729] And þere-for me þinkeþ þat pacience is goode ¶ For Salomon seiþe? he þat is nouht pa[1]cient schal haue grete harme

[2730] ¶ Certes quod Mellibe .I. graunt wele þat whan a man is vnpacient & wroþe of þat þat toucheþ him nouht & þat at apperteigneþ nouht to him? þouht it harme him it is no wondere [2731] for þe lawe seiþe? he þat is coupable? þat entre-meteþ him or medeleþ him wiþ suche þinges as perteigneþ nouht to him? [2732] ¶ And Salomon seiþe. That he þat entermeteþ him of þe noyse & þe strif of a-noþere man is like to hime þat takeþ an hunde be þe eres? [2733] ffor riht as he þat take a strange honde be þe eres is oþere while beten wiþ þe honde? [2734] riht in þe same wise it þe resoun þat he haue harme. þat by his inpacience medeleþ him of þe noyce of anoþere man? wher as it apperteineþ nouht vnto him [2735] ¶ Bot ȝe knowen wele þat þis dede? þat

is to seie my greue & my disese touchep me riht nyhe. [2736] ¶ And *pere*-for peih .I. be wrope & impacient: it is no *mer*veile [2737] ¶ And saueinge 3oure grace .I. can nou3t see pat it myht gretly harme peih. .I. take vengeance [2738] ffor .I. am more Richer & myhte pan myne enemys biene [2739] ¶ And wele knowe 3e pat be mony & he haueinge grete possessions bien al pinge of pis werld gouernede: [2740] And Salomon seip AH pinges obeyne to money:

[2741] ¶ Whan p*ru*dence had herd hir husbonde to avaunten him of his riches & of his monye: & dispreyseinge of pe pouer of his aduersaries: Sche spak & seide on pis wise [2742] [*Certes treschier sires*] .I. g*ra*unte pat 3e be riht riche & myhty: [2743] & pat pe risches bien goode to hem pat haue wele geten hem. & pat wele can vsen hem [2744] ¶ For riht as pe body of man maie no3t leue *with*outen soule: ne more may it leue wip-outen temp*er*ale godes [2745] ¶ And be riches may a man geten him grace: [2746] ¶ And *per*-for seipe Pamphilles: If any goddes douhter he seipe be riche: sche maie chese he seipe of a pousand men. [*lequel quelle veult pour mary* [2747] *Et de mil* (MS Reg. 19 C xi, leaf 61, back, col. 1)] one wil not for-saken hur ne refuysen hire. [2748] ¶ And pis Pamphiles seipe al so if pou be riht happe: pat is to seie if pou be riht riche pou schalt finde a grete nombre of frendes & felawes [2749] ¶ And if pi fortun chaunchep pat if pou wex pore: ffare wele frenchipp & phelauschipe: [2750] ffor pou schalt be alone wip-outen any company. bot if be pe compaigne of good folke [2751] ¶ And 3itte seipe pis Pamphiles more ouere: pat pei pat bien pralle & bonde of lignage scholne be maade worpe & noble bo richesse: [2752] And riht so as be ryches pere comen mony godes: Riht so be pouert comep mony harmes & yuels: [2753] ffor grete pouerte con-

streyneþ a man to done mony yuels [2754] ¶ And þere-for clepeþ Cassidor. pouert. þe moder. of ruyen. [2755] þat is to seie þe moder of ouere þroweinge. or fallinge doune. [2756] And þerfor seiþ Pers Alphons. One of þe grettest aduersarie of þis werlde is: [2757] whan a fre be kinde or of birþe is constreyned be pouert to eten þe almes of his enemye: [2758] ¶ And þe same seiþ. Innocent In one of his bokes seiþ þat þe sorwe'Ful & þe mys happe is þe condicion of a pouer beggere. [2759] ffor if He axeþ nouht his mete he deyeþ for hungere: [2760] And if he ax he deyeþ for schame: And algates necessite constreineþ him to axe. [2761] And þer-for seiþ Salomon: þat better is to deie þan to haue suche pouert: [2762] ȝut seiþ Salomon: þat better is to deie of bitter deþe þan for to leue in suche wise: [2763] Be þes resouns þat .I. haue seide vnto ȝowe: and be mony oþere resons þat .I coupe sei: [2764] I graunt ȝowe wele þat riches bene good to hem þat geten hem wele: & to hem þat wele vsen hem. [2765] And þer-fore wil .I. schewe ȝowe howe ȝe schall haue ȝowe: [*en amassant les richesses et en vsant de celles* (MS Reg. 19 C xi, lf 61, back, col. 2.)]

2766] ¶ First ȝe schol geten hem *with*-oute grete desire be goode leyser so-keingly & nouht ouere Hastely: [2767] ffor a man þat is to desireinge to gette riches: aboundeneþ him first to þeft: & to all oþere yuels: [2768] And þere-fore seiþ Salomon. He þat hasteþ him ouere besilye to wax riche schal be none Innocent: [2769] He seiþe also þat þe richesse þat hastely commeþ to a man. Sone & lyhtly goþe & passeþ fro a man: [2770] ¶ But þat richesse þat commeþ litell & lytel wexiþ alweie & multiplieþ: [2771] ¶ And sire ȝe schal gete richesse ynouhe be ȝowre witte & be ȝoure trauaile vnto ȝoure profite [2772] And þat wiþ-owten wronge or harme: doinge to any oþere person: [2773] ¶ For þe lawe

seiþe· þere makeþ no man him self riche if he do harme to anoþere wyght: [2774] [*Car la loy dit que droit et nature deffent que nulz ne se face riche au dommaige dautruy* (MS Reg. 19 C xi, lf 62, col. 1)] [2775] ¶ And Tullius seiþe þat no sorwe ne no drede of deþe ne no þinge þat maie falle to a man [2776] is so muche aȝeines nature: As a man to encrese his owen profite to þe harme of anoþere man: [2777] And þouhe þe grete men & þe riche men geten richesse More lihtly þan þou: [2778] ȝit schalt þou nouht bien ydel ne slowe to done þi profitt: ffor þou schalt in al wise fliȝe ydelnesse: [2779] ¶ For Salomon. seiþe þat Idelnesse techeþ a man to done many yuels: [2780] And eke he seiþ þat he þat trauaileþ & bysiþ him to tilien his londe schal eten brede [2781] Bot þat is Idel & casteþ him nouht to do no besines ne occupacioun schal falle in-to pouert & deye for hunger: [2782] And he þat is ydel & slowhe ne can neuer finde couenable time For to done his profite [2783] ¶ For þere is a versifiour þat seiþe þe ydel man excuseþ him in winter because of þe grete colde: and in somer be cause of þe grete hete: [2784] ffor þes causez seiþe Catoñ: Wakeþ & enclyneþ ȝow nouȝt ouere mechel for to slepe For ouere muche rust causeþ & norischeþ mony vices [2785] ¶ And þerefore seiþe seinte Ierome Doþe some goode dedes þat þe deuel whiche is oure enmye ne finde ȝowe vn-occupied: [2786] ¶ For þe deuel ne takeþ nouȝt lihtly vn-to his worcheinge suche as he findeþ yoccupied in good werkes:

[2787] ¶ Than þus in geteinge riches ȝe mot fliȝe ydelnesse: [2788] & afterward ȝe scholne vse þe richesse þe whiche ȝe haue getten be ȝoure witte & be ȝoure trauayle [2789] In suche a maner þat men halden ȝowe nouht scarce ne to spareinge ne to foole large: þat is to seie ouere large a spender: [2790] For riht as men blam an auarous man be cause of his scarste: & þinkeinge [2791] in same wise: he is to blame

þat spendeþ ouer largely. [2792] [1]¶ An þer-for seyþe catōn: Vse þe richesse þat þou hast goten: [2793] in suche maner þat men haue no matier ne cause to clepe þe wreche ne chinche. [2794] For it is grete schame to a man to haue a pouer hert & a riche purce [2795] ¶ He seiþe also þe goodes þat þou haste goten vse hem be Mesure: þat is to seine spend mesurablye: [2796] for þei þat folely wasten & dispenden þe goodes þat þei haue [2797] whan þei haue no more propre of hire owen: þei schapen hem to tak þe goodes of a-noþere man: [2798] I seie þan þat he schal ffle auarice [2799] vseinge 3oure riches in suche manere þat men seie nouht þat 3oure richesse bue ybered: [2800] Bot þat 3e haue hem in 3oure miht & in 3oure weldeinge [2801] ¶ ffor a wiseman reprouеþ þe auerouce man: And seiþe þus in in tuo vers: [2802] Wher-to & Whi beriþ a man his goodes be his auarice And knoweþe wele þat nedes most he deye: [2803] ffor [deþ] is þe ende offe euery man as in þis present lif: [2804] and for þat cause & enchesoune Ioyneþ he him or knytteþ he him so fast vn-to his goodes: [2805] þat al his wittes mowe nouht deseuern him or departe him fro his goodes: [2806] And knoweþe wele or ouht to knowe þat whan he is dede he schal not bere it oute of þe werlde wiþ him: [2807] And þere-for seiþ sein Austine þat þe Auerouce man is likkened vn-to heH: [2808] þat þe more it desireþ: þe more it sweloweþ & deuoureþ: [2809] ¶ And also wele as 3e wolde eschewe to ben ycleped an averous man or a chinche [2810] As wele scholde 3e gouerne 3owe & kepe 3owe in suche a wise þat men clepe 3ow nouht to large [2811] ¶ þer-fore Tullius seiþe: The goodes he seiþe of þine house scholde not be hidde ne kepped in close bot þat þei myht ben opende wiþ pite. & wiþ debonarte: [2812] ¶ þat is to sei 3ef hem parte þat haþ grete nede [2813]

Ne þi goodes schal nou3t be so open to ben euery manes goodes. [2814] Afterwarde in geteinge of 3oure richesse & in vseinge hem 3e scholne alweie haue þrei þinges in 3oure herte: [2815] [*Cest assauoir dieu conscience et bonne fame* [2816] *Tu dois donques auoir dieu en ton ceur* (MS Reg. 19 C xi, lf 62, bk, col. 1)] [2817] And for no richesse 3e scholne do no þinge þat maie displesaunce to god [*ton createur*] [2818] ¶ For after þe worde of Salomon. It is better to haue a litel goode wiþ þe loue of god: [2819] þan to haue muche goode & tresor & lese þe loue of his lorde god: [2820] And þe prophit seiþe: þat better it is to be a good man & haue litel goode & tresour: [2821] þan to be holden a schrewe & to haue grete richesse [2822] ¶ 3it seye .I. forþer more: þat 3e scal done 3oure bisines to geten 3owe rechesse [2823] so þat 3e geten hem wiþ good conscience [2824] ¶ And þe Apostle seiþe þat þere is no þinge in þis werlde of whiche we scholne haue so grete Ioye as when oure concience bereþ vs good wittenesse: [2825] And þe wise man seiþe: The substance of a man is ful good whan sinne is nouht in mannes conscience: [2826] ¶ Afterwarde in gettinge of 3oure richesse: And in vsinge of hem [2827] 3ow must haue grete besinesse & grete diligence þat 3oure good name be al weie kepped & conserued [2828] ¶ For Salomon seiþe: þat better it is & more aveileþ a man to haue goode name þan to haue grete richesse: [2829] And [1]þerfore he seiþe in anoþere place: Doþ grete diligence seiþe Salomon: in kepeinge of þi frende & of þi goode name [2830] for it schal longer abide wiþ þe [þan] any tresor be it neuere so precious: [2831] And certes he scholde not be cleped a gentil man þat after god & good conscience al þinges left þat ne doþe his besines ne diligence to kepen his goode name [2832] ¶ And Cassidorie seiþe þat it is signe of a goode hert whan a man loueþ & desireþ to haue a goode name:

[2833] An perfore seiþ seiþ seint Austine þat þere beene tuo þinges þat bien necessarie & nedefuH. [2834] And þat is good conscience [2835] to þine owen person inwarde: & good loos of þin neihbour outewarde [2836] And he þat trustuþ him so muchel in his goode conscience [2837] þat he dispiseþ his good name or loos and rekkeþ nouȝt to kepe his goode name: nys bot a cruel cherlle

[2838] ¶ Sire nowe haue .I. schewde ȝow howe ȝe schol done in geteinge of richesse & howe ȝe scholne vsen hem: [2839] And .I. se wele þat for þe trust þat ye haue in rechesse ȝe wol men Bataile & werre: [2840] ¶ I counseH ȝowe þat ȝe be-gynne no werre in trust of ȝoure richesse. For þei sufficen nouht werres to maintene [2841] ¶ And perfore seiþ a Philosofre That a man desireþ & wil algates haue werre: schal neuer haue sufficeance. [2842] For þe richer þat he is þe gretter dispence mote he make: If he wiH haue worschippe & victorie: [2843] And Salomon seiþe: þat þe gretter richesse þat a man haþe: þe more despendoures he haþe: [2844] ¶ And dere sir al be it so: þat for ȝoure richesse ȝe mai haue muche folke: [2845] ȝutte behoueþ it nouht ne it is nouȝt goode to beginne werre: where as ȝe maie in opere manere haue pees vnto ȝoure worschip & prophite: [2846] For þe victories of batailles þat bien in þis werlde lyþe nouȝt in grete nombre of multitude of peple in þe vertue of man. [2847] Bot it liþe in þe wiH & in þe hande of oure lorde ihesu crist: [2848] ¶ And þere-fore Iudas Machabeus whiche was goddes knyht: [2849] Whan he schold feyhten aȝeines his aduersaries þat hadd a gretter nombre: & a gretter multitude of folke: & stronger þan was þe peple of Machabe: [2850] ȝit he comford his litel compaigne & seide riht in þis wise: [2851] ¶ As lihtly quod he may oure lorde god almyhty ȝeue victori to fewe folke:

as to mony folke [2852] ffor þe victorie of Bataile commeþ nouht be grete nombre of peple: [2853] Bot it commeþ fro oure lorde of heuen: [2854] And dere sire for also muchel as þere is noman certeine: if it be worþi þat god 3if him victorie [*neant plus se Il est certain se Il est digne de lamour de dieu*] or nou3t: After þat Salomon seiþ: [2855] Therfor euery man schold gretely drede werres to be-ginne [2856] ¶ And be-cause þat in Batailes scholne fallen mony *peri*les: [2857] And happeþe o*þer*e while: þat as sone is þe grete man sleyne: as þe lytel man: [2858] ¶ And as it [is] wreten *in* þe secunde boke of kinges: The dedes of Bataile been aduenterous & vncertein: [2859] ffor as lyhtly as one is hurte wiþ a spere [1]as a-noþer: [2860] And *þer*e-fore it is grete *peri*le in werre ¶ Ther-fore scholde men flee & eschewe werre in as muchel as a man maie goodly: [2861] ¶ For Salomon seiþe. he þat loueþ *peri*le: schal fal in *peri*le

[2862] ¶ After þat dame Prudence had spoken in þis manere Mellibe anseward & seide: [2863] ¶ I. see wele dame Prudence *þat* be 3owre faire wordes & be 3oure resouns þat [*vous mettez auant que*] þe werre likeþ 3ow no þinge: [2864] Bot .I. haue nouht 3it herde 3oure wise counsele how .I. schal do in þis nede:

[2865] ¶ Certes *quod* sche .I. counseile 3owe to accorde *with* 3oure aduersaries & *þat* 3e haue pees wiþ hem: [2866] ¶ For [2]seinte Iames seiþe [*en ses epistre*] þat be concorde & pees *þat* smale Richesse waxen grete [2867] And be debate & discorde grete riches fallen doune: [2868] And 3e knowen þat of þe grettest & most souereine þinge þat is in þis werlde is vnite & pees: [2869] ¶ And þerfore seide oure lorde. ihesu crist to his Apostles *in* þis wise [2870] ¶ Wel happy & blissed be þei þat louen & purchasen pees: For þei bien cleped þe childerne of god: [2871] ¶ A *quod* Mellibe: Nowe .I. se wele 3e loue nouht my honour ne my worschippe. [2872] 3e knowen wele þat myne

[2 *Seneque*, MS Reg. 19 C xi, lf 63, col. 2.]

aduersaries haue begon þis debate. [*et la brigue par leur oultraige*] [2873] And ȝe seen wele þat þei neuer queren ne preyne me nouht of pees: ne þei axe me nouht to be reconsiled: [2874] Wil ȝe þan þat .I. go meke me & obeye me to hem & crye hem Mercye: [2875] ffor soþe þat were not my worschipe: [2876] ffor riht as men seine þat ouer grete humblesse engenderþ despisinge. So fareþe it be to grete humilite & mekenesse

[2877] ¶ Þan by-gan dam prudence to make semblante of wraþþe: & seide [2878] certes sire saue ȝoure grace: I loue ȝoure honour & ȝoure profite as .I. do myn owen. & euer haue done [2879] ne ȝe ne none oþere sawe neuer þe contrarye: [2880] ¶ And. ȝit if .I. hadde seide ȝe scholde haue purchased þe pees & þe reconsiliacion: I. hadde nouht mechel mestaken me ne .I. saide amys: [2881] ffor þe wise man seiþe. The discencion be-ginneþ be anoþere man: & þe reconsileinge be-ginneþ be þi self [2882] ¶ An þe profet seiþe: fflye schrewdenesse & do goodnesse: [2883] Seche pees & folowe it in al so muche as in þe is: [2884] ȝit seiþ he nouht ȝe schollen þe raþer pursewe to ȝoure aduersarie þan þei schollen to ȝowe [2885] ¶ for .I. knowe wele ȝe bene so harde y-herted þat ȝe wil do no þinge for me. [2886] ¶ And Salomon. seiþe: þat he þat haþe ouer harde an hert: atte þe last he schal myshapp & mystide:

[2887] Whan Mellibe had herde dame produce maake semblant of wraþþe he seide in þis wise. [2888] Dame .I. preie ȝowe þat ȝe be nouht displesed of þinges þat .I. seie ȝowe [2889] ¶ For ȝe knowe wele þat .I. [am] angry & wroþe & þat is no wonder [2890] And þo þat been wroþe weten nouht wele what þei done: ne what þei seine: [2891] Where-fore þe prophete seiþe: þat troubled eyen haue none clere siht [2892] Bot sitteþe & counseleþ me riht as ȝe list: For: I am redy to done riht as ȝe wol desire [2893] ¶ And if ȝe reproue me of my folye .I. am more holden to loue ȝowe & to preise

3owe. [2894] For Salomon seiþe he þat rep*roue*þ him þat doþ folye [2895] he schal finde gret*ter* grace þan he þat disceyueþ him be wordes.

[2896] Than seide dame Prudence .I. make no sembland of wraþþe ne of anger bot for 3oure owen *profit*. [2897] For Salomon seiþe [1]¶ He is more worþe þat re-*proue*þ or chideþ a foole for his foly scheweinge him semblant of wraþþe: [2898] þan he þat supporteþ him & preiseþ him in his mys-deinge & lauheþ att his folye .[2899] ¶ And þis salomon seiþ affterwarde: þat by þe sorweful visage of man: *þat* is to seye: be þe sory & þe heuy countenance of a man [2900] þe foole correcteþ & amende him selfe

[2901] ¶ Than seide Mellibe: ¶ I schal nouht kon Ansewere vn-to so mony resons as 3e putteþ to me & scheweþ: [2902] seiþe schortly 3oure wiH & 3oure conseile And .I. am redy. to ffulfille & *per*forme

[2903] ¶ Than Dame Prudence discouerd aH hir*e* wiH vn-to him & seide: [2904] I counsel 3owe q*uo*d sche abouen aH þinge: þat 3e maken pes be-twene god & 3owe: [2905] & beþe reconsilede vn-to him & to his grace [2906] For as .I. haue seide 3owe here be-forne: God haþe suffred 3owe to haue þis t*ri*bulacione & disese. for 3oure sinnes: [2907] And if 3e done as .I. seie 3owe god wiH sende 3owre adu*er*saries vnto 3owe: [2908] & maaken hem to fallen att 3oure fete rede to done 3oure wiH & youre *com*-mandement [2909] ¶ For Salomon seiþe whan þe condicione is plesant & likeande vnto god: [2910] He chaungeþ þe hertes of ma*n*nes adu*er*saries: & constreyneþ hem to besechen him of pees & of grace: [2911] & .I. praye 3owe lete me speke wiþ 3oure adu*er*saries in p*ri*ue plac̃e: [2912] for þei schol not knowe þat it be 3oure wiH or 3oure assent: [2913] And þan whan .I. knowe her wil and here assent: I. may counsel 3oue more surely:

[2914] ¶ Dame q*uo*d Mellibe: doþe 3oure wiH &

3oure likeinge. [2915] For .I. putte me holy in 3oure disposicione & ordinance.

[2916] ¶ Than dame prudence whan sche sawe þe good wil of of hire husbonde: Sche delyuerly toke a-vise in her self [2917] þinkinge howe sche myht bringe þis neede vntō a good conclusione & to a good ende: [2918] And whan sche sawe hire time: sche sente for þe aduersaries to come to hire into A priue place: [2919] And schewde wisely vnto hem þe grete goodenesse þat commeþ of Pees: [2920] And þe grete harmes & perils þat bene in werre: [2921] And seiden to hem in goodely manere howe þat hem au3ten to haue grete repentance [2922] of þe iniury & þe wronge þat þei hadden done to Mellibe here lorde an vnto hire & vnto hire douhtere: [1]

[2923] And whan þei herden þe good wordes of dame prudence: [2924] þei weren so supprised & rauysshed & hadden so grete Ioye of hire þat wonder was to telle: [2925] ¶ A lady quod þei 3e haue schewde vn-to vs þe blisse of swettnesse after þe sawe of dauid þe profette: [2926] For þe reconsileinge whiche þat we ne be not worþi to haue in no manere: [2927] ¶ Bot we ouhten to require it wiþe grete contricione & humilite: [2928] 3e of 3oure grete goodnesse haue presented vnto vs: [2929] ¶ Nowe see we wele þat þe conscience & þe conynge of Salomon is ful trewe. [2930] For he seiþe þat swette wordes multiplien & encresen frendes: And maken schrewes to be debonaire & meke:

[2931] ¶ Certe quod þei we putte oure dede & al oure matier & cause & holy in-to 3owre good wille: [2932] & bene redy to obeye to þe speche of þe commandement of my lorde Mellebe: [2933] ¶ And perfore dere & benyngne lady: we preyne 3owe & be-sechen 3owe as we kon & mowen [2934] þat [1]þat it like vn-to 3oure grete goodnesse to ful-fille in dede 3oure goode wordes [2935] ¶ For we considern & knoweleche

þat we haue offended & greued my lorde Mellibe oute of reson & mesure [2936] so fer forþe þat we be nouht of pouere to maken him amendes: [2937] And þere-fore we obligę vs & oure frendes for to done al his wille & commandement [2938] Bot peraduenture he haþe suche heuynesse & suche wraþþe to vs warde because of oure offense: [2939] þat [he] wil enioyne vs suche peyne as we maie nouht bere ne susteine. [2940] ¶ And þer-fore noble lady: we be-sechen 3oure womanly pyte [2941] to take suche avisemen in þis nede: þat we ne oure frendes be nouht disherited [*et perdus*] .þorwhe oure folye

[2942] ¶ Certes quod Prudence it is it is an harde þinge & riht perilous [2943] þat a man putte him in þe arbitracione & Iugement al vtterly: & in þe myht & pouere of his ennemys: [2944] For Salamon seiþe: Leueþ me & 3if credence to þat .I. schal seine: .I. saie [*tout peuple et toutes gens et gouuerneurs de gloire* (Reg. 19 C xi)] [2945] Ne 3eue neuere þi sonne ne þi wif. þi frende ne þi self [2946] vn-to þe hondes ne myht of þine ennemye: [2947] And Naþeles .I. counsel 3owe [*Se il a doncques deffendu que on ne donne [puissance] sur soy a frere ne a amy* (MS Reg. 19 C xi, leaf 64, col. 2)] [2948] By a stronger resone he defendeþ & forbedeþe a man to 3eue him selfe vn-to his ennemye: [2949] ¶ And naþeles .I counsel 3owe þat 3e mistrust nouht my lorde: [2950] for .I. wote wele & knowe wele þat he is debonaire & meke large & curteise [2951] & no þinge desirous of good ne Couytous to haue richesse: [2952] ffor þere is no þinge in þis werlde þat he desireþ saue worschipe & honour: [2953] Forþermore .I. knowe wele & .I. am riht sure þat He schal no þinge do in þis nede: wiþ-oute myne counsel: [2954] And .I. schal so werchen in þis cause be þe grace of oure lorde god þat 3e scholne be reconsiled vnto vs /:/

[2955] Then seiden þei wiþ o voyce: ¶ Worschipful

lady· we putten vs & oure good al fully in 3oure willè & disposicioun [2956] & ·bene redy to comme whan it likeþ vnto 3oure noblesse: to lemete vs or to assigne vs [2957] for maken oure obligacion: & bynde vs as stronge as it lykeþ vn-to 3oure goodnesse [2958] þat we maie fulfille þe wil of 3oue & of my lorde Mellybe.

[2959] ¶ Whan dame Prudence had herde þe on-sewers of þes men 3e badde hem gone a3eine priuely: [2960] & sche retourned a-3eine to hire lorde Mellibe · And tolde him howe sche fande his aduersaries repentaunt [2961] And knowlecheinge ful reuerently · & lowly her sinnes & tres-pas: & howe þei were redy to suffur al peine: [2962] Requireinge him & preyinge him of Mercy & pytee

[2963] ¶ Then seide Mellibe he is wele worþi to haue pardone & for-3euenesse [*qui nexcuse point son pechie* [2964] *mais recognoist et sen repent et demande indulgence* [2965] *Car seneque dist la est remission* (MS Reg. 19 C xi, lf 64, bk)] wher as confession is: [2966] For confession is neyhbour to Innocence [2967] ¶ And þe wiseman seiþe in anoþer place: he þat haþ schame of his sinne & knowleche it is worþi haue mercy /./ And þere-fore .I. assent & conferme to haue pees [2968] ¶ Bot it is good þat we do it nouht wiþ-outen þe wil & assent of oure frendes:

[2969] ¶ þan was Prudence riht gladde & ioyful & seide: [2970] Certes *sir quod* sche 3e haue goodely & wele ansewarde [2971] ¶ For riht as be counsel. assent & helpeinge of 3oure frendes 3e haue be stired to venge 3owe & maake werre [2972] Riht so wiþ-outen hire counsel schol 3e nouht accor: þowhe 3e ne haue pees wiþ 3oure aduersaries: [2973] ffor þe lawe seyþe: Ther is no þinge so good be waie of kinde As þinge to bene vnbounden by him þat it was y-boundende:

[2974] And þan dame Prudence wiþe-outen delaye or taryinge sent anone Messageres for here kinne & for hire olde frendes þat were trewe & wise [2975]

And tolde hem be order in þe presence of Mellebe al þe Matier as it was abouen expressed & declared: [2976] And preyden hem þat þe wolde 3euen hire a wise counseile what best were to done in þis matiere: [2977] ¶ And whan Millebes counsel hadd taken hire a-vise & goode deliberacione of þe forseide matier: [2978] And hadde examyned it be grete besines & grete diligence: [2979] þei 3auen ful counseile for to haue pees & rest. [2980] And þat Mellibe schold receyue it with goode herte of his aduersaries to for-3euenesse & mercye:

[2981] And whan dame Prudence hadd herde þe assent of hire lorde Mellibe. And þe counsel of here frendes [2982] accorded wiþ her wil & entencion [2983] sche was wonderly glad in hert & seide. [2984] ¶ There is an olde prouerbe quod sche seiþe: þat þe godnesse þat þou maist do þis daie do it [2985] & abide it nouht ne delaye it nouht til to morwe [2986] ¶ And þerfore .I. counsel þat 3e send 3oure messagiers wiche þat ben discrete & wyse [2987] vn-to 3oure aduersaries tellynge hem on 3oure be-halue [2988] if þei wil trete of pes & of accorde: [2989] þat þei schapen hem with-outen de-laie or tariinge to come to vs /.// [2990] whiche þinge performed was indede [2991] ¶ And whan þes trespassours & repentinge folke of here folyes: þat is to seie þe aduersaries of Mellibe. [2992] had herde what þes messagiers seiden vn-to hem [2993] þe were ful gladde. & ioyful & anseward ful mekely & beningly: [2994] 3eldeinge graces & þonkes to her lord Mellibe. & to al his compaigne: [2995] And schopen wiþ-outen delay to gone wiþ þe messagiers: & obey to þe commandement of here lord Mellibe

[2996] ¶ And riht anone þe token her weie to Mellibe [2997] & toke þe somme of here trewe wordes & frendes to maken feiþ for hem: and for to bien her borwes [2998] ¶ And whan þei camen to

þe presence of Mellibe he seide hem þes wordes: [2999] It standeþ þus quod Mellibe: & soþe it is þat 3e [3000] causels and wiþ-oute skil & resoun [3001] haue done grete Iniuries & wronges to me & to my wif Dame Prudence: & to my douhter also: [3002] ¶ For 3e haue entred in-to myne howse be violence [3003] & haue done suche outrage: þat all men knowe wele þat 3e haue deserued þe deþe [3004] ¶ And þere-fore wil .I. knowen & witen of 3owe [3005] weþer þat 3e wil putte þe punysshement & þe chasteysinge & þe vengeance of þis outrage in þe-wil of me & of my wif dame Prudence or 3e wil nouht:

[3006] Than þe wyseest of hem þre answarde for hem al. & seide. [3007] ¶ Sire quod he we knowen wele þat we bien vnworþi to comme to 3oure courte of so grete a lorde & so worþe as 3e bien: [3008] And for we haue so gretely mys-taken vs & haue offended & agilte in suche a wise a3eines 3oure hihe lord-schippe [3009] þat trewlye we haue deseruede þe deþ: [3010] Bot 3it for þe grete goodnesse & debonarte þat al þe werlde wittenesseþ of 3oure persoun [3011] We submitte vs vn-to þe hihe excellence & benignite of 3oure gracious lorschip [3012] and bien rede to obeie vn-to al 3oure commandementes [3013] Besecheinge 3owe þat of 3oure merciable pitee to wylne consider oure grete repentance & lowe submissione: [3014] And to grante vs for-3efnesse of owre owtrageous trespas & offense: [3015] For wel we knowe þat 3oure liberale grace & mercye strecchen ferþer in-to goodenesse þan done owre outrageous giltes & trespasses in-to wikkednesse: [3016] albeit þat cursedly & dampnablye we haue gilte a3eines 3owre hihe lordschippe:

[3017] Than Mellibe toke him vpe fro þe grounde ful benyngly [3018] & receyued here obligacions & here landes by hire oþes vppon here plegges & her borwes [3019] & assigned hem a certein daie to retorne vn-to his courtes: [3020] for to accepte & receyve þe sentence &

Iuggement þat Mellibe wold comande to be done on hem be þe causes aforne seide: [3021] whiche þinge ordeint: *cuery* man retourned to his hous /:/

[3022] And whan þat Dam prudence sawhe her time sche f[r]eyned & axed her lord Mellibe: [3023] Whatte vengeance he þouht to take on his adu*ersaris*

[3024] ¶ To whiche Mellibe answeard & seide: Certes *quod* [he]: I. þenke & *purpos* fully [3025] to disherit hem of al þat þei haue: & for to putten hem in exile for *cuer* more

[3026] Certes *quod* Dame Prudence þis were a cruel sentence & mechel aȝeines resoun: [3027] For ȝe be riche ynowe & haueþ no nede of o*per*e mennes goode: [3028] and ȝe myht lyhtly geten ȝow a couetouse name. [3029] whiche is a vicious þinge & ouhte be eschewed of *cuery* man: [3030] ffor after þe sawe of þe Apostle Couetise is rote of al harmes: [3031] ¶ And *þere*-fore it were better to lese so muchel goode of ȝoure owen: þan for to tak of here goode in þis manere: [3032] ¶ For bett*er* it is to lese goode wiþ worschippe þan it is goode to wynne worschippe wiþ velanye and schame [3033] ¶ And *cuery* man ouhte to done his besinesse to geten him a goode name: [3034] And ȝitte schal he nouht onely keppen him in kepinge of his good name: [3055] Bott he schal also enforcen him alweie to done some þinge be whiche he may renouelle his goode name [3036] For it is y-writte: þat þe olde good lose or goode name of a man is sone gone & passed: whan it is nouht newed ne renouelled /:/ [3037] And as toucheinge þat ȝe seyne þat ȝe wol exile ȝoure adu*ersaries*: [3038] þat þenkeþ me muchel aȝeines reson & out of mesure: [3039] Consider þe power þat þei haue ȝouen ȝowe vpon hem selfe: [3040] And it is wreten þat he is worþe to lesen his p*ri*uelege þ*at* mysvseþe þe myht & þe pouere þat is ȝouen him: [3041] ¶ And .I. sette caas þ*at* ȝe myht annoye hem þat peyne be riht & lawe. [3042] whiche .I.

trowe ȝe may not do: [3043] I. seye ne myht not put it to excution: paraduenture [3044] & þan were it likly to retorne to þe werre as it was be-forne: [3045] ¶ And þer-fore if ȝe wiH þat men do ȝowe obseruance & obeysaunce: ȝe most deme more curteisly: [3046] þis is to seine ȝe most ȝeue mor esi sentence & Iuggementz: [3047] for it is wreten þat he þat most curtesly commandeþ: to him. men most obeyen [3048] ¶ And þer-fore .I. praye ȝowe þat in þis necessite: & in þis nede ȝe casten þere-fore to ouere-come ȝoure hert: [3049] ¶ For Senec seiþe he þat ones ouere-commeþ his hert [1]ouer-commeþ twyes: [3050] ¶ And Tullius seiþe: þer is noþinge so commendable in a grete lorde · [3051] as whan he is debonaire & meke & appeseþ him mekely: [3052] ¶ And .I. preie ȝowe þat ȝe wil for-bere nowe to do vengeance [3053] in suche maner þat ȝoure goode name may be kepped & conserued: [3054] and þat men maie haue cause & matiere to preyse ȝowe of þite & of mercye: [3055] And þat ȝe haue no cause to repente ȝowe of þinge þat ȝe done: [3056] ¶ For Senec seiþe: he repenteþ him in yuel manere þat repenteþ him of his victorie [3057] wherefore .I. preie ȝowe: lete. Mercy be in ȝoure herte: [3058] to þeffecte & þentente þat god al myhty haue Mercy vpon ȝowe in his last Iugement: [3059] [*Car saint Iaques dit en lepistre Iugement* (19 C xi.)] wiþ outen mercy schal be to him þat haþe no mercye of anoþere wyht:

[3060] ¶ Whan Mellibe hadde herd þe grete skils & resons of dame Prudence: and of hire wise informacions & techeinges [3061] his hert gan encline to þe wiH of his wif consideringe to þe trewe entent [3062] conformed him a-nane: & assented ffully to worchen after hire conseile: [3063] & þongede god of whome procedeþ al godenesse þat him sent a wif of so [grete] discrecione: [3064] ¶ And whan þe daie cam þat his aduersaries schold appere in his presence. [3065] He spak

to hem ful goodly And seide to hem in þis wise: [3066] Al be it soo: þat of ȝoure pride & be presumcion & foly. & of ȝoure necligence & vnkunynge [3067] ȝe haue misborne ȝowe & trespassed to me: [3068] ȝitt for al so muche as .I. see. & beholde ȝoure gre[te] humilite: [3069] & þat ȝe bene sori & repentant of ȝoure giltes [3070] it constreyne me to do ȝowe grace & mercye: [3071] wherefore .I. receyve ȝowe to my grace: [3072] & for-ȝeue ȝowe vtterly al þoffences Iniuries & wronges þat ȝe haue done aȝeines me & myne [3073] to þis affecte & to þis ende þat god of his endeles mercy [3074] wole att þe time of oure deyeinge forȝeuen oure gelte þat we haue trespased vn-to him in þis wrecched werld: [3075] ¶ For doubtelesse · if we bien sory & repentant of þe sinnes & giltes þe whiche we haue trespasede in þe siht of oure lorde gode: [3076] He is so fre & so merciful [3077] þat he wil for-ȝeuen vs ower giltes [3078] & bringe vs vnto þilke blisse þat neuere haþ ende: To whiche blisse he vs bringe þat blod on crosse for vs spreynde. Qui cum *patre* &c.

Explicit Fabula Galfridi Chaucer/ de Mellibeo. Milite

Incipit Prologus de Monacho. [on leaf 206]

Whan endede was þe tale of Mellibe
And of Prudence & of hire benygnite
Oure Oste seide as .I. am ffeiþful man
And be þe precious corpus madrian
I had leuere þan a barel ale
That goo I lef my wif hadde herde þis tale
For sche nys no þinge of suche pacience
As was þis Mellebes wif Prudence
Be goddes bones whan .I. bete my knaues
Sche bringeþ me þe grete clobbed staues
And crieþ slee[1] þe dogges euerychone [1 or sleo]
And brekeþ boþe bak & bone
And if þat any neigheboruhe of myne [leaf 206, back]
Wil nouht in cherche to my wif encline
Or be so hardy to hire to trespas
Whan sche commeþ home sche rumpeþ in my face
And crieþ false cowarde wreke þine wife
By corpus bones! I. wil haue þi knyf
And þou schalt haue myn distaf & go spynne
Fro day to nyht riht þus wil sche be-ginne
Alas sche seiþe þat euer y was schape
To wedde a mylkesoppe or a coward ape
þat wil be ouere ladde wiþ euery wight
þou darst nouȝt stonde be þi wif ariht
þis is my lyf bot þat .I. wold fiht
And oute att þe dore anone .I. mot me diht
Or elles .I. am lost bot if þat .I.
Bue like a wilde lione foole hardye
.I. wote wele sche wil do me sle sum daie
Some neihbour! & þan go my waie
For .I. am perilous with knyf on honde
Albeit þat .I. dar hir nouȝt wiþ-stonde

For sche is bigge in armes be my feiþe
þat schal he finde þat hire misdoþe or seiþe. 3112
Bot lat vs passe a-weie fro þis matiere .
My lorde sir monke he seiþe beþe merye of chere
For ȝe schal tel a tale trewly
Lo Rouchester stant here fast by 3116
Ride forþe myne owen lorde breke nouht oure game
Bot be my troupe .I. knowe nouȝt ȝoure name
Wheþer .I. schal cal ȝowe my lorde Doune Iohn
Or dan Thomas or dan Alban 3120
Oþere of whatt house be ȝe be ȝoure fader kinne
.I. vowe to good þou hast a ful faire skynne
It is a gentil pasture þere þou goste
þou ert nouht like a penant or a goste 3124
Vpon my feiþ þou ert sum officiere
Somme worþe sexteyne eyþere sum celerere
Fo[r] be my fader soule as to my dome
þou ert a maister whan þou ert att home 3128
No pouer cloistrer ne no pouer novise
Bot a gouernoure a wilye & wise
And þere-wiþ-al of braunes & of bones
A wele faringe persone for þe nones 3132
.I. preie to god gif him confusione [leaf 207]
þat firste þe brouȝt in-to religione
þou woldest haue be a tredefoule ariht
Haddest þou as grete leue as þou hast myht 3136
To performe al þi luste in gendrure
þou hadest be-geten mony a creature
Alas whi weres þou so wide a cope
God ȝeue þe sorwe and .I. were a pope 3140
Nowht onely þou bot euery myhty mañ
Theihe he were schore hihe vpon his panne
Schol haue a wif for al þis werlde is lorne
Religion haþ tak vp al þe corne 3144
Of tredeinge & we burel men bene schrimpes
Of feble tres þere comme feble impes

þis makeþ þat oure heires bene so sklender
And febel þat þei maie nouht wele engender
This makeþ þat oure wifes wil assaie
Religious folke for þei maie better paie
Of venus Payment þan may we
God woot no lusshbo*ur*ues paie ȝe.
Bot be nouȝt wroþe my lord þouhe þat .I. pleie
Fol in game a soþe .I. haue herd seie
This worþi monke toke al pacience
And seid .I. wil do al my diligence
As fere as souneþ vnto honeste
To telle ȝoue a tale or tuo or þre
And if ȝowe lust herken hiderwarde
.I. wil ȝowe seie þe lif of seint Edwarde
Or elles Tregedise furst. wil .I. telł
Of whiche .I. haue an hundreþ in my selł
Tregedie is for to tel a certeine storie
As olde bokes maken memorie
Of hem þat stode *in* grete p*rosper*ite
And is yfalł oute of hihe degre
In-to myserie & endeþ wricchedlye
And þei bien vesified comu*n*ly
Of sex fete wiche þat men clep exametrone
In p*ro*se eke bien endited mony one
And eke in metric in mony a sondre wise
Lo þis ouht ȝowe .I.-nouhe suffise
Nowe herkeneþ if ȝou luste for to here
Bot first .I. ȝoue be-seche in þis matier*e*.
þouhe .I. be order tel nouht þes þinges [leaf 207, back]
Be it of popes Emp*er*oure or kynges
And affter her age as me wreten finde
Bot tel hem some be-fore some be-hinde
And it com*me*þ nowe to my remembrance
Have me excused of myne ignorānce.

Explicit *Pro*logus.

Incipit fabula de Casib*us* vir*orum*. [*on leaf* 207, *back*]

Y[1] wil be-weile in maner of tregedrie [1 *The illuminated Y goes down to line* 3203, *in the MS.*]
þe maner of him þat standeþ in hihe degre
And felle so þat *þer* was no remedye
To bringe hem out of her adu*er*site
For certeyne whan þat fortune luste to flye
þere maie no man of hir*e* þe course wiþ-holde
[. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
Beþe war By þis ensample ȝonge & olde

Primo de Lucifero

At Lucifer þouhe he an angele were
And nouht a man att him .I. wil beginne
For þeihe fortõn maie none angel dere
Frome hihe degre ȝit feH he fro his sinne
Doune in-to heH where as he ȝitte is inne
O lucifer brihtest of aungeles aH
Nowe ert þou Sathanas þat maist not twynne
Owte of misery in whiche þou ert faH

De Adame. *primo homine*.

Lo Adam in þe felde of Damasene
Wiþ goddes owen fingere wrouht was he
And nouht begeten of mannes sperme vnclene
And welde al Paradise saueinge o tre
Hadd neu*er* werldly man so hihe degre
As Adam til he for his gou*er*nance
Was dreven oute of his hihe p*rosper*ite
To labure & to heH & to muschance.

De Sampsone

Lo Sampson whiche was annunciate
Be þe Angel longe ar his natiuite
And was god almyhty consecrate
And stode in noblesse whiles he myht see
Was neuer suche anoþer as was he
To speke of strenkeþ & þer-to hardinesse
Bott to his wif told he his secre.
þoruhe whiche he slouhe him self þoruh wrechednesse

De eodem.

¶ Sampson þis nobble & myhty champioñ [leaf 280]
Wiþ-outen wepe saue his hondes tueye
He slowhe and al to-rent þe lyoñ
To-ward his weddynge walkinge be þe waie
He false wif couþe him plese & preie
Til sche his counseile knewe & sche vntrewe
Vn-to his foos his consel gan be-wreye
And him for-soke & toke a noþer newe

De Eodem.

¶ An .C. foxes to Sampson for ire
And al her tailes he to-geder bonde
And sette þe fox tailes al on fire
For he in euery taile hadde putt a bronde
And þei brente al þe cornes in þat lande
And al here Oliues & here vines eke
A þousand men eke he slowhe wiþ his honde
And hadde ne wepen bot an asse cheke

De Eodem

¶ When þei were sleine so þersted him þat he
Was nyhe lorne for whiche he gan to preie
þat god wolde of his peine sum pite
And send him drinke or elles most he dye
And of þis asse cheke þat was so drye
oute of a wange toþe spron anone a welle
Of whiche he dranke. ynouhe schortly to seie
Thus help him god as Iudicum can telle

De Eodem.

¶ Be verrei force att Gasan in a nyhte
Maugre þe felistiens of þat Cite
The gates of þe toune he haþe vp pliht
And on his bakke[illegible] y-karid hem haþ he
Hihe on hulle wher as men miht se
O noble almyhty sampson leue & dere
þat stronge & noble haþ bue
In al þis werlde ne was þere neuer þi pere

De Eodem

¶ This Samsoñ neuer siþer dranke ne wyne
Ne on hi[s] hede cam rasure none ne schere
Be precepte of þe Messagier diuine
For al his strenkeþ was in his here
And fully tuenty 3ere be 3ere
He hadde of Israel þe gouernance
Bot after sone schal he wepe mony a tere
For womman schal bringe him to meschaunce

¶ Vnto his lemman Dalida he tolde
þat in his heres al his strenkeþ laye
And falsly to his fomen sche him solde
And slepeinge vpon hir berme vpon a daie
Sche maade to clippe or schere his here a-waie
And maade his fomen al his craft to spyen
And whan þei him fonde in suche araie
þei bonde him fast & put oute his ey3en

De eodem.

Bot er his here was clepped or y-schaue
þere was no bonde þat myht him bynde
Bott now is he in prisone put in a kaue
Where as þei maden him att þe queren grinde
O noble Sampson stronkest of mankinde
O whilom Iuge in glorie & richesse
Now maist þou wepe with þine yne blinde
Seþen þou ert fro welþe fal in-to wrechednesse

3240 3244 3248 [leaf 208, back] 3252 3256 3260 3264 3268

De eodem.

¶ The ende of þis caitifs was as .I. schal seie
His fomen maade a feste vpon a daie
And maden him as her fole to-forne him pleie
And þis was [in] a temple of a grete araie
Bot att þe last he maade a foul affraie
For he tuo postes schoke & maade hem faH
And doune feH þe temple & al *þer* it laie
And slowe him selfe & eke his fomen aH

De Eodem.

¶ This is to seie þe *pr*inces eu*er*ychon
And eke a þousand bodis was þere sleyne
Wyþ fallinge of þe grete temple of stone
Of Sampson ne wil .I. no more seyne
Be ware of þis ensample olde & pleyne
þat no man tel her counsel til he[r] wyues
Of suche þinge as þe wolde haue secre feyne
If þat it touche her lymes or her lyues

De Ercule.

¶ Of Ercule þe sou*er*eine conqueroure
Syngen his werkes lewde & hihe renonone
For in his time of strengeþ he bare þe floure
He slowhe & raft þe scynne fro þe lyone.
He of Centaurus leide þe bost a doune
He arpies slowhe þe cruel birdes feH
He golden apelles raft þe drago*un*e
He drouhe oute Serberous þe hounde of heH

[*leaf* 200. *It repeats* ¶ He slouhe & raft þe skynne fro þe lyon]

De eodem.

¶ He slowhe þe cruel tyrant Buserus
And maade his hors to frete him flesche & bone
He slouhe þe verrey serpent venemous
Of Achilles tuo hornes brak he one
And he slowhe Cacus in a kaue of stone
He slowhe þe Gyant Anteus þe stronge
He slowhe þe Grisely bore & þat anone
And bare þe hede vpon his neke longe

De Eodem
Was neuere whihite sen þe werlde be-gan
That slouhe so mony monstres as did he
þoruhe-oute þis wide werlde his name ranne
What for his streynkeþ & his bounte
And euerye. Realme went he for to see
He was so stronge þat noman miht him lette
A-boue þe werldes ende seiþe trophe
In stede of bondes he a piler sette
De Eodem
¶ A lemman hadd þis noble champion
þat hiht Dianier frische as maie
And as þe clerkes maade mencione
Sche haþ him sent a schert frische & gaie
Alas þis scherte & walawaie
envenymed was subtily wiþ aⁿ
Or þat he had werde it hafe a daie
It maad his flesche fro þe bone faⁿ
De Eodem
¶ Bo naþelesse sõme clerkes hir excusen
Be one þat hiht nescius þat it Maked
Be as be maye .I. wil hir nouht accusen
Bon on his bake þis schert he weres al naked
Til þat his flesche was for þe venym blakede
And whan he sauhe none oþer remedye
In hote coles he haþ him self rakede
For wiþ no venym deynede he to deye
De Eodem.
¶ Thus starfe þis worþe myhte ercules [leaf 209, back]
Lo who maie trust on fortune any þrowe
For him þat foloweþ al þis werlde of pres
Er he bewarre is oft y-laide ful lowe
Ful wyse es he þat him self knowe
Be war for whan þat fortune lust to glose
Than weyteþ sche hir man downe to þroue
Bu suche a weie as he wolde lest suppose

De Rege Nabugodonosor

¶ The myhty trone þe *pre*cious tresoure
þe glorious septre & Roial Maieste
þat ḥadde þe kinge Nabugodonosore
Wiþ tunge vnneþ maie descriued be
He twyes name iher*usal*em þe Cite
The vessel of þe temple he wiþ him ladde
Att Babiloyne was his souer*e*igne see
In whiche his glorie & his delyte he had

De Eodem

¶ þe fairest childern of þe blode Roial
Of iherusalem he dide do gelde anone
And maade eche of hem to bu his clerke
Amonge al o*þer*e Danyel was one
þat was þe wisest childe of eu*er*ychone
For he þe dremes of þe kenge expounded
Where as in Caldeie clerk was *þer*e none
þat wist to what fyne his dremes sounded

De Eodem

¶ This proude kinge lete make a stature of golde
Sexty Cubetes longe & .vij. in brede
To whiche ymage boþe ȝonge & olde
Co*m*manded he to loute & haue in drede
Or in a forneys ful of fla*m*mes rede
He scholde be bernt þat wold not obeie
Bot neuer wolde assent to þat dede
Danyel ne his ȝonge felawes tweye

De eod*em*

¶ This ḱenge of kinges proude & elate
He wende god þat sitteþ in Mageste
Ne myht him nouht be-reue of þat estate
Bot sodanly he lost hi̯s dignite
And like a beste him semed for to be
And ete haye as an oxe & leye *þer*e oute.
In reyne wiþ wilde bestes walked he [leaf 210]
Til certein time was co*m*me aboute

De eodem
And ylike an egle fethers was his heres
His nayles like birdes clowes were
God releued him a certein ȝeres
And ȝaf him witte & þan wiþ mony a tere
He þonked god: and euer his lif in fere
Was: he to done amys or more trespas
And or þat time leide was on his bere
He knewe wele þat god was ful of myht & grace
De Baltazar dicti Regis Nabugodonosor filio.
His sone which þat hiht Baltazar
That helde þe regne after his fader daie
He be his fader couþe nouht be war
For proude he was of herte & of araye
And eke an ydolatre was he aye
His hihe astate assured him in pride
Bot fortune kest adoune & þere he laye
And sodanly his regne gan deuide
De eodem
A feste he maade vn-to his lordes al
vpon a time he maad hem bliþe be
And þan his officers gan he cal
Goþe bringeþ forþe þe vesseles quod he
Whiche þat my fader in his prosperite
Owte of þe temple of iherusalem be-rafte
And to oure hihe goddes þonke we
Of honour þat oure helders wiþ vs lafte
De eodem.
His wif his lordes & his concubines
Ay dranken whiles þeire appetite laste
Oute of þis noble vessels sondre wynes
And on a wal þis kinge his yȝe kaste
And sauhe an hand armelesse þat wrote ful fast
For fere of whiche he qwoke & sikked sore
This hand þat baltazar maade so sore agast
Wrote Mane techel phares: & no more

De eod*em*
In al þat londe Magecien was þ*er*e none
þat couþe expoune what þis l*ett*re meant
Bot Daniel expound it anone
And seide kynge god to þi fader sent [leaf 210, back] 3400
Glory & Hono*ur* Regne tresoure & rent
And he was proude & no þinge god ne dradde
And þ*ere*-fore god grete wreche vpon him sent
And him be-raft þe Regñe þat he hadde. 3404
De Eodem.
He was oute cast of Mannes compaignye
W*ith* asses was his habitacioñe
And ete hey as a beste in wete & druye
Til þat he knowe be grace & be resoñe 3408
That god of heuen haþ domynaciōn
Oue*re* eue*ry* Regne & eue*ry* creture
And þan hadd god of him compassiōn
And him restored his Regne & his figure 3412
De eodem
Eke þou þat ert his soñ is proude also
And knowest al þis þinges pr*iu*ely
And ert Rebel to god & ert his foo
Thowe dranke eke of his vessels boldely 3416
þi wif eke & þi wenches synfully
Dranke of þe same vessels sondre wynes
And heried fals goddes curssely
Therefor to þe schapen grete peine is 3420
De eodem
This honde was sent fro god þat on the wall
þat wrote Mane techel phares trust me
Thyne Reygne is done þou weyest nouht att all
Dyuided is þi regne and it schal be 3424
To medes & to p*er*ses ȝeuen q*uo*d he
And þilke same nyht þe kinge was slawe
And Darius occupieþ his degre
þeyhe he þ*ere*-to na hadde neiþ*er*e riht ne lawe 3428

De Eodem.

Lordinges here-by ensamples maie ȝe take,
Howe þat in lordeschippe is no sekernesse
For whan fortune wil a man forsake
He bereþ awaye his regne & his Rechesse
And eke his frendes boþ more & lesse
And whan a man haþe frende þoruhe fortune
Mishappe wil make hem ennemys .I. gesse
This *prouer*be is ful soþe & ful comune.

De Cenobia Palmere Regina.

CEnobia of Palim*ere* þe quene [leaf 211]
As writen P*er*siens of hire noblesse
So worþi was in aremes & so kene
That no wight passed hir*e* in hardinesse
Ne in lignage ne in o*þere* gentillesse
Of þe kinges blode of p*er*ce is sche descended
I seie þat sche mad nouht most fairnesse
Bot of hir*e* schappe sche myht bue amended

De ead*em*

Fro hir*e* childhede .I. finde þat sche fledde
Office of we*mm*en & to wode sche wente
And mony a wilde hertes blode sche schedde
Wiþ arwes brode þat sche to hem sente
Sche was so sweft þat sche a-none hem hente
And whan sche was elder sche wolde kiłł
Lyons liberdes and beres altorente
And in hir*e* armes wilde hem att hir*e* wiłł

De Eadem

Sche dorst wilde bestes dennes seeke
And rinne in þe mountain al þe niht
And slepe vnder a busche & sche couþe eke
Wrastelen be verrey force & verrey myht
Wiþ any ȝonge man were he neue*re* so whight
Ther myht no þinge in hir armes stonde
Sche kepped hir*e* Maidenhede fro eu*er*y whight
To no man deyned hire to be bonde

De eadem

¶ Bo att þe last here frendes haue hire maried
To Odenake a prince of þat Cite
Al were it so þat sche hem longe taried
And ȝe scholne vnderstande how þat hȝ
Hadde suche fantasies as hadd sche
Bot naþeles whan þei were knytte in fere
Thei leueden in Ioie & in felicite
For vche of hem had oþere leef & dere

De eadem

¶ Saue on þinge þat sche nolde neuer assent
By no weye þat by hire scholde he lye
Bot ones for it was hire pleyne entent
To haue a childe þe werlde to multeplye
And also sone as sche miht a-spye
þat sche was not wiþ childe wiþ þat dede
Than wolde sche suffre him done his fantasy [leaf 211, back]
Eft sone and nouht but ones oute of drede

[No breaks henceforth between the stanzas of each Tragedy.]

¶ And if sche ware wiþ childe at þilke cast
No more scholde he pleie þilke game
Til fully fou[r]te dayes were past
Than wolde sche ones do suffre him þe same
Al were þis Odenake wilde ore tame
He gatt no more of hire for þus sche saide
It was to wives lechery & schame
In oþere caas if þat men wiþ hem pleide

¶ Tuo sonne be þis Edenok hadde sche
The whiche sche kepped in vertewe & in lettrure
Bot nowe vnto oure tale torne we
.I. say þat worschipful creature
And wise þerwiþ & large wiþ mesure
So penyble in þe werre & korteyse eke
Ne more laboure miht in werre endure
Was none þeihe al þis werlde men schold seche

¶ Here riche araye miht nouht be tolde
As wele in vessel as in clopinge
Sche was al cladde in perre & in golde
And eke sche left for none hunteynge
To haue of sundre tongés folk knoweynge
Whan þat sche leyser hadde to entende
To leren bokes was al hire lykeynge
Howe sche in vertue myht hire lif dispende

¶ And schortly of þis storie for to entrete
So douhte was hir husbonde as sche
þat þei conquered mony regnes grete
In þe Orient wiþ mony a faire Cete
Apartenaunte vnto þe Maieste
Of Rome & wiþ stronge honde helde hem fast
Ne neuere myht hire fomen done hem flye
Aye wile þat Odenake dayes last

¶ Her batailles who so lust hem for to rede
Aȝeine Sapore þe kinge & opere moo
And howe þat al þis processe fel in dede
And whie sche conquerde & what title hadd þere too
And aftere of hire meschief & hire woo
Ho þat sche was be-seged & y-take
Late him vnto mi maister Petrak go
þat writeþ ynouhe of þis .I. vndertake

¶ When Odenak was dede sche myhtyly [leaf 212]
The regnes helde & wiþ hire propre hande
Aȝeine hir foos sche fauht trewly
þat þere nas kinge ne prince in al þat lande
That he nas gladde if he þat grace fande
That sche ne wolde vpōn his lande werrey
Wiþ hire þei maad alliance be bande
To biene in pees & latt hir ride & pleie

¶ The Emperour of Rome Claudius
Ne him be-forne þe Romeyne Galiene
Ne dorste neuere be so Coragius
Ne none Ermyne ne none egipcie[ne]
Ne Surrien: ne none arrabiene
Withe-in þe felde þat dost wiþ hir fiht
Lest þat sche wolde hem wiþ her handes sleyne
Or wiþ hire meyne to putten hem to fliht

¶ In Kinges abite went here sones two
As eyres of here Regnes aH
And ermanno: and Thimalao
Here name were as perciens hem caH
Botte ffortune haþe ay in here hony gaH
This myhty qwene maie no while endure
Fortune oute of her Regne maade hire faH
To wrichednesse & to mysaduenture

¶ Aurelyon whan þat þe gouernance
Of Rome camme in-to his hondes tweye
He schope vpon þis qwene to do vengeance
And wiþ his legions he toke his weie
Toward Cenoby & schortly for to seie
He maade hire flee & att þe last hire hent
And fetterd hire & eke her children tweye
And wann þe londe & home to Rome þei went

¶ Amange þis oþer þinge þat he wanne
Here Chare þat was wiþ gold wrouht & perre
þis grete Romaine þis Aureliane
Haþ wiþ him ladde for þat men scholde see
Be-forne his triumphe walkeþ sche
With gilt cheynes on hire nek hangeinge
Corounde sche was as after her degre
And ful of perre charged hir cloþinge

¶ Alas fortune sche þat whilom was
Dredeful to kinges & to emperoures.
Now gaureþ al þe peple on hire alace [leaf 212, back]
And sche þat elmed was in stark stoures 3560
And wanne be foŕs tounes stronge & toures
Schal on here nowe were a fitermyte
And sche þat bare þe Septer ful of floures
Schal bere a distaf here cost for to qwyte 3564

De Petro Hispanye Rege.

¶ O noble o worþi Petre of spayne
Whome fortune helde so hihe in maieste
Wele ouhte men þi pitous deþ compleine
Thi bastard broþer maade þe to fle 3568
And after att a sege be soubtilite
Thowe were betraide & ladde to his tent
Where as he wiþ his owen hand slouhe þe
Succedinge in þi Regne & in þi Rent 3572

Betelmewe Claykeynne[1]. Oliuer Mawnye

¶ The felde of snowe wiþ þe egle blak þere-inne [1 *Bertrand du Guesclin.*]
Cauht wiþ þe lime Rodde colours as þe glede
He brewe þis cursednesse and al þe sinne
The wykked nest was wirkir of þis nede 3576
Nouht Charles & Olyuer þat ay toke goode hede
Of trouþe & honour bot of Armorekke
Genyloun Olyuer corrupt for mede
Brouhtest þis worþi kinge in suche brekke. 3580

De Petro Rege Cipri

¶ Worþe Petre kinge of Cipre also
That Alisander wanne be hihe maistrye
Ful mony an eyþen wrouhtest þou ful wo
Of whiche þine owen leges hadde enuye 3584
And for no þinge bot for þi chiualrye
Thei in þi bedde han sleyne þe be þe morwe
Thus gan fortune gouerne & guye
And out of Ioye bringe men in to sorwe 3588

De Barnabo vicecomite Mediolano.

¶ Of Milane grete Barnabo viscounte
God of delice & scowrge of Lombardie
Whi scholde nouht .I. þine fortune a-counte
Sethen in estate þou clome were so hihe
Thine Broþer sone þat was þine double allie
For he þi nevow was & sone in lawe
Wiþ-in his prisoun maade þe to deye
Bot whie ne howe woote .I. þat þou wer slawe

¶ De Hugiline Comyte Pisano. [leaf 213]

Of þe Erle Hugylyne of Pise þe Langoure
There maie no tunge tel for pite
Bot litel oute of Pise stant a toure
In wiche toure in prisone put was he
And wiþ him ben his litel childern þre
þe eldest scarsly .v. 3ere was of age
Alas fortune it was grete cruelte
Suche burdes to putte in suche a cage

¶ Dampned he was to deye in þat prisone
For Roger þat bischop was of Pise
Hadde on him maade a fals suggestione
Thorwhe þe peple gan on him a-rise
And putten him to prison in suche wise
As 3e haue herde & mete & drinke he hadde
[. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
And þere-wiþ-all it was ful pore & badde.

¶ And one a daie be-fell þat inne þat oure
Whan þat his mete was wonte to be brouht
The gayler schette þe dores of þe toure
He herde it wele bot he sawe it nouht
And in his hert anone þere fell a þouht
þat þei for hunger wolde done him deyen
Alas quod he alas þat .I. was wrouht
þer-wiþe þe teres fel fro hy3en

¶ His ȝonge son þat þrei ȝere was of age
vnto him seide fader whi do ȝe wepe
Whan wil þe Gayloure bringen oure potage
Is þere no morsel brede þat ȝe do kepe
.I. am so hungry þat .I. maie nouht [slepe]
Now wolde god þat .I. myht slepe euer
þan scholde none hunger in my wombe crepe
þare nys noþinge saue brede þat me were leuere

¶ þus daie be daye þis childe gan to crie
Til in his fader berme adoune it leye
And seide fader Fare wele .I. mote deye
And kissed his fader & deyed þe same daye
And whan þe woful fader dede him seye
For woo his arme tuo he gan to bite
And seid alas fortune! & walaweye
þine fals whele my woo .I. al wite

¶ His childern wende þat it for hungere was
þat he his arme gnowhe & nout for woo
And seid fader do nouht so alas [leaf 213, back]
Bot raþer ete þe flesche vpon vs tuo
Oure flesche þou ȝaf vs tak oure flesche vs fro
And ete ynouhe riht þus to him þei seide
And efter þat wiþ-inne a daie or tuo
þei leide hem doune in his lappe & deyed

¶ Him self dispeired eke for hunger starf
þus endede is þe mihte Erle of Pise
Fro hihe a state fortune fro him carf
Of þis tregedrie it ouht .I.-nouhe suffise
Who so wile here it in a longer wise
Reede þe grete Poete of Itaile
That hiht Dauute for he can it deuise
Fro pointe to poynte nouht o worde wil he faile

De Nero Imperatore.

¶ Alþouhe þat Nero were as vicious
As fende þat liþe ful lowe adoune
3itte he as telleþ vs swytheneus
þis wide werlde hadde in subiecc*i*one
Boþe est & west & septemtrione
Of Rebees safers & of Pereles white
Were al his cloþes brouded vp & doune
For he in Gem*m*is grete gan delite

¶ More delicate more Pompus of araie
More proude was neu*er*e Emp*er*oure þan he
þat ilke cloþe þat he hadde wered a daie
After þat time he nold it neu*er*e se
Nettes of gold þrede hadde he grete plente
To fysshe in tybre whan him luste to pleie
His lustes were as lawe in his degre
For fortune as his frende wolde him obeye

¶ He Rome brent for his delicacie
The Senato*ur*s he slowhe vpon a daye
To howe þat men wolde wepe & crye
And slowhe his broþer & by his suster laye
His moder Maade he in pytous araie
For he hir wombe slitte to be-holde
Where he conceyved was so walawaye
þat he so litel of his moder tolde

¶ No tere oute of his eyen for þat siht
Ne came Bot seide a faire wo*m*man was sche
Grete wonder is þat he couþe or miht
Be domeseman of hir*e* dede bewte [leaf 214]
¶ The wyne to bringe co*m*maunde he
And dranke anone none o*þer*e woo he maade
Whan myht is Ioyned vnto cruelte
Alas to depe wil þe venym wade

¶ In ȝouþe a maister hadde þis Emperoure
To teche him letrure & cur[t]esye
For of Moralite he was þe floure
As in his time bott if bokes lye
And whiles his maister hadde of him þe maystre
He maade him so konnynge & so souple
þat longe time was or tirannye
Or any vice dorst in him vncouple

¶ This Seneka of whiche .I. devise
Be-cause Nero had of him suche drede
For he for vices wold him chastise
Discretely as be worde & nouht be drede
Sire wolde he saie an Emperoure mot nede
Be vertuouse & hate tyrantrye
For whiche he him in baþe maad to blede
On boþe his armes til he most deye

¶ This Nero hadde eke of a continuance
In ȝouþe aȝeine his maister for to rise
Whiche afterward him þouht a grete grevance
There-fore he maade him deye in þis wyse
Bot naþeles þis Senec þe wise
Chese in a baþþe to deye in þis manere
Raþere þan haue a noþer tormentrie
And þus haþe Nero sleyne his maister dere

¶ Now fel it so þat fortune lust no longere
The hihe pride of Nero to cherische
ffor þouhe he were stronge ȝitte were sche strenger
Sche þouht þus be god .I. am to nyce
To sette a man þat is fulfilled of vice
In hihe degre & Emperour him caht
Be god oute of his sete .I. wil him trise
When he leste weneþe sonest schal he falt

¶ þe Peple rose vpon him vpon a nyht
For his defaute & whan he hadd it aspiede
Oute of his dore anone he haþe him dyht
Alone & þere he wende haue bue alyede
He knokked fast & ay þe more he cryed
The faster schetten þei þe dores aꝑt [leaf 214, back]
Tho wist he wele he had him self be-gilede
And wente his weie no longere dorst he caꝑt

¶ The peple cried & Rombled vpe & doune
That wiþ his eres herde he howe þei seide
Where is fals terant þis Neroune
For fere al-moste out of his witte braide
And to his goddes pitously he seide
For socoure for it myht nouht be-tide
For drede of þis him þouht þat he deide
And ranne in-to a gardeyne him to hide

¶ And in þis cardyne fonde he cherles tueye
And fatten be a fire ful grete & rede
And to þe cherles tuey he gan to preye
To slene him & to girde of his hede
þat to his body whan þat he ware dede
Were no despite ydo for his defame
Him selfe he slouhe he coupe no better rede
Of whiche fortune louhe & had a game

De Oliferno principe.

¶ Was Neuere capitaigne vnder a kinge
That Regnes mo putte in subieccione
Ne strenger was in felde of al þinge
As in his time none gretter in renoune
Ne more Pompose in hihe presumsione
Than Oliferne whiche fortune ay kyste
So lykerously & ledde him vpe & doune
Til þat he heded was er þat he wiste

¶ Nouht onely þat þis werlde hadde of him awe
For leseinge of Richesse & lyberte
Bot he maade eue*r*y man Reny his lawe
Nabugodonosor was lord he seide
None o*þer*e god scholde honoured be
Aȝeines his hest no whight dar trespas
Saue in Bethulia a stronge cite
Where Eleachim a preste was of þat place

¶ Bot take kepe of þe deþe of Oliferne
Amydde his oste he drunke laye a nyht
Wiþ-inne his tent large as is a berne
And ȝit for al his pompe & al his myhte
Iudithe a wo*m*man as he laie vp riht
slepeinge his hede of smote & fro his tente
Ful Priuely sche stale fro eue*r*y wyght [leaf 215]
[. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]

De Antiochio illustri.

¶ What nedeþ it of kynge Antiocheus
To tel his hihe & Roial Maieste
His hihe p*r*ide his werke venymmous
For suche ano*þer*e was neue*r*e none as he
Redeþ whiche þat he was in Macabe
And redeþ þe proude wordes þat he seide
And whie he fel fro his p*r*osp*er*ite
And in an hulle howe wrychedly he deyed

¶ Fortune had him enhaunsed so in pride
þat verraylye he wende he myhte atteygne
vnto þe sterres vpon eue*r*y sidde
And in a balance to weye iche mounteyne
And al þe floodes of þe see restreyne
And goddes peple hadde he moste in hate
Hem wolde he sle in torment & peyne
Weneynge þat god myht nouht his p*r*ide abate

¶ And for þat Nichamoure & Timothee
Wiþ Iewes were venqwiste mihtile
vnto þe Iewes suche an hatte hadde he
That he hadde greyþed his chare ful hastelye
An swore & seide ful dispitouslye
Vnto Ier*usalem* wolde he eft sone
To wreke hire on it ful crouellye
Bot of his purpose he was lette ful sone

¶ God for his manasse him so sore smote
Wiþ inne-visible wounde aye vncurable
þat in his guttes karf so & bote
þat his peynes weren importable
And certeinly þe wreche was resonable
For mony mannes guttes dede he peine
Bot fro his purpos cursed & dampnable
For al his smert he nold him nouht restreine

¶ Bot Badde anone apparellen his Oste
And sodanly or he was of it warre
God daunted al his *pri*de & al his boste
For he so sore fel oute of his chare
þat hurte his limes & his scynne to-tare
So þat he ne myht go ne Ride
Bot in a chayere men aboute him bare
Al for-brused boþe bakke & side

¶ The wreche of god him smote so crudelye [leaf 215, back]
þat in his bode wyked wermes creped
And *þer*-wiþ-all he stanke so orribily
þat none of al his meyne þat him kepped
Whepere so þat he woke or elles sleped
Ne myht nouht þe stink of him endure
In þis Meschef he weiled & eke wepped
And knowe god lorde of eu*er*y creature.

¶ To al his oste & to him self also
Ful wlatesome was þe stinke of þis caręn
No man miht him bere to ne fro
And in his stinke & in his orrible peyne
He starf ful wrecchedly in a mownteyne
Thus haþ þis Robboure & þis homicide
That mony a man maade to wepe & pleyne
Suche guerdone as belongeþ vnto *pride*

De Alexandro Magno Philippi Reg*is* Macidonie filio

The storie of Alexander is so comune
That eu*e*ry wight þat haþe discrecione
Haþe herd sum-whate or al of his fortune
þis wilde werlde as in conclusione
He wān be strenkeþ or for his hihe renoũne
Thei weren gladde for pes vnto him sende
The pride of man & beste he laide adoune
Wher-so he came vn-to þe werldes ende

¶ Cõmp*ar*isoñ myht ȝite neue*re* be makede
Be-tuex him & anoþer conqueroure
For al þis werlde for drede of him haþe qwaked
He was of kny[ht]hede and of fredome floure
Fortune him maade þe heire of owre hono*ur*
Saue wyne & wemmen no þinge miht aswage
His hihe atente in armes & laboure
So was he of loueinge corage

¶ What pite were it to him þouhe .I. ȝowe tolde
Of .Darius & an. C. M. mo
Of Princes kinges Erles bolde
Whiche he conquered & brouht hem in-to woo
As fer' .I. saie as man mai ride or goo
þe werlde was his Whatt schold .I. more deuise
For þouhe .I. write or tolde ȝowe eu*er*mo
Of his knyhthode he miht not suffise

¶ Twelue ȝere he regned as seiþe Machabe
Philippus þe sonne of Macedo he was [leaf 216]
That first was kynge of grece þe Contre
O worþi gentil Alisander Alas
þat euer schold falle suche a cas
Enpoysonde of þi folke þou were
Þin suster fortune haþe torne in-to an as
And ȝit for þe ne wepped sche neuer a tere

¶ How schal men ȝeue teres to compleyne
The deþe of gentillesse & of frauncheys
þat al þe werlde weldede in his demeygne
And ȝit him þouht it myht nouht suffise
So ful was his Corage of hihe emprise
Alace who schal me helpe to endite
Fals fortune & poyson to despise
The whiche tuo of al þes wo .I. wite

De Iulio Cesare

¶ By wisdom manhede & be labour
Fro humblehede & fro Roial Maieste
Vp rose he Iulius þe conquerour
That al þe Occident be lande & see
Þe strenkeþe of hande or elles be trete
And vnto Rome maade hem tributarye
And seþþen of Rome þan Emperoure was he
Til þat fortune wex his aduersarie

¶ O myht Cesar þat in Thessalye
Aȝeines Pompeus fader þin in lawe
Of þat þe orient hadde al þe cheualrie
As fer as þe daie beginneþ to dawe
Theime þoruhe þi knyhthode hast hem take & slawe
Saue fewe folke þat wiþ pompeus fledde
þorwhe whiche þou puttest al þe orient in awe
þonke fortune þat so wele þe spedde

¶ Bot nowe a litel while .I. wil beweile
þis Pompeus þis noble gouernoure
Of Rome whiche þat flyeþ att þis Batayle
.I. saye one of his men a fals traiture
His hedde of fmote to wynne him fauoure
Of Iulius & him þe hede brouht
Alas Poimpey of þe Orient conqueroure
That fortune vnto suche a deþe brouht

¶ To Rome aȝeine Repaireþ Iulius
Wiþ his tryumphe laureate ful hihe
Bot on a time Brutus Cassius [leaf 216, back]
þat euere hadde of his hihe astate envie
Ful p*r*iuely had maad conspiracye
Aȝeynes þis Iulius in subtilite wise
And kest þe place in whiche he scholde deye
Wiþ Bodekynnes as .I. schal ȝowe devise

¶ This Iulius to þe Capitoile went
vpon a daie as he was wont to goone
And in þe Capitoile anone him hente
This falce Brutus on of his foule fone
And stikked him wiþ Bodekinnes anone
Wiþ mony a wound & þus þe lete him lye
Bot neue*r*e gronte he att no stroke bott one
Or elles att tuo bot if his story lye

¶ So manly was þis Iulius of hert
And so wele loued estately honeste
þat þouht his dedely woundes so sore smert
His Mantil oue*r*e his hippes cast he
For no man schol se his p*r*iuetee
And as he lay in deynge in a trance
And wist verraily þat dede was he
Of honeste ȝit hadde he Remembrance

¶ Lucan to þis story .I. recommende
And to Swetoñ & to Valerius also
þat of þis storie writeþ worde & ende
How þat þes grete Conquerous two
Fortune was first frende & siþen foo
No man ne trust vpon his fauour longe
Bot haue hire in awaite for euer mo
Wittnesse on aH þes conqueroures stronge

De Creso Rege.

¶ Thiȝ Riche Cresus whilom kinge of Lyde
Of whiche Cresus Ciquus sore him dradde
ȝette was he cauht amydes al his pride
And to be brent men to þe fire him ladde
Bot suche a Raine doune fro þe walkyn schadde
þat slouhe þe fire & maade him to eskape
Bot to be warre ȝitte no grace he hadde
Til fortune on þe galoues maade him gape

¶ Whan he ascaped was he can nouht stinte
For to be-ginne a newe Reyne aȝeine
He wende wele þat fortune him sente
Suche happe þat he ascaped þoruhe þe Reine [leaf 217]
þat of his foos he myht nouht be sleine
And suche a sweuen vpon a nyht he mette
Of whiche he was proude & eke feine
þat in vengeance he al his hert sette

¶ Vpon a tre he was as þat him þouhte
There Iubiter him wessche boþe halse & side
And phebus eke a faire towel him brouht
To drye him wiþ & þerto wex his pride
And to his douhter þat stode him be-side
Whiche þat he knowe in hihe science abounde
He badd him tel hir what it signified
And sche his dreme began riht þus expounde

¶ The tre *quod* sche þe galouse is to mene
And Iubiter be-tokeneþ snowe & reyne
And Phebus wiþ his towele so clene
Is þe sonne stremes for to seyne
Thou schalt an honged be fader certeine
Reyne schal þe wassche & sonne schal þe drye
Thus warned sche him ful platte & pleine
His douhter þat called was Phayne

¶ An honged was Cresus þe proude kynge
His Roial throne myht him nouht availe
Tregedrye in none o*þer*e man*er* þinge
Ne cann in sinynge · crie ne be-weyle
Bot þat fortune al wei wil assaile
Wiþ vnwar stroke þe Reignes þat bien proude
For whan men trusteþ hir þan wil sche faile
And cou*er*e hire briht face wiþ a cloude

Explicit fabula.

Incipit *prologus* [on leaf 217]

Hoo *quod* þe knyht good *sir* no more of þis
þat ȝe haue saide it is y-nowhe y-wis
And muchel more for litel heuynesse
Is riht ynouhe to muche folke as .I. gest
.I. seie for me it is a grete disese
Where as men haþ buen in gre welþe & ese
To heren of here sodan fal alas
And þe contrarie is Ioye & grete solace
As whan haþe bue in pouere astate
And climbeþ vp & waxeþ fortunate
And þare abideþ in *prosperite*
Suche þinge is glad-some as it þenkeþ me.
And þouhe suche were goodely for to telle [leaf 217, back]
ȝe *quod* oure Ost be seint poules belle
ȝe seie riht soþe þis monke he clappeþ loude
He spake howe fortune couerd was wiþ a cloude
.I. note neu*er* what & also of a tregedrye
Riht nowe ȝe herde & *par*de no Remedye
It is to be-weile ne to compleyne
That þat is done and als it is a peine
As ȝe haue seide to hire of heuenesse
Sir monke no more of þis so god ȝow blysse
ȝoure tale anoyeþ al þis Compaignye
Suche talkeinge is nouht worþe a botter flye
For þere-inne is no sporte ne game
Where-fore *sir* Monke Dan Piers be ȝoure name
I praie hertely tel vs sumwhatt elles
For seker ner clynkenge of ȝoure belles

þat on ȝoure bridel hongeþ on eue*ry* side
Be heven kinge þat for vs al deide
I schal for þis fal doune for slepe
Al-þouhe þe slouhe hadde neue*re* be so depe
Than hadde ȝoure tale be tolde in veyne
For certeynly as þes clerkes seyne
Where as a man maye haue none audience
Nowht he[l]peþ to tellen his sentence
And wele .I. woote þe substance is in me
If any þinge schal wele Reported bee
Sire sey sum whatt of hunteinge .I. ȝowe preie
Naye q*uo*d þe monke .I. haue no luste to pleie
Nowe latte a noþe*re* tel as .I. haue tolde
Than spak oure Oste wiþ rude speche & bolde
And seide vnto þe Nones p*re*ste anone
Com nere s*ir* prest come hider s*ir* Iohñ
Tel vs suche þinge as may oure hertes glaade
Be merye þouhe þou ride vpon a Iade
þat þouhe þine hors be foule or lene
If he wil se*r*ue þe rekke þe nouht a bene
Looke þat þine herte be mere eue*r*mo
ȝis oste q*uo*d he so mot .I. ride or go
Bot .I. be mery .I.-wisse .I. wil be blamede
And riht anone he haþe his tale tamede
And þus he seide to vs eue*r*ychon
This swete p*re*ste þis goodman s*ir* Iohñ

þe Preste [*head-line*]

A Pouer wedowe sumdel stoupe in age [leaf 218]
was whilom dwellynge in a narwe cotage
Be sides a groue standinge in a dale
þis wedow whiche .I. tolde ȝowe of my tale
Seþþen þilke daie sche was last a wif
In pacience ledde a ful simple lif
For litel was hire catel & hire rent
Be husbandry suche as god hire sent
Sche fant her self & eke her douhtern tuo
þe large sewes hadde sche & no mo
þre kyne & eke a schepe þat hiht mal
Ful soty was hir boure & eke hire hal
In whiche sche ete mony a sklender mele
Of poynant sauce her neded neuer a dele
No deynte morsel passed hire þrote
Hire Dyaut was accordant to hire cote
Repleciown maad hir neuer seke
Atempre diete was aH hire phesike
And exercise & hertes sufficiaunce
The goute lettid hire no þinge to daunce
þe Poplexie ne shent nouht hire hede
Ne wyne dranke sche neyþere white ne rede
Hire borde was serued most wiþ white & blakke
Melke & broune brede in whiche sche fande no lakke
Seyned bakon & somtyme a neye or tweye
For sche was as it were a manere deye
A gardeyne sche hadde closed al aboute
Wiþ stikkes & a drye diche wiþ oute
In whiche sche hadde a kok þat hiht chauntreH
In al þe land of croweinge was his pere

His voice was merier þan þe meri organe
On mesdaies þat in þe cherche gone
Wele sukere was his croweinge in his loge
Than is a kloke or any abbeie orlege
Be nature he knewe iche ascencioune
Of þe equinoxiale of þilk toune
For whanne degrese .xv. were descended
þan knewe he þat it myh not bue a-mended
His kombe was redder þan þe fine coralle
Enbateled as it were a castel wall
Ilyke azure was his legges & his tone
His bille was blakke & as þe gete it schone.
His nailes whitter þan þe lyly floure [leaf 218, back]
And ylike burnesshed gold was his colour
This gentil kok hadd in his gouernance
.Vij. hennes to done him plesance
Whiche weren his susters & his paramours
And wondere ylike to him as of Coloures
Of wiche þe faire hewe on hire þrote
Was cleped faire damysel pertelote
Corteys sche was discrete & debonaire
And companable & bare hire self so faire
Sepens þilke daie sche was sevenyht olde
That trewly sche hape þe hert in holde
Of chaunteclere loken in euery lyþþe
He loued hire so þat wele was him þere wiþ
Bot suche a ioye it was to here hem singe
Whan þat þe briht sone be-gan to springe
In swete accorde. My leue is fare in londe
For þilke time as .I. have vnderstonde
Bestes & birdes koupe speke & singe
And so befel at in a dawenynge
As chaunteclere amonge his wives all
Satt on his perche þat was in þe hall
And next him satt his faire pertelote
This chaunteclere gan gronen in his þrote

As a man þat in his dreme is drecched sore
And whan þat Pertilote þus herde him Rore
Sche was agast & seide hert dere
What eyleþ 3owe to grone in þis manere
3e bue a verrey sleper fye for schame
And he anseward & seide þus madame
.I. pray 3ow þat 3e take it to no greue
Be god me mette þat .I. was in suche mischeue
Riht nowe þat 3it myne hert is sore afliht
Nowe quod he My sweven rede ariht
And kepe my body oute of foule prisone
Me mette þat .I. Romed vpe & doune
Wiþ-inne oure 3erd where as .I. sawe a beste
Was like an hunde & wolde haue maad areste
Vpon My body & wolde haue hadde me dede
His colour was be-twixe white & Rede
And tipped was his taile & boþ his eres
Wiþ blak vnlyke þe remenant of his heres.
His snowte smal wiþ gloweinge eyen tweye [leaf 219]
3it of his loke almoste for fere .I. deye
þis caused me my groneinge douteles
Avoye quod sche Fy on 3owe herteles
Alas quod sche for be þat god aboue
Now haue 3e lost my hert & my loue
.I. kan nouht loue a coward be my feiþe
For certes what so any womman seyþe
Wil al desiren if it myht be
To haue husbandes harde wise & fre
And secre ne no nygard ne none fole
Ne him þat is agast of euery tole
Ne none avauntour be þat god aboue
How dorst 3e seye for schame vnto 3oure loue
þat any þinge myht maake 3owe aferde
Haue 3e none mannes herte & han berde
Alas & kan 3e be agast of sweue[n]sse
[No thyng god woot/ but vanyte/ in sweuyn is/.] [Harl. 1758; *lf* 194, *bk*]

Sweuens engendur of repleciones
[And ofte of/ fame & of' complexions/.] [Harl. 1758, lf 194, bk]
Whan humours bien to aboundant in a whight
Certes þis dreme whiche ȝe haue herd to nyht
Comeþ of þe grete superfluyte
Of ȝoure rede coloure parde
Whiche causeþ folk to dreme hire dremes
Of Arwes and of fire wiþ rede lemes
Of Rede bestes þat willen hem bite
Of contek & of whelpes grete & lite
Riht as þe humore malancolye
Causeþ many a man in slepe to crye
For fere of beres & boles blake
Or elles blake deueles wi him tak
Of opere humerous couþ .I. tel also
þat werken mony a man in slepe ful wo
Bot .I. wil passe as lihtly as .I. kan
Lo Caton whiche þat was so wise a man
Seide he not þus ne do no force of dremes
Now sir quod sche whan we flye fro þe bemes
For goddes loue as take sum laxatif
Vpon perile of my soule & of my lyf
.I. counsel ȝowe þe best .I. wil nouȝt lye
þat boþe of coloure & of Malancolye
ȝe pure ȝowe! & for ȝe scholne nouht tary
þouhe þat in þis toune is no potecarye
.I. schal my self to erbes techen ȝowe [leaf 219, back]
þat schal biene ȝoure hele & ȝoure prowe
And in þe gardine þo erbes schal .I. finde
þe whiche haue of here prop[er]te be kinde
To purgen ȝowe be-neþe & eke aboue
For-ȝetteþ nouht þis for goddes owen loue
ȝe bien ful colerik of complexioune
Were þe sonne in his ascencioune
Ne fynde ȝoue replite of ȝoure humers hote
And if it do! I. dare wele leie a grote

þat ȝe schal haue a feuere terciane
Or an Agwe þat maie be ȝoure bane
A daye or tuo ȝe schal haue digestiues
Of wermes ar ȝe take ȝoure laxatiues
Of Laureole Centaure & of fymyter
Or elles of elobore þat groweþ þere
Of Catapuce or of gaitres buryes
Of herbe yve groinge in owre gardine þat merery is
Peke hem vp riht as þei growe & ete hem inne
Be mery husbande for ȝoure faders kinne
Dredeþ no dreme .I. can sei ȝowe no more
Madame quod he gremercy of ȝoure lore
Bot naþeles as toucheinge dan Catoune
That haþ of wisdom suche grete renoune
Be god men maie in olde bokes reede
One of þe grettest Auctor oute of drede
And mony a man more of auctorite
Than euer Caton was so mott .I. þe
That al þe [re]uerese seine of here sentence
And haue wele founden be experience
þat dremes be significacions
As wele of Ioye as of tribulacions
þat folke enduren in þis lif present
The nedeþ nouht to make of þis none argument
þe verei preue scheweþ it in dede
One of þe grettest auctor þat men rede
seiþ þus þat whilom tuo felawes ȝede
On pilgrenage in a ful grete nede
And happed so þei cam in to a toune
Where as þere was suche congregacione
Of peple and eke of streite herbigage
þat þei [ne] fande as meche as a cotage.
In whiche þei boþe myht y-loged be [leaf 220]
Wherfor þei myhten of necessite
As for þat nyht departen of compaignye
And iche of hem goþe vntil his ostelerye

And toke his logeinge as it wolde fal
þat one of hem was loged in a stal
Ferre in a ȝerd̃e wiþ oxen of þe plouhe
þe toþ*er*e mañ was loged wele y-nowhe
As was his aduentur or his fortune
That vs gou*er*neþ aH as in comune
And so be-fel longe ar it were daie
þis man mette in his bedde þ*er*e he leye
Howe þat his felawe gan on him calle
And seid alas for in an oxe stalle
This nyht .I. schal be mordred þ*er*e .I. lye
Nowe helpe me dere bro þ*er*e ar .I. deye!
In al haste còme to me he seide.
This man oute of his slepe for fere abraide.
Bot whan þat he wakened out of his slepe
He turned him & toke of þis no kepe
Him þouht his drem was nouht bot a vanite
Thus twyes in his slepe dremed he
And att þe þredde time ȝit his felawe
Cam as him þouht .I. am nowe .I.-slawe
Be-holde my blode wounde depe & wide
Aryse vp erly in þe morne tyde
And att þe west gate of þe toune q*uo*d he
A cart ful of donge þ*er*e schalt þou see
In whiche my body is hidde ful p*ri*uelye
Do þilke cart areste boldelye
My golde caused my morder soþe to seyne
And tolde hym eu*er*y poynte howe was sleyne
Wiþ a ful pytous face pale of hewe
And trust wele his drem he fonde ful trewe
For on þe morne as sone as it was daie
To his felawes inne he toke þe riht waie
And whan he cam to þis oxe staH
Affet*er* his felawe he began to caH
The Osteler answerd him anone
And seide s*i*r ȝoure felawe is gone

As sone as dei he went oute of toune
This man gan fal in grete suspeccion
Remembreinge on his dremes þat he mete
And forþe he goþe no longere wolde he let [leaf 220, back] 4224
Vnto þe west gate of þe toune & fonde
A donge cart as he went to donge þe londe
þat was araiȝde in þe same wyse
As ȝe haue herde þe dede man deuise 4228
And wiþ an hardy hert he gan to crie
Vengeance & Iustice of þis felonye
Myne felawe murdre is þe same nyht
And in þis carte he lieþ gapeinge vpriht 4232
[I cry out' on the mynistres quod he [MS Reg 17 D xv, *lf* 277, *bk.* *Not in* MS Reg. 18 C ii (*nor are l.* 4112, 4114; *not in* Harl. 1758.]
That' shulden kepe . and rule this citee
Harrow allas . hire lith̄ my felaw slayne [*leaf* 278]
What' shuld' I more . vnto this tale sayne
The peple vp stert' . and cast' the cart' to ground'
And in the myddil of' the dung' . ther they found' [MS Reg. *extract ends*]
The de[de] man þat murded was al newe
O blisful god þat art so iust & trewe 4240
Lo howe þou be-wryest murder' al weie
Mordre wil oute þat se we daie be daie
Mordre is so wlatesome & abomynable
To god þat is so Iuste & resonable 4244
þat he ne wil nouht suffre it heled be
þei it abide a ȝere or two or þre
Mordre wil oute þis es myne conclusioune
And riht anone Ministres of þe same toune 4248
And hente þe carter & sore him pynede
And eke the hostelere so ferre engynede
þat þei be-knewe here wykkednesse anone
And weren hanged be þe nekke bone 4252
Here maie menne sec þat dremes bien to drede
And certes in [the] same book .I. rede
Riht in þe next chapetre .I. rede of þis
.I. gabbe nouht so haue .I. Ioye & blis 4256

[Two men that wold. han passed the see] [MS Reg. 17 D xv, *leaf* 278]
For certeyne cause into a fer Contre
If þat þe wynde ne hadde bue contrarie
þat maade hem in a Cite for to tarye
þat stode ful merie vpon an hauen side
Bot on a daie a3eines þe euen tide
The wynde gan chaunge & blew as him lest
Iolif & gladde þei wenten vnto rest
And kesten hem ful erly vnto seile
Bot herken þat o man fel in grete *per*eile
The tone of hem in slepeinge as he leye
Him mett a wonder dreme a3eines þe daye
Him þouht a man stode be his side
And him *com*manded þat he schold abide
And seid him þus if þou to morne wende
þou schalt be dreynte my tale is att an ende
He awoke & told his felawes what he mette.
And praide him his viage for to lete [leaf 221]
As for þat daie he praide him to abide
His felawe þat laye be his beddes side
Gan for to lauhe & scorned him ful fast
No dreme q*uod* he maie myne herte agaste
þat .I. wil lette for to do my þinges
.I. sett nouht a strawe be dremeinges
For swevens bien bot vanytees & Iapes
Me*nne* dreme alweie of owles & of apes
And of mony a mase þe*re* wiþ aH
Men dremen of þinge þat neue*r* was ne schaH
Bott seþen .I. see þat þou wilte here abide
And þus for-slewþen willfully þe tide
God wote it reweþ me & haue good daie
And þus he toke his leue & went his waie
And er þat he hadde halfe his cours ysailed
.I. note whie ne whatt meschaunce it eylede
Bot Casuelly þe schip bothome to-rentte
And schip & man vnder þe wat*er* wente

In siht of o*per*e schippes hem beside
þat wiþ him sailed att þe same tide
And *per*fore he seide *per*telote so dere
Bu suche ensamples olde maist þou lere
þat noman schold bue to recheles
Of dremes for .I. saie þe doubteles
þat mony a dreme ful sore is for to drede
¶ Lo in þe lif of seint kenelme .I. rede
þat was kenulphes soñ þe noble kinge
Of Mercenrike howe Kenelme mette a þinge
A litel ar he was murdred oñ a daie
His murdre in his avisione he seyhe
His norice him expounded eu*er*y dele
His sweuen & bad him for to kep him wele
For traisoñ bot he was .vij. 3ere olde
And þ*er*e-fore litel tale haþe he tolde
Of ony dreme so holy was myn herte
Be god .I. hadde leu*er* þan my scherte
þat 3e hadde his legende as haue .I.
Dame p*er*telote .I. saie 3ow trewlye
Macrobeus þat write þe avisio*un*
In Aff[r]ike of þe worþe Cypriou*n*
Affermeþ dremes & seiþ þat þ*er*e biene
Warneynge of þinges þat men after seen · [leaf 221, back]
And forþ*er*more .I. praie 3owe lokeþ wele
The olde testament of Danyele
If he helde dremes of any vanyte
Rede eke of Ioseph & þan schal 3e see
Wheþer dremes bien su*m*tyme .I. seye nouht aH
Warneynge of þinges þat schal after faH
¶ Loke of Egipte þe kinge dan Pharaho
His Baker & his Boteler also
Where þei ne felte noñe effect *in* dremes
Who so wolle se[r]che þe actes of sundre Realmes
Maie rede of dremes mony a worder þinge
Loo cresus whiche þat was of Lidde kinge

Met he nouht þat he sat vpon a tre
Whiche signified he scholde an hanged bue
Lo here Adromacha Ectores wyfe
þat daie þat Ector schold lese his lif
Sche dremed on þe same nyht be-forne
Howe þat þe lif of Ector schold be lorne
If þilke daye he wente in-to Bataile
Sche warned him bot it myht not availe
He went for to feyhten neuere þe lese
Bot he was sleyne of Achilles
Bot þilke tale is al to longe to telł
And eke it is nyhe daie .I. may. dueł
Schortly .I. seie as for conclusione
þat .I. schal ha of þis avisione
Of aduersitees & .I. saie forþere more
þat .I. wil tell of·laxatifs no store
For þei biene veńemȯus .I. wote riht wele
.I. hem defy .I. loue hem neuere a dele
Now lat vs speke of merþe & stinte al þis
Madamė Pertelot so haue .I. blisse
Of o þinge god haþe me sent large grace
For whan .I. se þe beaute of ȝoure face
Þe bien so scarlete rede aboute ȝoure eyȝen
It makeþe al my{ drede for to deyen
For as so seker as in principio
Mulier est hominis confusio
Madame þe sentence of þis latine is
Womman is mannes Ioye & al his blisse
For whan .I. fele a nyht ȝoure soft side
Al be it þat [I] maie nouht oñ ȝoure ride [leaf 222]
For þat oure perche is maade so narwe alas
I am so ful of Ioye & solace
þat .I. defy boþe sweuen & dreme
And wiþ þat worde he fliep doune fro þe beme
For it was daie & eke his hennes ał
And wiþ a chokke he gan hem for to cał

For he had fonden a̅ corne laie in þe ȝerde
Royal he was no more aférde
He feþerde *per*telode tuente time
And trade hir*e* as oft ar it were p*ri*me
He lokeþ as it were a grime lyone
And on his toos he Romed vp & doune
Him deynede noȝt to sett his feet on grounde
Aie chokked he whan he hadde a corne yfounde
And to him þan ran his wyves a̅ll
Thus Roial as a p*ri*nce in his halle
Leue .I. þis chaunteclere in his pasture
And after. wil .I. tel of his aduenture
¶ Whan þe moneþ in whiche þe werlde be-ganne
þat hiht Marche whan god first maad manne
Was complete & passed where also
Seþen .Marche be-gan .xxx. daies & tuo
Be-fel þat Chaunteclere in his pride
His .vij. wives walkinge be his side
Kest vp his hiȝeñ to þe briht sone
þat in þe signe of taurus was yrone
þrette degrees & one & sumwhat more
He knewe be kinde & be none o*per*e lore
þat it was p*ri*me & krewe wiþ blisful steuen
þe sonne he seide is clombon vp on heuen
.xl. degres & .I. & more y-wisse
Madame p*er*telote Mi werldes blisse
Herken howe þes blisful birdes singe
And see þe frische flowres how þei springe
Ful is myne herte of reuel & solas
Bott sodanly him fel a sorweful cas
For eu*er*e þe later ende of Ioye is sone ago
And comu*n*ly oft time it falleþ so
And if a Rethor couþe faire endite
He in a cronikle myht sauely write
As for a souereyne notabilite.
Nowe eu*er*ey wiseman herken me [leaf 222, back]

This storie is as trewe .I. vnder-take
As is þe booke of lancelote þe lake
That wemmen helde in ful grete Reuerence
Nowe wil .I. turne aȝeine to my sentence
A kole fox ful of sleihte & iniquite
þat in þe groue had woned ȝeres þre
Be hihe ymaginacion aforne y-kast
The same niht þorwhe-oute þe hegges brast
In-to þe ȝerde þer chaunteclere þe faire
Was wonte & eke his wif to repaire
And in a bedde of wortes stil he laye
Til it was passed vndern of þe daye
Wayteinge his-time on chaunteclere to fall
As gladly done þes homicides all
þat in awaite ligge to murdre men
O fals Mordroure roukeinge in þi den
O newe Scariot & newe Genyloun
Fals dissimylour o greke Synoun
That brouhtest troye al vtterly to sorwe
O chaunteclere acursed be þat morwe
þat þou in þe ȝerde fleihe from þe bemes
þou were wele y-warned be þi dremes
þat þilke daie was perilouse to þe
Bot þat at god a-for wote it mote nedes be
After opinione of certeine clerkes
Witnesse on him þat any clerke es
þat in scole grete altercacioun
In þis matier & grete disputacioun
And haþe bue of an hundreþ þousand men
But .I. ne can bult it to þe branne
As kan þe holy doctur Austine
Or Boice or þe Bischoppe Bradwardine
Weþere þat goddes will afore weteinge
Streyneþ me nedely for to done a þinge
Nedely clepe .I. Simple necessite
Of elles if þe fre choyce be graunted me

To do þat same þinge or to do it nouȝt
þouhe god for-wote it ar it was wrouht
Or of his weteinge streyneþ neuere a dele
Bot be necessite condicionele
.I. wil nowht haue to done of suche Matier
Mi tale is of a koke as ȝe maie here [leaf 223]
That toke his counsel of his wif with sorwe
To walken in þe ȝerde vpon þe morwe
þat he hadde mette þe dreme as .I. ȝowe tolde
Wemmen counsel bien ful often colde
Wemmen counsel brouht vs first to woo
And maade Adam fro paradise to go
þere as he was ful mery & wele att ese
Bot for .I. note whome .I. miht. it displese
If .I. counsel of wemmen wolde blame
Passe ouere for .I. said it in my game
Rede Auctors where þei trete of suche matier
And what þei seine of wemmen hier
þese biene þe kokkes wordes & nouht myne
.I. kan no harme of no womman devine
Faire in þe sande to baþe hire merilye
Lyþe pertelote & hire susters bye
Aȝeine þe sunne & chaunteclere so fre
Sange merier þat þe meri mere-maide in þe see
For Phisiologus seiþe witterly
How þat þei singen wele & merely
And so be-fell as he kest his yȝe
Amonges þe wortes vpon a butterflye
He was ware of þis fox þat ley ful lowe
Noþinge lust him þan to crowe
Bot cride anone kok kok & vp he sterte
As a man was affraide in his herte
For naturaly a beste desireþ to flee
Fro his contrarie whan he maie it see
þeihe he neuere hadde seen it erst wiþ his ye
The chaunteclere when he gan him a-spye

He walde haue fledde Bot þat þe fox anone
Sayde gentil sire alas what wiłł 3e done
Bene 3e affraide of me þat am 3oure frende
Certes sire þat bien 3e vn-hende
If .I. to 3owe wolde harme or velanye
.I. am nouht comme 3oure consel to aspye
Bot trewly þe cause of my comynge
was onely to herken howe þat .I. singe
For trewly . 3e haue as mery a steuene
As an Angel haþe þat is in heuene
þer-wiþ 3e haue in fysik more felcynge
þan hadde Boys or any þat kan singe [leaf 223, back]
Min lorde 3oure fader god his soule blisse
And eke 3oure moder of his gentillese
Haue in myne house bien to 3oure grete ese
And certes *sir* ful feine wold I 3owe plese
Bot for men spekeþ of singeinge [I wołł seie. [Harl. 1758, *f* 198]
So mote I broke myn yen tweie.
Sauf ye I ne herd/ neuyr/ man so syng.]
As dide 3oure fader in þe morneinge
Certes it was of hert al þat he sange
And for to make his voice þe more strange
He wolde so peyne him þat wiþ boþ his y3en
He nost wynke so loude he dide criene
And stond on his tiptos *þere* wiþ al
And strecche forþe his nekke longe & smal
And eke he was of suche discrecione
þat þer was no man in no region
þat him in sange or wisdome myht passe
.I. haue wele redde Dan Burnel þe asse
Amonge his vers *þere* was a kok
For a *prestes* sonne 3aue him a knoke
Vpon his legges whan he was 3onge & nyce
He maade him for to lese his benefice
Bot certeine *þere* is no *comparisoun*
Be-tuyx þe wisdome & discresio*un*

Of 3oure fader & his subtilite
Nowe singeþ sire for seint charite
Lete se con 3e 3oure fader counterfet
This Chaunteclere his wynges gan to bete
As man þat couþe his treson nouht aspie
So was he Rauysched wiþ his flaterie
Alas 3e lordes mony a fals flaterer
Is in 3oure courte & mony a losengier
þat plesen 3owe more be my feiþe
þan he þat soþefastnesse vnto 3owe seiþ
Redeþ Ecclesiastre of flatre
Be war 3e lordes of here trecherie
This Chaunteclere stode hihe vpon his toos
Strecheinge his nekke & held his yen cloos
And gan to crowe loude for þe nones
And Dan Russell stert vp al at ones
And by þe gorge hente chaunteclere
And on his bak to-warde þe woode him bere
[1]For 3itt was *þere* noman him sewed
O destanye þat maiste not bu enchewed
Alas þat chaunteclere fel þo fro þe beme
Alas his wif ne rouht nouht of dremes
And on a fridaye fel al þis meschaunce
O venus þat is goddes of plesa*u*nce
Scþes þat þi se*r*uant was þus chaunteclere
And [in] þi se*r*uice dide al his powere
More for delite þan þe werlde to multiplie
Whi woldest þou suffur on þi daye to deye
O gaufride dere maister sou*e*reigne
Than whan þi worþi kinge Richard was sleyne
Wiþ schotte compleigned his deþ so sore
Whi ne hadd .I. nowe þi sentence & þi lore
þe fryday for to chide as deden 3e
For on a fryday schortly sleyne was he
þan wolde .I. schewe 3owe howe þat .I. couþe pleyne
For chaunteclere & for his peyne

[1 *leaf* 224. *It repeats* And on his bakke to-ward þe wode him bare]

Certes suche crie ne lamentacione
Was of ladies maade whan þat Elyone
Was wonne & pirrus wiþ his streiht swerde
Whan he hente kinge Prian be þe berde
And sleyne him as seide Eneydos
As maaden aH þe hennes in þe close
Whan þei hadd seye of Chaunteclere þe siht
Botte souereignely dame Pertelot schriht
Ful ludde þan dide Esdrubaldes wif
Whan þat hir husbonde hadde lost hir lif
And þat þe Romeynes hadde bernt Cartage
Sche was so ful of tourment & of rage
þat wilfully in-to þe fire sche stert
And bernede her self wiþ a stedfast hert
O . woful hennes riht so cride ȝe
As whan þat nero berned þe Cite
Of Rome Criden þe Senatours wifes
For þat her husbondes scholde lese here lyves
Wiþ-outen gulte Nero haþe hem sleyne
Now wil .I. turne to my tale a-ȝeine
This cely wedowe & here dowhters tuo
Herden þe hennes crie & maden wo
And oute att þe dore stert þei a none
And sawe þe fox to-warde þe groue gone [leaf 224, back]
And bare vpon his bakke þe koke awaie
And Criden oute harrowe & walaweie
A ha þe fox & After hem þei Ranne
And ek wiþ staues mony anoþer manne .
Ranne Colle oure dogge talbot & Garland
And Malkin wiþ here distaf in hire hand
Rann þe cowe & þe calf & eke þe verrey hogges
Sore aferde for berkeinge of þe dogges
And schowteinge of men & of wemmen eke
þei rann so her hert þei þouht to breke
The Dokes criden as men wold hem qwelle
þei ȝelden as fendes done in helle

Oute of þe hyves cam þe swrame of bees
The gees for fere flowe ouer þe trees
So hydous was þe noyce a benedicite
Sertes he Iac strawe & his Meyneȝe
Ne maade neuere schowte halfe so schiH
Whan þat þei wolde any flemmynge kiH
As þat ilke daie was maade on þe fox
Of brasse þei brouht bemes & of box
Of horne & bone in whiche þei poped
þere-wiþ-āl þei schriked & schowted
It semed howe þat heuen schold fal
Nowe good men .I. preie ȝowe herkeneþ al
Lo how fortune torneþ sodanly
The hope & eke þe pride of her envye
This kok þat lei vpon þis fox bak
In al his drede vn-to þe fox spak
And seide sire . If .I. were as ȝe
ȝit schold .I. saie as wis god help me
Turneþ aȝeine ȝe proude clerkes aH
A verrey pestelence vpon ȝow faH
Nowe am .I. comme vnto þis wode side
Mawgre ȝoure hede þe koke schal her abide
.I. wil him ete in feiþ & þat anone
The fox anseward in feiþe it schal be done
And [as] he spak þat worde al sodanly
þis koke brak fro his mouþe delyuerlye
And hihe vpon a tree he flyȝe anone
And þe fox sawe þat he was goone
Alas quod he o chaunteclere alas
.I. haue quod he done ȝowe a trespas [leaf 225]
In also muche as .I. maade ȝowe aferd
Whene .I. ȝow hente & brouht oute of þe ȝer[d]e
Bot sire .I. did it nouht in no wikked entente
Comeþ doune & .I. schal tel ȝowe whatt .I. mente
.I. schal seie soþ god helpe me so
Naye þan quod he .I. schrewe vs boþe tuo

And first .I. schrewe my self boþe blode & bones
If þou be-gile me ofter þan ones
Thou schalt no more wiþ þi flatery
Do me to singe & wynke wiþ myne eyȝe
For he þat winkeþ whan he schold see
As wysly god let him neuer þe
Nay q*uo*d þe fox god ȝeue him meschaunce
þat is so vndiscrete of gouernaunce
þat Iangeleþ whan he schold haue pees
Lo suche it is to bue recheles
And necligent and trusteþ on flaterye
Bot ȝe þat halde þis tale a folye
As of a fox .&. a kok. & of an hen
Takeþ þe moralite goode men
For seinte Poule seiþ alł þat wreten is
To oure doctrine it is wreten y-wys
Takeþ þe fruyte & leteþ þe chaf be stiłł
Now good god if þat it be þine wiłł
As seiþe my lorde so makeþ vs al good meñ
And bringe vs al to his hihe blisse Amen.

Explicit fabula Capellani.

APPENDIX (to Group B, p. 589).

[*Christ Church MS.* 152.] [on leaf 173, back, sign. k 2, back]

¶ Sire Nonnes preest oure hoost seyde a none
y-blessed be thy broth & euery stoone
This was a mery tale of Chaunteclere
But be my trouthe if *thou* were seculere
Thow woldeste bene a tredefoul a right
ffor if thow haue corage as *thou* haste myght
The were nede of hennes as I wene
Ye moo than .vij. tymes seventene
See whiche braunnes hath *this* gentel preeste
So grete a nekke & so large a breeste
He loketh as a Sparhauke with his yen
Hym nedeth nat his colour for to dyen [leaf 174 sign. k, 3]
with Brasile ne with Greyne of Portyngale /
Now sire faire falle yow for youre tale
And aftir he with fulle mery chere
Saide vnto a nother as ye shulle here

Here is ended the Nonnes prestes tale
And folowith the *pro*loge of the Mauncipies tale

[*on leaf* 169] **Incipit *prologus* Mag*istri* Phisici.**

NOwe trewly q*uod* oure Oste þis is a prati tale
For litel merveile it is þat þou lokest so pale
Seþen þou hast medeled wiþ so mony þinges
Wiþ bloweinge att þe cole to melte boþe brochez & ringes
And o*þer*e many Iewels dar .I. vnder-take
And þat þi lorde couþe vs tel: if we myht him ou*er*e-take
Bot lat him go a deuel waye þe compaigny is neu*er* þe wers
And al suche fals harlotes .I. sette not be hem a kers [lf 169, bk]
Bot latt pas ou*er*e nowe al þes subtilitees
And sume worþi man tel vs su*mm*e veritees
As ȝe worschipful Maister of Phisike
Telleþ vs so*mm*e tale þat is a cronyke
þat we may of ȝowe leren sum witte
Q*uod* þe Maister of Phisik a tale þat .I. finde writte
In cronyke passed of olde tyme
Herkeneþ for .I. wil tel it ȝow in rime
Explicit prologus.

GROUP C. FRAGMENT IV.

§ 1. THE DOCTOR'S TALE.

LANSDOWNE MS.

¶ Incipit fabu[l]a. [*on leaf* 169, *back*]

There was as telleþ vs titus liueus
A knyht þat cleped was virgineus
Fulfilled of honoure & worþinesse
And stronge of frendes *and* of riches
A douhtere he hadd be his wyf
And neuer hadde he mo in al his lif
Faire was þis maide in excellent beautee
Abouen euery whight þat maie see
For Nature haþe wiþ souereigne diligence
Formed hir in so grete excellence
As þouhe sche wolde seie loo .I. Nature
Thus can .I. forme *and* painte a creature
Whan þat me leste who can me counterfete
Pigmalyon nouht þouhe he alweie forge or bete
Or graue or peinte for .I. dar wel seine
Apollus ȝepherus schold werche in veine
To graue or peinte or forge or bete
If þei presumed me for to counterfete
For he þat is þe formour principal
Haþe maade me his viser general
To forme *and* peinte eche erþely creature
Riht as me lest for al þinge is in my cure
Vnder þe mone þat maie wane *and* wax
And for my werke no þinge wil .I. ax

My lorde *and* .I. bene fullye att acorde
.I. maade hire to þe worschip of my lorde
So do .I. al myn oþere creatures
Of [what] colo*ur* þei bue or what figures
Thus semeþ me þat Nature wold seie
This maide was of age twelue ȝere *and* tweye
In whiche þat Nature haþe suche delite
For riht as sche kan peinte as lyle white [leaf 170]
An[d] Rode as rose riht wiþ suche peinture
Sche peinted haþe þis noble creature
Ar sche was borne vppon hire li*m*mes fre
Were als briht as suche coloures scholde be
And phebus hadd dyed hire tresses grete
Lyke to þe stremes of his burned hete
And if þat excellent was hire beute
A þousand folde mor vertuous was sche
In hire ne lakkeþ no condicione
þat is to preise as be discrecione
As wele in body. as goste chast was schee
For whiche sche floured in virginite
Wiþ al humilite *and* abstinence
And wiþ al attemperance *and* pacience
Wiþ mesure eke *and* bereinge of araie
Discrete sche was in ansewaringe alweie
þouhe sche were wise as pallas dar.I. seine
Hire faukonde eke ful wo*m*manly *and* pleyne
None conterfeted termes hadde sche
To seme wise bot after hire degre
Sche spakk *and* al hir wordes more *and* lesse
Souneinge in vertue *and* in gentillesse
Schamefast sche was in maidens schamfastnesse
Constant in hert *and* eu*er* in his besinesse
To dryue hire oute of hire slogardie
Bachus hadde of hire mouþe no maistre
For wil *and* þouht to done venus encrese
As men in fire wil kasten oyle or grese

And of hir owen vertue vnconstreyned
Sche haþe ful oft time hire seke feyned
For þat sche wolde flye þe companye
Where likly was to treten of folye
As es att festes reueles *and* att daunces
þat bene occasione of dalyaunces
Suche þinges maken childern for to bee
Tó sone Ripe *and* bolde as men maie see
Whiche is ful *peri*lous *and* haþe be 3ore
For al to sone maie sche leren lore
Of boldenesse whan sche is a wyfe
And 3e maistresses in 3oure olde life
þat lordes douhters haue in gouernañce
Ne takeþ of mi worde no displesance [leaf 170, back]
Thinges þat bien set in gou*er*nynges
Of lordes douhtres only for tuo þinges
Eyþer for 3e han kepped 3oure honeste
Or elles 3e haue faH in frelte
And knowe wele ynowhe þe olde daunce
And konne forsaake fully meschaunce
For eu*er*e mo þer-fore for crist saak
Kepeþ wel þo þat 3e vndertak
A þef of venison þat haþ for-laft
His lycorusnesse *and* al his þefes craft
Kan kepe a forest best [of] ony man
Nowe kepeþe hem wele for 3e wele can
Lokeþ wele to no vice þat 3e assent
Lest [3e] be dampned for 3oure yuel entent
For who so doþe a traito*ur* is certeine
And takeþ of þat þ*at* .I. schal seine
Of al tresoñ suffreine pestelence
Is whan a whight be-trayeþ Innocence
3e faders *and* 3e moders eke also
þouhe 3e haue childern be it on or mo
3oure is þe charge of al her suffrance
Whiles þei bien vnder gouernance

Beþe ware þat be ensample of ȝoure leueinge
Eyþer be necligence in chastisinge
þat þei ne p*e*rische for .I. dare wele seie
ȝif þat þei done ȝe schol ful sore abye
Vnder a scheperd soft *and* necligent
þe wolf haþ mony a schepe *and* lamme to-rent
Sufficit one ensample nowe as here
For .I. most torne aȝeine to matiere
This maide of whiche .y tel my tale expresse
Sche kepped hir self sche neded no maistresse
For in hire leucynge maydens myht rede
As in a boke eue*r*y good worde *and* dede
þat longeþ to a mayden vertuous
Sche was so prudent *and* so bounteuous
For whiche oute spronge on eue*r*y side
Boþe of hir beute *and* hire bounte wide
þat þoruhe þe londe þei p*r*esede hire ychon
þat loued verteus saue envye alone
þat sory is of oþer mennes wele
And gladde is of his sorwe *and* vnhele [leaf 171]
The doctou*r* makeþ þis descripciou*n*e
This maide went on a daie in-to þe toune
To-warde þe temple wiþ hir moder dere
As is of ȝonge Maidens þe manere
Nowe was þer a Iustice in þe toune
þat gouernou*r* was of þat regioune
And so befel þis Iuge his eyȝen kast
Vppon þis maide aviseinge hire ful fast
As sche cam forþ by þere þe Iuge stode
Anone his hert chaungeþ *and* his moode
So was he cauht wiþ þe beaute of þis maide
And to him self ful p*r*iuely he seide
This maiden schal be myne for any man
Anone þe fende in to his hert ran
And tauht him sodanly be what sleyht
The maiden to his pu*r*pos wynne he myht

For certes be no force ne be no meede
Him þouht he was not able for to spede
For he was stronge of frendes *and* eke sche
Confermed was in suche souereigne beute
That wele he wist he myht hire neuer wynne
As for to maake hire wiþ hire bodi synne
For whiche wiþ grete deliberacioune
He sent after a clerk in to þe toune
The whiche he knewe ful sotel *and* ful bolde
This Iuge haþe vn-to þis clerke his tale ytolde
In secre wise *and* maade him to assure
He schold tel it to no creature
And if he dide he scholde lese his hede
And whan assented was þis cursed rede
Gladde was þe Iuge *and* maade goode chiere
And 3af him 3eftes precious *and* dere
Whan schapen was al þis conspiracie
From pointe to pointe howe þat his licherye
Performed schold be ful sotellye
As 3e schal heren afterward openlye
Home goþe þis clerk þat hiht Claudius
This fals Iuge þat hiht Apius
So was his name it is no fable
Bot knowen for an historall þinge notable
The sentence of it soþ is oute of doute
This fals Iuge goþ nowe faste aboute [leaf 171, back]
To hasten his delite al þat he maie
And so be-fel sone after on a daie
þis fals Iuge as telleþ vs þe storie
As he was wonte satt in his Consistorie
And 3aue his domes vpon sundre caas
This fals clerke cam forþe a wel good paas
And seide lorde if þat it be 3oure will
As doþe me riht vpon þis pitous bill
In whiche .I. pleine vpon virgineus
And if þat he wil seine it is nou3[t] þus

.I. wille preue it *and* finde good wittenesse
þat soþe is þat my biłł wiłł expresse
The Iuge Ansewerde of þis in his absence
.I. maie not ȝif diffinitif sentence
Latt done him całł. & .I. wil gladly here
Thou schalt haue riht *and* no wronge here
Virgineus came to wite þe Iuges wiłł
And riht a-none was redde þis cursed biłł.
þe sentence of hit was as ȝe schal here
To ȝowe my lorde *sir* Apius so dere
Schewe þ ȝoure pouer *ser*uant Claudius
Howe þat a knyht called virgineus
Aȝeines þe lawe aȝeines al equite
Holdeþ expresse aȝeines þe wil of me
Mi *ser*uant whiche þat is þrał be riht
Wyche from myne hous was stolne one a nyht
Whiles sche was ful ȝonge .I. wiłł. it preue
Be wittenesse lorde so þat ȝe ȝowe nouht greue
Sche his nouht his douhter what so he seie
Where-for my lorde þe Iugge to ȝowe .I. preie
ȝelde me my þrał if it be ȝoure wil
Lo þis was þe sentence of þe bil
Virgineus began vpon þe clerke be-holde
Bote hastely ar he his tale tolde
He wolde haue defended it as scholde a knyht
And be wittenesse of mony a trewe wyht
That al was fals þat seide his aduersarie
This Cursed Iuge wolde no longer tarie
Ne here a worde more of Virgineus
Bot ȝaf his Iugement *and* seide þus
.I. deme anone þis clerk his *ser*uant haue
Thou schalt no longer in þin house hir saue [leaf 172]
Go bringe hir forþe *and* bringe hir in owre warde
This clerk schal haue his þralle þus .I. awarde
And whan þis worþi knyht Virgineus
Thoruhe þassent of þe Iuge Apius

Most be force his dere douhter ȝeuen
Vn-to þe Iuge in lichere to leuen
He goþe him home *and* sett him in his haⁿ
And lete anone his dere douhter caⁿ
And wiþ a face dede as asshen colde
Vpon hire hum[ble] face he gan be-holde
Wiþ faders pite stikinge þoruhe his hert
Al wolde he nouht from his purpos conuert
Douhter quod he virginea be þi name
There bien tuo weys eyþer oþer schame
þat þou must soffer alas þat .I. was bore
For neuer þou deseruest where fore
To deyen wiþ a swerde or wiþ a knyf
O der douhter ender of my lif
Whiche .I. haue fosterd vp wiþ suche plesance
þat þou ne weer oute my remembrance
O douhter whiche þat ert my last woo
And in lif my last ioy also
O gemme of chastite in pacience
Take þou þi deþ for þis is my sentence
For loue *and* nouht for hate þou must be dede
My pitous honde most smyte of þin hede
Alas þat euer Apius þe seyhe
Thus haþe he falsly Iugged þe to day
And tolde hire al þe cas as ȝe be-fore
Haue herd it nedeþ nouht to tel it no more
Merce dere fadere quod þis maide
And wiþe þat worde sche boþe hire armes leide
Aboute his nekke as sche was wont to do
The teres barsten oute of hire yen tuo
And seide goode fader schal .I. deye
Is þere no grace is þere no remedie
No certes dere douhter myne quod he
Than ȝeue me leue fader myn quod sche
My deþ to compleyne a litel space
For parde Ieffa ȝaue his douhter grace

For to compleine ar he hir slowhe alas
And god it wote no þinge was hire trespas [leaf 172, back]
Bot þat sche rann hir fader first to see
To welcom him wiþ grete solempnite
And wiþ þat worde sche fel in swoune anone
And after whan hir swounynge was agone
Sche riseþ vpe *and* to hire fader seide
Blissed be god þat .I. schal deye a meide
3if me my deþe ar þat .I. haue a schame
Doþe wiþ 3oure Childe 3oure wil a goddes name
And wiþ þat word sche praieþ ful oft
þat with his swerde he scholde smite hir softe
And wiþ þat word in swoune doune sche felle
Hir fader wiþ ful sorweful hert *and* felle
Hire heued of smote *and* be toppe it hent
And to þe Iuge he 3aue it to p*re*sent
As he satt in his dome in consistorie
Whan þe Iuge it sauhe as seiþe þe storie
He badde take him *and* honge him also fast
Bot riht anone al þe peple in þrast
To saue þe knyht for reuþe *and* for pyte
ffor knowen was þe foles iniquite
þe peple anone hadd susspecte in þis þinge
Be maner of þis clerkes chalangeinge
þat it was be þe assent of Apius
That wist wele þat he was lycherous
ffor whiche vn-to þis Apius þei gone
And kesten him in p*ri*son riht a-none
Whereas he slowhe him selfe *and* Claudius
That s*er*uant was vn-to þis Apius
Was demed for to honge vpon a tre
Bot virgineus of his grete Pite
Praide for him þat he was exiled
And elles certes he hadde be by-gilede
The remenant were honged more *and* lesse
That consented were to þis cursednesse

GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. **Lansdowne MS.**

Here maye men see how sinne haþe his merite
Be war for no man wote howe god wil smyte
In no degre ne in wyche maner wise
þe werme of conscience wil arise
Of wikked lif þouhe it so p*ri*ue be
þat no man woot of it bot god *and* he
Wheþer he be lewde man or lerede
He note howe sone. he maie bee aferde
Ther-fore rede .I. ȝowe þis counsel take [leaf 173]
For-sakeþ sinne ar sinne ȝoue for-sake

Explicit fabula Mag*ist*ri Phi*si*cor*um*

Incipit *pr*ologus questoris [on leaf 17

Owre Oste gan swere as he ware wode
Harrowe q*uo*d he be Nayles *and* be blode 28
This was a cussed þef a fals Iustice
A schendful deþe as hert can deuise
So fal vpon his body *and* his bones [*]
Þe deuel .I. be-ken him al att ones [*] 292
Alas to dere bouht sche hir beute
Wherefor .I. seie þat al men maie see
þat ȝiftes of fortune or of Nature
Beþe cause of deþe of mony a creature 296
Hire beute was hir deþe .I. dare wele seine
Alas how pitously as sche was sleine
Bot here-of wil .I. nouht procede as nowe [*spurious*]
Men haue ful often more harme þan prowe 300
Bot trewly myne owen maister dere
This is a pitous tale for to here
Bot naþeles pas ouer is no force
.I. praie to god to saue þi gentil corps 304
And þine vrinals *and* þi Iordanes
þine ypocras *and* þine Galiounes
And euery box ful of þine letuarie
God blesse hem *and* oure lady seint Mary 308
So mot .I. þe þou ert a propre man
And ylike a p*re*late · be seinte Runyan
Sayd .I. nouht wele can .I. nouȝht speke in terme
Bot wele .I. wote þou doste myne herte to erme 312
þat .I. almost haue cauht a cardiacle
Be corpus bones bot ȝiue .I. haue triacle
Or elles a drauht of moiste *and* corne ale
Or bott .I. here a-none a meri tale 316

GROUP C. § 2. DOCTOR-PARDONER LINK. **Lansdowne MS.**

Myne hert is loste for pete of þis maide
Thowe belamy Ioheñ Pardoner he saide
Tel vs sum Merthes or Iapes riht anone
It schal be do *quod* he be seinte Ninione
Bot first *quod* he here at þis ale stake
.I. wil boþe drinke *and* ette of a kake
Bot riht anone þes gentiles begon to crie
Nay lat him tel vs of no Rebaudie
Tel vs sume Moral þinge þat we mowe lere [leaf 173, back]
Some wytt *and* þan wiłł we gladly here
.I. *gra*un[t] y-wysse *quod* he. bot .I. most þenke
Vppon. sum honest þinge whiles þat .I. drinke

Explicit Prologus questoris

Incipit fabula questoris.

LOrdynges quod he in cherches whan .I. preche
.I. peyne me to haue an haunteine speche
Hereynge oute as rounde as goþe a belł
For .I. kan be roote þat .I. telł
My teme is alweie one *and* euer was
Radix omnium malorum est/ cupiditas ſ
fferst .I. pronounce wense þat .I. come
An[d] þan my billes schewe .I. al *and* somme
Oure liege lorde seal is my patent
þat schewe .I. first my body to warent
þat no man be so bolde preste ne clerke
Me to destorble of cristes holy werke
And after þat tel .I. forþe my tales
Bulles of popes *and* of Cardinales
Of Patriarkes *and* of Bischopes .I. schewe
And in latine .I. speke wordes a fewe
To sauern wiþ my predicacioñe
And for to ster men to deuocioñe
þan schewe .I. forþe my longe cristal stones
Y-crammed ful of cloutes *and* of bones
Relekes þei buen as ween þei euerychon
Than haue .I. in laton a scholdere bone
Whïche þat was an holy Iewes schepe
Goodmen saie .I. takeþe of my wordes kepe
If þat þis bone bue wasche in any welle
Of cowe or calfe schepe or oxe swelle
þat worme haþe y-ete or y-stonge
[Take watir of[1] that welle and wasshe his tonge[1]]

[1] Harl. 7335, *ff* 139 (*not in Addit.* 25,718)]

Touche he þis bone anone he schal be sounde
And 3it also forþermore of pokkes & scabbes & of euery sore.
Schal euery schepe be hole þat of þis well
Drenkeþ a drawht of takeþ kepe what .I. telle
Wil euery wyhte er þat þe koke him crowe þe
And doþe þinge þat him owe þe
ffastynge drinke of þis welle a drauht
And þilke holy Iewe oure helders ones tauht
His bestes *and* his store schal multeplie
And sires also it heleþ Ielousye [leaf 174]
And þouhe a man be fal in Ielowsie rage
Lat make wiþ þis water his potage
And neuer schal he more his wif mestruste
þouhe he þe soþe a defaute by hire wiste
Al hadde sche taken prestes tueyne or þre
Here is a Metaine eke 3e maye see
He þat his honde wil put in þat Metane
He schall haue multipliinge of his greine
Whan he haþe sowen be it whete or otes
So þat of pens oþer of grotes
And men *and* wemmen o þinge warn .I. 3owe
If any whight be in þis cherche nowe
þat haþ done sinne orrible þat he
Dare nouht fo[r] schame schriuen be
Or any wo*m*man be sche 3onge or olde
þat haþ ymaad hir husbond cokwolde
Suche folke schal haue no powere no grace
To offer to my relikes in þis place
And who so findeþ him oute of suche blame
þei wil come vp *and* offer in goddes name
And .I. assoile him be þe auctorite
Suche as be bul was graunted me
Be þis Gaude haue .I. wonne euery 3ere
An .C. mark seþen .I. was pardonere
.I. stonde like a clerke in mony a pulpitt
And schewe þe lewde pople *and* doune þei sitt

.I. preche so as ȝe haue herde be-fore
And tel an hundreþ Iapes more
Than peyne .I. me to strecche forþe my nekke
And est and west uppon þe peple .I. bekke
As doþe a doue sittinge vpon a berne
Myne hondes *and* my tonge go so ȝerne
þat it is Ioye to see my besinesse
Of avarise *and* suche oþer cursednesse
Is as Mi preccheinge to make hem fre
To ȝeue here pens namely vnto me
For myne entent is nouht bot for to wynne
And no þinge for correction of sinne
.I. reke neuer whan þat þei be buried
þouhe þat here soules gone a blakberied
For certes mony a predicaciōne
Souneþ oft time of yuel entencione
[Somme for plesance of folk and for flaterie [Addit. 25,718, *on lf* 54]
To ben auaunsed for ypocresye
And somme for veynglory and somme for hate [*leaf* 54, *back*]
ffor when I dar nought oother weys de-bate
Thenne wolly stynge him with my tunge smert
I preching and that he shal nought astert
To ben defamed falsly if that he
Hath trespased to myn brithe*r*en other to me
ffor though I telle nought his p*ro*pre name
Men shal wel knowe that hit is the same
Bothe by seignes and oother circumstaunces
Thus. rule I folk that doth vs displesances
Thus spitte I myn venym vnder hewe
Of holinesse to seme holy and trewe
But shortly myn entent wol I deuyse
I[1] preche of no thing but of Coueytise [[1] ? MS *sir*]
Ther-fore my teme is ȝet and euer was
Radix malor*um* est cupiditas
Thus kan I preche ayayns that same vice] [Addit. MS *extract stops*]
Suche þat .I. vse *and* þat is of auarice [leaf 174, back]

Bot þeihe .I.-me self þe gilte in þat sinne
3it kanne .I. maake oþer folke to wynne
Fromme auarice *and* sore to repent
Bot þat nes nouht myn principal entent
.I. preche no þinge bot for Couetise
Of þis matiere it ou3te ynowhe suffise
þan tel .I. of ensamples many one
Of Olde stories longe time agone
For lewde peple louen tales olde
Whiche þinges can þei wele reporte *and* holde
What trowe 3e whiles þat .I. maie preche
And wynne gold *and* siluer for .I. teche
þat .I. wil leue in pouert wilfully
Nay. nay .I. þouht it neuer treulye
ffor .I. preche *and* begge in sundre landes
.I. wil nouht do no labour wiþ myn handes
An[d] make basketes *and* leue þere-bye
Be-cause .I. wil nouht bigge ydelye
.I. wil none of þe aposteles counterfete
.I. wil haue mony chese *and* whete
Al were it 3euen of þe porest page
Eyþer of þe pourest wedowe in a vilage
Al schold hir childerne sterue for famyne
Nay .I. wil drinke þe lycoure of þe vine
And haue a Ioly wenche in euerych toune
Bot herkeneþ lordynges in conclusione
3oure lykeinge is þat .I. schal tel a tale
Nowe .I. haue dro[n]ke a drauhte of Corne ale
Be god .I. hope .I. schal tel 3owe a þinge
þat schal be reson biene at 3oure lykeinge
ffor þouhe my self be a ful vicious man
A more.-il tale 3it .I. 3owe telle can
Whiche .I. am wont to preche for to wynne
Now holde 3oure pes my tale .I. wil beginne.

[*no break in the MS.*]

[1 *Addit.* 25,718 *reads* "And suche oother diuers mischaunces", *leaf* 55.]

IN flaundres whilom was a compaignie
Of ȝonge folke þat hawten folye
As Riott. Hasard. stewes. *and* tauerns
[1 Where as with harpees lutes and gyternes] [Harl. 7335, *lf* 161, *bk*]
þei daunce *and* pleie *and* dise boþe daie *and* nyht
And eten *and* drenke al-so ouer al here myht
Thorwhe whiche þei done þe deuel sacrifise
Wiþ-inne þe deueles temple in cursed wyse
The super-fluys abhomynable [leaf 175]
Here oþes bene so grete *and* dampnable
þat it is grisely for to here hem swere
Oure blissed lordes body þei to-tere
Hem þouht. Iewes rent him nouht ynowhe
And yche of hem att oþer sinnes lowhe
And riht anone þan came tomblesters
ffetis *and* smal *and* ȝonge fruytsters
Singers wiþ harpes baudes waferes
Such bien þe deuel officiers
To kendel *and* blowe þe fire of lychery
þat is annexed to glotonye
þe holy writte take .I. to wittenesse
þat lycherie is in wyne *and* dronkennesse
Lo howe þat dronken lothe vnkindelye
Lay be his douhtres tuo vnweteynglye
So dronke he was he nest what he wrouht
And þerfore sore repent him ouhte [*spurious*] 487*b*
Herodes who so wil þe story seche 488
þere maie ȝe leren *and* be ensample teche [*spurious*] 488*b*

Whan he of wine was replete att his feste
Riht att his owen table ȝaf his heste
To slene þe Baptiste Iohñ ful gilteles
Senec seiþe eke good wordes douteles
He seiþe he kan no difference finde
Be-tuex a man þat is oute of his mynde
And a man þat is drongelewe
Bot wodenes is falne in a schrewe
Perseuereþ longer þan doþ dronkennesse
O glotony ful of cursednesse
O cause firste of oure confusione
O originale of owre dampnacione
To criste hadde bouht owte wiþ his blode aȝeine
Lo howe dere *and* schortly was to seine
A-boute was þe cursed velanye
Corrupte was al þis werld þoruhe glotonye
Adam oure fadere *and* his wif also
Fro paradise to labour *and* to woo
Were dreue for þat vice it is no drede
For whiles þat adam fasted as .I. rede
He was in paradise & whan þat hee
Ete of þe fruyte defended on a tree
Anone he was out cast to woo *and* pyne [leaf 175, back]
O glotonye on þe wele ouht vs to pleine
O wist a man howe many maladies
Foloweþ of excesse *and* of glotonies
He schold be þe more mesurable
Of his Diet sittinge att þe table
Alas þe schort þrote þe tender mouþe
Makeþ þat est *and* west Norþe *and* souþe
In erþe in eyre in water men to swynke
To gette a gloton Mete *and* drinkge
Of þis matiere o paule wele cans þou entrete
Metee vn-to wome *and* wombe eke vn-to mete
Schal god discriuen boþe as poule seiþe
Alas a foule þinge it is be my feiþe

To seie þis worde *and* fouler is þe dede
When men so drenken of þe white *and* of þe rede
Þat of his þrote he maade his priuetee
Þoruhe þilke cursed super*fluyte* 528
Þe Appostell wepeinge seiþe ful pitously
Þere walken mony of whiche ȝoue tolde haue .I.
.I. saye it nowe wepeinge wiþ pitous voice
There bien enmyes of cristes croice 532
Of whiche þe ende is deþe þe wombe is hire god
O wombe o holy o stinkinge cod
Fulfilled of donge *and* of corrupcione
Att eyþe[r] ende of þe foule is þe soune 536
Howe grete cost *and* laboure is to finde
Þes cokes howe þaie stame *and* striue *and* grinde
And turne substance in-to accident
To fulfil al þi lykorous talent 540
Oute of þe harde bones knoke þeie
Þe mery for þei cast nouht aweie
Þat maie go Þoruh þe golet soft *and* swote
Of spicere of leues barke *and* rote 544
Schal be his sauce be maade be delite
To maak him ȝitt a newere appetite
Bot certes he Þat haunteþ suche delices
Is dede whiles Þat he leueþ in þe vices 548
A lycherous Þinge is wyne *and* dronkennesse
Is ful of stryueynge *and* of wrechednesse
O dronken man disfigured is þi face.
Foul is þi breþ. foule ert Þou to embrace 552
And Þoruhe þi drongen nose semeþe þi soune [leaf 176]
As Þouhe Þou ay said Samson samsoune
And ȝit goode wotte Samson dranke neuer wyne
Þou falest as a dronken swyne 556
Þi tonge is loste *and* al Þine honest cures
For dronkenes is verreie sepultures
Of mannes witte *and* his discrecion
In whome Þat drinke haþ dominacion 560

He can no counsel kepe it is no drede
Now kepe 3owe fro þe white *and* fro þe reede
Namely fro þe white wyne of lepe
þat is to sel in fische strete or in chep
þis wyne of Spayne crepeþ Sotelly
In oþer wynes groweinge fast by
Of whiche *þere* riseþ suche fumosite
þat whan a man haþ dronke drauhtes þre
And weneþ þat he be att home in chepe
He is in spayne riht atte þe toune of lepe
Nouht att þe Rochel ne att Bordeux toune
And þan wille þei seyn Sampsoñe Sampsone
Bot herken lordeynges o worde .I. 3ow preie
þat al þe sou*e*reigne attes dar .I. seie
Of victories in þe olde testament
þat þoruhe verrey god þat is omnipotent
Weere done in abstinence *and* in preiere
Loke þe bible *and* þ*er*e 3e maie it leere.
Loke Atthela þe grete conqueroure
Deyed in his slepe wiþ schame *and* dishonoure
Bledeynge aye att is nose in dronkenesse
A Capeteigne schold leue in soburnesse
And ouer al þis a-vise 3ow riht wele
What was comand vn-to Lamuele
Nouht Samuel bot Lamuel saie .I.
Redeþe þe bible *and* findeþ it expresly
Of wyne 3ifinge to hem þat han Iustice
No mor of þis fŏr it mai wele suffice

Anow þat .I. haue spoke of glotonye
Nowe wil .I. defend 3owe hasardye
Hasard is verreye moder of lesinges
And of deceyte Cursed forswereinges
Blaspheme of criste *and* mansleinges also
Of bataile oft time and of oþer mo
It is repreue *and* contrarie to honoure [leaf 176, back]
fŏr to be holde a co*m*mune hasardoure

And euer þe hihere he his of state
þe more yhalden is he dissolate
If þat a prince vse hasardie
In al gouernance *and* al policie
He is as be commune opinioñ
.I.-halde þe lasse in reputacioñ
[Stilbon that was Ihalde a wis Embassetour
Was sent into Corynthe with ful gret honour] [Addit. 25,718, *leaf* 57, *back*]
ffro Calidonye to maken hem alleaunce
And whan he cam him happed þis chaunce
That al þe grettest þat were of þis lande
Pleynge att þe Hasard he hem fande
For whiche as sone as þat miht be
He stale him home aȝeine to his contre
And seide þere .I. wold nouht lese my name
.I. wil nouht take on me so grete defame
ȝowe for to alleye to none hasardoures
Sendeþ oþere wise embassadoures
For be my troupe me were leuer deye
þan .I. to ȝowe hasadoures scholde alleye
For ȝe þat bien so glorious in honoures
SchaH nouȝt alleye ȝowe wiþ asardoures
As be my wiH ne as be my trete
This wise philosophre þus seide to me
Looke þou vse no pleie of dees in þin house
Looke eke þat þe kinge demetrius
Sent him a paire of dees of golde in scoren
For he hadd vsed hasardry þer be-forne
For whiche he held his glorie *and* renoune
And no valewe of reputacione
Lordes myhten finde oþere manere pleie
Honest ynouhe to driue þe daie a-weie

Now wole .I. speke of othes fals *and* grete
A worde or tuo as oþere bookes trete
Grete swereynge is a þinge abhominable
And fals swereinge is more repreueable

The hihe god for-bad swereinge att al
Wittenesse of Mathewe bot in special
Of swereinge seiþe holy Ieromye
Thowe shalt swere soþe þine oþes *and* nouht lye
And swere in dome *and* eke in rihtwisnesse
Bot Idel swereinge is a cursedenesse
Be-holde *and* see þat in þe first table [leaf 177]
Of hihe goddes hestes honurable
How þat þe secunde hest of him is þis
Take nouht my name in Idelnesse amys
Lo raþer he for-bedes suche suereinge
Or Omyside or any oþer Cursed þinge
.I. scie as be order þus it standeþ
[This knoweth ye that his hestes vnderstandeth] [Addit. 25,718, *leaf* 58]
How þat þe secunde hest of god is þat
And forþermore .I. wil þe tel al plat
þat vengeance schal nouht p*ar*te fro his hous
þat of his oþes is so outrageous
Be goddes p*re*cious hert *and* his nayles
And be his blode þat is in hayles
Seuen is myn chaunce *and* þine is fyue *and* þre
Be goddes armes if þou fals-ly pleie me
This dagger schal þoruhe þine hert go
This fruyte co*mm*eþ of þe becched bones tuo
Forswereynge. Ire. falsenes. Omycide
Now for þe loue of criste þat for vs deide
Leueþ ȝoure oþes boþe grete *and* smale
And wiþe good entent herkeneþ my tale
Thes ryetoures þre of whiche .I. telle
Longe ar prime ronge any belle
Were sett hem in a tauerne to drinke
And as þei satt þei herde a belle klynke
Be-forne a cors was cariede to his graue
þan one of hem gan cal vnto his knaue
Go bette q*uo*d he *and* axe redelye
What corps it is þat passeþ fast bye

And loke þat þoue reporte his name wele
Sir q*uod* þis boye it nedeþ neuer a dele
It was me tolde ar 3e cam here tuo owres
He was p*ar*de an olde felawe of 3oures
Al sodenly was he sleine to nyht
For-dronke as he satt vp his benche vpriht
Ther cam a p*ri*ue þefe þat men clepen deþe
That in his contre al þe peple sleþe
And wiþ his spefe he smot his hert a-tuo
And went is waie wiþ-outen wordes mo
And Maister ar 3e com in his p*re*sence
He haþe a þousande sleine þis pestelence
Me þinkeþ it were necessarie
For to bue war of suche an adu*er*sarie [leaf 177, back]
Beþ rede for to mete him euermore
Thus tauht me my dame .I. seie no more
Be seinte Marie seyde þis tauernere
This childe seiþ soþe for he haþ sleine to 3ere
Hennes ou*er* a Mile wiþ-inne a gret village
Boþe man *and* wo*m*man childe *and* page
I trowe his habitacione be þere
To been avisede grete wisdome it weere
Ere þat he dide a man dishonoure
3e goddes armes q*uod* þis Rictoure
Is it suche p*er*ile wiþ him for to mete
.I. schal him seeke be waie *and* eke be strete
.I. make. avowe be goddes deyne bones
Herkeneþ felawes we þre been al ones
Lat iche of vs holde vp his honde to oþ*er*e
And iche of vs be-co*m*me oþers broþ*er*e
And we wil sle þis false traitur deþe
He schal be sleyne he þat so mony sleþe
Be goddes dignite ar it be nihte
To-geder haue þes þre her hertes hihte
To leue *and* deie ilke of hem wiþ oþere
As þouhe he ware his owen sworne broþer

And vpe þei stert al dronken in þis rage
And forþe þei gone to-warde þat vilage
Of whiche þe tauernere haþ spoken be-forne
And mony a grisely oþe þen haue þei sworne
And cristes blissed bodie þei to-rent
Deþ schal be dede if þat we maie him hent
Whan þei haue gone nouht fully a myle
Riht as þe[i] wolde haue troden ouere a style.
An olde *and* a pouer man wiþ hem he mette
This olde man ful mekely hem grette
And seide þus nowe lordes god 3owe see
þe proudeste of þes ryetoures þre
Anseward a3eine what carle wiþ hard grace
Whi art þou al for-wrapped saue þi face
Whi leuest þou so longe in so grete age
This olde man gan loke in his visage
And seid þus ‹ for .I. can nou3t finde
A man þouhe þat .I. walked vnto ynde
Neyþer in Cite ne in village.
That wil chaunge his 3ouþe for myne age [leaf 178]
And þerfore most .I. haue my age stille
As longe time as it is goddes wille
Ne deþe alas ne wil nouht haue my lyue
þus walke .I. lyke a ristcles chaitif
And on þe grounde whyche is my moders gate
.I. knok wiþ my staf erly *and* late
And seye leue moder lete me inne
Lo howe .I. wane boþe flesche blode *and* scynne
Alas when schol my lones bien att rest
Moder wiþ 3owe wold .I. chaunge my chest
Thatt in my chambre longe time haþ be
3e for an here cloute to wrappe me
Bot 3ut to me sche wil nou3t do þat grace
For whiche ful pale *and* welked is my face
Bot sires to 3owe it is no curtesie
To speken vnto an hold man vilanye

.Bot he trespas in worde eyþer in dede
In holy write ȝe maie ȝoure self wele rede
Aȝeines an old man hore vpon his hede
ȝe scholden arise wher-for .I. ȝif ȝowe rede
Ne doþe nouht to an olde man none harme nowe
Ne more þan ȝe wolde men dide to ȝow
In age if þat. ȝe so longe abide
And god be wiþe ȝowe wheþer ȝe go or ride
.I. mote go þeder þer as .I. haue to go
Nay olde cherle be god þou schalt nouht so
Saide þis oþere hasardour anone
Thou partes nouht so lyhtly be seint Iohñ
Thou spakkest riht nowe of þilke traitour deþe
That in þis Countre al oure frendes sleþe
Haue here my trouþe as þou ert his aspye
Tel where he his or þou schalt abye
Be god *and* be þe holi sacrament
For soþely þou ert on of his assent
To slene vs ȝonge folke þou fals þef
Nowe sire if þat it be to ȝowe so lef
To finde deþe torne vp þis croked weie
For in þat. groue .I. laft him be my feye
Vnder a tre *and* þere he wil abide
Ne for ȝoure boste he wil him no þinge hide
See ȝe þat ooke riht *þere* ȝe schulne him finde
God saue ȝowe þat bouht ȝeine mankinde [leaf 178, back]
And ȝowe amend þus seide þis olde manne
And euery of þes ryetours ranne
Til þei came to þe tree *and* þere þei fonde
Of flerens fyne of gold y-koyned rounde
Wele nyhe a .vij. buschels as hem þouht
No longere þan after deþe þei souht
Bot iche of hem was so gladde of þe siht
For þat þe floreyns so faire bien *and* briht
þat doune þei sett hem be þe precious horde
The werst of hem þo spak þe first worde

Breþerne q*uo*d he takeþ kepe whatt .I. seie
My witte is grete þouhe þat .I. bourde *and* pleie
This tresor haþe fortun to vs ȝeuen
In merþe *and* Iolite oure lif to leuen 780
And lihtly as it co*m*meþ so wil we spende
Ey goddes p*re*cious dignite who wende
To daie þat we scholde haue so faire a grace
Bot myht þis golde be caried fro þis place 784
Home to my hous oþer elles vnto ȝoures
þan myht we seie þat it were al oures
þan were we in hihe felicite
Bott trewly be daie it maie nouht be 788
Men wold seie þat we were þeues stronge
And for owre owen tresoure done vs honge
This tresore most .ykaride be by nyht
As wisely *and* as slely as it miht 792
Where-for .I. rede lette loke amonge vs al
Be drawe *and* latte see where þe cutt wiłł fal
And he þat haþe þe cutte wiþ hert bliþe
Schal renne to þe toune *and* þat ful swyþe 796
To bringe vs brede *and* wyne ful p*ri*uely
And tuo of vs schal kepe ful subtelly
þis tresoure wele *and* if he wil nouht tarieñ
Wha*n*ne þat it is nyht we wollen þis tresor karieñ 800
Be one assent where as vs lust beste
An kuttes one of hem brouht in his fiste
And badde hem drawe *and* loke on whome it wolde fałł
And it fełł oñ þe ȝongest of hem ałł 804
And forþe towarde þe toune he went anone
And also sone as he was gone
The tone of hem spake þus vnto þe toþere
Thou wost wele þat þou ert myn owen sworne broþere [lf 179]
Thin p*ro*fite wil .I. tel þe anone 809
Thou woste wele þat oure felawe is gone
And here is golde *and* þat ful grete plente
þat it schal departed be amonges vs þre 812

Bot naþeles if .I. can schape it so
þat it departed weere a-monge vs tuo
Hadd .I. nouȝt done a frendes torne to þe
That oþere answerde .I. note howe þat myht be
.I. wote þat þe golde is owre tuo
What schol we seie what schold we do
Schall it be counseile seide þe first schrewe
And .I. schal tel in wordes fewe
That we schal done *and* bringe it wele aboute
.I. *grant quod* þat oþere oute of doute
þat be my treuþe .I. will þe nouht be-wreye
Now *quod* þe first þou woste wele we be tueye
And tueyne of vs schal stronger bien þan one
Looke whan he is sett *and* þat anone
Arise as þou woldest wiþ him pleye
And .I. schal renne him þoruhe þe sides tueye
Whiles þat þou stroglest wiþ him in game
And wiþ þi dagger loke þou do þe same
And þanne schal al þis golde departed be
My dere frende be-tuex me *and* þe
Than maie we boþe oure lustes fulfille
And pleie att dees riht att oure owen will
And þus accorded bien þe schrewes tueye
To sle þe þredde as ȝe herd me seie
þis ȝongest whiche þat went to þe toune
Ful oft in hert he rolleþ vpe *and* doune
þe bewte of þes floreines newe *and* briht
O lorde *quod* he if so were þat .I. myht
Al þis tresore winne to my self alone
þere is no man þat leueþ vnder þe throne
Of god þat schold leue as mery as .I.
And att þe last þe fende oure enemye
Put in his þouht þat he scholde poysoñ bye
With whiche he miht sleyne his felawes tueye
For whi þe fend fonde him in suche leueynge
That hadde leue him to sorwe bringe

For þis was vtterly his entent
To slene hem boþe *and* neuer to repent [leaf 179, back]
And forþe he goþe No longer wold he tarye
In-to þe toune vn-to a potecarie
And preide him þat he wold him sell
sum poyson þat he myht his rattes qwell
And eke þere was a polkat in his hawe
þat as he seide his capons hadd y-slawe
And seide he wold wreken him if he myht
Of vermyn þat destruyed him be nyht
The potecary anseward þou schalt haue
A þinge þat als god my soule saue
In al þis werlde *per* nys no creature
þat eten or drunke haþ of þis confecture
Not bot þe mountance of a corne of whete
þat he ne schal anone his lif for-lete
3e sterue he schal *and* þat in lesse while
þan þou wolte gone bot a pace not bot a myle
This poyson is so stronge *and* so violent
This cursed man haþ in his hande yhente
þis poysen in a box *and* seþen he ranne
In-to þe next strete vnto a man
And borwed him large botels þre
And in þe tueyne þis poyson poured he
þe þredde he keped clen for his drinke
For al þe nyht he schop him to swynke
In cariynge of þe golde out [of] þat place
And whan þis ryetoure wiþ sory grace
Hadde filled wiþ him his grete botcles þre
To his felawes ayeine repaireþ he
What needeþ it to sermon þer-of more
For riht as þei had kast his deþe to-fore
Riht so þei haue him sleyne *and* þat anone
And whan þat þis was done þan spak þe tone
Nowe lat vs drinke *and* sitte *and* make vs merye
And afterward we wollen his body berye

And efteward it happed him *per*cas
To take þe botel þer-in þe poyson was
And drange *and* 3aue his felawe drinke also
For whiche anone þei storuen boþe tuo
Bott certes .I. suppose þat Aucyenne
Wrote neuer in no canon ne in no fenne
No wonder sorwes of enpoysonynge.
Thus hadde þes wriches tuo here endeinge [leaf 180]
Thus ended buen þes homicides tuo.
And eke þe false empoysonere also
O cursede sinne ful of cursednesse
O traitoures homicideres o wikkednesse
O. glotony. o luxurye o hasardye
Þou blasphemer of crist wiþ velanye
And oþes grete of vsage *and* of pride
Alas mankinde howe may it betide
Thereto þine Creato*ur* whiche þat þe wrouht
And wiþ his p*re*cious blode þe bouhte
Thowe ert so fals *and* so vnkinde alas
Nowe good men god for-3eue 3owe 3oure trespas
And war 3owe fro þe sinne of Auarice
Myne holy p*ar*don may 3ow al warissche
So þat 3e ofer nobles oþer sterlinges
O*þer*e elles siluer spones broches or ringes
Boweþ 3owre heued vnder þis holy bulles
Co*mm*eþ vpe 3e wives *and* offer 3oure wolles
3oure name .I. entre here in my rolle anone
In-to þe blisse of heuen schole 3e gone
.I. 3owe assoile be myne hihe pouer*e*
3e þat wollen offere as clene and eke as clere
As 3e weer borne *and* sires lo þus .I. p*re*che
And ih*es*u crist þat is oure sowles leche
So g*r*aunt 3owe his p*ar*don to receyve
For þat is best .I. wil 3owe nouht deceyve
Bot sires o worde for-gat .I. in my tale
.I. haue Reliques *and* p*ar*don in my male

As faire as any man of yngelonde
Whiche were me yȝeue be þe popes honde
If any of ȝow wil of deuocione
Offerne *and* haue myne absolucione
Commeþ for anone *and* kneleþ adowne here
And ȝe schal haue my p*ar*don þat is dere
Or elles takeþ p*ar*don as ȝe wende
All newe *and* frishe att euery tounes ende
So þat ȝe offren alwei newe *and* newe
Nobles *and* pens whiche þat bien good *and* trewe
It is an honur to eueryche þat is here
þat ȝe maye haue a suffisaunt p*ar*donere
To assoile ȝow in contre as .I. ride
For aventures whiche þat mai be-tide
For p*ar*aduenture þere maie fal on or tuo [leaf 180, back]
Doune of his hors *and* breke his nekke a two
Looke whiche a surte it is to ȝowe al
þat .I. am in ȝoure felischipe yfal
þat maie assoile ȝowe boþe more *and* lasse
Whan þat þe soule fro þe body passe
.I. rede þat oure oste schal beginne
For he is most envolupte in sinne
Commeþ forþe sire oste *and* offer first anone
And þou schalt kisse re relikes eu*er*ychone
ȝe for a grote vnbokel anone þi purce
Nay nay haue I. þan q*uo*d he cristes curce
Lat be q*uo*d he it schal not be so þeiche
þou woldests make me kisse þine olde breche
And swere it were a relike of a seint
þouhe it were wiþ þi foundement depeint
Bot be cros þat seint Elyne fonde
.I. wold .I. had þi coylons in myne honde
In stede of relikes oþer of seyntuarie
Let cutt hem of .I. wil þe helpe hem carie
Thei scholl be schryned in an hogges torde
This p*ar*doner answerd nouht a worde

So wroþe he was he nold no worde seie
Nowe *quod* oure oste .I. wil no longer pleie
Wiþ þe no wiþ none oþer angre mañ
Bott riht anone þe worþi knyht be-gan)
Whan þat he sawhe þat al þe peple louhe
No more of þis for it is riht y-nouhe
Sire *par*doner be meri *and* glad of chere
And 3e sire oste þat bene to me so dere
I pray 3owe þat 3e kisse þe *par*donere
And *par*doner .I. praie þe þat þou drau þe nere
And as we dide now late vs lauhe *and* pleie
Anone þei kisse *and* reden forþe þeire weye

Explicit fabula questoris:

GROUP D. FRAGMENT V.

§ 1. WIFE OF BATH'S PREAMBLE.

LANSDOWNE MS.

Incipit prologus vxoris/. de Bathe. [on leaf 87]

THan schortly ansewarde þe wife of Bathe 1*
And swore a wonder grete haþe } spurious link 2*
Be goddes bones .I. wil tel next 3*
.I. will nouht glose bot saye þe text 4*
Experiment þouhe none auctorite 1
Where in þis werlde is riht y-nouhe for me,
To speke of woo þat is in mariage
For lordeinges sen .I. twelue 3ere was of Age 4
þonked be god þat eterne alyue
Hosbondes att þe cherche dor .I. haue hadde five
If .I. so oft myht haue wedded be
Bot al were worþi men in here degre. 8
Bot me was tolde certein nou3t longe a-gon es [leaf 87, back]
þat seþen criste ne went neuer bot ones
To weddeinge in þe Cane of Galile
That be þilke ensample tauht he me 12
þat .I. ne scholde wedded bue bot ones
Herke eke loo suche a scharpe worde for þe nones
Be side a well ihesu god *and* man
Spak in repreue of þe Samaritan 16
þou hast hi-hadde fyve husbondes quod he
And þat ilke man þat nowe haþe þe
Is nouht þin husbonde þus seide he serteine
What he ment þerby .I. kan nouht seine 20
Well. Bot þat .I. ax. whi þe fift mane
Was none husbonde to þe Semaritane
How many myht sche haue in mariage
3it herd .I. neuer tell in myne age 24

vpon þis nombre diffinicione
Men maie devine *and* glosene vp *and* downe
Bot wele .I. wote expresse wiþ-oute lye
God bad vs wax *and* multiplye
þat gentil tixt can .I. wele vnder-stonde
Eke wele .I. he seide myn husbonde
Scholde lete fader *and* moder *and* tak to me
Bot of no nombre mencione maade he
Of bygamy or of octagamye
Whi scholde y þan of it haue velanye
Loke here þe wisman kinge Salomon
.I. trowe he had wyues mo þan one
Now wolde god it leuefuH were to me
To be refresched half so oft as he
Whiche ȝift of god had he for al his wyves
No man haþe suche þat in þis werld on lyue is
God wote þis noble kinge as to my witt
þe first nyht he hadde mony a mery fitt
Wiþ iche of hem so wele was him on live
Blissed be god þat .I. haue wedded fyue
Welcome be þe sext whan þat euer he schaH
For soþe .I. wil nouȝt kepe chaste in aH
Whan myn husbonde is from þe werlde gone
Son cresten man schal wedde me a-none
For þan þe Apostle seiþe þat .I. am fre
To wedde on goddes halue where it likeþ me
He seiþe to be wededde is no sinne — Melius *est* nubere
Better is to be wedded þan to berne — *quam* vri [leaf 8b]
What rekkeþe me þouhe folke seie velanye
Of schrewed lameþ *and* his Bigamye
.I. wote wele Abraham was an holy man
And Iacob eke as fer as euere y kan
And eche of hem had wyves mo þan tuo
And mony anoþer holy man also
Wher can ȝe seye in any maner age
þat vs god defended Mariage

Be expresse worde .I. praie 3owe telleþ me
Or where *com*maunded he virginite
.I. wote as wele as 3e it is no drede
The Apostle whan he spekeþe of Maidenhede
He seide þere-of precept had .I. none
Men mai consel a wo*m*man to bene one
Bott counseillinge is no comandement
He put it in owre owen Iugement
For had god co*m*manded maidenhede
þan hadde he dampned wedinge wiþ þe dede
And certes if þere were no sede .I.-sowe
virginite þan where-of schold it growe
Poule dorst nouht co*m*manden att þe leste
A þinge of whiche his maistre 3af him none heste
The darte is sett vp for virginitee
Chase who so maye. who so renneþ best let see
Bot þis worde is nouht take of eu*e*ry whiht
Bot þere as god wolde gif it of his myht
.I. wote wele þat þe Apostle was a maide
Bot Naþeles þouhe þat he wrote or saide
He wolde þat eu*e*ry wight were suche as he
AH ne is bot counseiH to virginite
And for to be a wif he 3aue me leue
Of Indulgence so is it of no repreue
To wedde me if þat my. make dye
Wiþ-oute excepcione of bigamye
Al were it goode no wo*m*man for to touche
He ment as in his body or his couche
For periH is boþe to touche *and* for to assemble
3e knowe what þis ensample maie resemble
þis aH *and* so*m*me he helde virginite
Mor p*er*fite þan wedded in frelete.
Freelte clepe .I. nouht bot þat he *and* sche [leaf 88, back]
Wolde lede here life al in chastite
.I. gr*a*unte it wele .I. haue none envye
þouhe maidenhed pr*e*fer bygamye

It likeþ hem to be clene in body *and* goste
Of myne astate .I. wil make no boste
For wele ȝe knowe a lorde in his housholde
Haþe nouht eu*ery* vessel of golde
Some biene of tree *and* done lorde ser*u*ise
God clepeþ folke to him in sunder wise
And eu*ery*che haþ of god a pr*o*per ȝift
Som þis. som þat. as him likeþ to schift
Virginite is grete p*er*fectione
And conscience eke wiþ deuocione
Bot crist þat of p*er*fectiõ is well
Bad nouht eu*ery* whight he schold sell
All þat he hadde *and* ȝiue it to þe pore
And in suche wise folowe him *and* his lore
He spak to hem þat wolden leue p*er*fitelye
And lordeynges be ȝoure leue þat am nouȝt .I.
.I. wyl be-stowe þe flowre of al myne age
In charite *and* fruyte of Mariage
Tel me also to what conclusione
Were membres maade of gen*er*acione
And of so p*er*fit wise *and* why y-wrouht
Trosteþ riht wele þei were nouht maad for nouht
Glose who so will *and* sei boþe vp *and* doune
þat þei were maad for purgacione
Of vryne. *and* owre boþe þinges smale
Were eke to knowe a female frome a male
And for none oþ*er*e cause what seie ȝe noo
þe exp*er*ience woote it is nouȝt soo
So þat þe clerkes be not wiþ me wroþe
.I. sei þis þet þei maked bue for boþe
þis is to seine for Office *and* for ese
Of engenderinge þ*er*e we nouht god displese
Whi scholden men elles in hire bokes sette
þat man schal ȝelde to his wife his dette
Nowe where-wiþ scholde he paye his payment
If þat he ne vsed his sely instrument

Than were þei maade vpon a creature
To purge vryne *and* eke for engendrure,
Bot .I. sei nouȝt þat eu*er*y wyht is holde [leaf 189]
þat haþe suche hernays as .I. to ȝow of tolde 136
To gone *and* vsen hem in engendrure
Than scholde men take of chastite no cure
Criste was a mayden *and* schapen as a man
And mony a seinte soþþ þat þis werlde began 140
ȝit leued þei euer in *per*fite charite
.I. nyl envye wiþ no virginite
Lete hem ete brede of pured whete sed
And late vs wyues ete barly brede 144
And ȝit wiþ barly brede Marke tel can
Owre lorde ih*es*u refrissched mony a man
In suche astate þat god haþ cleped vs
.I. wil p*er*seuere .I. am nouht p*re*cious 148
In whifehode wil .I. vse myne Instrument
As frely as my maker haþ it sent
If .I. be daungerous god gif me sorwe
Myne husbond schal it haue boþe eue *and* morwe 152
Whan þat him luste com forþe *and* paie his dette
An husbond .I. wil haue .I. wil not lette
Whiche schal be boþe my dett*our* *and* my þraƚ 155
And haue his tribulacione wiþ aƚ
Vpon his flesche while þat .I. am his wif
.I. haue þe powere dureinge al my lif
Vpon his *pro*pre body *and* not he
Riht þus þe Apostle tolde to me 160
And bad owre husbondes for to loue vs wele
Al þis sentens me likeþ euery dele
Vp stert þe p*ar*doner *and* þat anone
Nowe dame q*uo*d he be god *and* be seinte Iohñ 164
ȝe bue a noble prechoure in þis cas
.I. was aboute to wed a wif alas
What schold .I. by it on my flesche so dere
ȝit had .I. leuere none wedde to ȝere 168

¶ Ad Cor*inthios* .vijo. vir sui corp*or*is pot*es*tatem non hab*et* sed muller.

Abide quod sche Mi tale is nouȝt be-gonne
Nay þou schalt drinken of a noþere tonne
Are þat .I. go schal sauere wers þan ale
And whan þat .I. haue tolde forþe my tale
Of tribulacione in mariage
Of whiche .I. am experte in myne age
This is to seye Mi-self haþ be þe whippe
þan maist þou chese weder þou wilt scippe
Thilke tonne þat .I. schal a-broche [leaf 89, back]
Be ware of it er þou to nyhe aproche
For [I] schal telle ensamples mo þan tenne
Wo so þat wil be war of oþere menne
Be him schal oþer men correct be
þis same wordes writeþe tholome
Ride in his almagist *and* take it þere
Dame .I. praye ȝowe if ȝoure wil were
Said þis pardoner as ȝe began
Tel forþ ȝowre tale spare for no man
And teche vs ȝonge men of ȝoure practike
Gladly quod sche if it maie ȝowe like
Bot þat .I. praie to al þis compaignye
If þat .I. speke after my fantasie
As takeþe not a greue of þat .I. saie
For myne entent is nouht bot for to pleie

Nowe sires þan schal .I. tel ȝowe my tale
As euere most .I. drink wyne or ale
.I. schal seie soþe þe husbondes þat I. had
As þre of hem were riht good *and* tuo were badde
The þre were godemen *and* riche *and* olde
Vnneþ myht þei þe state holde
In whiche þei were bounden vnto me
ȝe wote wele what .I. mene of þis parde
As god me help .I. lauhe whan .I. þinke
Howe pytously a nyht .I. maade hem swynke
Bot be me feie .I. told of hit no store
þei hadde me ȝeue hir londe *and* here tresore

Me neded nou3t do longer diligence
To wynne her loue *and* done hem reu*e*rence
Thei loued me so wele be god aboue
þat .I. ne tolde no deynte of here loue
A wise wo*m*man wil bisie hir*e* eu*e*re in one
To gete hire loue 3e þare as sche haþe none
Bot seþþe .I. hadde hem holy in myne honde
And siþþe þat þei hadde 3if me al hir londe
What schold .I. take hem for to plese
Bot if it were my profit *and* myne ese
Bot .I. set hem so awerke be my faye
þat mony a nyht þei songen walawaye
The bacon was nou3t fette for hem .I. trowe
That su*m* men haue in Essexe att Donnemowe
I gouerne hem so wele after my lawe [leaf 90]
That iche of hem ful blisful was *and* fawe
To bringe me gay þinges fro þe fayre
Knyves ringes *and* purces wel fayre
For god it wote .I. chidde hem spitously
Nowe herkeneþe howe .I. bare me p*r*opu[r]ly
3e wise wyves þat can vnder-stonde
Thus scholde 3e speke *and* bere hem wronge on honde
For halue so boldely þer can no man
Swere *and* lye as a wo*m*man can
.I. seie nouht þis be wives þat bue wise
Bot it be whan þet þei hem mis-avise
A wise wif schal if þat sche can hir*e* gode
Bere him on honde þat þe cowe is wode
And take wittenes of hire owen maide
Of hir assent Bot herkeneþe how .I. saide
Sir olde keynard þis is þin arraie
Whi is my neihbors wif so gaie
Sche is honoured ou*er* al wher sche goþe
.I. sette att home .I. haue no þrifty cloþe
What dedest þou att myn neihbors house
Is sche so feire ert þou so amerouse

What roune ȝe wiþ oure maide benedicite
Sire oldé lichour lat þi Iapes bue
And if .I. haue a gossib or a frende
Wiþ-oute gilte ȝe chide as a fende
ȝif þat .I. walk or pleie in-to his house
Thowe comest home as dronke as mouse
An prechest on þi bynche wiþ yuel preue
Tho seid to me it is a grete Meschief
To wedde a pouer womman for costage
And if þat sche be riche of grete parage
Þan seist þat it is a tormentrie
To suffur hire pride *and* malancolie
And if þat sche be faire þou verre knave
Thow seiste þat euery hullur wiþ hir have
Sche maie no while in chastite abide
That is assaide vpon iche a side
Thowe seiste som folke desiré us for oure richesse
Som for oure schappe *and* some for owre fairenesse
And sum for sche kan eyþer singe oþere daunce
Þus seyse þou wernard god ȝeue þe meschaunce
Some for her hondes *and* her armes smale [leaf 90, back]
Þus goþe al to þe deuel be þi tale
Þou seiste men maie nouȝt kepe a castel waþ
If maye so longe assailed be ouer aþ
And. if þat sche be foule þou seist þat sche
couetehe euery man þat sche maie see
For as a spanyel sche wil on him lepe
Til þat sche finde sum man þat wil hir chepe
Ne none so grei goos goþe þere in þe lake
As seiste þou þat wil bue wiþ-owten make
And seist it is an harde þinge for to welde
A wyght þat no man wil his þonkes helde
Thus seiste þou lorel whan þou gost to bedde
And þat no wise man nedeþ for to wedde
And no man þat entendeþ to þe heuene
Wiþ wilde þonder dint *and* fire leuene

Mot þi welked nekke be to-broke
Thow seist þat dropinge howses *and* eke smoke
And chidinge wyves maken men to flye
Owte of her owen house a benedicite
What eyleþe suche an holde man for to chide
þou seist we wiues wil owre vices hide
Til we be fast *and* þan we wil hem schewe
Wele maie þis be a prouerbe of a schrewe
Thou seist þat oxen assen hors *and* houndes
þei buen assaide att diuers stoundes
Basyns lauours er þat men hem bye
Spones stoles *and* suche husbondrie
And so buen cloþes pottes *and* oþere araies
Bot aren of wemmen maked none assaies
Til þei be wedded olde dotard schrewe
And seystowe we wil þan owre vices schewe
Thou seiste also þat it displeseþ me
Bot if þou wilt preis my beute
And bot þou poure alwei vpon my face
And clepe me faire dame in euery place
Bot þou make a fest on þilke daie
þat .I. was borne *and* make me frische *and* gaie
And bot þou do to my Norise honoure
And to my chambre wiþ-inne my boure
An to my faders folke *and* his allyes
Thus seist þou olde barel full of lyes
And ȝit of oure prentise Iankyn [leaf 91]
For his crispe here schyneinge so gold fine
And for he swyers me boþe vp *and* downe
ȝit hast þou þouht *and* false suspecione
.I. wiht him nouht þouhe þowe were dede to morue
Bot tel me þis whi hides þou wiþ sorwe
The kayes of þi kist aweie fro me
.It. is my good as wele as þine parde
What wenes þou maake an Ideot of owr dame
Nowe be þat lorde þat calle is seint Iame

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Lansdowne MS.**

Thowe schalt nouht bo|e þouhe þat þou were wode
Be maistre of Mi body and my goode
þat on þou schalt for-goo mawgreve þine ey3en
What helpeþ it on me enquere *and* spien
.I. trowe þouhe þou woldest loke me in þi chist
þou schold seie wif go where as 3ow liste
Take 3owre disporte .I. wil not leue no tales
.I. knowe 3ow for a good wif Dam Ales
We loue no man þat take kepe or charge
Where þat we go we will be at owre large
Of al men blissed mot he be
The wise Astrologen Dam Ptholome
That seiþ þis prouerbe in his Almagest
Of al men his wisdome is hiest
þat rekkeþ nouht who haþ þis werlde in honde
Be þis prouerbe þou schalt wele vnde-stonde
Haue þoue .I.-nowhe what þare þe rekke or kare
Howe merely þat o|e[r] folke fare
For certes olde dotterd be 3oure leue
3e schal haue qweynte riht. ynowhe att eue
He is to grete a nigarde þat wil warne
A man to lyht a candel att his lanterne
He schal haue neuere þe lesse liht parde
Haue þou .I.-nowhe þe þar not pleine þe
Thou seiste also þat if þou make vs gaie
Wiþ Clo|einge or wiþ precious araye
þat it is peril of owre chastite
And 3it wiþ wordes þou moste enfors me
And seie þes wordes in þe Apostles name
In Abite maad wiþ chastite and schame
3e wemmen schold apparel 3owe quod he
And nou3t in tressede here *and* gay perre
As perel ne wiþ gold ne clo|es riche
Aftere þi tixte ne after þi rubriche
.I. wil nout wirke as muche as a gnatte
Thou seide als þat .I. was like a catte

[leaf 91, back]

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Lansdowne MS.**

Bot who so wolde seigne a catte scynne
þat wolde þe cat wele dwelle in his Inne
And if þe catt skynne be skyke *and* gaie
Sche nil nouht dwel in house halue a daie 352
Bot forþe sche wiH or any daie be dawede
To schewe hir scynn *and* go a Caterwawede
This is to sei .If .I. be gaie *sir* schlewe [1 *A letter has been scratcht out after the* h *in this word.*]
.I. wil rinne out My boreH for to sschewe
Sire olde foole whatte helpeþ þe to spyen 357.
Theihe þou preie Argus wiþ his hondred eyȝen Argus habuit C oculos
To be my wardeȩors as he can best
In feiþe he schal nouȝt kepe me bot if me list 360
ȝite couþe .I. maake his berde so mut .I. þe
Thow seist eke þat þere be þinges þre
The whiche þinges troublen al þis erþe
And þat no whiht ne maye endure þe ferþe 364
O leue sir schrewe ihesu schort þi lif
ȝet prechest þou *and* seist an hateful wif
.I.-reknyd is for on of þis meschaunces
Bene þere none oþer maner resemblaunces 368
That ȝe maie likken ȝowre parables to
Bot ȝif a sely wif be on of þo
Thou likenest wommannes loue to heH
To Bareine londe þer water maie not dwelle 372
Thou likenest it also to wilde fire
þe more it berneþ þe more it haþe desire
To consume any þinge þat brent wolde bee
þou seist riht as wermes schendeþ a tree 376
Riht so a wif distreyeþ hir husbonde
This knowe þei þat bue to wyues bonde
¶ Lordeynges riht þus as ȝe haue vnder-stande
Bare .I. stifly myne olde hu[s]bondes on hande 380
þat þus þei seiden in her drunkennes
And þat he had suspecion *and* Ielousenes
On Iankyn *and* on my nefe also
O lorde þe peine .I. ded hem *and* þe woo 384

Ful giltelesse be goddes swete pine
For as an hors .I. coupe bope bite *and* whyne
.I. coupe pleine . *and* .I. was in pe gilte [leaf 92]
Or elles oft time .I. had bue spilte 388
Who-so pat first to melle comep first grindep
.I. pleyned first so .I. owre werre stintep
Thei were ful gladde to excusen hem ful bliue
Of pinge whiche pei gilt neuer her lyue 392
Of wenches wolde .I. beren hem on honde
Whann pat for seke vnnep pei myht stonde
3it tikeled .I. his hert for pat he
Wend .I. hadde of him so grete cherte 396
.I. swore pat al my walkynge be nyht
Was to aspye wenches pat he diht
Vnder pat colour had .I. mony a myrpe
For al suche witte is 3eue us in owre birpe 400
Desceite wepeynge spynny*n*ge . god hape 3eue ¶ Fallere flere nere dedit deus in Muliere
To wo*m*man kindely while pat pei maie leue
And pus of o pinge .I. auaunt me
Att pe ende .I. had pe beste in yche degre 404
Be sley3t or force or be sum manere pinge
As by continuel murmur or grucchinge
Namely abedde had pei muschaunce
Ther wolde .I. chide *and* do hem no plesance 408
.I. wolde no longer in pe bedde abide
If pat .I. felte his arme ouer my side
Til he had made his raunson vn-to me
Than wolde .I. suffre him do his nycete 412
¶ And per-for euery man pis tale .I. telle
Wyue who so maie al her for to selle
Wippe empty hande men may none haukes lure
For wynynge wold .I. al his lust endure 416
And make me a feyned appetite
And 3it in bacon had .I. neuere delyte
That maked me pat eu*er* y wolde him chide
For pouhe pe pope had sette him be side 420

I wold nouȝt spare him att his owene borde
For be my trouþe .I. white him worde for worde
As helpe me verrei gode omnipotent
þouhe .I. scholde riht nowe make my testament
.I. ne hawe him a worde þat it nes quitte
.I. brouht it so aboute be my witte
þat he mot ȝeue it vp as for þe best
Or elles had we neuer bue in rest
For þouhe he loked as a lyone [leaf 92, back]
ȝit scholde he faile of his conclusione
þan wolde .I. sei goode leue take kepe
Howe Mekely lokeþ wilkin owre schepe
Com nere my spouse lat me ba þi cheke
ȝe scholle be al pacient *and* meke
And hane a swete spiced conscience
Sen ȝe so preche of Iobis pacience
Suffreþ al-weie synne ȝe so wel can preche
And bot ȝe do certeine we schol ȝowe teche
þat it is faire to haue a wif in pes
One of vs mote bowen douteles
And siþþe a man is more resonable
Than womman is sir ȝowe must be more suffreable
What eyleþ ȝowe to gruche þus *and* grone
Is it for ȝe wolde haue myn queynte alone
Whi take it al lo haue it euery dele
Petere .I. schrewe ȝowe bot ȝe loue me wele
For. if .I. wolde selle my bele chose
.I. couþe walke as fresche as a rose
Bot .I. wil kepe it for ȝoure owen toþe
ȝe be to blame be god .I. saie ȝow soþe
Suche maner wordes had we on honde
¶ Now wil .I. speke of my ferþe husbonde
My ferþe husbonde was a reueloure
This is to sey he had a *paramour*
And .I. was ȝonge *and* ful of ragerie
Stiborne and stronge and Ioly as a pye

Lorde howe coupe .I. daunce to an harpe smale
And singe .I.-wis as any nyhten-gale
Whan .I. hadde dronke a drawht of swete wyne
Metelinge þe foule cherle þe swyne
That wiþ a staf beraft his wif here lyf
For sche dranke wyne. þouhe .I. had bue his wif
Ne scholde he nouht haue daunted me fro drinke
And after wyne of venus must .I. þinke
For also seker as colde engenderep haile
A likerous moupe most haue a likerous taile
In womman vi[n]olent is no defence
þis knowen lichours bue experience
Bot lorde criste whan þat it remembrep me
Vpon my 3oupe. *and* my Iolyte.
It tikelep me aboute myne herte Rote [leaf 93]
Vnto þis daie it dop myne hert bote
That .I. haue had my werlde as my time
Bot age alas þat all wil envenyme
Hape me be-raft my beaute *and* my pippe
Lat go fare wele þe deuel go þere wiþþe
The floure is gone þere is no more to telle
þe bran as .I. best can nowe mot .I. selle
Bot 3it to be riht merye wolde .I. fonde
Now forþe to tell of my ferþe husbonde
.I. sei .I. had in herte grete dispite
þat he of any oþer had delite
Bot he was qwytte be god *and* be seinte Iose
.I. maade him of þe same wode a crose
Not of my body in no foule manere
Bot certeynly .I. maade folke suche chiere
þat in his owen gres .I. maade him frie
For angers *and* for verraie Ielousye
Be god in erþe .I. was his purgatorye
For whiche .I. hope his soule be in glorie
For god it wote he satte ful ofte *and* songe
Whan þat his scho ful bitterly him wronge.

For þere was none saue gode *and* hë þat wiste
In mony wise where .I. him twiste
He dyed whan .I. cam from Ierusaleme
And lyeþ in a graue vnder þe rode beme
Al nys is toumbe not so curious
As was þe sepulcre of him Darius
Whiche þat Appelles wrouhten soubtely
It nys bot wast to beri him preciouslye
Lat him fare wele god ȝeue his sowle rest
He is nowe in his graue *and* in his chest
Nowe of my fift husbond wil .I. telle
God lat neuer his soule come in helle
And ȝete was he to me þe most schrewe
þat fele .I. on my ribbes al be rewe
And euer schal vn-to myne endeynge daie
Bot in owre bedde he was so fressche *and* gaie
And þer-wiþ also wele couþe he me glose
Whan þat he wolde haue my bele chose
þat þouhe he hadde me bette on eu*e*ry bone
He couþe winne a-ȝeine my loue a-none
.I. trow .I. louede him bette for he [leaf 93, back]
Was of his loue daungerous to me
We w*e*mmen haue if þat .I. schal nouht lye
In þis manere a qweynte fantasye
Whayte what þinke we may nouht lyhtly haue
þere-after wil we crie al daie *and* craue
For-bede us þinge *and* þat desiren we
Pres on vs fast *and* þan wil we flie
Wiþe daungier owten we al oure chafre
Gret pres att þe Market makeþ dere ware
And to grete chepe is holde att littel pris
þis knoweþ euery wo*m*man þat is wys
My venus husbonde god his soule blisse
Whiche þat .I. toke for loue *and* for no richisse
He sumtyme was a clerke of Oxenforde
And had left scole and went att home to borde

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Lansdowne MS.**

Wiþþe my gossibbe dwelinge in oure toune
God haue hire soule hire name was Alison
Sche knewe myne hert *and* al my *priucte*
better þan oure *parische preste* so mot .I. þe
To hire be-wryed .I. my counseH aH
For hadde my husbond pissed on a waH
Or done a þinge þat scholde haue cost his lif
To hir *and* to anoþer worþi wif
And to my nece whiche .I. loue wele
.I. wolde haue tolde his counsel eu*ery* dele
And so .I. dide ful often god it wote
þat maade his face often rede *and* hote
For verray schame *and* blamed him-selfe for he
Had tolde to me so grete a *priuete*
And so it be-feH þat ones in a lente
So oft time .I. to my gossip wente
For euer ȝit .I. loued to be gay
And for walke in marche aprile *and* Maie
Fro hous to hous to herken sondaye tales
þat Iankin clerke *and* my gossib dam Alice
And .I. my selfe in-to þe felde wente
Myne husbond was att Londen al þat lente
.I. hadde þe better leyser for to pleie
And for to see *and* eke for to be seie
Of lusty folke what wist .I. where my grace
Was schapen for to be or in what place
There-for maade .I. my visitacions [leaf 94]
To vigiles *and* to processions
To *prec*heinge eke *and* to þis pilgrimages
To pleis of Miracles *and* of Mariages
And wered vpon my gaie scarlet Gytes
This wermes ne þes mouhtes ne þis mytes
Vpon my perel fete hem neu*er* a dele
And wost þou whie for þei were vsed wele
Nowe wil .I. telle forþe what happed me
.I. saie þat in þe felde walked wee

Til trewely we had suche daliance
þis clerke *and* .I. þat of my purueance
.I. spak to him *and* seide how þat he
.If .I. were wedowe scholde wedde me
For certeinly .I. saie for no bobance
þat was .I. neuer ȝit wiþ-oute purueance
Of mariage ne of oþer þinges eke
.I. holde a mannes witte nouht worþe a leke
þat haþ bott one hole to sterte vnto
And if þat faile þan is þat al y-do
[I bare hym on honde he hadde enchaunted me [Cambr. Univ. MS Li 3. 25, *leaf* 116, *line* 9]
My dame taught me that subtilte
And I seide I mette of hym aƚƚ nyght
He wolde haue shamed me as I ley vp-right
And my bedde was verey blode
But yite I hope that ye shuƚƚ do me good
ffor good blode be-tokenyth Golde as I was taught
And aƚƚ was fals I dremed of hym right noght̄
But as I folowed my Dames lore
[*a line misst in the MS.*]] [MS Li 3. 26 *extract stops*]
Bot nowe sire lete me se what .I. schal seyne
A ha be god .I. haue my tale a-ȝeine
Whan þat myn faire husbonde laie on bere
.I. wepe al gate. *and* maad sory chiere
As wives moten for it is vsage
And wiþ my kerchef kouerde my vesage
Bot for þat .I. was purveide of a make
.I. wepe bot smale *and* þat .I. vnder take
To cherche was my husbonde borne on morwe
Wiþ neyhbors þat for him maad sorwe
And Iankin oure clerke was on of þo
As helpe me god whan þat .I. sihe him go
Affeter þe bere me þouht he hadd a peire
Of leges of feet so clene *and* faire
þat al my herte .I. ȝaf vn-to his holde
He was .I. trowe tuew[n]ty winter olde

And .I. was fourty. if þat .I. schal seie soþe
Bot ȝit .I. had alwaie a coltes toþe
Gate toþede .I. was *and* þat be-come me wele
.I. had þe *printe* of seint venus seale
As helpe me god .I. was a *lusti one*
And faire *and* riche *and* ȝonge *and* wele be-gone
And treuly as myne husbonde *tolde me* [leaf 94, back]
.I. hadde þe best quoniam *þat myht be*
[ffor certis/ I am aH/ fulli reue*r*yan. [Harl. 1758, *lf* 95, *in margin*]
In felyng/ & myn herte aH marcian.
Venus/ me yaf myn lust/ my *likyng/ & licorousnes/.*
And Mars/ gaf/ me my *sturdi hardynes/.*]
Myne asscendent was taurus *and* mars þ*e*re inne
Alas alas þat euer loue was sinne
.I. folowed ay myne Inclinacioñ
Be vertue of mye constillacioñ
þat maade me .I. couþe nouȝt wiþ-drawe
Mi chambre of venus frome a goode felawe
[yet/ haue I a marke of/ Mars vp-on my face. [Harl. 1758, *lf* 95 *in margin*]
And also in another/ pryue place.
ffor god so wisse be my saluacion.
I louyd neuyr/ bi non discrescion.
But euyr/ folewid myn appetite.
AH/ were he schort/ long/ blak/ or white.
I toke no kepe so that/ he liked me.
How pore he was/ ne eke of what/ degre.] [Harl. 1758 *extract stops*]
What scold .I. seie bot at þe moneþes ende
This Ioly clerk Iankin þat was so hende
Haþe wedde me wiþ grete solempnite
And to him ȝaf .I. al þe londe *and* fee
þat euere was me ȝeuene þare before
Bot afterwarde repentede me ful sore
He wolde suffer no þing of my lust
Be god he smote me ones on þe luste
for þat .I. rent oute of his booke a lef
þat of þat stroke myne eren wexen def

Styborne .I. was as is a lyonesse
And of my tonge a verreie Iangeleres
And walke .I. walde as .I. had do be-forne
Frome house to house al þouhe he had it sworne
For wiþ often time he wolde preche
And me olde romans gestes teche
Howe he simplicius gallus left his wif
And hire for-soke for terme of his lif
Not bot for hopen hede he hire seie
Lokeynge oute att his dore on a daie
Anoþer Romeyne tolde he me be name
That for his wif was att a somer game
Wiþ-owte his weteinge he for-sooke here eke
And þan wolde he vpon his bible seeke
þat ilke prouerbe of ecclesiast
Where he commandeþ *and* for-bedeþ fast
Man schal not suffur his wif go roile a-boute
Than wolde he saie riht þus wiþ-outen doute
¶ Who so þat bildeþ his house al of salowes Nota
And prikeþ his blinde hors ouer þ[e] falowes
And sufferþ his wif for seken halowes
Is worþi to be honge on þe galowes
Bot al for not .I. set not an hawe
Of his prouerbes ne of his olde lawe.
Ne .I. wolde nouht of him correct be [leaf 95]
.I. hate him þat my vice telleþ me
And so do mo god wote of vs þan .I.
þis maade him wiþe me woode al vtterly
.I. nolde nouht for-bere him in no caas
Nowe wil .I. seye ȝowe soþe be seint thomas
Whi þat .I. rent oute of his boke a lefe
For whiche he smote me þat .I. was defe
He had a booke þat gladly nyht *and* daie
For his disporte he wolde rede al weie
He clepede valerye *and* theofraste
Att whiche boke he lauhe al-weye ful fast

Ande eke þare was sum time a clerke in rome
A Cardinale þat hiht seint Ierome
þat maad a boke aȝeine Iouynyane
In whiche booke eke þer was torculane
Crisippus Trecula and helowys
That was Abbas nouȝt fer fro parische
And eke þe paraboles of Salomon
Ovydes arte *and* bokes many one
And al þis were boundene in o velome
And euery nyht *and* day was his custome
Whan he had leysere *and* vacacione
frome oþer werldly occupacione
To reden on þis boke of wikked wyues
He knewe of hem mo legentez *and* liues
Than bue of goode wyues in þe bible
For trusteþ wele it is an impossible
þat any clerke wil speken good of wyves
Bot if it bue of holy seintes lyues
Ne of none oþer womman neuere þe mc
Who peynted þe lyon tel me who
Be god if wemmen had wreten stories
As clerkes haue wiþ-inne-hire oratories
Thei wold haue wreten of men more wikkednesse
þan al þe mark of Adam maie redresse
The childern of Mercure *and* Venus
Bene in hire wirkeinge contrarius
Mercurie loue wisdome *and* sciens
And venus loueþ riote *and* dispens
And for hir diuers disposicion
Sche falleþ in oþer exaltacion.
And þus godde wote Mercurie is desolate [leaf 95, back]
In piscis where venus is exaltate
And venus falleþ þere Mercurie is reised
þere-for no womman of no man is preised
þe clerke whan he is olde *and* maie nouht do
Of venus werkes worþe his olde scho

Than sitte he doune *and* write in his dotage
That wemmen kan nouht kepe here Mariage
Bot nowe to purpos why .I. tolde þe
þat .I. was beten for a booke perde
Vpon a nyht Iankin þat was owre sire
Radd on his boke as he satte be þe fire
Of Eue first þat for hire wykkednesse
Was al man kinde first brouht to wrechednesse
[for whicħ Ihesu crist / him silff was sleyne [Laud. MS 600, leaf 85]
that boughţ vs with his herte blood ageyne [No other Oxford MS has these lines.—G. Parker.]
lo here expresse of recorde / may ye fynde
that woman was the loos / of al mankynde]
þo redde he me howe sampson lost his heris
Slepeinge his lemman kut it wiþþe hire scheris
Thorwhe whiche treson loste he boþe his eyȝen
þo redde he me if þat .I. schal nouht lyȝen
Of Hercules & of Dyamyre
þat caused him to sett him self a fire
Noþinge forȝate he þe penance *and* woo
þat Socrates had wiþþe his wyues twoo
Howe þat ancippa kest pisse on his hede
þis sely man satte stiłł as he were dede
He wype his hede no more dorst he seine
Bot or þat þonder stinte comeþ a raine
Of Phasipha þat was queene of Crete
For schrewednesse him þouht þe tale swete
Fy speke no more it [is] a grisely þinge
Of hire orrible lust *and* hir lykeinge
Of Clitermistra for hir lycherie
þat falsly maad hir husbond for to deye
He red it wiþ ful good deuocioñ
He told me for what occasioñ
Amphiorax att Thebes lost his lif
Myne husbond hadd a legent of his wife
Eriphilem þat for a nouche of golde
Haþe priuely vnto þe Grekes tolde

Where þat hir husbond hid him in a place
For whiche he hadd att Thebes sori grace
Off lima tolde he me. & of lucye
þei boþe maade her husbondes for to deye
That oone for loue þe toþer was for hate [leaf 90]
Lyma hir husbonde on euen late
Enpoysond had for þat sche was his foo
Lucia likerous loued hire husbond soo
þat for he schold vpon hire alweie þinke
Sche ȝaue him suche a loue maner drinke
þat he was dede or it was be þe morwe
And þus algates husbondes haue sorwe
þan tolde he me howe one latumyus
Compleynede to his felawe Arius
That in his gardyne groued suche a tre
On whiche he seide þat his wyues þre
Honged hem self for hertes dispitous
O leue broþer quod þis Arrius
ȝif me a plante of þat blisful tre
And in my gardine plantid it schal be
¶ Of latter date of wyues haþe he radde
þat han sleyne here husbonde in her bedde
And lete hire lychoure diht hire al þe nyht
Whan þat þe cors laie in flore vpriht
And sum haue dreuen nayles in here brayne
While þat þei slepe *and* þus þei haue hem sleyne
Some haue ȝeuen poyson in my drynke
He spake more harme þan hert maie be-þinke
And þerwiþal he knewe of mo prouerbes
þan in þis werlde þer growen grasse or herbes
Bet is quod he þin habitacione
Be wiþ a leoun or a foule dragoñe
þan wiþ a womman vsinge for to chide
Better is quod he hihe in þe rofe abide
þan wiþ an angre wif doun in an hous
þei bene so wikked *and* contrarious

þei hateþ þat her husbonde loueþ aye
He seid a wo*m*man kest hir schame awaye
Whan sche cast of hire smok *and* forþermo
A faire wo*m*man bot sche be chaste also
Is like a gold ringe on a sowes nose
Who walde wene or wold suppose
þe wo þat in myne hert was *and* pine
And whan .I. sawe he wolde neuer fyne
To reden on þis cursed booke al nyht
Al sodanly. þre leues had .I. plyht.
Out of his boke riht as he redde *and* eke [leaf 96, back]
.I. wiþ my fiste so toke him on þe cheke
þat in oure fire he fel bakward a-doune
And he vp stert as dope a woode lyone
And wiþ his fist he smote me on þe hede
þat in þe flore .I. laie as .I. ware dede
And whan he sawhe howe stille þat .I. laie
He was a-gast *and* wolde haue fledde a-waie
Til atte þast owte of myne swohe .I. braide
O hastowe sleyne me false þefe .I. seide
And for my lande þus hast þou morþerd me
Or .I. be dede ȝit wil .I. kisse þe
And nere he come *and* kneled faire a-doune
And seide dere suster Alison
As helpe me god .I. schal þe neuer smyte
þat .I. haue done it is þi self to wite
For-ȝeue it me *and* þat .I. þe be-seke
And ȝit eft-sones .I. hitte him oñ þe cheke
And seide þef þus wil .I. me awreke
Nowe wil .I. deye .I. maie no longer speke
Bot att þe last wiþ muchel care *and* woo
We fell accorded be oure seluen tuoo
He ȝaue me al þe bride in myn honde
To haue þe gouernance of owse *and* londe
And of his tunge *and* of his honde also
And maade him birne his boke anone riht þo

And whan þat .I. had geten vn-to me
Be maistre al þe souerainte
þan he seide myne owen trewe wif
Do as þu lyst þe terme of al my lyf
Kepe þine honoure *and* kepe eke my astate
After þat daie we had neuere debate
God helpe me so .I. was to him als kinde
As any wyf fro danmark in-to hinde
And also trewe *and* so was he to me
.I. praie to god þat siteþ in maieste
So blisse his sowle for his mercy dere
Nowe wil .I. seie my tale. if ȝe wil here

[*The Wrangle between the Summoner and Friar.*]

The frere lowhe whan he had herd al þis
Nowe dame quod he so haue .I. ioye or blis
þis is a longe preamble of a tale
And whan þe Somenour herde þe frere gale
[1]Lo quod þe Somenour be goddes armes tuo
A frere wil entremete him euer mo
Lo godemen a flye *and* eke a frere
wiH fal in euery dissche *and* eke matere
What spekest þow of preambulacione
What amble or trote or pees or goo sitte adoune
Thou lettest owre disporte in þis manere
ȝe wil-tow so Somenour quod þe frere
Nowe be fey .I. schal or þat .I. go
TeH of a somenour. suche a tale or tuo
þat al þe folke schal lawhen In þis place
Nowe elles frere .I. be-schrewe þi face
Quod þis Somenour. *and* .I. be-schrewe me
Bot .I. teH þe tales two or þre
Of freres ar .I. come to sideingborne
þat .I. schal make þine herte for to morne

[1 leaf 97. *It repeats* And whan þe somenour herd þe frere gale]

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Lansdowne MS.**

For wele .I. wote þi pacien is gone
Owre oste cried pees *and* þat a-none
And seide lat þe wo*m*man tel hir tale
ȝe faren as folken bien of ale
Do dame tel forþe ȝowe tale *and* þat is best
Al redi sire q*uod* sche riht as ȝow lest
ȝif .I. haue lycence of þis worþi frere
ȝis dame q*uod* he telH forþe bi tale .I. wil here

Incipit fabula vx*o*ris de Bathon*ia*.

IN þe olde daies of þe kinge Arthoure
Of whiche þat bretons speken grete honoure.
AH was þis land fulfilled of faire
The Elphe queene wiþ hir Ioly compaignie
Daunced withe-oute in mony a grene mede
þis was þe olde opinion þat .I. rede
.I. speke of mony a .C. ȝere a-go
Bot now can no man see none elues mo
For þe grete charite *and* þe preiers
Of lymytours *and* of oþer pou*er*e frers
þat serchen eu*er*y lande *and* eu*er*y streme
As þikke as motes in þe sonne beme
Blissinge halles chambres bowres
Citees burghes Castels hihe towres
Thorpes bernes schipnes dayeries
þis makeþ þat þere be no fairies
For þere as was wonte to walke an elfe [leaf 97, back]
þer walkeþ nowe þe limito*ur* him selfe
In vndermeles *and* in morneynges
And seiþe his Matines *and* his holy þinges
As he goþ in his visitacio*un*e
Wemmen maie go nowe sauely vpe *and* doune
In eu*er*y bossche or vnder euere-y tre
There is none oþer Incub*us* bot he
And he wil do hem bot disonoure
And so fel it þat þis kinge Arþoure
Had in his house a lusty bachellier
þat on a daie cam rideinge fro þe reuere

And happed a-lone as sche was borne
He sawhe a maiden walkinge him be-forne
Of whiche maiden maugreue hire hede
be verrei force he raft hir hir maidenhede
For wiche oppression was suche clamoure
And suche pursuyt vnto kinge Arthoure
That dampned was þis knyht for to be dede
Be cours of lawe *and* scholde haue lost his hede
P*ar*auenture suche was þe statute þo
Bot þat þe queene and oþer ladies mo
So longe preide þe kinge of grace
Til he his him g*ra*unted in þe place
And ȝaue to þe qwene al att hir wiłł
To chese weþer sche wolde him saue or spiłł
The queen þonked þe kinge wiþ al here myht
And after þis þus spak sche to þe knyht
Whan þat sche seihe her time vpon a daye
Thou stondest ȝit q*uo*d sche in suche araye
þat of þi lyf ȝit hast þou no surte
‚I. graunte þe lif‘ if þu canst tel me
what þinge is þat we*mm*en moste desiren
Be war *and* kepe þi nekke bone from yren
And if þou can nouȝt tel it me anone
ȝit wil .I. ȝeue þe leue for to gone
A twelmoþ *and* a daie to seke *and* lere
An ansewere sufficiant in þis matier
And surte wil .I. haue ar þat þou pace
Thi body for to ȝelden in þis place
Woo was þis knyht *and* sorwful he sikeþ
Bot whate he may nouht do al as him likeþ
And att þe last he chase him for to wende [leaf 96]
An com aȝeine riht att þe ȝeres ende
W*ith* suche answere as god wold him purueye
And takeþ his leue *and* wendeþ forþ his weye
He sekeþe eu*e*ry house *and* eu*e*ry place
Where as hopeþ for to finde grace

To leren whatt þinge wemmen louen most
Bot he nowe coupe riden in no cost
Where as he myht finde in þis matier
Two creatures accordinge in fere
Some seide wemmen louen best riches
Some seide honour some seid Iolynes
Some seide Riche araye *and* lust abedde
And oft tim to be wedowe *and* wedde
Some seide þat we be most esede
Whan þat we bene flaterde *and* yplesede
He goþ ful nyhe þe sope .I. wil nouht lye
A man schal wynne vs best wiþ flaterye
And wiþ attendance *and* wiþ besines
Bene we y-lymede boþ more *and* les
And som men sein howe þat we louen best
For to bue fre *and* do riht as vs lest
And þat no man repreue vs of oure vice
Bot sei þat we bue wise *and* noþinge nice
For trewly þare is none of vs al
If any wight wil clowe vs on þe gal
þat we nyl loke or he seie þe sope
Assaie *and* he schal finde it þat he dope
For be we neuere so vicious *with*-inne
we wil be holden wise *and* clene of sinne
And summen seine þat grete delite haue we
For to be holden stable *and* eke secre
And in o purpos stedfastly to dwelt
And nouht be-wrye þinge þat men vs telt
Bot þat tale is nouȝt worþ a rake stele
Parde we wemmen kan no þinge hele
Wittenesse of myda wil ȝe here þe tale
Ouide a-monges oþer þinges smale
Seiþ Mida ha vndre his longe heres
Growinge vpon his tuo asse eres
The whiche vice he hidde as he best myht
Ful subtily from euerych mannes siht

That saue his wif þer wist þere-of no mo [leaf 98, back]
He loued hir most *and* trist to hir also
He praide hir most þat vnto no creature
sche schold nouȝt tel of his disfigure
Sche swore him naye for al þis werld to wynne
Sche nold do þat velany or þat synne
To make hir husbonde haue so foule a name
For reproueinge of him *and* fowle schame
Bot Naþeles hir þouht þat sche deide
þat sche so longe scholde a counsel hide
Hir þouht it satt so sore aboute hir hert
þat nedely sum worde hir mot a-stert
And seþ sche dorste tel it to no man
Doune to a marese fast sche ranne
Til sche came þer hire hert was a fire
And as betoure bebleþ in þe myre
Sche laide hir mouþe in-to þe water downe
Be-wrye me nouht þou water wiþ þi soune
Quod sche. to þe .I. tel it *and* no mo
Myne husbonde haþe longe asses eres tuo
Nowe is myne hert al hole now it is owte
.I. myht no longer kep it oute of doute
Here mai ȝe see þouhe we a time abide
ȝit oute it mot we mowe no counsel hide
þe remenant of þe tale if ȝe wil here
Redeþ ovide *and* ȝe maie it lere
This knyht of wiche mi tale is speciali
Whan þat he sauh he miht nouht com þere bye
This to seie what wemmen louen most
Wiþ-inne his hert sorweful was þe goste
Bot home he goþe he miht nouht soiorne
The daie was come þat homward most he torne
And in his wei it happed him to ride
In alt his care vnder a forest side
Where he sawhe on o daunce go
Of ladys foure *and* twenty *and* ȝit moo

Towarde þe dawnce he drowhe him ȝerne
In hope þat som wisdome scholde he lerene
Bot certeinly ar he came fully þere
Vanyssched was þe daunce he wist nouht where. 996
No creature sawe he þat bare lif
Saue iñ þe grene he sawhe sittinge a wif
A fowler wight þei may no man devise [leaf 99]
A-ȝein þe knyht þe olde wif gan arise 1000
And seid *sir* knyht here forþe liþe no weye
Tel me what þat ȝe seken be ȝoure feye
P*ar*auentur it maie þe better be[1] [[1] bue, *with* u *scratcht out*]
This olde folke can muche þinge q*uo*d sche 1004
My leue q*uo*d þis knyht serteine
.I. am bot dede bot if þat .I. can seine
Whatt þinge it is þat we*m*men most desire
Couþe ȝe me wise .I. wold wele white ȝowre hire 1008
Plyht me þi trouþe here in my honde q*uo*d sche
The next þinge þat .I. require þe
Thowe schalt it do if it ly in þi myht
And .I. wil tel it ȝowe ar it he nyht 1012
Haue here my trouþe q*uo*d knyht .I. graunt
þat q*uo*d sche .I. maye me wele auant
Thi lif is saue for .I. wil stonde þer bye
Vpon my lif þe qweene wil saie as .I. 1016
Latt see whīche is þe proddest of hem al
That wereþ on a kercheue or a cal
þat dar sey nay of þat .I. schal ȝow teche
Lat vs go forþe wiþ-oute longer speche 1020
Tho rouned sche a pistel in his ere
And bad him to be gladde *and* haue no fere
Whann þei be co*m*men to þe courte þis knyht
Seid he had holde his daie as he had hiht 1024
And redy was his ansewere as he seide
Foll[2] mony a noble wif *and* mony a maide [[2] ? MS Fo *or* Fv]
And mony a wedew for þat þei bu wise
The queene hire seluen sitt Iuge as Iustise 1028

Assemblede ben his answere for to here
And afterwarde þis knyht was bede a-piere
And þat þe knyht schold tel in audience
To euery. wight commanded was silence
What þinge þat werldly wemmen louen mest
þis knyht ne stode nouȝt stil as doþe a beste
Bo to þis questione a-none he ansewerde
Wiþ manly voyce þat al þe court it herde
My liege lady lady general quod he.
Womman desiret to haue souereynte
As wele ouer hir husbonde as hir loue
And for to be in maistre him a-boue
This ȝowre most desire þouhe ȝe me kiłł [leaf 99, back]
Doþe as ȝowe list .I. am here att ȝoure wiłł
In al þe courte ne was þer wif ne maide
Ne wedowe þat contraried þat he seide
Bot seyden he was worþi to haue his lyf
And wiþ þat worde vpstert þis olde wif
Whiche þat þe knyht sawe sittinge on þe grene
Mercie quod sche Mi souereine ladi qweene
Ar þat ȝoure Court depart do me riht
.I. tauht þis ansewer vn-to þis knyht
For whiche he pliht me his trouþe þere
The first þinge .I. wolde of him require
He wolde it do if it lei in his myhte
Be-for þe Court þan praie .I. þe sir knyht
Quod sche þat þu me tak vnto þi wif
For wele þu woste þat .I. haue kepped þi lif
If .I. saye fals seye soþe vpon þi fey
This knyht ansewerd alas *and* walawaie
.I. wote riht wele þat suche was my beheste
For goddes loue chese a newe requeste
Tak al my goode *and* lat my body go
Nay þan quod sche .I. schrewe vs boþe tuo
For þat .I. be foule olde *and* pouer
.I. nolde for al þe metal ne for Oer

þat vnder erþe is graue or liþe aboue
Bot if þat .I. þi wif were *and* þi loue
Mi loue q*uo*d he nay my . dampnacione
Alas þat any of my nacione
Schold eu*er*e so foule disp*ar*aged bue
Bot al for nouht þe ende is þis þat he
Constreigned was he nedes most he hir wedde
And takeþ þis olde wif *and* goþ to bedde
Now wold su*m* men seine p*ar*auenture
þat for my necligence .I. do no cure
To tel 3owe þe Ioye *and* þe arraye
þat att þe feste was þilke daye
To whiche þinge schortely ansewere .I. schal.
.I. seie þer was no ioye ne fest att al
þer nas bot heuynes *and* muche sorwe
For pr*i*uely he wede hir*e* on morwe
And al daie after hidde him as an owle
So woo was him his wif loked so foule.
Grete was þe sorwe þe knyht had in his þouht [leaf 106]
Whan he was wiþ his wyf ybedde brouht
He walloweþ *and* torneþ to *and* fro
His olde [wyf] laye smyleinge eu*er*mo
And seide Dere husbonde o benedicite
Fareþ eu*er*y knyht þus wiþ his wif as 3e
Is þis þe lawe of kinge Arþors house
Is eu*er*y knyht of his þus daungerous
.I. am 3oure loue *and* eke 3oure wif
.I. am sche whiche saued haþ 3oure lif
And sertes 3it dide .I. 3owe neu*er* vnriht
Whi fare 3e þus wiþ me þe first niht
3e faren like a man þat had lost his witte
Fy what is my gilte for goddes loue teH itte
And it schal bue amended if .I. maie
Amend q*uo*d þis knyht nay naye
That wil nouht bue amendede neu*er*e mo
þou ert so loþely *and* so olde also

And þer-to comen of so lowe a kinde
þat litel wonder is þouhe .I. walow *and* winde
So wolde god myne herte wolde to-breste
Is þis q*uo*d sche þe cause of 3oure vnreste
3e certeinly q*uo*d he no wonder is
Nowe sir q*uo*d sche .I. coupe amende al þis
If þat me list ar it were daies þre
So well 3e myhtte bere 3owe vn-to me
Bot for 3e speken of suche gentillesse
As is descended oute of al richesse
þat þere-for scholden 3e be gentil men
Suche errogance is nouht worþe an hen
Lo who þat most is vertuous alweie
Preue *and* a-pert *and* most endeþ aie
To do gentil dedes þat he can
And take him for þe grettest gentil man
Crist will we cleime of him oure gentilnes
Not of oure eldres for here olde reches
For þouhe þei 3eue vs al her Heritage
For whiche we cleime to be of hihe p*ara*ge
3it may þei nouht be-queþe for no þinge
To none of vs her vertuous leueinge
That maad hem gentil men y-called be
And bad vs folowen hem in suche degre.
Wele can þe wise Poet of fflorens [leaf 100, back]
þat hiht Dante speke þ in þis sentens
Lo in Suche maner rim is dantes tale
Ful selde vp riseþ be his braunches smale
Prowes of man for god of his prouesse
Wil þat we of cleime oure gentillesse
For of oure helders maie we no þinge cleime
Bot temp*e*ral þinge þat man maie hirte *and* maheime
Eke eu*e*ry white wote þis as wele as .I.
If gentillesse were planted naturalye
Into a certeine lignage doune þe line
Preue *and* aperte þan wold hey neuer fyne

To done of gentillesse þe faire office
Thei myhten do no velany nor vice
Tak fire *and* bere it in þe derkest house
Be-twex þis *and* þe mount of Caucasouse
And let men schette þe dore *and* go þenne
3it wil þe fire ly as fair *and* brenne
As þouh a .M. men myht it be-holde
His office naturele ay wil it holde
Vp peril of lif til þat it deie
Here maie 3e se wele howe þat genterye
Is nouht anexed to possession
Seþ folke doþ nouht her operacion
Alweie as doþe þe fire lo in his kinde
For god it wote men maie ful often finde
A lorde sone do schame *and* velanye
And he þat wil haue prise of his gentirye
For he was borne of a gentil hous
And hadde his heldres noble *and* vertuous
And nyl him-seluen do no gentil dedes
Ne folowe his gentill ancestre þat dedes
He is nouht gentil be he duc or Erle
For veleyns sinful dede mak a cherle
For gentillesse ne is bot reuente
Of þine Auncestres for hire bente
Whiche is a stronge þinge for þi persone
The gentilles comeþ fro god alone
Than comeþ oure verraie gentilles of grace
He was noþinge be-queþe vs wiþ oure place
Thinkeþ howe noble as seiþ valerius
Was þilke tullius hostilius.
That oute of pouert ros to hihe noblesse [leaf 101]
Redeþ Senec *and* rede eke Boesse
There schold 3e seen expresse þat it no drede is
That is gentil þat doþe gentil dedes
And þer-fore dere husbonde .I. þus conclude
Al were þat myne Ancestres were so rude

3it maie þat hihe god *and* so hope .I.
Graunt me grace to leue vertuously
Than am .I. gentil whan þat .I. be-ginne
To leuen vertuously *and* weuen sinne
¶ And þare as 3e of pouert me repreue
The hihe god on whom þat we beleue
In wilful pouert ches to leue his lif
And certes euery man *and* maide *and* wif
Maie vnder-stonde ihesu heuen kinge
Ne wold nou3t chese a vicious leueinge
Glad pouert is an honest þinge certeigne
This wil senec an[d] opere clerkes seine
Who so þat holde him paide of his pouert
.I. holde him riche al had he nouht sert
He þat coueteþ is a pouer wight
For he wold haue þat is nouht in his myht
Bot þat nouht haþe ne coueteþ to haue
Is riche al-þouhe men holde him bot a knaue
Verray pouert is sinne propurly
Iuuenal seiþe of pouert merely
The pore man whan he goþ be þe waye
Be-for þe þeues he maie singe *and* pleye
Pouert is hatel good *and* as .I. gesse
A ful grete bringer oute of besinesse
A gre amender eke of Sapience
To him þat lakkeþ it in pacience
Pouer is þis ál þouhe it seme Alinge
Possessione þat no wyht wil chalinge
Pouert ful oft whan a ma[n] is lowe
Makeþ his *and* eke him self to knowe
Pouert in spektacle is as þenkeþ me
þourhe whiche he maie his verray frende se
And *pere* sen þat .I. 3owe nou3t greue
Of my pouert no more me repreue
Nowe sire of elde 3e preue me
And certes sir þoruhe none auctorite

¶ Nota de Senectute

Wher in no boke ȝe gentil of honoure [leaf 101, back]
Seine þat men scholde an olde wife do fauoure
And clepe her moder for her gentillesse
An Auctours schal .I. finde as .I. gesse 1212
Nowe þere ȝe seine þat .I. am foule and olde
þan drede ȝowe nouht to be no cokewolde
For filþe and helþe as mot .I. þe
Bene grete werdeins vpon chastite 1216
Bot naþeles sen .I. knowe ȝoure delite
.I. scha[l] ful-fiłł ȝoure werly appetite
Chese nowe q*uod* sche one of þis þinges tweye
To haue me foule and olde til þat .I. deie 1220
And be to ȝowe a trewe humble wif
And neuer ȝoue displese in al my lif
Or elles ȝe wil haue me ȝonge, *and* faire
And take ȝoure auenture of þe repaire 1224
That schal com to ȝoure house bė cause of me
Or in sume o*þer*e place wel maie be
Nowe chese ȝoure seluen wheþer þat ȝou likeþ
This knyht a-vised him *and* sore he sikeþ 1228
Bot att þe last he seide in þis manere
My lady *and* my loue, *and* wife so dere
.I. putte me in ȝoure wise gouernaunce
Gesseþ ȝoure self whiche maie be most plesaunce 1232
And most honou*r* to ȝowe *and* me also
.I. do no force wheþer of þe tuo
For as ȝowe likeþ it sufficet me
Than haue .I. gete of ȝowe þe maistre q*uod* sche 1236
Sen .I. may chese *and* gouerne as me lest
ȝe sertes wif q*uod* he .I. holde it for þe best
Kisse me q*uod* sche we be no longer wroþe
For be my trowþe .I. wiłł be to ȝowe boþe 1240
þis is seine to be to ȝowe boþe feire *and* goode
.I. praie to god þat .I. mot steruen woode
Bot .I. to ȝowe be also sadde *and* trewe
As euer was wif sen þat þe werlde was newe 1244

.And bot .I. be to morwe also faire to seen
As any lady Emperes or qween
þat is be-twene þe est *and* eke þe west
Do wiþ my lif *and* deþe riht as ȝow lest
Kast vp þe kurteyne *and* loke how it is
And whan þe knyht sauhe al þis
þat sche so faire was *and* so ȝonge *per-to* [leaf 102]
For ioy he hent hir in his armes tuo
His hert baþed in a baþþe of blisse
A. M. time a rewe he gan hir kisse
And sche obeide him in eu*e*ry þinge
þ*a*t myht done him plesans or likeinge
And þus þei leued vnto her lyues hende
In p*a*r*f*ite Ioye and ih*es*u criste vs sende
Hosbonde meke ȝonge *and* fresshe y bedde
And grace to ouer-lede hame þat we wedde
And eke .I. praie to ih*es*u schort her lyues
þat wil nouht be gouernd be hir wyues
And olde *and* Angrye Nigard in dispence
God send hem sone a verrei Pestelence

Explicit fab*u*la Matrone vx*o*ris de Bathon*ia*.

Incipit prologus fratris
[on leaf 102]

This worþi lymitour þis noble frere
He maad alweie lowreynge chere
Vpon þe Sompnour bot for honeste
No veleyns worde as ȝite spake he
Bot att þe last he saide vnto þe wife
Dame good god ȝyue ȝowe riht good life
ȝe haue touchede here as mot .I. þe
In scole Matier gret difficulte
ȝe haue seide muchel þinge riht wele .I. scie
Bot dame here as we riden be þe weie
Vs nedeþ nouht to speken bot of game
And lete Auctorites in goddes name
To precheinge *and* to schole eke of clergie
Bot if it like vnto þis compaignie
.I. wil ȝowe of a Somnour tel a game
Parde .I. maie wele knowe be þi name
þat of no somnour mai no good be seide
.I. praie þat none of ȝowe be yuel apaide
A Somnour is a romer vp *and* doune
Wiþ a mendement of fornicacioune
And is .I.-bette att euery tounes ende
Owre þan spake a sir ȝe scholde be hende
And curteis as man of ȝoure astate
In compaignie we wil no debate
Telleþ ȝoure tale *and* lateþ þe somenour be
Naie quod Somnour late him sei to me
What so him liste whan it comeþ to my lote
Be god .I. schal him qwite euery grote.
I schaH him teH whiche a grete honour [leaf 102, back]
It is to be [a] flateringe limitour
And of ful mony anoþer crime
Whiche nedeþe nouht rehersen att þis time
And his office .I. schal him teH .I.-wis
Owre oste answard pees no more of þis
And afterwarde he seide vn-to þe frere
Tel forþe ȝowre tale my leue mayster dere.

Explicit prologus.

Incipit fabula. [on leaf 102, back]

Whilom þere was dwelinge in myne contre
An Arche-deken a man of hihe degre
That boldely dide execucion
In poneschinge of fornicacione
Of whiche craft *and* eke of baudrye
Of diffamacion *and* avowtrie
Of cherche reues *and* of testamentes
Of contractes *and* of lac of sacramentes
Of vsury *and* of Simony also
Bot certes Lychoures dede he grettest woo
Thei scholden singe if þei wer hente
And smale tiþers weren fowle schente
If any person wolde vpon hem pleine
There myht a-stert him no pecuniale peyne
For smale tiþes *and* eke smale offringe
He maade þe peple spitusly to singe
For or þe bischop cauht hem wiþ his hoke
Thei were in þe Arche-decanes boke
And þan hadde he þoruhe his Iurdictione
Power to done on hem Correctione
He had a somnoure redy to his hand
A slyhere boye was none in yngelande
For Sotely he had his especiaile
That tauht him where he myht availe
He couþe spare of lychours one or tuo
To techen him to foure · *and* twenty mo
ffor þouhe þis somnour woode were as an hare
To tel his harlotry .I. wil nouȝt spare

For we bue oute of her correctione
Thei haue of vs no Iurdictione
Ne neuer scholle terme of al her lyues
Peter so bue þe wymmen of þe styues
Quod þis Somnour yput houte of al oure cure
Pes wiþ meschaunce *and* wiþ misauenture [leaf 103]
Thus seid owre oste *and* late him tel his tale
Now telleþ forþe *and* lete þe Somnour gale
Ne spareþ nouht myne owen meister dere
This false þef þis somenour quod þe frere
Hadde alweie baudes redye to his honde
As any hauke to lure in Ingelonde
þat tellen him al þe secree þat þei knewe
Of hire acqueyntance was nat come of newe
þei weren his approwers priuèly
He toke him self a grete profit þer by
His maister knewe nat alweie what he wan
Wiþ-outen maundement of a lewed man
He couþe Somne of pein cristes curs
And þei weere glad to fiH his purs
And maade him grete festis att nale
Riht as Iudas had purse smale
And was a þeef riht suche a þeef was he
His maister had bot half his Dewte
He was. if .I. schal ȝeuen him his laude
An þeef *and* eke a somnour *and* a baude
He had eke wenches of his retenue
That wheþer sir Robert or sir hewe
Or Iohn or Raufe or who þat it wer
þat lei by hem þei tolde it in his ere
þus was þe wenche *and* he of on assent
Ande he wolde feche a feyned maundement
And somone hem to chapeter boþ tuo
And pil þe man *and* latt þe wenche go
Than wolde he seie frend .I. sal for þi sake
Do strike þe oute of owre letter blake

þe þar no more as in þis caas trauaile
.I. am þi frende þere .I. þe maie availe
Sertein he knewe of briburs mo
þan possible is to teH 3ou to
For in þis werlde is no doge for þe bowe
þat knowe an hurt dere fro an holde bet cowe
þan þis Somenour knewe a licour
Or a vouter or elles a paramour
And for þat was þe fruyte of al þe rente
Ther-for on it he set al his entente
And so be-fel þat ones on a daie
þis Somnour euere wayteinge one his preye
Rode for to somne a holde wif a ribibe [leaf 103, back]
Feynein a cause for he wald bribe
And happed þat he sauhe to-for him ride
A gaie 3oman vnder a forest side
A bowe he bare *and* arwes briht *and* kene
He had vpon a courteby of grene
An hatte vpon his hede wiþ fenges blake
Sir quod þis Somnour heile *and* wele a take
Welkom quod he *and* euery good felawe
Weder rides þou vnder þis grene wod schawe
Saide þis 3oman wilt þou fer to daie
þe Somnour him ansewerd *and* seide naye
Here fast by quod he is myn entent
To riden for to reisene vp a rent
It longeþ to my lordes dewte
Ert þou þan a baillif 3e quod he
He dorst nou3t fo verre felþe and schame
Sei þat he was somnour for þe name
De par dieux quod þis 3oman dere broþer
þou ert a bailif. *and* .I. am anoþer
.I. vnknowen as in þis contre
Of þin acqueyntance .I. wil praie þe
And eke of breþerhede if þat þou liste
I. haue golde *and* siluer in my chiste

If þat ȝe happed to com in to owre schire
It schal be þine riht as þou wilt desire
Gremercie q*uod* þis Somnou*r* be my feiþe
Euer-iche in oþers honde her trouþ leyþe
For to be swore breþer to þei deye
And wiþ þat worde þei ride forþe þer weie
þis somnou*r* wiþ þat was as ful of Iangles
As foll of venym be þis wereangles
And eue*r*e enquireinge vpon eue*r*y þinge
Broþer q*uod* he where is ȝoure dwelynge
Anoþer daie if .I. schal ȝou seche
þis ȝoman him ansewarde in soft speche
Broþe[r] q*uod* he fer in þe norþe cuntre
Where as .I. hope some time .I. schal þe se
Ar we departe .I. schal þe so wel wisse
þat of myne hous schalt þou neuer mysse
Now broþer q*uod* þis Somenou*r* .I. ȝow preie
Teche me while we riden be þe weie.
Sen þat ȝe be a baillif as am .I. [leaf 104]
Som subtilite tel me feiþfully
In myne office how þat .I. maie most winne
And spare nouht for conscience ne sinne
Bot as my broþer tel me howe do ȝe
Nowe be my trewþe broþer dere seide he
As .I. schal tellen þe a faiþful tale
My wage buen ful streite *and* smale
My lorde is harde to me *and* dangerous
And myne Office ful laborous
And þere-fore be extorcions .I. leue
For soþe .I. al þat men wil me ȝeue
Alligate be sleiht or violence
Frome ȝere to ȝere .I. winne al my dispence
.I. kan no better tellen faiþfully
Now sertes q*uod* Somnou*r* so fare .I.
.I. spare nouht to taken god it wote
Bot if it be to heuy or to hote

What .I. maye gette in Counseill *priuely*
No manere consciens of þat haue .I.
Ner mye extorcion .I. myht not leuen
Of suche Iapes wil .I. nouht bu schreuen
For stomak ne for conscience knowe .I. none
.I. schrewe þis schrift faders euerychone
Wele be we mette be god *and* be seint Iame
Bot leue broþer tel me þan þi name
Quod þis Somnour in þis mene while
This 3oman gan a litel for to smyle
Broþer quod he wil towe þat .I. þe teH
.I. am a steue my dwellinge is in heH
And here .I. ride aboute my purchasinge
To witte if men wil 3eue me any þinge
Mi purchache is to fett al my rent
Looke howe þou ridest for þe same entent
To winne good þou rekkest neuer howe
Riht so fare .I. for ride wolde .I. nowe
In to þe werldes ende for a preie
A quod þis somnour Benedicite what 3e seie
.I. wende 3e were a 3oman trewly
3e haue a mannes schappe as wel as .I.
Haue 3e þan a figure determinate
In hel þer 3e bene in 3oure astate.
Nai certainly quod he þare haue we none [leaf 104, back]
Bot whan vs likeþe we can tak vs one
Or elles make 3ou seme we bene schape
Som tim a man or lyke an hape
Or lyke an angel can .I. ride or goo
It is no wonder þinge þouhe it be soo
A lousy Iogelour can disceyue þe
And perde 3it can .I. mor craft þan he
Whi quod þis Somnour Ride 3e þan or gone
In Sondre schappe *and* nouht alweie one
For we quod he wil vs suche forme make
As most able is oure preis to take

What makeþ 3owe to haue al þis laboure
Ful mony a cause leue *sir* Somnour
Seid þis fende bot al þinge haþe time
þe daie is schort *and* it is passed *pr*ime
And 3it ne wann .I. no þinge in þis daie
.I. wil entend to wynynge if .I. maie
And nouht entende oure wittes to declare
For broþer myne þi witte is al to bare
To vnderstonde þouhe .I. tolde hem þe
Bot for þou axest whi labour we
For sum time we bue goddes instrumentz
And mennes to done his co*m*mandementz
Whan þat him vpon his creatures
In diu*er*se attes *and* in diuers figures
Wiþ-outen him we haue no myht certaine
If þat him lust stande þer a3eine
And sum tym att oure preie haue we leue
Onely þe body *and* nouht þe soule greue
Wittenes on Iob whom þat we deden woo
And sumtyme haue we myht of boþe tuo
This to seine of soule *and* body eke
And som time we buen suffered for to done seke
Vpon a man *and* do his soule vnrest
Nouht his body *and* al is for þe best
Whan he wiþ-stondeþ oure temptacione
It is a cause of saluacione
Al be it þat it was nou3t owre entent
He scholde be saue bot þat we wold him hent
And some tim be we se*r*uant vn-to a man
As þe Erchebysschope seiþe Dunstan
And to þe Aposteles se*r*uant was .I. [leaf 105]
3it telH me q*uo*d Somnou*r* feiþfully
Maake 3e 3owe bodys þus al wey
Of Elementes þe fende seid naye
Som time we feine *and* sum time we rise
Wiþ dede bodies in ful sundre wyse

And speke as renably faire *and* wele
As to þe phitonessa did Samuele
And ȝit wil sum men saie it was nouht he
.I. do no fors of ȝoure diuinite
Bot o þinge warne .I. þe .I. wil nouht Iape
Thou wilt algates wite howe we be schape
Thou schalt her-after-ward my broþer dere
Come where þe nedeþ not of me to lore
For þou schalt be þin owen exp*e*rience
Com in to þe chaier to rede þis sentence
Better þan virgile while he was on lyue
Or dante also nowe lat vs ride belyue
For .I. wil holde company wiþ þe
Til it be so þat þou for-sake me
Naie q*uo*d Somno*ur* þat schal not be-tide
.I. am a ȝoman knowe is ful wide
Mi trouþe wil .I. holde to þe as in þis caas
For þeih þou were þe deuel Sathanas
My trouþe wiH .I. holde to my broþer
As .I. am sworne and iche of vs to oþere
For to be trewe broþer in þis caas
And broþer wee goon to owre purchas
Take þu þi part what men wil þe ȝeue
And .I. schal myne þus maye we boþe leuen
And if þat any of vs haue more þan oþer
lat him be trewe *and* part it wiþ his broþer
.I. gr*a*unt q*uo*d þe deuel be my feye
And wiþ þat worde þei reden forþe þeire weie
And riht att þe entringe of þe tounes ende
To whiche þe somno*ur* schope him for to wende
He sawhe a cart þat charged was wiþ haye
Whiche þat a carter droue forþ on his waye
Dep was þe way for whyche þe cart stode
þis carter smote *and* striued as he war woode
Heyt brok heyt scotte what spare we fore þe stones
The fende q*uo*d he ȝowe fette boþe bodi *and* bones

As ferforþly as euer were ȝe folde [leaf 105, back]
So muche woo as .I. haue for ȝowe þoled
The deuel haue al boþe hors *and* carte *and* haye
Thouht þis Somnour here schal we haue a pleie 1548
And nere þe fende he drouhe as nouhten were
An ful priuely rouned in his ere
Herken my broþer herken be þi feiþe
Heres þou nouht howe þe carter seiþe 1552
Hent it a-none for he haþ ȝeuen it þe
Boþe heye *and* carte *and* eke his caples þre
Nay quod þe deuel god wote neuer a dele
It is nouht his entent trust me wele 1556
Ax him þi self if þou trowest not me
Or elles stinte a while *and* þou schalt see
This Carter þakkes his hors on þe croupe
And þei be-gonne to drawe *and* to stoupe 1560
Heyte nowe quod he þat ihesu criste ȝow blisse
And al his hondewerke boþe more *and* lisse
þat was my faire lyarde boye
And .I. praie god saue þe *and* seinte loye 1564
Nowe is my carte oute of þe slouhe parde
Lo broþer quod þe fende what tolde .I. þe
He[re] maie ȝe se myne owen dere broþer
þe carle spak o þinge bot he þouht anoþer 1568
Latt vs go forþe abouten owre viage.
Here wynne .I. no þinge vpon cariage
Whan þei com somwhat oute of þe toune
This Somnour to his broþer gan roune 1572
Broþer quod he here wonneþ an olde rebek
þat hadde al-moste as leue to lese here neke
As for to ȝeue a peny of hire goode
.I. wil haue tuelue pens þouhe þat sche be wode 1576
Or .I. wil somone hire to oure Office
And ȝit god woote of hire know .I. no vice
Bot for þou canst nouht as in þis countre
Wynne þi coste take here ensample of me 1580

This Somnour clepeþ att þe wydoues gate
Come owte he seide þou olde veritate
.I. troue þou hast sum frere or preste wiþ þe
Who clepeþ seide þis wif benedicite 1584
God saue ȝowe sire what is ȝoure swete wil
.I. haue quod he a somons of þe here a bil
Vp peine of Curseinge loke þat þu be [leaf 106]
To morwe to-for owre Archidiacane kne 1588
To anseward to þe Courte of certeine þinges
Now quod sche lorde ihesu criste kinge of kinges
So wissely helpe me as .I. ne maie
.I. haue bue seke *and* þat ful mony a daie 1592
.I. maye nouht so ferre go quod sche ne ride
Bot .I. be dede so prikeþ it in my side
May .I. nouȝt ax a libel *sir* Somonour
And anseware þe by my procatoure 1596
To suche a þinge as men wolden aposen me
ȝis quod þis Somonour paie anone latt se
Tuelue pens to me. *and* .I. wil þe acquite
I schal no profett haue þer-by bot lite 1600
Mi maister haþe þe prophet *and* not .I.
Com of *and* late me riden hastili
ȝeue me tuelue pens .I. maie no longer tarie
Tuelue quod sche ladi seint Marie 1604
So wisely helpe out of care *and* sinne
þis wide worlde þouhe þat .I. schold it wynne
Ne haue .I. nouȝt tuelue pens wiþ-in myne holde
ȝe knowen wele þat .I. am pouer *and* olde 1608
Kyþe ȝoure Almos on me pouere wrecche
Nay þan quod he foule fende me fecche
If .I. þe excuse if þou scholdest be spilte
Alas quod sche god wote .I. haue no gilte 1612
Pay me quod he or be þe swete Anne
As .I. wil bere awaie þi newe panne
For dett whiche þou owest me of olde
Whan þou madest þin hosbonde kokewolde 1616

.I. paied att home for þi correccioun
Thou lext quod sche be my saluacioun
Ne was .I. neuer or now wedowe ne wif
Somned in-to 3oure court in al my lif
Ne neuer .I. was bot of my body trewe
To þe deuel blake *and* rouhe of hewe
3if .I. þi body. *and* my panne also
And whan þe deuel herd hir curs so
Vpon hir knes he seid in þis maner
Now Mable myne owen moder deere
es þis 3owre wil in ernest þat 3e seie
The deuel quod sche fette him ar he deie.
And panne and al but he wiłł him repent [leaf 106, back]
Naie olde stote þat is nou3t myne entent
Quod þis Somnour for to repent me
For any þinge þat .I. haue hadde of þee
.I. wolde .I. hadde þi smokke and euery cloþe
Nowe broþere quod þe deuel be nouht wroþe
This body *and* þis panne is my be riht
Thou schalt wiþ me to heł 3ut to-nyht
Where þou schalt know of oure priuete
More þan a maistre of diuinite.
And wiþ þat worde þis foule fende him hente
Body *and* soule he wiþ þe deuel went
Where þat Somnours han her heritage
And god þat maad after his ymage
Mankinde saue *and* gide vs al *and* sume
An leue þis Somnour good man to be-come
Lordinges .I. couþe haue tolde 3oue quod þis frere
Hadde .I. had leiser for þis Somnour here
After þe tixt Crist Poule *and* Iohn̄
And of oure oþer doctours mony on
Suche peines þat 3oure hert myht a-grise
Albeit so no tunge maie devise
þouht þat .I. myht a þousand wynter teł
þe peyne of þilke corsid house of heł

Bot for to kepe us fro þat cursed place
Wakeþ *and* prayeþ ihesu for his grace
[. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
Herkeneþ þis word be war as in þis caas
The lion sitte in his awaite alweie
To sle þe Innocent if þat he maie
Disposeþ aye 3oure hertes to wiþ-stonde
The fende þat 3owe wold make þraƞ *and* bonde
He maie nouht tempten 3owe over 3owre myht
For criste wil be 3oure champion *and* knyht
And praieþ þat þis somnour him repent
Of his mesedede ar þat þe fende hem hent

Explicit fabula:

Incipit *prologus aparitoris* [*on leaf* 106, *back*]

This Somnour in his stirep hihe stode
Vpon þis frere his hert was so wode
þat like an haspen lef he quoke for ire
Lordeinges quod he bot o þinge .I. desire
.I. 3owe be-seche þat of 3oure curtesie
Seþ 3e haue herd þis fals frere lye
As suffreþ me .I. maie a tale teH [leaf 107]
This frere bosteþ þat he knoweþ heH
As god wote þat is litel wonder
Freres *and* fendes ben bot litel in sunder
For parde 3e haue oft time herd teH
How þat a frere rauisshed was in heH
In spiret ones be a visione
And as Angel led him vp *and* downe
To schewen him þe peynes þat þere were
In al þe place sawe he nou3t a frere
Of oþer folke he sawe y-nowe in woo
Vnto þis Angel spak þe frere þoo
Now sir quod he haue freres suche grace
þat none of hem schal com in-to þis place
3is quod þis Aungel mony a melione.
And vn-to Sathanas he had him adoune
And now haþ Sathanas saiþ he taile
Bradder þan of þ[e] Carrik is þe seile
Holde vp þi taile þu Sathanas quod he
Schewe forþe þin erse *and* let þe frere se
Where is þe nest of freres in þis place
And ar þat halue a forlonge waie of space

Riht so as bees swarme oute of an hive
Owte of þe deuels ers þei gon drive
twenty þousand freres on a rowte
And þouht hett swarme al aboute
An comen aȝeine als fast as þei maie gone
And in his hars þei crepen euerychone
He clapped his taile a-ȝeine *and* leye stiłt
This frere whan he loked had his fiłt
Vpon þis tormentes vpon þis sor place
His spirit god restored of his grace
Vnto his body aȝeine *and* he awoke
Bot naþeles for fere ȝit he qwoke
So was deueles ars aie in his mynde
þat is his heritage of verrai kinde
God saue ȝoue al saue þis curse frere
My *prologe* wil .I. ende in þis Manere.

Explicit/ *prologus.*

Incipit/ fabula ap*ar*itoris [*on leaf* 107]

LOrdeynges þ*er*e is in ȝorke-schire as .I. gesse
A merschy contre called holdernesse
In whiche þere went a li*mi*tour a-boute.
To pr*e*che *and* eke to bigge it is no doute [lf 107, bk]
And so be-feH þat on a daie þis frere
Hadde pr*e*ched att þe cherche in þis manere
And specialy aboue eu*er*y þinge
He excited þe peple in his pr*e*cheinge
To trentals *and* for goddes saake
þere-wiþe men mihte holy houses maake
þere as deuyne ser*u*ice is honoured
Nouȝt þ*er*e as is wasted *and* deuoured
Ne þere it nedeþ nouht for to be ȝeue
As to possessioners þat maie elles leue
þankede he god in wele *and* abundance
Trentals seide he deliuerþ fro penance
Here frendes soule as wele olde *and* ȝonge
If þat þei bien hastely songe
Nouht for to holde a pr*e*ste Iolif *and* gaie
He singeþ not bot o messe on a daie
Deliuerd oute anone þe soules
Ful harde it is wiþ fleschehokes or w*i*th oules
Nowe spede ȝowe hastely for cristes sake
To kepe ȝowe fro þe peines of þe fendes blake
And whan þe frere hadde seide al his entente
Wiþ qui cum patre forþe he wente
Whan folke in churche had ȝeue him what hem lest
He went his waie no longer wolde he rest

Wiþ scrippe *and* tipped staf tokked ful hihe
In euery. hous he gan to poure *and* prie
And beggeþ mele or chiese or elles corne
His felowe had a staf tipped wiþ horne
A peire of tables of yvory
And a pointel polisched fetusly
And wrote þe names alweie as he stode
Of euery folke þat 3aue hem any goode
Askaunse þat he wolde for hem preie
3eue vs a boschel wete malte or rie
A goddes kechel or a trep of chese
Or elles what 3owe lest we maie nouhte chese
A goddes halpenye or a mespeny
Or 3eue vs of 3oure branne if 3e haue any
A dagon of 3oure blanket leue dame
Lo suster dere lo here .I. write 3oure name
Bacon or befe or suche þinge as 3e finde
A stordy harlote went hem aie be-hinde [leaf 108]
þat was he osteman *and* bare a sakke
And what men 3aue hem laide oñ his bakke
And he was out att þe dore anone
He pleyned awaie þe names euerychon
þat he be-fore had wreten in his tables
He serued hem wiþ nifles *and* wiþ fables
Nay þere þou lext þou Somnour quod þe frere
Pes quod oure-host for criste/ moder dere
Tel forþ þi tale Spare it nouht att al
So þriue .I. quod þe Somnour so .I. schal
So longe he went hous be hous quod he
Til he come to an hous þer he was wonte to be
Refressched more þat in an hundreþ place
Seke laye bonde man wos þe place[1] [[1] is scratcht out]
And vpon a couche lowe he laye
Deus hic quod he O Thomas frende good daie
Seide þis frere curtasly *and* soft
Thomas seide he god 3elde 3owe ful oft

Have .I. vpon þis benche fare wele
Here haue .I. ete mony a mery mele
And fro þe benche he drove a-waie þe catt
And laide adoune his potent *and* his hatt
And eke his scripe *and* sett him soft adoune
His felowe was go walked in þe toune
Forþe wiþ his knaue in-to þat hostlerie
Where as he schope him þilke nyht to lye
O dere maister q*uod* þis seke man
Howe haue 3e fare. seþ marche be-gan
.I. sauhe 3ou nouht þis fourtenyht *and* more
God wote q*uod* he labourde haue .I. ful sore
And speciali for þin saluacione
Haue .I. seide mony a p*re*cious orisone
And for oure oþere frendes god hem blesse
.I. haue to-daie done at 3oure cherche a messe
And seide a seremon after my simple witte
Nouht al after þe text of holy wrytte
For it is harde to 3owe as .I. suppose
Ther-fore. wil .I. teH al þe glose
Glosinge is a glorious þinge certeine
For letter sleþe so as clerkes seine
Ther haue .I. tauht hem to be charitable.
And spende here goode þere it resonable [leaf 108, back]
þere .I. sauhe oure dame a where is sche
3onde in þe 3erde .I. trowe sche be
Seide þis man *and* sche wil come anone
Ey Maister welcome be 3e be seint Iohñ
Seide þis wif howe fare 3e hertly
þe frere riseþ vp ful curtasly
And her enbraseþ in his armes narwe
And kisseþ hir swete *and* chirkeþ as a sparowe
Wiþ his lippes. dam q*uod* he riht wele
As he þat is 3oure s*er*uant euerydele
I-þonkede be god þat 3ow 3af soule *and* lif
3it sawe .I. nouht to-daie so faire a wif

In al þe cherche so god · saue me
3e god amend defautes sire quod sche
Algates welcom be 3e be my faye
Graunt Merci dame þis haue .I. founde al weie
Bot of 3oure grete goodenes be 3owre leue
.I. wolde praie 3oue þat 3e not 3owe greue
.I. wil · wiþ thomas speke a litel þrowe
þis Curates buen ful necligent *and* slowe
To gropen tenderly a consciens
In schrift *and* in *pre*cheinge is my diligence
And stody in peters wordes *and* in poules
.I. walke *and* fische men soules
To 3elden ihesu criste his *pro*pre rent
To sprede his wordes .I. sett al myne entent
Now be 3oure leue o dere *sir* quod sce
Chideþ him wele for god in trinite
He is as Angry as a pismyre
3eihe þat he haue al þat he can desire
þeihe .I. him wrye a nyht *and* make him warme
And ouere him laye my legge or myne Arme
He groneþ like owre bore groneinge in his stye
Oþer disport of him riht none haue .I.
.I. maie nouht plesen him in no maner caas
.Ieo vous die treschier & bien amy o thomas
þis makeþ þe fende it most bue amended
Ire is a þinge þat hihe god defended
And *þere*-of wil .I. speke a worde or tuo
Nowe Maister quod þe wif ar þat .I. go
What wil 3e dyne .I. wil go *þer*e aboute
Nowe dame quod he Ie vous dy sanz doute [leaf 109]
Haue. note of a capon bot þe liuere
And of 3oure soft brede bot a schiuere
And after þat a rosted pigges hode
Bot þat .I. wold for me no beste were dede
þan hadde .I. wiþ 3owe holy sufficeance
.I. am a man of litel sustinance

Mi spirte is fosterd in þe bible
Þe body is aie so redy *and* penyble
To wake þat my stomak is destruyed
.I. prei ȝowe dame þat ȝe be nouht anoyȝed 1848
Þouhe .I. so frendely my counsel schewe
Be god .I. wold nouht tell it bot a fewe
Nowe sire q*uo*d sche bot a worde ar .I. goo
My childe is dede wiþ-in þes wekes tuo 1852
Sene þat ȝe went oute of þis towne
His deþ sawe .I. be reuelacione
Seiþe þis frere att home in owre dorto*u*ure
.I. dar wele sein ere þan halue an houre 1856
After his deþ .I. sawhe borne to blisse
In myne avison so god me wisse
So dede oure sexteine *and* oure fermo*u*rere
þat haue bue trewe freres .l. ȝere 1860
þei maie nowe god be þanked of his lone
Maken her Iubile *and* walken alone.
And vp he ros *and* al oure couent eke
Wiþ mony a tere trillinge on my cheke 1864
Wiþ-owten noyes or clateringe of belles
Te deum was owre sange *and* no þinge elles
Saue þat to crist .I. saide an orison
Thonkeinge him of his reuelacione 1868
For s*ir*. *and* dame tresteþ me riht wele
Oure orisons bene mor esprituele
And more we see of cristes secre þinges *1871*
Than burel folke [þouȝe þei were kynges [Sloane MS 1685, *leaf* 126, *back*]
To lyue in pouert and in abstinaunce
And borelle folke] in reches *and* wynynges[1] [[1] dispense, *Sloane* 1685]
In mete *and* drinke *and* in hire foule delite
We haue þis werldes lust al in despite *1876*
Lazar *and* diues leueden diuersly
And diuers guerdone had þei þ*er*e-bye
Who so wil praie he mot fast *and* be clene
And fatte his soule *and* mak his bodi lene *1880*

We fare as seiþe þe postle cloþe *and* foode
Soffiseþ vs þouhe þei bo nouht gode [leaf 109, back]
The clennes *and* þe fasteinges of vs freres
Makeþ þat crist acepteþ oure preiers 1884
Lo Moyses .xl. daies *and* .xl. nyht
Fasted or þat hihe god of miht
Spak wiþ him in þe mounte of Synay
Wiþ empty wombe fastinge mony a day 1888
Receyued he þe lawe þat was wreten
Wiþ goddes finger *and* helthe wel ȝe weten
In þe mount or er he any speche
Wiþe þe hihe god þat is oure liues leche 1892
He fasted longe *and* was in contemplance
And aaron þat had þe temple of god in Gouernance
And eke þat oþre pr*i*stes eu*e*ry-chone
In-to þe temple whan þei schold gone 1896
To preie for þe peple *and* do seruice
þei wold nouȝ dringen in no man*e*re wise
No drinke whiche þat miht hem drunke make
Bot euer in abstinens to preie *and* wak 1900
Lest þat þei deide take hede what .I. seie
Bot þei be sobre þat for þe peple preie
Ware þat I. seie no more for it suffisit 1903
Oure lorde ih*esus*[1] as holy god deuisit [[1] *MS* ihū̃c]
ȝeueþ vs ensample of fastinge *and* of preiers
þer-for we amende fautes we pou*e*re freres
Bene wedded to pouert*e* *and* to contenence
To charite humblenesse *and* also pacience 1908
P*e*rsecucione for rihtwisnesse
To wepeinge misericord *and* clennesse
And þ*e*re-for may ȝe se þat oure preyers
.I. speke of vs me vendinant freres 1912
Bene to þe hihe god more acceptable
þan ȝoures wiþ ȝoure fest att þe table
For p*a*radise first if .I. schal nouht lye
Was man out chased for his glotonye 1916

An chaste was man in *par*adise certeine
Bott herken *þer*e what .I. schal seine
.I. haue no text of þat as .I. suppose
Bot .I. schal finde it in a maner glose
þat speciali oure swete lorde ih*esus*[1]
Spak þus be verse whan he seid þus
Blissed be þei þat pouer in spirit buen.
And so forþe al þe gospel maie ȝe seen [leaf 110]
Where it be like oure *pro*fessione
Or her þat swemmen in possessione
Fye on here pompe *and* on her glotonye
And for here lewdenes .I. hem defye
Me þenkeþ þei ben like Iouynyan
Fatt as a whal *and* walkinge *and* as a swan
As vinolent as a botel in þe spense
Her praier is ful of grete reuerence
Whan þei for sowles seine þe psalme of Dauit
Lo buf þei seine Cor meu*m* Eructauit
Who foloweþ cristes gospel *and* his lore
Bot we þat humble be chast *and* pouer
Werkes of goddes worde *and* eke auditoures
There-fore riht as an hauke ripe att a sores
Vp springeþe in-to þe eyre riht preiers
Of charitable *and* chast besy freres
Makene here sores to goddes eren *and* hoo
Thomas *þer*e-for so must .I. ride or goo
And be þat god þat cleped is seint Iue
Nere þou owre broþer scholdest þou noȝt þryue
In owre chapetre prei we daie *and* nyht
To crist þat he sende þe hele *and* myht
Thi body for to welden hastely
God wote q*uod* he no þinge þere-of wote .I.
As helpe me criste as in fewe ȝeres
Haue .I. spended of diuers maner freres
Full mony a pounde ȝit fare .I. neuer þe bette
Certein my good almost haue .I. be-sette

[1] *MS* ihc̄

Fare wele my golde for it is al a-goo
þe frere answerde o thomas whi dostowe soo
What nedeþ 3owe diuers freres to seche
What nedeþ hem þat haþ a *parfite* leche
To seche oþer leches in þe toune
3oure inconstance is 3oure confusione
Holde 3e me þan or elles oure couente
To praie for 3owe buen insufficiente
Thomas þat Iape is nouht worþe a myte
3oure maladie is for 3e haue geuen vs so lite
A 3ef þat couent half a quarter otes
A 3ef. on or tuo grotes
A 3ef þe frere a peny *and* late him goo
Nay nay Thomas it maie no þinge be so [leaf 110, back]
What is a ferþinge worthe parted in twelue
Lo iche a þinge þat is houed be him selue
Is more strange þan whan it is scaterd
Thomas of me þou schalt nouht bene flaterde
Tho woldest owre laboure haue for nouht
þe hihe god þat al þis welde haþ wrouht
Seiþ þat þe werkman is worþi his hire
Thomas nouht of 3owre tresoure .I. desire
As for my self. bott for al oure couent
To praie for 3owe is aye so diligent
And for to bilden cristes owen chirche
Thomas if 3e wil leren for to wirche
Of bildeinge vp of cherches mai 3e finde
If it be goode In thomas lif of hinde
3e ligge here ful of Anger *and* of yre
Wiþ whiche þe deuel sette 3owre eres of fire
An chiden hire þis sely innocent
3oure wif þat is so meke *and* pacient
And *per*-fore Thomas trowe me if 3owe list
Ne striue wiþe þi wife al for þe best
And bere pis worde awaie be þi faiþe
Toucheinge suche þinge lo what þe wise man seiþe

Wiþ-inne þin hous ne bue þou no lyone
To þi subgettes done none oppressione
Ne maake þine acqueintance not for to flie
And Thomas ȝitt eft-sonenes saie .I. þe
Be war for hire þat in þi bosome slepeþ
Be war of þe serpent þat so slely crepeþ ·
Vnder þe gras þat stingeþ sotely
Be war my sonne *and* herken paciently
þat .xx.M. men haue lost her liues
For þat þei haue bu spitous to her wives
Nowe seþþe þus ȝe haue so holy *and* so meke a wif
What nedeþ[1] ȝow thomas to maken strif [[1] þ *not complete*]
Ther is .I.-wis no *ser*pent so cruel
Whan men trede on his taile nouȝt half so felȝ
As wo*m*man is whan sche haþ cauht an yre
Vengaunce is þan al þat þei desire
Ire is a sinne on of þe grettest of seuen
Abhominable vnto god of heuen/
And to him self it is a destruccion
This euery lewed vicarie or p*ar*son
Can sey howe ire engendereþ homicide [*leaf* 111]
Ire in soþe is executor of pride
.I. couþe of ire seie so muche sorwe
Mi tale schold last to tomorwe
And þer-for .I. praie god daie *and* nyht
An yrus man send him litel miht
It is grete harme *and* certes grete Pyte
To sett an Irus man in hihe degre
Whilom þer was an Irrous potestate
As seiþ Śenec duringe his astate
Vpon a daie out riden knyhtes tuo
And as fortune wolde it were so
That one of hem cam home þat o*þer*e nouht
Anone þe knyht to-for þe Iuge is brouht
And seide þus þou hast þi felaw sleine
For whiche .I. deme þe to deþ certeine

And to anoþer kn̄yht *com*maunded he
Go lede him to þe deþ .I. charge þe
And happe as þei went be þe weie
Towardes þe place *þer*e as he scholde deie
The knyht cam whiche þei wende had bu dede
Then þouhten þei it were þe beste rerede
To lede hem boþe to þe Iuge a3eine
þei seiden lorde þe knyht ne haþ nouht sleine
His felaw here standeþ on lyue
3e schollen be dede q*uo*d he so must .I. þriue
þis to sei boþe oone tuo *and* þre
And to þe first knyht riht þus spak he
.I. dampned þe þou most algate be dede
And þou also mot nedes lose þine hede
for þou art cause whi þi felawe deyeþ
And to þe þred knyht rih[t] þus he seiþe
þou hast nouht done þat .I. comaunde þe
And þus he dide sle hem al þre
Irro*us* Cambises was eke dronkenlewe
And aye delite him to bene a schrewe
And so be-fel a lorde of his meigne
Tha[t] loued vertuus moralite
Seide on a daie vnto him self riht þus
A lorde is lost if þat he be vicious
A dronkenesse eke is a foule recorde
Of any man *and* namely in a lorde
There is ful mony eye *and* mony an ere [leaf 111, back]
Awaytteinge on a lorde *and* he note where
For goddes loue dringeþ more attemp*er*elly
Wyne makeþ man to lese wrecchely
His mynde *and* eke his limes eu*er*yehone
The reuerse schal þou se q*uo*d he anone
And pr*o*ue it be þine owen exp*er*ience
þat wyne doþe to folke none suche offence
þere is no wyne be-reueþ me my myht
Of hande ne foote ne of myn ey3en siht

And for despite he dranke ful muche more
An .C. parte þan he hadd done to-fore
And riht a-none þis cursed wreche
Lete þis knyhtes son be-forne him fecche
And commandeinge hem þei schol be-for him stonde
And sodanly he toke his bowe on honde
And vp þe stringe he pulle to his ere
And wiþ an arwe he slowe þe childe riht þere
Nowe weþe haue .I. seker honde or none
Quod he is al my witte *and* my witte agone
Haþe wyne bereued me my eyesiht
What scholde .I. telle þe Ansewere of þe knyht
His son was sleyne þere is no more to seie
Beþe warre þer-fore wiþ lordes howe ȝe pleie
Singeþ Placebo and .I. schal. If .I. can
Bot ȝif it be vn-to a pouer man
To a pore man he schold his vices telle
Bot nouȝt to a lorde þouhe he schold go to helle
Lo Irrous Sirus þilke percien
How he destreiede þe river of Gysen
For þat an hors of his was drenched þere-inne
Whan þat he wente babiloyne to wynne
He maad þat þe riuer was so smale
þat wemmen mihten wade ouer ale
Lo what seide he þat so wele teche can
Ne be no felow to none yrous man.
Ne wiþ no wood man walke be þe waie
Leste þe repent .I. wil no more seie
Now thomas leue broþer leue þin Ire
þou schalt me finde als iust as is a swire
Holde nouht þe deueles knyf ay þat þin herte
þine Anger doþe þe al to sore smarte
Bot schew to me al þin confession [leaf 112]
Nay quod þe seke man be seint Simon
.I. haue be schreue þis daie att my curate
.I. haue him tolde al holy myne estate

It nedeþ no more spek of hit seide he
Bot if me lust of myne humilitee
ȝif me þan of þi golde to make oure cloyster
Quod he for mony a muskel *and* many an oyster
Haþe buen oure fode oure cloi[s]ter for to reise
Whan oþer men haþe be ful wele att eyse
And ȝit god wote vneþ þe foundement
Performed is ne of oure Paiment
Nis nouht a tile ȝit wiþ-inne owre wones
Be godde we owen fourti pounde for stones
Now helpe thomas for him þat herewed heHe
Or we most oure bokes seHe
And if we lakke our predicacione
Than goþ þe werlde al to destruccione
For who wolde fro þis werlde vs be-reue
So god me saue Thomas be ȝoure leue
He wolde be-reve oute of þe werlde þe sonne
For who can teche *and* worche as we conne
And þat is nouht of litel time quod he
Bot seþyns Elye was or Elyȝe
Haþe freres buen þat finde .I. of recorde.
In Charite y-þonked be oure lorde
Now thomas helpe for seint charitee
Adoune a-none he sett him on his kne
¶ This seeke man wex nyhe woode for ire
He wolde þat þe frere had bue on fire
Wiþ his fals dissimulacione
Suche þinge as is here in my possessione
Quod he þat maie .I. ȝeue *and* none oþere
ȝe seine me þus þat .I. am ȝoure broþer
ȝe sertes quod þe frere trusteþ me wele
.I. toke oure dame oure lettres wiþ owre seale
¶ Nowe wele quod he *and* sumwhat wil .I. ȝeue
Vn-to ȝoure holy Couent whiles .I. leve
And in þin hand þou schal it haue anone
Vpon þis condicione *and* oþere none

þat þou depart it so myne owene dere broþer
þat euery frere haue also muche as oþer
This schalt þou swere on þi.*pro*fessione [leaf 112, back]
Wiþ-oute fraude or cauellacione 2136
.I. swere it *quod* þis frere vpon my feiþe
And þere-wiþ-al his honde in his he leiþe
Lo here my feiþe in me schal be no lakke
þan put þine honde doune þe my bakke 2140
Seide þis man *and* grepe wel be-hinde
Be-neþe my buttok þere schaltow finde
A þinge þat .I. haue hid in *pri*uete
A þouht þis frere þat schal go wiþ me 2144
An doune his honde he launceþ in-to þe clift
He hoped þere for to finden a ȝift
And þan ful besi was þis frere
Aboute his touele gropeinge here *and* þere 2148
Amiddes his honde he lete þe frere a fart
þare is no capel draweinge in þe cart
þat myht haue latt a fart of suche a sowne
þe frere vp stert as it were a fers lyone 2152
A fals cherle *quod* he for kokes bones
þis hastow for spite done for þe nones
þou schal abye þis fart if þat .I. maie
His meignȝe whiche þat herden þis affray 2156
Cam lepeinge inn *and* chased owte þe frere
And forþe he goþe wiþ a ful Angry chiere
An fette his felawe þere as leie here store
He loked as it were a wilde bore 2160
He grenteþ his teþ so was he wroþe
A stordy pas doune to þe courte he goþe
Where as þere wonned a man of grete honoure
To whome þat he was al weie confessoure 2164
This worþi man was lorde of þat vilage
þis frere cam as þouhe it were in a rage
Where as þis lorde satte eteinge att his borde
Vnneþ miht þe frere speke a worde 2168

Til att þe last he seide god 3ow se
þis lorde gan loke *and* seide benedicite
q*uod* he ffrere Iohñ what manere werlde is þis
.I. see wele þat sum þinge is amys
3e loken as þe wode were ful of þeues
Sitteþ anone *and* tel me whate 3ou greues
And it schal bene amended if þat .I. maye
.I. haue q*uod* he a dispite to daye
God 3elde 3ow a downe in 3oue vilage [leaf 113]
þat in þis werlde þere is none so pouer a page
þat he nolde haue abhomynacioune
Of þat .I. haue reseyued in 3owre toune
And 3it me greueþ no þinge so sore
As þat þis olde cherle wiþ lokkes hore
Blasphemed haþ oure holy Couent eke
Now mayster q*uod* þis lorde .I. 3owe beseke
No maystere q*uod* he bot *ser*uitoure
þeih .I. haue had in scole þat honoure
God lykeþ nouht þat men vs Raby calle
Neyþer in Market ne in 3oure halle
No force q*uod* he bot tel me of 3oure greue
Sir q*uod* þe frere an hydous mescheue
This daie be-tidde is to myne order *and* to me
And so p*ar* consequence to iche degre
Of holy cherche god amend it sone
Sir q*uod* þe lorde 3e wote what is to done
Distemp*er* 3owe nou3te 3e be my confessoure
3e bue þe salt of þe erþe *and* þe sauoure
For goddes loue 3oure paciens 3e holde
Telleþ me 3oure greue *and* he anone him tolde
Als 3e haue herde be-for 3e wote wele whatt
The lady of þe hous ay stil satt
Til sche herde what þe frere seide
Ey goddes moder q*uod* sche blisful meide
Es þere nouht elles telleþ me feiþfully
Ma dame q*uod* he howe þinke 3owe þer by

Howe þat me þenkeþ quod sche so god me spede
.I. seie a cherle haþe done a cherles dede
What scholde .I. sei god lat him neuere þe
His seeke hede is ful of vanite
.I. holde him in a maner franseye
Ma dame quod he be god .I. schal nouȝt lye
Bot .I. on oþere wyse mai bene a-wreke
.I. schal sclander him ouer al where .I. speke
þe fals blasphemour þa[t] charged me
To parte þat myht nouht departed be
To euery man y-liche wiþ meschaunce
The lorde satte stille as he lay in a traunce
And in his hert he rolle vp vdoune
Howe had þis cherle ymaginaciounce
To schew suche a probleme to þe frere [leaf 118, back]
Neuer arst or nowe herde .I. of suche matiere
.I. trowe þe deuel put it in his myride
In ars metrike schal þere no man finde
Be-for þis daie of suche a questione
Who schold make a demonstracione
þat euery man schold haue .I.-like his parte
Of a sowne or of a sauoure of a farte
O nyce proude cherle .I. schrewe his face
Lo sires quod þis lorde wiþ harde grace
Who euer herde of suche a þinge or nowe
To euery man .y.-lyke tel me howe
It is an impossible it mai nouȝt be
A nyce cherle god lat him neuer þe
The rumblinge of a farte *and* euery sowne
Ne es bot bot of eyre reuelacioune
And þere-wiþ wasteþ lytel *and* lyte a-waie
Ther is no man can deme be my faie
If þat it were departed equali
What lo my cherle lo ȝit howe schrewdelye
Vn-to my confessour to-daie he spak
.I. holde him certeine a demonyak

Nowe etep 3oure mete *and* lef him go pleie
Latt him go honge him self a deuel weie

[*The Solution of the "Probleme" by the Lord's Squire. No break in the MS.*]

Nowe stoode pe lordes swyer att pe borde
pat kerue here mete *and* herde worde for worde
Of alle pinge of whiche .I. haue 3owe seide
My lorde quod he be nouht heuel apaide
.I. coupe telle for a gone clope
To 3ow *sir* frere so 3e be nouht wrope.
How pat pis scholde euen ydelt be
Amonge 3oure Couent if it lykep me
Tel on quod pe lorde *and* pou schalt haue anone
A goune clope be god *and* be seint Iohñ
Mi lorde quod he whan pis weder is feire
Wip-owten wynde or pertubeinge of eyre
Lat bringe a carte whele here in-to pis hall
Bot loke he haue his spokes all
Twelue spokes hap a cart whele comunly
And bringe me pan .xij. freres witte 3e why
For twelue is a Couent as .I. gesse
3owre confessour hede for his worpinesse
Schal performe vp pe nombre of his Couent [leaf 114]
Than schal pei knele a-doune by on assent
And to euery spokes ende in pis manere
Ful saddely scholden lay here nose iche a frere
3oure noble Confessoure pere god him saue
Schal holde his vpriht in-to pe naue
Than schal pis cherle wip bely styffe *and* touht
As any tabur hider buen brouht
And sett him on pe whele riht on pis carte
Vpoñ he naue *and* late him maake a farte
And 3e schol see vp peril of my lif
Be preue whiche pat is demonstratif

þat equali þe soune of it wil wende
And eke þe stynk to þe spokes ende
Saue þat þis worþi man þis confessoure
Because he is a man of grete honoure
Schal haue þe first fruyte as reson is
The noble vsaga of freres ȝit is þis
The worþi men of hem scholen first be serued
And Serteynly he haþ it wele deserued
He haþ to-day tauht vs so muche goode
Wiþ *pre*cheinge in þe pilput þer he stoode
þat .I. maie vouche saue .I. saie for me
He hadde þe first smel of fartes þre
And so wolde al his couent hardely
He bereþ him so faire *and* so holyly
The lorde þe lady *and* eche mon saue þe frere
Saiden þat Iankyn spak in þis matiere
As wele as Euclide or ptholome[1]
Toucheinge þe cherle subtelite
And by hihe make him speke as he spak
He is no fule ne none demoniak
And Ianky haþ wonne a newe gowne
Mi tale is done we buen almost att towne

Explicit fabula Ap*a*ritoris:

GROUP E. FRAGMENT VI.

§ 1. THE CLERK'S HEAD-LINK.

LANSDOWNE MS.

¶ Incipit prologus Clerici: [on leaf 114]

Sir Clerc of Oxenforde owre Oste seide
3e ride as stiH *and* coie as doþ a maide
Weer newe spowsed sittinge att þe borde
This daie ne herde .I. of 3oure tounge a worde
I trowe þat 3e stody aboute some sophime
Bot Salomon seiþe euery þinge haþe time
For godessake beþe of Better chier
It is no time for to stodie here.
Tel vs sum mery tale be 3oure feie [leaf 114, back]
For what man is entrede in-to pleie
He nedes mote vnto þe plaie assent
Bot preches nouht as freres done in lente
To make vs for oure olde sinnes wepe
Ne þat þi tale Make us nouht to sl[e]pe
TeH vs sum Mery þinge Of Auentures
3oure termes 3oure coloures 3oure figures
Kepe hem in store til so be 3e enditen
Hihe stylede as whan þat men to kinges writen
Speke þ so pleine att þis time .I. 3ou preie
That we may vnderstonde what 3e seie
¶ þis worþi clerke benyngly answerd
Oste quod he .I. am vnder 3oure 3erde
3e hane of vs as noue þe gouernance
And þerfore wil .I. do 3owe obeissance

GROUP E. § 1. CLERK'S HEAD-LINK. **Lansdowne MS.**

As fer as reson axeþ hardely
.I. wiH ȝowe tel a tale whiche þat .I.
Lerened att Pādouse of a worþi clerke
As preuede be his worde *and* his werk
He is nowe dede *and* nailed in his chist
.I. praie to god ȝif his soule good ryst
Fraunces Petrak þe Laureat poet
Hiht þis clerke whos rethorik swoet
Enlumyned al. ytaile of Potrie
As Linian dide of Philosophie
Or lawe or oþer arte particulere
Bote þat wil nouht suffur dweH here
Bot as it were a twynklinge of an eye
Hem boþe haþe *and* al schal we dye
Bot for to teH of þis worþi man
þat tauht me þis tale as he gan
.I. seie þat wiþ hyhe stile first enditeþ
Or he þe body of his tale writeþ
A prohemye in þe whiche descriueþ he
Pymonde *and* of Saluces þe Contre
And speketh of Appenyne þe hulles hihe
þat buen þe boundes of lumbardie
And of þe mounte vesulus in special
Where as þe poe out of a wel smal
Takeþ his first springeinge *and* his sours
þat estward ay encreseþ in his cours
To Emel warde · ferrir *and* venise [leaf 115.]
Whiche of longe þinge were to deuise
And treuly as to my Iuggement
Me þenkeþ þat a þinge impertinent
Saue þat he wil con[u]eyn his matier
Bot þis is tale whiche þat ȝe maie hier

Explicit prologus!

[*No breaks are between the stanzas in the MS.*]

hic incipit fabula [*on leaf* 115]

There is riht att þe west side of Itaile 57
Doune att þe rote of Vesulus þe colde
A lusti pleine aboundaunt of vitaile
Where mony a toure *and* toune þou maiste beholde
þat founden were in time of faders olde
And mony anoþer delitable siht
And Saluces þe noble contre hiht 63

A markes whilome lorde was of þat lande 64
[As were his worthi elderes hym be-fore] [MS Reg. 18 C 2, *lf* 131, *back*. *It omits l.* 66-7.]
And obeissan aie redy to his hande
Were al his lieges boþe lesse *and* more 67
þus in delite he leueþ *and* haþ done 3ore
Beloued *and* drad þorwhe fauoure of fortune
Boþe of his lordes *and* of his comune 70

þere-wiþ he was as to speke of Lignage 71
A faire person *and* stronge *and* 3onge of age 73
The gentillest bore of lombardye 72
[And ful of honoure and of curtesye] [MS Reg. 18 C 2]
Discrete ynouhe his Contre for to Gye
Saue in summe þinges he was to blame
And Waltier was þis 3onge lordes name. 77

I. blame him þus þat he considerd nouht 78
In time comynge what myht him be-tide
Botte on his luste present was al his þouht
[And for to hauke and hunte on euery syde] [MS Reg. 18 C 2, *leaf* 132]
Wel nyhe al oþere Cures lete he slide
And eke he nolde þat was þe werst of all 81
Wedde no wife for owhte þat maie befall 84

Onely þat poynte his peple bare so sore 85
þat flokingmele on a day to him þei went
And of him þat wisest was of lore
Or elles þat þe lorde beste wolde assent 88
þat scholde tellen him what his peple ment
Or elles couþe schew wele suche matier
He to þe Markys seide as ȝe schal here 91

O noble Markes ȝoure humanite 92
Assuriþe vs *and* whisse vs hardines
As oft as time is of necessite
That we to ȝowe maie teH oure Heuinesse [leaf 115, back]
Accept lorde now of ȝoure gentilnesse
þat we wiþ petous hert to ȝowe pleine
And late ȝoure eres nouht my voice disdeyne 98

¶ Al haue .I. nouht to done in þis matiere 99
Mor þan anoþere man haþe in þis place
ȝitte as for as muche as ȝe my lorde so dere
Haue alweie schewde me fauore *and* grace 102
.I. dare þe better ax of ȝowe a space
Off Audience to schewen oure request
And ȝe my lorde to do riht as ȝowe liest 105

¶ For certes lorde so wele lykeþ vs ȝowe 106
And al ȝowre werkes *and* euer haþe þat we
Ne couþe nouht oure seluen deuisen howe
We myht leue in more felice 109
Saue o þinge lorde if ȝowre wil be
þat for to be a wedded man ȝowe list
þan were ȝoure peple in Souereigne hertes rest 112

¶ Bouþe ȝoure nek vnder þat blisfuH ȝok 113
Off Souereignete nouht of seruise
Whiche þat men clepe spowsal or wedlok
And þinkeþ lord amonges ȝoure þouhtes wise 116

[ffor of wedlok/ cometh gret emprise] [Harl. 1758, *leaf* 115; *not in* MS Reg. 18 C 2]
For þouhe we slepe or wake or roume or ride
Ay. flieþ þe time *and* wil no man abide 119

And þouh 3oure grene 3ouþe floure as 3ite 120
¶ In crepeþ Age al wei as stiff as stone
And deþe manasseþ eu*e*ry age *and* smyteþ
In eche astate for þer askapeþ none 123
And also certeigne as we knowe ichone
þat we schal deie. As vncerteigne we aff
Biene of þat daie þat deþ schal on vs faff 126

¶ Accepte þan of vs þe trewe entente 127
þat neuer 3it refuysed 3oure hest
And we lorde 3if þat 3e wil asente
Chese 3owe a wif in schort time att þe lest 130
Borne of þe gentelest *and* of the mest
Of al þis londe so þat it ouht seme
Hono*ur* to god *and* 3owe as we can deme 133

¶ Deliuer vs of al þis besy dede 134
And takeþ a wif for hihe goddes sake
ffor if it so be-fel as god for-bede
þat þoure deþe 3oure lignage scholde slake 137
And þat a stronge successoure scholde take [leaf 116]
3oure Heritage woo were vs on lyve
Where-for we praie 3owe hastely to wiue 140

¶ Here meke preiere *and* here pitouse chiere 141
Maaked 3e Markes hert haue pite
[Wol ye quod he myn oune peple deere] [MS Reg. 18 C 2, *leaf* 132, *back*]
To þat .y. nerste euer þouht to steyne me 144
I. me reIoysed of my lybertie
þat selden time is founden mariage
þere .I. was fre .I. most be in se*r*uage 147

¶ Bot naþeles .I. see 3oure trewe entente
And truste vpon 3oure witte *and* haue done aye
Where-for wiþ aH my fre wil .I. wil assente
To wedde me als sone as eu[er]e .I. maie
Bot þere as 3e haue *pro*ferd me to daie
To chese me a wif .I. 3owe relese
þat choise *and pray* 3oue of 3oure *pro*fure cese

¶ For .I. wote þat childern often bien
Vnlyke here elders hem before
Bounte comeþ al of god nouht of þe strene
Of whiche þei bue engenderd *and* y-bore
.I. truste in godese bounte *and* þere fore
Myn mariage *and* myne astate *and* reste
.I. him be-take he maie do as him leste

¶ Lete me alone in cheseinge of my wif
þat charge vpon my bak .I. wil endure
Bot .I. 3owe preie *and* charge vpon 3owre lif
þat what wife .I. take 3e me assure
To worschip hire while þat hire life maie endure
In worde *and* werke boþe here *and* euerywhere
As sche an Empe*r*oure douhter weere

¶ And ferþer-more þis schal 3e swere þat 3e
A3eine my choice schal neuer gruche ne strive
ffor seþ .I. schal for-go my liberte
Att 3oure request as euer mot .I. þryve
þer as my hert is set *þer* wil .I. wiue [*This line at the side, in a different 15th-cent. hand.*]
And bot 3e wil assente in suche manere
.I. praie 3owe spekeþ no more of þis matiere

¶ Wiþ hertly wil þei swore *and* assenten
To al þis þinge þer seide no whiht naye
Besekeinge him of grace or þat þei wenten
þat he wold gr*a*unten hem a cerceigne daie

Of his spowsel as sone as euere he maie,
For ȝit alweie þe peple sum what drede
Lest þat þis Markes no wife wold wedde [leaf 116, back]

¶ He *grau*nted hem a dai suche as him list 183
On whiche he wil be wedded sekurly.
And seide He dide al þis att þeire request
An þei wiþe humble entent ful buxhumly. 186
Kneleynge vpon here knese ful reu*e*rently
Him þonkynge all *and* þus þei haue an ende
Of here entente *and* home aȝeine þei wende 189

¶ And here-vpon he to his officiers 190
Co*m*maundeþ for þe feste to purveie
And to his pr*i*ue knyhtes *and* swyers
Suche charge ȝaf as him list on hem leye 193
And þei to his co*m*mandement obeie
And yche of hem doþ his diligence
To do vn-to þe fest reuerence. 196

[*PART II.*]

Prima p*ar*s fabule

Nowht fer fro þe paleis honurable 197
Where as þe Markes schope his mariage
The[re] stode a þrope of þe Cite delitable
In whiche þat pouer folke of þat vilage 200
Hadden her bestes *and* her herbergage
And of here laboure toke here sustinance
After þe erþe ȝaf hem abundance 203

¶ Amonge þise pouer folke þer dwelled a man 204
Whiche was holde pouerest of hem al
Bot þe hihe god sum time sende can
His grace in-to a lite oxe stal 207
Ianicula Men of þat þorpe him cal
A douhter had he faire ynouhe to siht
An Crisilda þis ȝonge maiden hiht 210

¶ Bot for to speke of vertuouse beute
þan was sche one of þe fairest vnder sonne
Ful pouerly fosterd was sche
No lycourous luste was in hire hert yronne
Wele ofter of þe wel þan of þe tonne
Sche dranke for sche wolde vertuse plese
Sche knewe wele laboure bot none ydel ese

¶ Bot þouhe þis maide tender were of age
3ite in þe breste of hire virginite
þere was y-closed ripe *and* scharpe corage
And in a grete reuerence *and* charite
Hire olde pouer fader fosterd sche
A fewe schepe spynynge on þe felde sche kepped [leaf 117]
Sche nolde nou3t be ydel til þat sche slepped

¶ And whan sche cam homwarde sche wald bringe
Wortes or oþer herbes times oft
The whiche sche schredde *and* seþe for here leueinge
And maade hire bedde ful harde *and* noþinge soft
And ay sche kepped her faders life on loft
Wiþe euerye obeissance *and* dilegence
þat childe myht do to fadere reuerence

¶ Vpon Crizilda þe pouer creature
Ful oft siþe þe Markes sett is eye
As he on hunteinge rode *per*auenture
And whan it fell þat he myht hire aspye
He nouht wiþ wanton lokeinge of folye
His eyen kast on hire bot in sad wise
Vpon hire chere he wolde him of avise

¶ Co*m*mendinge in his ert here wo*m*manhede
And eke hir vertue passinge any whihte
Of so 3onge age as wele in chere as in dede
For þouhe þe peple haue no grete insiht

In vertue he considered ful riht
Her bounde *and* disposed þat he wolde
Wedde hire onely if euere he wed scholde

¶ þe daie of weddinge cam bot no whihte can
Tel what wo*m*man þat it scholde be
For whiche merveile wondereþ mony man
And seiden whan þei were in p*r*iuete
Wil nouht oure lorde leue his vanite
Wil he nouht wedde alas alas þe while
Whi wil he þus him self *and* vs be-gile

¶ Bot naþeles þis Markes haþe done make
Of gemmes sette in golde. *and* in asure
Broches *and* ringes for crisild sake
And of hir cloþinge toke he þe mesure
Of a maiden lyke to hire stature
And eke of oþer ornamentes al
þat vnto suche a wedynge scholde fal

¶ The time of hundren of þe same daie
Aproche þ þat þis weddynge schold be
And al þe paleis putt was in araie
Boþe hal *and* chambre iche *in* his degre
Houses of officez stoffed wiþ plente
Ther mai þou see of daynteuos vitaile [leaf 117, back]
That maie be founde as fer as last ytaile

¶ This Roial Markes richeli araide
Lordes *and* ladies in his compaigne
The whiche vnto þe feste were praide
And of his retenu þe bachellarie
Wiþ mony a soune of sundre Melodie
Vnto þe vilage of whiche .I. tolde
In þis arraie þe riht weie haþe holde

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. **Lansdowne MS.**

¶ Crisid of þis god wote ful innocente 274
That for hir schapen al þis arraie was
To fecche water atte þe wel is went
And comeþ home as sone as eu*er* sche maie 277
For wele sche hadde herde saie þat ilke daie
Þat Markes scholde wedde *and* if sche miht
Sche wol feine haue seine su*m* of þat siht 280

¶ Sche þout .I. wil wiþ oþer maidens stonde 281
Þat bien my felaues in owre dore *and* see
The Markes *and* þarfore wil .I. fonde
To done att home as sone as it mai be 284
The laboure þat longeþ vnto me
And þan .I. maie att leiser hire be-holde
If sche þis waie in-to þe castel holde 287

¶ And as sche wolde ouer þe þresshewolde gone 288
The Markes came *and* ga*n*ne hire for to caƚƚ
And sche sett doune hir*e* water pott a-none
Be-side þe þresshewold of þis ox. staƚƚ 291
And doune vpon hir knesse sche gan to faƚƚ
Wiþ sadde Countenance kneleþ stiƚƚ
Til sche hadd herde what was þe lordes wiƚƚ 294

¶ This þouhtful Marquys spake vnto þis maide 295
Ful soburly *and* seide in þis manere
Where es ȝowre fader Crizild he seide
And sche wiþ reuerence *and* humble chiere 298
Ansewerd lorde he is aƚƚ redie here
And in sche goþe wiþ-oute langer lette
And to þe Markys hir fader sche fette 301

¶ He be þe honde þan toke þis olde man 302
And seide þus whan he had him a side
Ianicula .I. neyþere maie ne kan
lenger þe plesance of myne herte hide 305

If þat þou vouche-saf what so be-tide
þi douhter .I. wil take ar þat .I. wende [leaf 118]
As for my wif vnto hire liues ende

¶ Thowe louest me .I. wote it wele certeine
And arte my feiþeful liege Maifaie y-bore
And al þat likeþ me .I. dar wel seine
It likeþ þe *and* specialische þere-fore
Tel me þat point as .I. haue seide be-fore
If þat þou wilte vnto þat purpose drawe
To take me as for þi soñ in lawe

¶ The sodeyne caas þe man a-stoned so
þat rede he wex a-bassched *and* al qwakynge
He stoode vnneþ he seide worde no moo
Bot only þus lorde q*uo*d he my willynge
Is as ȝe wiłł nouht a-ȝeines ȝoure lykeynge
.I. wil noþinge ȝe be my lorde so dere
Bot as ȝow luste gouerneþ þis matier

¶ ȝit wil .I. q*uo*d þis Markes softlye
þat in þi chamber .I. *and* þowe *and* sche
Haue a collacione and wost þu whie
For .I. wil ax if þat hire wil bee
To be my wif *and* reule hire aft*er*e me
And al þis schal be done in þi presence
.I. wil nouht speke owte of þine Audience

¶ And in hire Chambre while þei were aboute
Here treteis whiche *þat* ȝe schal after here
The peple cam in to þe hous wiþ-oute
And wondred hem in here honest manere
And tentifly sche kepped hir fadere dere
Bot vtterly Crizilda wonder myht
For neuer eft sauhe sche suche a siht

¶ No wonder is þouhe þat sche were a-stoned 337
To se so grete a geste in þat place
Sche neuer was to suche gestez woned
For which sche lokede wiþ ful pale face 340
Bot schortly forþe þis matie[r] for to chace
Thes aren þe wordes þat Markes seide
To his benigne feiþ-ful maide 343

¶ Crizild he seide 3e schal wele vnderstonde 344
It likeþ to 3oure fader *and* to me
þat .I. 3owe wedde *and* eke it maie so stonde
As .I. suppose 3e wil þat it so be 347
Bot þis demandes ax .I. first q*uo*d he.
That seþen it schal be done in hastie wise [leaf 118, back]
Wil 3e assent or elles 3owe avise 350

¶ I seie þis be redye wiþ goode herte 351
To al my lust *and* þat I. frely maie
As me best þenkeþ do 3owe knowe ore smerte
And neuer þe to grucche it nyht ne daie 354
And eke whan .I. seie 3e ne saie nouht naie
Neyþer be worde ne be frounynge contenance
Swère þis *and* here .I. swere oure alliance 357

¶ Weddinge vpon þis worde whakeinge for drede 358
Sche seide lorde vndigne or vnworþi
Am .I. to þat ilke honor þat 3e me bede
Bot as 3e wil 3oure self riht so wil .I. 361
And here .I. swere þat neuer wilingely
In werke ne þouhte .I. nyl 3owe disobeie
For to be dede þouhe me were loþe to deie 364

¶ This is ynouhe Crizilda myne q*uo*d he 365
And forþe he goþe wiþe a ful sobre chiere
Oute atte þe dore *and* after þat cam sche
And to þe peple he seide in þis maniere 368

This is my wife q*uo*d he þat stondeþ hiere
Honoureþ hir *and* loueþ hire eke .I. preie
Who so me loueþe þare is no more to seie

¶ And for þat noþinge of hire olde gere
Sche scholde bringe in to his house he badde
þat we*mm*en scholde dispoylen [hire] riht þere
Of whiche þe ladies weren noþinge gladde
To handel hire cloþes where in sche was cladde
Bot naþeles þis maiden briht of hewe
Fro þe fote to þe hede þei cloþed hane al newe

¶ Her here ha þei kembed þat laie vntressed
Thei tirede hir hede þat longe rudely laie dressed
Ful roodely . *and* wiþ hire fingers smale
Of hire araye what scholde .I. maake a tale
Sche is nowe faire of hewe þat arst was pale
Vnneþ þe peple hire knewe for hire fairenesse
Whan sche transemute was in suche rechesse

¶ This Markes haþ her wed wiþ a ringe
Brouht for þe same cause *and* hire sette
Vpon an hors snowe white *and* wele Amblynge
And to þe paleis ar he langer lette
Wiþ Ioyful peple þat hire ladde *and* mette
Conueyde hire *and* þus þe daie þei spende [leaf 112]
In reuele til þe sonne gan descende

¶ And schortly forþe þis tale for to chace
.I. seie þat to þis new Marquysesse
God haþe suche fauore sent hire of his grace
þat it ne semed nouht be liknesse
þat sche was borne *and* fedde in rudesse
As in a Cote or in an ox staħ ·
Bot norissched in an Emp*er*ours haħ

¶ To eue*r*y whight sche waxen is so dere
And worschipful þat folke þere sche was bore
And frome hire birþe knewe hire ȝere be ȝere
Vnneþ trowed þei bot dorst han swore
That to Ianicul of whiche .I. spak before
Sche douhter nas for as be couertore
Hem þouht sche was a noþer creature

¶ For þouhe eue*r*e vertuous was sche
Sche was encresed in suche excellence
Of þewes goode sette in hihe bounte
And so discrete *and* faire of eloquence
So benigne *and* digne of reuerence
And couþe so þe peple hertes so enbrace
That iche hire loueþe þat lokeþ in hire face

¶ Nouȝt only of Saluces in þe toune
Purplyste was þe bounte of hire name
Bote eke be-side in mony a Regioune
If one seide wele a noþer seide þe same
So spredeþe of hire hihe bounte *and* fame
That men *and* we*m*men also wele ȝonge as olde
Gone to Saluce vpon hire to be-holde

¶ Thus Walter lowly. nouȝt. but royalye
Wedded wiþ fortunate honeste
In goddes pes leueþ ful esilye
Att home *and* outewarde grace. ynowhe had he
And for he sauhe þat vnder lowe degre
Was oft vertue hidde þe peple him helde
A prudent man *and* þat is seene ful selde

¶ Nouht only þis Crisilde þourhe hire witte
Couþe al þe feiþe of wifly homlynesse
Bot eke whan þat þe caas required it
The comune pro*fit* couþe sche redresse

Ther nas discorde rancor ne heuinesse
In al þat londe þat sche couþe apesé . [leaf 119, back]
An wisely bringe hem al in hertes ese 434

¶ Thouhe þat hir husbonde absent were anone 435
If gentil men or oþere of here contre
Weere wroþe sche wolde bringe hem att one
So wise *and* ripe wordes had sche 438
And Iuggement of so grete equite
That from heuen ysente was as men wende
The peple to plese *and* eue*r*y wronge to amende 441

¶ Nouht longe time after þat þis Crisilde 442
Was wedded sche a douhter haþ .I.-bore
Al had hire leuer haue borne a knaue childe
Gladd was þis markes *and* his folk þer fore 445
For þouhe a mayden childe cam al before
Sche maie vnto a knaue childe atteigne
Belikned seþ sche is nouht bareine 448

[Explicit] Secunda pars ffabule.

[*PART III.*]

There fel att befalleþ times mo [*or* ino] 449
Whan þat þis childe hadde sowked bot a þrowe
This Markes in his hert langeþ so
To tempt his wif hire saddenesse for to knowe 452
That he ne myht oute of his hert þrowe
This meruelous desire his wif to assaie
Nedeles god wote he þouht hire to affraie 455

¶ He hadde assaide hire ynouhe before 456
And fonde hire eue*r*e goode what nededeþe
Hire for to tempte *and* alweie more *and* more
Bot as for me .I. seie þat yuel it sitte 459
þouhe sume men it preise for a subtile witte
To assaie a wif whan þat it is no nede
And to putten hire in angwysse *and* in drede 462

¶ ffor whiche þis markys wrouht in þis manere
He cam a nyht alone þere as sche leye
Wiþ steren face *and* wiþ trouble chiere
And seide þus Cr[i]ʒilde q*uod* he þat deye
þat .I. ʒoue toke oute of ʒoure poure aray
And putt ʒowe in astate of hihe noblesse
ʒe haue nouht for-geten as .I. gesse

¶ .I. seie Criselde þis p*re*sent dignite
In whiche .I. haue put ʒowe as. I trowe
Makeþ ʒowe nouht for-ʒeteful for to be
þat .I ʒowe toke in poure astate ful lowe
For any wele ʒe moste ʒoure selue knowe [leaf 120]
Take hede of euery worde þat .I. ʒowe seie
þere is no whight þat hereþ it bot we tweye

¶ ʒe wote ʒoure self wele howe þat ʒe com here
In to þis house þat is nouht longe a go
And þouhe to me ʒe be riht leue *and* dere
Vn-to my gentils ʒe be noþinge so
Thei seie to hem it is grete schame *and* woo
For to be soubgetes *and* be in seruage
To þe þat art borne of a smale vilage

¶ And namely seþþe þi douhter was bore
þis wordes haue þei spoken doutelese
Bot .I. desire as .I. haue done be-fore
To lede my lyue wiþ hem in rest *and* pese
.I. maie nouht in þis caas be recheles
.I. mote do wiþ þi douhter for þe best
Nat as .I. wolde bot as my genteles leste.

¶ And ʒite god wote þis is ful loþe to me
Bot naþeles wiþ owten ʒoure witeinge
.I. wil nouht do bot þis wiht .I. q*uod* he
þat ʒe to me assent as in þis þinge

Schewe nowe 3oure pacience as in werkynge
þat me 3e hiht *and* swore in 3oure vilage
þat daie þat maked was oure Mariage 497

¶ Whan sche hadde herde al þis sche nat ameued 498
Neiþere in worde ne chiere ne countenance
For as it semede sche was nouht agreued
Sche saide lorde al liþe in 3oure plesance 501
My childe *and* .I. wiþ hertly obeissance
Bene 3oures all. *and* 3e mowe saue *and* spille
3oure owen þinge workeþ after 3oure wille 504

¶ There maie no þinge so god my soule saue 505
Likeinge to 3owe þat maie displesen me
Ne .I. desire no þinge for to haue
Ne drede for to leese saue onlye þe 508
þis wil is in myne hert *and* aie schal be
Ne lengeþ of time or deþe maie þis deface
Ne chaunge myne corage to anoþer place 511

¶ Glad was þis Marquys for hir ansewaringe 512
Bot 3it he feyned. as it wer nouht soo
Al drery was his chier as his lokeinge
Whan þat he scholde oute of þe chambre goo. 515
Sone after þis a furlonge waie or tuo [leaf 120, back]
He p*ri*uely haþ tolde al his entent
Vnto a man of his assent 518

¶ A maner seriant was þis p*ri*ue man 519
þe whiche he feiþeful often fonden hadd
In þinge grete. *and* eke suche folke wele can.
Done execucione of þinges badde 522
The lorde knewe wele þat he him loued *and* dradde
And whan þis Sereiant knewe his lordes wille
In-to þe chambure he stalked him ful stille 525

¶ Madame He seide ȝe mot for-ȝiue it me
Þouhe .I. do þinge whiche .I. am constreeyned
ȝe bue so wise þat ful wele knowen ȝe
Þat lordes hestes mow nouȝt be feyned
Þay may wele be weiled or compleyned
Bot most nede to here luste obeie.
And so wil .I. þer is no more to seie

¶ This childe am .I. commaunded for to take
And spak no more bot owte þe childe he hent
Dispytously *and* gan a chere make
As þouhe he wolde haue sleyne it ar he went
Crisilde most al suffur *and* consent
And as a lombe sche sitteþ meke *and* stiłł
And lete þis seriant haue al his wiłł

¶ Suspecious was þe fame of þis manne
Suspecte his face suspecte his worde also
Suspecte þe time in whiche he þis be-ganne
Alas his douhter þat sche loued so
Sche wende he wolde haue sleyne it riht þo
Bot naþeles sche neyþer wepped ne siked
Confemeinge hir to þat þat markes lyked

¶ Bot att þe last speke sche began
And mekely to þe seriant praiede
So as he was a worþi gentil man
Þat sche mot kisse hir childe ar þat it deide
And in hire barme þis litel childe sche leide
Wiþ ful sadde face *and* gan þis childe to blisse
And lulled it *and* affter gan it kisse

¶ And þus sche seide in hire benigne voice
Fare wele my childe .I. schal þe neuer se
Bot seþe .I. haue þe merked wiþ þe croyse
Of þilke fader blissed mot þou be.

þat for vs deide vpon a cros of tre [leaf 121]
Thi soule litel childe .I. him be-take
For þis nyht schalt þou deie for my saake 560

¶ I trowe to a norice in þis caas 561
It hadde bien harde þis reuþe for to see
Wele myht a moder þan haue cride alas
Bott naþeles so sadde stedfast was sche 564
þat sche endureþ al aduersite
And to þe Seriaunte mekely sche seide
Haue here aȝeine ȝoure litel ȝonge maide 567

¶ Goþe nowe quod sche *and* doþe my lordes heste 568
Bott o þinge wolde .I. praie ȝoue of ȝoure grace
þat but my lorde for-badde ȝowe att þe leste
Beriþe þis litel body in sum place 571
þat bestes ne birdes it to-race
Bot he ne wolde no worde to þe pupos seie
Bot toke þe childe *and* wente vpon his weie 574

¶ This seriaunt came vnto þis lorde aȝeine 575
And of Crisilde wordes *and* hir chiere
He tolde him wordē for worde in schorte *and* pleine
And him presenteþ wiþ his douhter dere 578
Somwhat þis lorde had reuþe in his manere
Bot naþeles his purpos helde he stiłł
As lordes done whan þei wil haue here wiłł 581

¶ And badde þis sergeant þat he priuely 582
Scholde þis childe ful oft wynde *and* wrappe
Wiþ al circumstance tenderly
And Carie it in a cofer or in a lappe 585
Bott vppon peine his hede of for to swappe
þat no man scholde knowe of his entente
Ne whene ne whedere þat he wente 588

¶ Bot att þe Boloigne it to his suster dere
þat ilke time of Pauyke was Countesse
He scholde it take *and* schewe hir þis matiere
Be-secheinge hire to tone hir besinesse
This childe to fostre in al gentillesse
And whos childe þat it was he bad hire hide
Frome eue*r*y whiht for ouhte þat maie be-tide

¶ þis sergeant goþe *and* haþe fulfilled þis þinge
Bot nowe to þis ma[r]kes retorne wee
For nowe goþe he ful oft ymagyneinge
3if be his wyues chiere he myht see
Or be hir worde perceyue þat scho [leaf 121, back]
Were chaunged bot he neuer couþe hir finde
Bot euere in one ylike sadde *and* kynde

¶ As gladde as besy as humble in se*r*uise
And eke in loue as sche was wont to be
Was sche to him in euery mane*r*e wise
Ne of hir douhter nouht a worde spak sche
Accident for none aduersite
Was seine in hire ne neuer hir douhter name
Ne nemend sche in ernest ne in game

[Explicit] Tercia pars fabule.

[*PART IV.*]

IN þis . astate þere ben passed foure 3ere
Er sche wiþ childe was Bot as god wolde
A knaue childe sche bare be þis waltere
Ful gracious *and* faire to be-holde
And whan þat folke it to his fader tolde
Nouht onlyche he but al þe contre mury
Was for þis *and* god þei þonke *and* hery

¶ Whan it was tuo 3ere olde *and* fro þe breste
Departid of his norice on a daye
þis Markes cauht 3it anoþe*r*e leste

To tempte his wif ȝit ofter if he maie
O nedeles was sche tempted in assaie
Bot wedded men knowen no mesure
Whan þat þei finde a-pacient creature

¶ Wif q*uo*d þis Markes ȝe haue herde of þis
My peple sekely bereþ heuye of oure mariage
And namely seþ my soñ borne is
Nowe is wers þan euer in al oure age
The mormure sleþe myn herte *and* myne corage
For to myne eres co*mm*eþ voice so smarte
That it wel nyhe destruyde hathe myne herte

¶ Nowe seye þei þus whan Waltier is a-gone
Than schal þe blode of Ianicle succede
And bien oure lorde for oþere haue we none
Suche wordes seiþe my peple it is no drede
Wele ouhte .I. of suche murmure taken hede
For certeinly .I. drede suche sentence
Þouhe þei nouht pleine speke in myne audience

¶ I wolde leue in pes if þat .I. myhte
Where-fore .I. am disposed vtterlye
As .I. his suster serued be nyhte
Riht so þenke .I. to serue him priuely [leaf 122]
Thus warne .I. ȝowe for ȝe nouht sodanly
Oute of ȝoure selue for no woo scholde outraie
Beþe pacient *and* þerfore .I. ȝow preie

¶ .I. haue q*uo*d sche saide *and* euer schal
.I. will no þinge certeigne
Bot as ȝoue luste nouht greueþe me al
Þouhe þat my douhter *and* my soñ bue sleine
Att ȝoure co*mm*andement þis is to seine
.I. haue nouht had no parte of childern tweyne
Bot first sekenesse *and* after woo *and* peine

¶ 3e bene ouré lorde do wiþ 3oure owen þinge
Riht as 3owe liste axeþe no rede att me
For as .I. left att home al my cloþinge
Whan .I. first came to 3owe riht so q*uo*d sche
Lest .I. my wil *and* al my liberte
And toke 3oure cloþinge where-fore .I. 3owe preie
Doþe 3oure plesance .I. wil 3oure lust obeie

¶ And certes if .I. had p*re*science
3oure wiłł to knowe ar 3e 3oure lust me tolde
.I. wolde it do wiþ-outen necligence
Bot nowe .I. wote 3oure luste *and* what 3e wolde
Al 3oure plesance ferme *and* plesance .I. holde
For wist .I. þat my deþe wolde do 3owe ese
Riht gladly wolde .I. deie 3owe to plese

¶ Deþ maie nouht make no comp*ar*isone
Vnto owre loue *and* whan þis Markis seye
þe Countenance. of his wif he cast a-doune
His eyȝen tuo *and* wonderþ þat sche maye
In paciens suffur al þis araye
And forþe he goþ wiþ drery countenance
Bot to his hert it was riht grete plesance

¶ þis Ogel seriant in þe same wise
þat he hir douhte cauht riht so he
Or wers. if men wers can deuise
Haþe hente hire son þat ful was of beute
And euer in oone so paciente was sche
That sche no chiere made of heuinesse
Bott kissed hir soñ *and* after gan it blesse

¶ Saue þis sche praide him if þat he myht
Hir litel soñ he wolde in erþe graue
His tendre limes delicate to siht
Fro foules *and* fro bestes forto saue [leaf 122, back]

Bot sche none answere of him myht haue
He went his waie as he no þinge rouht
Bot to Boleigne he tendurly it brouht

¶ This Markes wondreþ euer lenger þe more
Vpon hire paciens *and* if þat he
Ne hadde soþely knowe þ*er*e before
þat p*er*fitly hir cheldern loued sche
He wolde haue wende þat of su*m*me subtilite
And of Males or for cruel curage
þat sche hadde sufferd þis wiþ sadde visage

¶ Bot wele he knewe next him selue certeigne
Sche loued hir childern best in eue*r*y wise
Bot nowe of we*m*men wolde .I. axe feine
If þes assaies myht nouht suffise
What couþe a stordy husbonde more deuyse
to preue his wif *and* hir stedfastnesse
And he continuinge euer in stordenesse

¶ Bot þere buen folke of suche condicione
þat whan þe haue a certeine purpos take
þei can nouht stinte of hire entencion
Bot riht as þei were bounden to a stake
þai wil nouht of þat first purpos slake
Riht so þis ma[r]kes fully haþe purposyd
To tempt his wif as he was firste disposyd

¶ He waiteþ if be worde or countenance
That sche to him was chaunged of Corage
Bot neue*r* couþe he finde variance
Sche was aie oon in hert *and* in visage
And aie þe forþer sche was in age
The more trewe if þat it were possible
Sche was to him loue *and* more pesible

¶ For whiche it semed þus þat of hem tuo
þer nas bot o will for as Waltier luste
þat same lust was hir plesance also
And god he þonked as fel for þe beste
Sch schewed wele for no werldly vnreste
A wif as of hire self no þinge ne scholde
Wille in effecte bot as hir husbonde wolde

¶ The sclander of Walter oft *and* wide spradde
That of a cruel hert he wikkedly
For he a pouer wo*m*man wedded hadde
Had murdred boþ his childern p*ri*uely [leaf 123]
Suche murm*ur* was ymonge hem comunly
No wonder is for to þe peples ere
þere come no worde bot þat þei murdred were

¶ ffor whiche þ*er* as his peple þ*er*e before
Had loued him wel þe sclaunder of his defame
Maade hem þat þei hated him þer-fore
To biene a Mordrer is an hateful name
Bot naþeles for ernest ne for game
He of his crewel purpos nold stint
To tempte his wif was sette al his entent

¶ Whan þat his douhter. xij. 3ere was of age
He to þe Courte of Rome in soubtile wise
Enformed of his will *and* sente his message
Co*m*mandeinge hem suche bulles to douise
In þis manere *and* in þis same gise
Howe þat þe pope for his peple rest
Bat him to wedde anoþer wif 3if þat him lest

¶ I saie he badde þei scholde countrefete
The popes bulles makeinge mencione
þat haþe leue his first wif to lete
As by þe popes despensacione

To stinte Rancor *and* discencione
Be-twix his peple *and* him þus spake þe bulle
The whiche þei han publisced att þe fulle 749

¶ The rode peple as it no wonder is 750
Wenden ful wel þat it hadd be riht so
Bot whan þis tiþinges came to Crisildis
.I. deme þat hire hert was ful woo 753
Bot sche ylike sadde for euer moo
Disposed was þis humble creature
To aduersite of fortune al to endure 756

¶ Abideinge eu*er* his lust *and* his plesaunce 757
To wham sche was ȝeuen hert *and* al
As to hir werldly verray suffisance
Bot schortly ȝif þis storie teH .I. schal 760
This Marqwys writen haþe in special
A l*ettr*e in whiche he schewe þ his entent
And secretely he to Boleigne it sent 763

¶ To þe erle of pauyke whiche þat hadde þo 764
Wedded his suster p*ray*ede he specialy
To bringe home aȝcine his childerne two
Bot he o þinge praide vtterly [leaf 123, back] 767
Wiþ aH his hert ful affectuously
þat he to no wight þouh man wolde enquere
Schol nouht tellen whos childen þat þei were 770

¶ Bot seie þe maiden schold y-wedde be 771
Vn-to þe Markes of Salucez riht anone
And as þis Erle was preide riht so dide
For att þe daie sette. he on his waie is gone 774
To-wardes Salutz *and* lordes many one
In riche Araie þis Mayden for to Gyde
Hir ȝonge broþer rideynge be hire side 777

¶ Araide was to-warde hir mariage
This frische maide ful of gemmes clere
Hire broþer whiche þat seuen 3ere was of age
Araide eke ful frische in his manere
And þus in grete noblesse *and* wiþ gladde chiere
To-ward Saluces schapinge hire Iornaie
Fro daie to daie þei rideinge in hire weie.

[Explicit] Quarta pars fabule

[*PART V.*]

Amonge al þis after his wikked vsage
þis Markes 3it his wif gan tempte more
To þe vttrest preue of hir Corage
Fulli to haue experiment *and* lore.
If þat sche was as stedfast as before
He on a daie in open audience
Ful bustusly haþ seide hir þis sentence

¶ Certes Crisilde .I. had .I.-nowhe plesance
To haue 3owe to my wif for 3oure goodnesse
As for 3oure trouþe *and* 3oure obeissance
Not for 3oure lignage ne for 3oure rechesse
Bot nowe quod he in verreie soþefastnesse
That in grete lordeschippe 3if .I. wil a-vise
There is grete seruitute in sundre wise

¶ .I. maie not do as euery plouhe man may
My peple me constreyneþ forto take
Anoþer wif *and* crien daie be daie
And eke þe pope rankoure for to slake
Consenteþ it þat dare .I. vnder-tak
And trewlye þus muche .I. wil 3owe seie
My newe wif is cominge be þe weie

¶ Be stronge of herte *and* voide anone hir place
And þilke dowaire þat 3e brouhten me
Tak it a3eine .I. graunte it of my grace

[leaf 124]

Retorneþ to 3oure faders house *quod* he
No man maye alweie haue *prosp*[*er*]ite
Wiþ euen hert .I. rede 3oue to endure
The stroke of fortune or of aventure

¶ And sche a3eine ansewarde in pacience
My lorde seide sche .I. wote *and* wist al weie
How þat be-twex 3oure magnificence
And my pou*er*te no whight can ne maie
Maken comp*ar*ison þat is no naye
.I. held me neuer digne in no man*er*e
To be 3oure wif ne 3it 3oure chamberere

¶ And in þis þ*er*e 3e me lady maade
The hihe god take .I. for my wittenesse
And also wisely he my soule gladde
.I. neuer helde me lady ne maistresse
Bot humble s*er*uant to 3oure worþinesse
And euer schal while þat my lif maie dure
Abouen euery worldly creature

¶ That 3e so longe of 3oure benignite
Haue holde me in hono*ur* *and* nobleie
Where as .I. was nouht worþe to be
þat þonke .I. god *and* 3owe whome .I. preie
For-3elde it 3ow þere is no more to seye
Vnto my fader gladly wil .I. wende
And wiþ him duel vnto my lyues ende

¶ Ther .I. was fostred a childe ful smaH
Til .I. be dede my lif þer wil .I. lede
A wedowe clen in body hert *and* aH
For seþþe .I. 3aue to 3owe my maidenhede
And am 3oure trewe wif it is no drede
God schelde suche a lordes wif to take
Anoþer man to husbonde or to make

¶ And of ȝowre newe wif god of his grace
So *gra*unt ȝowe wele *and* hihe profpe*ri*te
For .I. wil gladly ȝelden hire my place
In whiche .I. was blisful wonte to be
For seþe it likeþ ȝowe my lorde q*uo*d sche
That whilom were al myn hertes rest
That .I. schal go .I. wil go whan ȝoue lest

¶ Bot þe*re* as ȝe me p*ro*fer suche dowaire
As .I. fist brouht it is wele in my mynde
It were my wreched cloþes noþinge faire [leaf 124, back]
The whiche to me were nowe ful hard to finde
O goode god howe gentil *and* howe kinde
ȝe Semed be ȝoure speche *and* be ȝoure visage
The daie þat maked was oure mariage

¶ Bott soþe is seide al gate .I. finde it trewe
For in effecte it p*ro*ued is on me
Loue is nouht olde as whan þat it is newe
Bot certes lorde for none aduersite
To deien in þe caas it schal nouht be
þat euer in worde or werke .I. schal repent
þat .I. ȝowe ȝafe myne herte in hole entent

¶ Lorde ȝe wote þat in my faders place
ȝe dide me stripe out of my poure wede
And richely me cladden of ȝoure grace
To ȝowe brouht .I. not elles out of drede
Bot feiþe *and* nakednes *and* maidenhede
And here aȝeine ȝoure cloþinge .I. restore
And eke ȝowre weddinge ringe for euer more

¶ þe remenant of ȝoure Iewels redi be
Wiþþe in ȝoure chambre dar .I. sauely seine
Naked oute of my faders house q*uo*d sche
.I. cam *and* naked .y. mote aȝeine

Al 3oure plesance wold .I. folow feine
Bot 3it .I. hope it be nouht 3oure entent
þat smokles oute of 3oure paleys .I. went

¶ 3e coupe nouht do so dishonest a þinge
þat þilke wombe in whiche 3oure childern leye
Scholde be-for þe peple in my walkinge
Be seene al bare whe[r] for .I. 3owe praye
Late me nouht like a werme go be þe waie
Remembre 3owe myn owen lorde so dere
.I. was 3owre wif þouhe .I. vnworþe were

¶ Wherefore in guerdon of myn maidenhede
Whiche þat .I. brouht *and* not awaiè .I. bere
As vowcheþ saue to 3eue to my mede
Bot suche a smok as .I. was wonte to were.
þat .I. þer-wiþ maie wrie þe wombe of here
þat was 3oure wif. *and* here take .I. my leue
Of 3owe myne owen lorde leste .I. 3owe greue

¶ The smokke q*uod* he þat þou haste vpon þi bakke
Lat it stiH *and* bere it forþe wiþ þe
Bot vnneþ þilke worde he spake [leaf 125]
Bott wente his weie for rewþe *and* pite
Be-forne þe folke hir seluen strepeþ sche
And in hire smoke wiþ foote *and* hede al bare
To-ward hir fader house sche is fare

¶ The folke hire folowen wepein in hir weie
And fortune aie þei cursen as þei gone
Bot sche fro wepeinge kepped her ey3en drie
Ne in þis time worde ne spak sche none
Hire fader þat þis tiþinge herd a-none
Cursiþ þe daie *and* time þat nature
Schope him to be a lyues creature

¶ ffor oute of doute þis olde poure man
þat whan þe lorde had fulfilde his corage
For euer it demed siþþe it first began
Him wold þinge it were dispa*r*age
To wedde one of so poue*r*e a lignage
To his astate so lowe to a lyht
And voide hir as sone as euer he myht

¶ Aȝeine his douhter hastely goþe he
For he be noyse of folke knewe hire comeinge
And wiþ hire olde cote as it miht be
He couerde hir ful sorwfully wepinge
Bot on hir bodi myht he it nouht bringe
For rude was þe cloþe *and* more of age
Be fele daies þan was hire Mariage

¶ Thus wiþ hire fader for a certeine space
Dwelleþ þis floure of wifly pacience
That neyþe[r] be hir wordes ne be hir face
Be-forne þe folke ne eke in hir absence.
Ne schewede sche þat hir was done offence
Ne of hire hihe astate in remembrance
Ne hadde sche as be hir countenance

¶ No wondere is for in hire grete astate
Hire goste was euer in pleine humilite
No tendre mouþe none herte delicate
Ne pompe ne semblant of roialte
Bot ful of pacience *and* benignite
Discrete *and* prideles ay honurable
And to hir husbond euere meke *and* stable

¶ Men speken of Iob *and* most of his humblesse
As clerkes whan hem liste can endite
Namely of men bot as in sothefastnesse [leaf 125, back]
Thow clerkes preisen we*m*men bo[t] a lite

Ther can no man in humblesse him acquite
As wemmen can ne can be halfe so trewe
As wemmen buen bot it be fal of newe 938

[*PART VI.*]

¶ Fro Boleyne is þis erle of pauyhe comme 939
Of whiche þe fame vp spronge to more *and* lesse
And to þe peple eres al *and* somme
Was Couþe eke þat a new Marquysesse 942
He wiþ him brouht in suche pompe *and* recchesse
þat neuer was þer seen wiþ mannes eye
So noble araie in al west lumbardeye 945

¶ Ther Markes whiche þat knewe *and* schope al þis. 946
Or þat þis Erle was comme sent his message
For þilke cely poure Crisild
And sche wiþ humble herte *and* glad visage 949
Nouhte wiþþe no swollen hert in hire Corage
Cam att hire heste *and* on hir knes hir sette
And reuerently *and* wisly sche him grette 952

¶ Crisilda quod he my wil is vtterlye 953
This maiden þat schal be wedded to me
Receyved be morwe as Roiallye
As possible is in my house to be 956
And eke þat euery wyght in his degre
Haue his astate in sittinge *and* seruice
And hihe plesance as .I. can best deuise 959

¶ .I. haue no womman suffisant certeine 960
The chambres for to arraie in ordinance
After my lust: *and* þere-fore wolde .I. feine
þine were al suche maner gouernance 963
þou knowest eke of olde al my plesañce
þouhe þine araie be bad *and* yuel be-seye
Do þou þi deuere att þe leste waie 966

¶ Not only lorde þat .I. am gladde quod sche
To do ȝoure lust bot .I. desire also
ȝowe for to serue *and* plese in my degre
Wiþ-outen feynteinge *and* schal euer moo
Ne neuer for no wele ne for woo
Ne schal þe goste wiþ-inne myne hert stinte
To loue ȝow best wiþ al my trewe entente

¶ And wiþ þat worde sche gan þe house to dihte
And tables for to sette *and* beddes make
And peyned hire to done al þat sche myht [leaf 126]
Preieinge þe chambreres for goddes sake
To hasten hem *and* fast swepe *and* shake
And sche þe most seruisiable of alle
Haþe euery chambre arraide *and* his halle

¶ Aboute vndern gan þis erle alyht
And wyþ him brouht his noble childern tweye
For-wiþ þe peple ran to see þat siht
Of hir arraye so Richely beseye
and þan at arst amonges hem þei sey
þat Walter was no fule þouhe þat him leste
To chaunge his wif for it was for þe beste

¶ For sche is fairere as þei demen alle
þan is Crisilde *and* more tendir of age
And feirer fruyte betwene hem schold falle
And more plesance for hir hihe lignage
Hir broþer eke so faire was of visage
That hem to se þe peple haþ kauht plesance
Commendynge nowe þe Markes gouernance

¶ O stormy peple vnsad *and* euer vntrewe
Ay indiscrete *and* chaungeinge as a fane
Deliteinge aye in Romble þat is newe
Fare like þe mone ay wexen ȝe *and* wane

Ay ful of Clappinge dere ynowhe a Iane
3oure dome as fals 3oure inconstance wele preueþ
A for grete fole is he þat on 3owe leueþ 1001

¶ Thus seiden sadde folke in þat Cite 1002
Whan þat þe peple gased vp *and* doune
For þei were glad riht for þe nouelte
To haue a newe lady of here toune 1005
No more of þis now make .I. mencione
Bot to Crisilde anone .I. wil me dresse
And tel hir Constance *and* hir besinesse 1008

¶ Ful bèsy was crisilde in eue*r*y þinge 1009
Þat to þe feste was ape*r*tenent
Riht nouht was sche abassched of hire cloþinge
þouhe it were rode *and* eke somdele to-rente 1012
Bot wiþ glad chiere to þe 3ate is wente
Wyþ o*þe*re folke to grete þe marquysesse
And after þat doþ forþe hire besinesse 1015

¶ Wiþ so gladde chiere his gestes sche resceyueþ 1016
And conyngly eue*r*yche in his degre
Þat defaute no man apperceyueþ
Bot aie þei wondren what sche myht be [leaf 126, bk] 1019
That in so pouer araye was for to se
And couþe suche honoure *and* reue*r*ence
And worþely þe preised hire prudence 1022

¶ In al þis men while sche ne stinte 1023
This maiden *and* eke hir broþer to co*m*mende
Wiþ al hir hert wiþ ful benynge entente
So wele þat no man couþe hir p*r*ise amende 1026
Bot att þe laste whan þes lordes wende
To sitten doune att mete he gan to caH
Crisilde as sche was busy in his haH 1029

¶ Crisild q*uod* he as it were in his pleie
Howe like þ þe my wif *and* hire beaute
Riht wele q*uod* sche my lorde for in goode feie
A feirer sawhe .I. neuer none þan sche
.I. prei to god 3if. 3oue p*rosperite*
And so hope .I. þat he wil to 3oue sende
Plesance ynowhe vnto 3oure liues ende

¶ .O. þinge beseche .I. 3owe *and* warne also
þat 3e prikke wiþ no turnementynge
þis tender maiden as 3e haue done mo
For sche is fosterd in hir norischeinge
More tendrely *and* to my supposinge
Sche couþe nouht adu*ersite* endure
As couþe a pore fostred creature

¶ And whan þis Waltier sauhe hire pacience
Hir glad chiere *and* no malece att al
And he so oft had done hire offence
And sche aye sadde *and* constante as a wal
Continuinge euer hire Innocens ouer al
This stordy Markes gan his hert dresse
To rewen on hire wifly stedfastnesse

¶ This is ynouhe Crisild*e* myne quod he
Be nowe no more agaste ne yuel a-paide
.I. haue þi feiþe *and* þi benignite
As wele as euer wo*mm*an was assaide
In grete astate *and* pouerly araide
Now knowe .I. dere wife þi stedfastnesse
And hire in armes toke *and* gan hir kesse

¶ And sche for wonder toke of it no kepe
Sche þouht nouht what þinge he to hir seide
Sche ferde as sche had stert oute of hir slepe [¹ *Line repeated at top of leaf* 127]
Til sche oute of hir masedenesse abraide [leaf 127]

Crisida quod he be god þat for vs deide
Thou ert my wif ne none oþer .I. haue
Ne neuer had so god my soule saue

¶ This is þi douhter whiche þou hast supposed
To be my wif þat toþer faiþe fully
Schal be myne heire as .I. haue aye purposed
Thou bare hem in þi bodi trewly.
Att Boleyne haue .I. kepped hem priuely
Takeþ hem aȝeine for nowe maist þou nouȝt sey
þat þou hast lorne none of þi children tweie

¶ And folke þat oþere wise haue seide of me
.I. warne hem wele þat .I. haue done þis dede
For no malece ne for no cruelte
Bot for to assaie in þe þi wommanhede
And nouht for to sle my childern god for-bede
Bot for to kepe hem priuely *and* stiłł
Til .I. þi purpos knewe *and* al þi wiłł

¶ Whan scho þis herde a swoune doune sche falleþ
For pitous Ioye *and* after hire swoneinge
Sche boþe hir ȝonge childerne to hire calleþ
And in hir armes pytously wepeinge
Embraseþ hem *and* tendurly kissinge
Ful lyk a mode wiþþe hir salte teres
Sche baþes boþ hire vesage *and* hire eres

¶ O whiche a pitous syht it was to see
Hir swoneynge *and* hire humble voice to here
Graunt mercye lord god .I. þonked ȝowe quod sche
þat ȝe haue sauede me my childern dere
Nowe reche .I. neuere to be dede riht here
Seþþe .I. stonde in ȝoure loue *and* in ȝoure grace
No force of deþe ne whan my sprite passe

¶ O tender o dere o ȝonge childern myne
ȝoure woful modere wende stedfastly
þat cruel houndes or sum foule vermyne
Had eten ȝowe bot god of his mercye
And ȝoure benigne fader tendurly
Haþe done ȝowe kepe in þe same stounde
Al sodanly sche swapped a-downe to grounde

And in hir swoune so sadly haldeþ sche
Here childern tuo whan sche gan hem enbrace
That wiþ grete slyht *and* grete difficulte [leaf 127, back]
The childerne from hir harme þei gun ȝace
O many a tere on mony a pitous face
Doune ranne ou hem þat stoden hir be side
Vnneþ aboute hir myhten þei a-bide

¶ Walter hire gladeþ *and* hire sorwe slakeþ
Sche riseþ vp a-basched from hir traunce
And euery wyht hire ioyeþ *and* fest makeþ
Til sche haþe cauht aȝeine her countenance
Waltier hir doþe feiþefully plesance
þat it is deynteþ for to see þe chiere
Be-twexe hem tuo nowe þei bue mette in fere

¶ This ladyse whan þat þei her time seie
Han taken hire *and* in to chambre gone
And strippen hir oute of hir rode araie
And in a cloþe of golde þat briht schone
Wiþ a corenal *and* mony a riche stone
Vpon hir hede þei in-to hal hir brouhte
And þan sche was honoured as sche ouhte

¶ Thus haþe þis pytous daie a blisful ende
For euery man *and* womman doþe her myht
This daie in merþe *and* reuel to despende
Til on þe welkine schone þe sterres briht

For more solempne in eu*e*ry mannes siht
This feste was *and* gretter of costage
Than was þe reuel of hir Mariage

¶ Ful mony a 3ere in hihe p*rosper*ite
Leuen þis tuo in concorde *and* rest
And richely his douhter maried he
Vn-to a lorde one of þe worþiest
Of aH ytaile þan. *and* pees *and* rest
His wives fader in his courte he kepeþ
Til þat his soule oute of his body crepeþ

¶ His so*n*ne succedeþ in his heritage
In reste *and* pes after his fader daie
And fortunate eke was in mariage
Al pute he nouht his wif in grete assaie
þis werlde is not so stronge it is no naye
As it haþe bue in olde time 3ore
And erkeneþ what þis auctor seiþ þ*er*e-fore

¶ This storie is seide not for þat wyues scholde
Folowen Crisilde as in humilite
For it were importable þouhe þei wolde
Bot for þat euery whight in his degre
Scholde be constant in adu*er*site
As was Crisilda þer-for Petrake wryteþ
This story whiche he wiþ hihe stile enditeþ

¶ For seþþe a wo*m*man was so paciente
Vnto a mortel man wele more vs ouht
Receyuen al in grė þat god vs sente
For grete skylles he proueþ þat he wrouht
Bot he tempteþ no man þat he bouht
As seiþe seinte Iame if 3e his pistel rede
He p*rou*eþ folke aldaie it is no drede

[leaf 128]

¶ And suffreþ vs as for oure exercise
Wiþ scharpe scourges of aduersite
Ful often to be beten in sundry wise
Nouȝt for to knowe oure wil for certes he
Or we ware borne knewe al oure frelete
And for oure best is al his gouernance
Lete vs þan leue in vertuous suffrance

¶ Bot lordinges o worde herkeneþ ar .I. go
It ware ful harde to finde nowe a dayes
In al a toune Crisildes one or tuo
For if þat þei were put to suche assaies
The golde of hem haþe nowe so bad laies
Wiþ bras þat þouhe þe coyne be faire at eye
It wolde raþer briste y tuo þan plye

¶ For whiche: for þe wyues loue of baþe
Whas lyf *and* al here helþe god maynteigne
In hire maystre *and* elles ware it skaþe
.I. wolde wiþ lusty herte frische *and* grene
Sey ȝowe a songe to glad ȝowe .I. wene
And latte us stint of enestful matiere
Herkeneþ my songe þat seiþe in þis manere

Lenvoye de Chaucer

Criselde is dede *and* hir pacience
And boþe at ones beried in ytaile
Wher-fore .I. crie in open audience
No wedded man be hardie to assaile
His wives pacience in hope to finde
Crisildes for certes he schal faile

O noble wyues ful of ire prudence
Lat none humylite ȝoure tonge naile
Ne late no clerke haue cause or diligence [leaf 128, bk] 1185
To write of ȝowe a storie of suche merveile
As Crisilde pacient *and* kinde
Lest chicheuache ȝowe swelowe in hire entreile 1188

Foloweþ here to *and* holdeþ no silence
Bot euer answer att þe countretaile
Beþ nouht bedaffed for ȝoure innocence 1191
Bot scharpely take on ȝowe þe gouernaile
Enp*r*inteþ wele þis lesson in ȝoure mynde
For co*m*mune p*ro*fite seþþe it maie availe 1194

þe Archewyues standeþ att þe fense
Seþ ȝe be stronge as is a grete Camaile
Ne suffreþ nouȝt þat men do ȝowe offence 1197
And sclender wives *and* febel as in a bataile
Beþ egre as is a tigre ȝonde in. Inde
Ay clappeþ as a melle .I. ȝowe counseile 1200

Ne drede hem nouht. ne do hem no reuerence
For þouhe þi husbonde armed be in maile
þe arwes of þi crabbed eloquence 1203
Schal pers his breste *and* eke his aduentaile
In gelowsye .I. rede eke þou him binde
And þou make him couche as doþe a qwaile 1206

If þow bue faire þ*er*e folke bue in p*re*sence
schew þou þi visage *and* þine aparaile
If þo be foule be fre of þi dispence 1209
To gete þe frendes do aye þi trauayle
Be ay of chier as liht as lef on lynde
And late him care *and* wepe *and* wringe *and* wayle. 1212

Explicit co*m*me*n*dacio

Incipit ffabula. [*on leaf* 128, *back*]

WHilome þer was dwellinge in lumbardie
A worþi knyht þat borne was in Paue
In whiche he leued in grete *prosperite*
And .xl. ȝere a wifles man was he
And folowde aye his bodely delite
On we*mm*en was his hole appetite
As done þes foles þat bu seculere
And whan þat he was passed .lx. ȝere
Were it for holynes or for dotage
.I. can nouht seie but suche a grete corage
Had þis knyht to be a wedded man
[1]þat daie *and* nyht he doþ al þat he can [1—1 *repeated on leaf* 129]
To aspie where he myht wedded be[1]
Preinge oure lorde to grant him þat he [leaf 129]
myht ones knowe þat blisful life
þat is betwex an husbond *and* his wif
And for to leue vnder þat holy honde
Wiþ wiche god first man *and* wo*m*man bonde
None oþer life seide he is worþe a bene
For wedlok is so esy *and* so clene
That in þis werlde it is a p*ar*adise
Thus seide þis olde knyht þat was so wise
An certeinly as soþe as godde is kenge
To take a wif it is a gloriouse þinge
And namely whan a man is olde *and* hore
þan is a wif fruyt of his tresore
þan scholde he take a ȝonge wif *and* a faire
On whiche he myht engender him an heire

And leden his lif in Ioy *and* solace
Where as þe bachellier singen alace
Whan þat þei finden any adu*er*site
In loue whiche þat is bot childes vanite
And trewli it sitte wele to be so
þat bachilliers haue ofte peine *and* woo
On brutel grounde þei boiled brutilnesse
þei finde frelte whan þei wene Sikernesse
þei leue bot as a burde or as a beste
In liberte *and* vnder none areste
þere as a wedded man in his astate
Leueþ. his lyf blisful *and* ordinate
Vnder þe ȝokke of mariage .ybounde
Wele may his herte In Ioy *and* blisse abounde
For who can be so buxum as a wife
Who is so trewe *and* eke so tentife
To kepe him seeke *and* hole as is his make
For wele or woo sche nyll nouht him for-sake
Sche is nouht werye him to loue *and* serue
þeih þat he lye beddred til he sterue
And ȝit so*m*me clerkes seine it is nouht so
Of whiche Theofrast is one of þo
What fors þouhe Theofrast list lye
Ne take no wif q*uo*d he for husbandrie
As for to spare in householde þi despence
A trew se*r*uant doþe möre diligence [leaf 129, back]
Thine goode to kepe þan þine owen wif
For sche wil claime half parte in al hire lif
And ȝif þat þou be seke so god me saue
Thyne verrey frendes or a trew knaue
Wil kepe þe bett þan sche þat waiteþ aie
After þi goode *and* haueþ do mony daie
[And if thou take a wife that to the is vn-trewe.
ffull ofte tyme it schall the rewe.] [Harl. 1758, *leaf* 77; *not in Addit.* 5140, *leaf* 149]
To þis entente *and* an .C. sipes wers
Writeþ þis man þere god his soule cors

Bot take no kepe of al such vanite
Defye Theofrast *and* herkeneþ me
¶ A wif is goddes ȝift verraily
Al oþer maner ȝiftes hardely
As landes rentes pasture or comune
Oþer eyþer ȝiftes þat bien mebles of fortune
þat passen as a schadowe on a wal
Bot drede nouht if pleinly speke I. schal
A wif wil last *and* in þine house endure
Wel langer þan þe list endure
Mariage is a ful grete sacrament
He whiche haþ no wif .I. holde him schent
He leueþ helples *and* is al desolate
.I. speke of folke in seculere astate
And herken whi .I. seie nouht þis for nouht
þe wo*m*man is for ma*n*nes helpe I-wrouht
þe hihe god whan he had Adam maked
And sauhe him a-lone b[e]ly nakeded
God of his grete goodnesse seide he þan
Latt vs nowe make an helpe to þis man
.I.-like to him selfe *and* þat he maade Eue
Here maie ȝe see *and* here be preue
þat wif is mannes help *and* comforte
His p*a*radise terestre *and* his disporte
So buxum *and* so vertuus is sche
þei moste nedes leue in vnite
O flesche *and* o blode as .I. gesse
Ne haþe bot on herte in wele *and* in destresse
A wif a seinte mare benedicite
Howe myhte a man haue any adu*er*site
þat haþ a wif certes .I. can nouht seye
The blisse þat is be-tuex hem tueye
þere maie no tunge tel or hert þinke.
If he be pou*er*e Sche helpeþ him to swynke [leaf 130]
Sche kepeþ his gode *and* wasteþ neu*er* a dele
And al þat hire husbond lust hire lykeþ wele

Sche seiþ nouht ones naie whan he seiþe ȝe
Doþ þis saiþe he Alredy sire seiþ,sche
O blisful order. o wedlok precious
þou ert so mery *and* eke so vertuous
And so commended *and* approued eke
þat euery mon þat holdeþ him worþe a leke
Vpon his bare knees ouht al his lif
Thonken his god þat him haþ sente a wif
Oþire praie god him for to sende
A wif to last vnto his lyues ende
For þan his lif is sett in sekurnesse
He may nouhte be deceiued as .I. gesse
So þat he worche after his wyues rede
þan maie he boldely bere vp his hede
þei buen so trewe *and* so wise
For wiche if þou wilt worchen as þe wise
Do al waie so as þe womman wil þe reede
Lo howe þat Iacob as þes clerkes rede
Be goode Counsel of his moder Rebek
Bande þe kidde scynne aboute his nek
For whiche his faders benison he wan
Lo Iuditħ as þe storie eke tel can
Be wise Counsel sche goddes peple kept[1] [[1] t *rubbed out*]
And slowhe him Olofernus while he slept
Lo howe Abigaile be gode counsel howe þat sche
Saued hir husbond nabal whan þat he
Schold haue be sleyne *and* Loke after al so
Be goode counsel deliuerd out of wo
The peple of god *and* made hem mardothe
Of Assure enchaunced for to be
There nes noþinge in[2] gre superlatiff [[2] ? in *in a later hand*]
As seiþ Senec aboue an humble wif
Suffurþ þi wiues tonge as Caton bitte
Sche schal commande *and* þou schalt suffur it
And ȝute sche wiłł obeie of Curtesye
A wif is keper of þin husbondrie

Wele maie þe seke man be-waile *and* wepe
þere as þere nes no wif þe house to kepe
.I. warne þe if wisely þou wilt worche
Loue wele þi wif as crist loueþ his chirche [leaf 130, back]
If þou loues þi self þou loues þi wif 1385
No man hateþ his flesche bot in his lif
He fostreþe it *and* þer-for bid .I. þe
Chirische þi wif or þou scalt neuer þe 1388
Husband *and* wif whatt so men Iape or pleie
Of werldly folke holde þe riht weie
Thei buen so knytte þer maie non harme be-tide
And namely vpon the wif side 1392
For whiche þis Ianuare of whiche .I. tolde
Considered in wiþ his daies olde
The lusty þe vertuous quiete
That is in mariage any swete 1396
And for his frendes on a daie sent
To teHen hem þeffect of his e[n]tent
Wiþ face sadde he haþ hem þis tale tolde
He seide frendes .I. am hore *and* olde 1400
And almoste god wote att my puttes brinke
Vpon my soule sum what most .I. þinke
.I. haue my body folely dispended
.I.-blissed be god þat it schal be amended 1404
For .I. wil be certeine a wedded man
And þat in al þe hast þat .I. can
Vnto sum maide faire *and* tendre of age
.I. praie 3owe schape for mi Mariage 1408
Als sudanly for .I. wil nouht abide
And .I. wil fonde aspie on my side
To whome .I. maie be wedded hastely
Bot for also muche as 3e buen mo þan .I. 1412
3e scHoH raþerne suche a þinge aspyen
þan .I. *and* where me lust best to allyen
Bot o þinge warne .I. 3owe my frendes dere
.I. wil none olde wif haue in no manere 1416

Sche schal nouht passe .xvj. 3ere certeigne
Olde flesshe *and* 3onge flesshe þat wolde .I. haue ful feine
Bet is q*uo*d he a pike þan a pikerele
And better þan olde bufe is tendre vele
.I. wil no wo*m*man .xx. 3ere of age
It nes bot benestrawe. *and* grete forage
And eke þis olde wedowes god it wote
þei kon so muche craft on wades bote
So mechil broken harme whan þat hem lest
þat wiþe hem schold .I. neue*re* leue in rest [leaf 131]
For sondre scoles makeþ soubstile clerkes
We*m*men of mony a scole halue a clerke is
Bot certeynly a 3onge þinge maie me guye
Riht as men maie warme wex wiþ hondes to plie
Where-for .I. seie 3owe pleynly in clause
.I. wil none olde wif for þis cause
For if so weer if .I. hadde so meschaunce
That .I. in hire couþe haue [no] plesance
Than scholde .I. lede my lyf in adultrie
And so strike to þe deuel whan .I. deie
Ne chil scholde .I. none vpon hir geten
3it were me leuer houndes had me eten
þat þat my heritage schold fal
In straunge hande *and* þus .I. tel 3owe al
.I. doute nouht .I. wote þe cause whye
Men schold wedde *and* forþer more wote .I.
Ther speke þ mony men of Mariage
That wote no more of it þan wote my page
For whiche cause men schold tak a wif
If he maie nouht chast be be his lif
Tak him a wif wiþ grete deuociõn
Be cause of leueful p*ro*creaciõn
Of Childer to þe hono*ur* of god aboue
And not onely for p*ar*amo*ur* *and* for loue
And for þei scholde lychery eschewe
And 3elde her dettes whiles þat it is newe

Or for þat ilke man schold help oþer
In Meschef as a suster schal do a broþer
And leue in Chastite ful heuenly
Bot sires be 3oure leue þat am nouht .I.
For god be þonke-it .I. dar make a-vaunt
.I. fele my lymes stark *and* sufficeant
To done al þat a man be-longeþ to do
.I. wote my seluen best what .I. may do
Thouhe .I. be hore as doþe a treie
þat blossomeþ ar þat þe fruyte y-waxe bue
A blossome tre is neiþer drie ne dede
.I. feel me nowhwhere hore bot on myn hede
Myne herte *and* my lymes buen as grene
As laurer þat þorwh̄. þe 3ere is seene
And sèþen 3e haue herd al myne entent
.I. prai 3ow to mi wil þat 3e assent [leaf 131, back]
Diuers men diuers him tolde
Off Mariages mony ensa[m]ples olde
Somme blamed it som preised it certeigne
Bot att þe last schortly for to seine
As al dai falleþ altercacione
Be-twex frendes in disputacione
There fel a strif be-twix his breþern tuo
Of whiche þat tone was cleped Placebo
Placebo seide O. Ianuer broþer
To 3ou tel .I. þis tale *and* to none oþere
Foh̄ litel nede had 3e my lorde so dere
Counsel to ax of any þat is here
Bot þat 3e be oone so ful of sapience
þat 3owe ne likeþ for 3oure hihe prudence
To wayue fro þe worde of Salomone
This worde seide he vnto vs euerychone
Wirke al þinge be counseile þus seide he
And þan schal þou nouht repent þe
Bot þouhe þat Salomon spek suche a worde
Mine owen dere broþer *and* my lorde

So wisly god my soule bringe att rest
.I. holde ȝoure owen consel is þe best
For broþer myne of me take þis motif
.I. haue nowe bue a court man al my lif
And god wote þouhe .I. vnworþi be
.I. haue stande in ful grete degre
Abouten lordes in ful grete astate
ȝit hadde .I. neuer wiþ none of hem at bate
.I. neuer hem contraried trewly
.I. wote wele þat mi lorde can more þan .I.
What þat he seiþe .I. holde it ferme *and* stable
.I. seide þe same or elles þinge semblable
A fful grete fole is any counselloure
þat seruith any lorde of hihe honoure
þat dar presume or ones þinken it
þat is counsel schol pas his lordes witte
Nay lordes ben no foles be my faie
ȝe haue ȝoure selfe spoken here to-daie
So hihe sentence so holy *and* so wele
þat .I. consent *and* conferme euery dele
ȝoure wordez al *and* ȝoure opynyoun
Be god þer nys no man in al þis toune
Ne in Itaile couþe bette haue saide [leaf 132]
Crist haldeþ him of þis ful wele apaied
And trewly. it is an hihe corage
Of any man þat stoupin in his age
To tak a ȝonge wif be my fader kinne
ȝoure herte hongeþ vpon a Ioly pinne.
Doþ nowe in þis matier riht as ȝowe leste
For finaly .I. halde it for þe best
¶ Iustinus þat ay stiłł satt *and* herde
He riht on þis wise to placebo he answarde
Nowe broþer myne be pacient .I. praie
Seþins ȝe haue seide *and* herkeneþ whatt .I. saie
Senec amonge oþere wordes wise
Seiþe þat a man ouht him riht wele avise

To whome he ȝeue his londe oþer his catel
And seþins .I. auht avise me riht wel
To whom .I. ȝeue my good aweye fro me
Wele more .I. auht auyse [me parde] 1528
To whome .I. ȝeue my body for alweie
.I. warne ȝowe wele it is no childes pleie
To take a vif wiþ-outen avisement
Men most enquere þis is my assent 1532
Wheþer sche be wise *and* sobre o*þer*e dronkenlewe
O*þer*e proude o*þer*e vþerweie a schrewe
A chidistere o*þer*e a wasto*ur* of þyne goode
O*þer*e riche o*þer*e pou*er*e o*þer*e of maners woode 1536
Al be it so þat no man finde schal
None in þis werlde þat trotteþ hole in al
Ne man ne beste suche as men deuise
Bot naþeles it auht ynouȝe suffise 1540
Wiþ any wif if þat so were sche hadde
Mo goode þewes þan hir vices badde
And al þis askeþ leiser to enquere
For god it woote .I. haue weppet mony a tere 1544
Ful pr*i*uely seþ þat .I. had a wif
Preiseþ who so wol a wedded mannes lif
Certein .I. finde it bot cost *and* care
And obseruaunces of al blisses bare 1548
And ȝite god. wote my neihbours aboute
And namely of we*mm*en mony a route
Saine þat .I. haue þe most stedfast wif
And eke þe mekest oon þat beriþ lif 1552
Bot .I. wote beste where wringeþ me my schoo [leaf 132, back]
ȝe maie for me riht as ȝoue likeþ doo
Aviseþ ȝowe ȝe bue a man of Age
Howe þat ȝe entren in to Mariage 1556
And namely wiþ a ȝonge wif *and* a faire
Be him þat maad water erþe *and* ayre
The ȝongest man þat it in al þis route
Iȝ besy ynowhe to bringe it aboute 1560

To haue his alone trusteþ to me
3e schol nou3t only plesen hire 3eres þre
þis is to sai done hire plesance
A wif axeþ ful mony an obse[r]uance
.I. praie 3owe þat 3e ne been yuel apaide
Wele q*uod* þis Ianuar *and* hast þou al seide
A strawe for þi Senec *and* for þi pr*o*uerbes
.I. count nouht a pany3er ful of herbes
Of skole termes wisere men þan þoue
As þou hast herde assenten riht nowe
To my purpos Placebo what seie 3e
.I. seie it is a corsed man q*uod* he
þa[t] letteþ matrimonye sekurlye
And wiþ þat worde þei resen sodanlye
And buen assented ffulli þat he schold
Be wedded whan him lust *and* whan he wolde
The fantasy *and* þe besy curiousenesse
Fro day to day gan in þe soule impresse
Of Ianuare aboute his mariage
Many faire schapen *and* mony faire visage
þere passeþ þourhe his hert nyht be nyht
As who so take a mer*o*ur pulisshed briht
And set it in a comune Market place
Than scholde he se mony a figure pace
Be his mer*o*ur *and* in þe same wise
Gan Ianuar in wiþ his þouht deuise
Of Maidenes whiche þat dwelt be side
He wiste nouht where he myht abide
For þouhe þat one haþe beuty in hir face
Anoþer stant so in þe peples grace
For hir sadnes *and* hire benignite
þat of þe peple grettest voice had sche
And sum were riche *and* had bad name
Bot naþeles betuyx ernest *and* game
He att þe laste apoynted him on one
An lete al oþere fro his hert gone

[leaf 133] μ

And ches hire of his owen autorite
For loue is blinde al daie *and* maie nouht se
And whan þat he was in þe bedde brouhte
He purtreide in his hert *and* in his þouhte
Her fressche beute *and* hire age tendre
Her myddel smalL *and* hir armes longe *and* sklender
Hire wise gouernance *and* hir grete gentilnesse
Here wommanlye bereinge *and* hire gentil sadnesse
And whan þat he was fro hire condescendid
Him þouht his þouht miht nouȝt bue amendid
For whan þat he him selfe concludid hadde
Him þouht euery oþer mannes witte so badde
þat impossible it were to replie
Aȝeins his choys þis was his fantasie
His frendes sent he to att his instance
And preide hem to done him þat plesance
þat hastely þei wolden done to him come
He wolde a-brigge her laboure al *and* somme
It nedeþ no more for him to gone or ride
He was apoynted þere he wolde abide
Placebo cam *and* eke his frendes sone
And alder first he badde hem al a bone
þat none of hem none argumentez make
Aȝeines þe purpos whiche þat he haþ take
Whiche purpos was plesant to god seide he
And verrei grounde of his *prosperite*
He seide þer was a maiden in þe toune
Whiche þat of beute hadde grete renoune
Al were it so sche were of smal degre
Sufficeþ him hire ȝouþe *and* hire beaute
Whiche maide he seide schold be his wyf
To lede in ese *and* in holynesse his lif
And þonked god þat he myht haue hire al
That no whight wiþ his blisse *par*ten schal
And preide hem to laboure in þis nede
And schapid þat he failed nouht to spede

For þan he seide his spirte was att ese
þan is q*uo*d he noþinge may me displese
Saue o þinge p*ri*keþ in my conscience
The whiche .I. wil reherce in ȝoure p*re*sence 1636
.I. haue herd saie ful ȝare agoo [leaf 133, back]
There maie no man haue p*ar*fite blisses tuoo
This is to seie in erþe *and* eke in heuen
For þouhe he kepped him fro þe sinnes seuen 1640
And eke for eu*er*y braunche of þilke þree
Ȝite is þ*er*e so p*ar*fite p*ro*sp*er*ite
And so grete ese *and* luste in mariage
Þat eu*er* .y. am agast noue in myn age 1644
Þat .I. schal lede nowe so mery a lyf here
[So delycat / wyth-outen woo and stryf
That y shal haue myn heuene / in erthe heer]
For seþ þat verrei heuen is bouht so dere
Wiþ tribulacione *and* wiþ grete penance
How scholde .I. leue in suche plesance
As al wedded men doþe wiþ her wives
Com to þe blisse þere caste eterne on lyue is 1652
This is my drede *and* ȝe my breþerne tweie
Assoileþe me þis question .I. ȝowe preie
Iustinus whiche þat hated his foly
Anseweringe anone riht in his Iaperye 1656
A*n*d for he wolde his longe tale abrugge
He wolde none auctorite alegge
Bot seide sire so þ*er*e bue none obstacle
Oþ*er*e þan þis god of hihe meracle 1660
And of his mercy maie so for ȝoue worche
þat ar ȝe haue ȝoure ȝiftes of holi churche
Ȝe maie repent of wedded mannes lif
In whiche ȝe seine þ*er*e nys neiþer woo ne strif 1664
And elles god for-bede bot if he sent
A wedded man grace him to repent
Wel often raþer þan a sengel man
And þere-for sir þe best rede .I. kan 1668

[Addit. MS 5140, *leaf* 155. *Not in Sloane* 1685, *leaf* 92, *back; or Harl.* 1758, *leaf* 80, *back; or Harl.* 7333, *leaf* 70, *bk; or Sloane* 1686, *leaf* 182; *or Reg.* 18 *C* 2, *leaf* 95, *back*]

Dispeireþ 3owe nou3t haueþ in memorie
Perauenture sche maie be 3oure purgarie
Sche maie bue goddes mene *and* goddes whippe
þan schal 3oure soule vp to heuen skippe
Swifter þan doþ an arwe oute of a bowe
.I. hope to gode here afterwarde schalt þou knowe
þat þere ne is so grete felicite
In mariage ne neuer more schal be
þat 3e schal lache of 3oure saluacion
So þat 3e vse as scyl is *and* reson
þe lustes of 3oure wif attemperaly
And þat 3e plese hire nouht to amorously
And þat 3e kepe 3oue eke fro opere sinne [leaf 134]
Mi tale is done for my witt is þinne
Beþe nouht agast here-of my broþer
Bo[t] lat vs wade fro þis matire to anoþer
þe wif of baþe if 3e haue vnderstonde
On mariage whiche 3e haue on honde
Declared haþe ful wel in litel space
Fareþ nowe wele god haue 3owe in his grace
And wiþþe þis word þis Iustine *and* his broþer
Haue [take] here leue *and* elke of hem of oþer
For whan þei sawhe it most nedes bue
Thei wrouht so be wise sleiht *and* trete
þat sche þis maide wiche þat Mayus hiht
As hastifly as euer þat sche myht
Schal wedded bue vn-to Ianuarie
.I. trówe it were to longe 3oue to tarie
If .I. 3owe tolde of euery scrite or bande
Be whiche þat sche was ffeffed in his lande
Opere for to herken of her riche araie
Bot finaly commen is þis daie
þat to þe chirche boþe bue þei went
For to receyuen þe holy sacrament
Forþ comeþ þe preste wiþ þe stole aboute his nek
And badd hir be like Sarra *and* Rebek'

In wisdome *and* treuthe of mariage
And seide his orisons as his vsage
And crowched hem *and* badde god scholde hem blesse
And maad al sekur .I.-nouhe wiþ holynesse
Thus buen þei wedded wiþ solempnite
And att þe feste sitteþ he *and* sche
Wiþ oþer worþi folke vpon þe dese
Al ful of Ioye *and* blisse is þe palese
An ful of instrumentes *and* of vitaile
þe most deinteuous of al ytaile
Be-forne hem of Instrumentes whiche soune
That Orpheus. ne of Phebes Ampheoune
Ne maad neuer suche a Melodye
And att eu*e*ry cours cam loude Menstralcie
That neuer Ioab tromped for to here
Neiþer Theodomas 3it halfe so clere
And Thebes whan þe Cite was in doubte
Bachus þe wyne hem schenkeþ al a-boute.
And venus lauheþ on eu*e*ry wyht [leaf 134, back]
For Ianuar was becom hir knyht
And wolde boþe assaien his corage
In liberte *and* eke in Mariage
And wiþ hir fire-bronde wiþ hir honde aboute
Dauncep to-fore þe bride al aboute
An certeinly .I. dar wele seie riht þis
Emyneus þat god of weddinge is
Sawe neuer in his lif so mery a wedded man
Halde þou þi pes þou poet Marcean
þat writest vs þat ilke weddinge mury
Of hire Philologie. *and* of Mercury
And of þe songe þat þe Muses songe
So smale as eke þi penne *and* eke þi tonge
For to discriuen of þis Mariage
Whan tender 3ouþe haþe wedded stoupeinge age
Ther is suche murþe þat it maie nouht be writ
Assaieþ it 3oure self þan maie 3e wit

If þat .I. lakke or none in þis matiere
Mayus þat siht wiþ so benigne a chiere
Hire to be-holde it semed faire
Qween estier loked neuer wiþ suche an eye
On assure so meke a loke haþe sche
.I. maie 3oue nou3t deuise al here aboute
Bot þus muche of hir beute teH .I. maie
That sche was like þe briht morwe of maie
Fulfillede of beaute *and* plesance
This Ianuar is rauisshed in a traunce
And att eu*e*ry time he loked on hire face
Bot in his herte he gan hire to manace
þat he þat nyht in armes wolde hire streine
Harder þan euer paris dide Elyne
Bot naþeles 3it had he grete pite
þat þilke nyht offenden hir must he
And þouht Alas o tender creature
Now wold god 3e myht wele endure
Al my corage it is so scharpe *and* kene
.I. am a-gaste 3e schollen it nouht sustene
Bot god for-bede þat .I. ded al my myht
Nowe wolde god þat it were waxen nyht
And þat þe nyht wolde lasten euer mo
.I. wolde þat al þis peple war a-go
And fynaly he doþ al his laboure
As he best myht saueinge his honoure
To haste hem fro þe mete in subtile wise
The time cam þat reson was to rise
And after þat men daunce *and* drinke fast
And spices al aboute þe house þei cast
An ful of ioy *and* blisse is euery man
AH bot a swyere þat hiht Damyan
Whiche karue to-for þe knyht many daie
He was so rauisshed on his lady maie
þat for þe verraie peine he wex nere wode
Almoste he suelte *and* swouned þere he stode

1744 1748 1752 1756 1760 1764 [leaf 135] 1768 1772 1776

As þat sche bare daunceinge in hire honde
So fressche sche was *and* þer-to so likeande[1] [1 *Spurious. In Sloane* 1686, *leaf* 184, *back*]
And to his bed he went him hastely.
No more of him att þis time speke .I.
Bote .I. lete him wepe ynowe *and* pleine
Til frische maie wil rewe on his peine
O perelous fire þat in þe bedde strawe bredeþ
O famylere foo þat is seruise bedeþ
O seruant traitur fals holy hiew
.y-lyke to þe nadder sleiȝe *and* in bosom vntrewe
God schelde vs al fro ȝoure iniquitance
O Ianuere dronken in plesance
O mariage see how þine Damyan
þine owen swyer *and* þine borne man
Entendeþ to do þe velanye
God grant þe þine harme to aspie
For in þis werlde ne is wers pestilence
þan humble fo aldaie in þi presence
Performed haþ þis devine daie his ark diurne
No longer maie þe bodie of him soiorne
The oriȝote as in þat latitude
Niht wiþ his mantil þat is derke *and* rude
Gan for to sprede þe mysprei aboute
For whiche departed is þe lusti route
For Ianuer wiþ þonke on euery side
Home to her houses lustely þei ride
þer as þei done her þinges as hem lest
And whan þei sawe her time go to rest
Sone after þat þis hastif Ianuare
Wil go to bedde. he wil no longer care.
He drinkeþ. ypocras clarre *and* vernage [leaf 185, back]
Of spices ote to encresen his corage
And many a letuarie had he ful fyne
Suche as þe Cursed Monke Dam Constantine
Haþe wreten in his boke of coitue
To eten hem al he was noþinge eschewe

And þus to his *pri*ue frendes saide he
For goddes loue as sone as it may be
Late voyden al þis house in curteis wise sone
Men dronke *and* þe trauers droue anone
þe bride was brouht to bedd as stil as stone
So hasted Ianuarie it most be done [*spurious*]
[And when the bedde was with the preste blessed] [Harl. 1758, *leaf* 82]
Owte of þe chambre haþ eu*e*ry wyght him dressed
And Ianuare haþe fast in armes take
His frisshe maie his p*a*radis his maake
He lulliþ hire he kisseþ hir ful oft
Wiþ þilke bristeles of his berde vnsoft
ylike to þe skinne of hundefische scharpe as brere
For he was schaue al newe in his man*e*re
He rubbeþ hir vpon hir*e* tender face
And seid þus alas .I. must trespace
To 3owe my spowse *and* 3owe gretely offende
Or time come þat .I. wil downe descende
Bot naþeles considereþ þis q*uo*d he
þer nys no werkman whatt so eu*e*re he be
þat maie boþe werche wele *and* hastelye
This wil be done att leyser p*a*rfitelye
It is no force howe lon[ge] þat we pleye
.I. troue in wedlok complete be we tueye
And yblissed be þat 3ok þat we bue inne
For in oure actes we mowe do no sinne
A man maie do no sinne wiþ his wif
Ne hurt him self wiþ his owen knyf
Nowe we haue leue to pley vs be þe lawe
Thus laboureþ he til þat þe daie gun dawe
And þan he takeþ a soppe in fine clarre
And vp riht in his bedde þan sitteþ he
And after þat he songe ful loude *and* clere
An kessed his wif *and* maade wantoun chere
He was al coltisshe *and* ful of ragerie
And ful of Girgun as is a flecked pye

The slake skynne aboute his necke sshakeþ
While þat he songe so chaunteþ he *and* crakeþ
Bot god woote watt maie ȝouþe in hire hert [leaf 136]
Whan sche him sawhe vpsitinge in his schert 1852
In hys nyht cappe *and* wiþ his nek lene
Sche preiseþ nouht his pleyinge worþe a bene
Than saide he þus Mi ristinge wil .I. take
Nowe daie is *comme* .I. maie no lenger wake 1856
And doune he laide his hed and slept to *prime*
And afterward whan þat he sawhe his time
Vpriseþ Ianuer bot þe frisshe maie
Holdeþ hir chambre vnto þe ferþe daie 1860
As vsages is for wives for þe best
For eu*e*ry loboure som time mote haue rest
Oþere elles longe maie he nouht endure
This is to seie no liues creature 1864
Be it of fisshe or birde or beste or man
¶ Nowe wil .I. speke of woful Danyan
þat longuriþ for loue as ȝe schol here
The for .I. speke to him in þis manere 1868
.I. seye o cely Damyan alas
Answewer to þis demaunde as in þis cas
How schal tow to þi lady fresshe maie
Tel þi woo sche wil al weie seie naie 1872
Eke if þou speke sche wil þi wo be-wreye
God bu þin helpe .I. can no better seie
This seke Damyan in venus fire
So berneþ þat he deyeþ for desire 1876
For whiche he put his lif in aduenture
Ne lenger myht he in þis wise endure
Bot pr*i*uely a pennere gan he borwe
And in a l*ett*re wrote he al his sorwe 1880
In man*e*re of a compleint oþ*e*re a laie
Vnto þis faire *and* fresshe lady maie
And in a purse of silke honge on his schert
He haþ it put *and* leide it att his hert 1884

The mone þat att none was þat ilke daie
þat Ianuar haþe wedded þat fressche maie
In tuo of taure was in þe Cankre gliden
So longe haþe sche in hir chambre byden
As custume is vnto þis noblis all
A bride schal nouhte eten in þe hall
Til daies foure oþere þre att leste
.I.-passed buen þan late hir go to feste
The fourte daie complete fro none to none [leaf 136, back]
Whan þat þe hihe messe was done
In hall sitteþ þis Ianuer *and* maie
As fresshe as is þe briht somers daie
And so be-fel howe þat þis goode man
Remembreþ him vpon þis Damian
And seide seinte marie howe maie þis be
þat Damyan entendeþ nouht to me
Is he aie seke or howe maie þis be-tide
His swyers whiche þat stoden him be-side
excuseinge him be cause of his sekenesse
Whiche þat letid him to done his besinesse
None oþere cause myht make him care
That me for-þinkeþ *quod* þis Ianuare
He is a gentil swyer be my troupe
If þat he deie it were harme *and* roupe
He is as wise discrete *and* secre
As any man .I. wote of his degre
And þer-to manly *and* eke seruisable
And for to be a þrifty man riht able
Bot after mete as sone as euer y maie
.I. wil my self viset him *and* eke maie
To done him al þe comfort þat .I. can
And for þat worde blissed him euery man
þat of his bounte and his gentilnesse
He wolde so comforten him in his sekenesse
His swyere for it was a gentil dede
Dame quod he þis Ianuare takeþ good hede

Att þe after mete 3e wiþ 3oure wemmen alle
Whan 3e haue buen in chambre oute of þis halle
þat al 3e gone to se þis Damyon
Dope him disporte he is a gentile mon
And telleþ him þat .I. wil him vesyte
Haue .I. nopinge bot rest me a lyte
[And spede you faste for y wol abide
Til that ye slepe faste be my syde]
Nowe wiþ þat worde he gan to him calle
A swyer þat was marchal of his halle
And tolde him certeine þinges whatt he wolde
This frische maie haþ streiht her weie yholde
Wiþ al hire wemmen vnto þis Damyan
Doune be his bed side satt sche þan
Comforteing him as goodly as sche maie
This Damyan whan þat he his tim saie
In secrete wise his purse *and* eke his bille
In whiche þat he had wreten al his wille
Haþ pute in to hir honde wiþ-outen more
Saue þat he syked wonder sore
And sope to hir riht þus seide he
Mercye *and* þat 3e discouereþ nouht me
For .I. am dede if þat þis þinge be kidde
This purs haþ sche inne withe hire bosome hidde
And went hir waie 3e gette no more of me
Vn-to Ianuer Commen is sche
An on his bedde side sitte ful soft
He takeþ hir *and* kisseþ hire ful oft
And leide him doune to slepe *and* þat anone
Sche feyne hir þat sche most gone
þer as 3e wote þat euery whight must nede
And whan sche of þis bille haþ taken hede
Sche rent it al to cloutes atte þe last
And in þe priue softly sche it cast
Who stodieþ nowe bot faire fresche maie
And a-doune be Ianuare sche laie

[Harl. 7335, *lf* 122; *not in Sloane* 1685, *lf* 96; *or Harl.* 1758, *lf* 83, *bk*; *or Sloane* 1686, *lf* 186, *bk*; *or Reg.* 18 *C* 2, *leaf* 99; *or Harl.* 7333, *leaf* 72.]

[leaf 137]

That slepet til þat þe couhe him haþ awaked
Anone he preide hire to stripen hire al naked
He wolde of hire he seide haue sum plesance
He seide hire cloþes did him encumbrance
And sche obeieþ be he leef or loþe
Bot lest þat precious folke be wiþ me wroþe
How þat he wrouht .I. dar to ȝowe nouht teH
Opere wheþer þat he þouht on paradis or of heH
Bot .I. lete hem werche in here wise
Te euesonge ringe *and* þat þei mot arise
Were it be destany or aueuture
Were it be influence or be nature
Oþer in constillacione þat in suche astate
The heuen stoode þat time fortunate
Was for to putte a bil of venus werkes
For al þinge haþe time as seiþe þe clerkes
To any womman for to gete hire loue
.I. kan not sei bot þe grete god aboue
þat knoweþ þat none acte is causeles
He deþ of al for .I. wil holde my pes
Bot soþe is þis howe þat þis maie
Haþ take suche impression þat daie
On pite on þis seke Damyan [leaf 137, back]
That fro hir herte sche ne driue can
The remembrance for to done him ese
Certeine þouht sche whome þat þis þinge displese
.I. rek nouȝt for here .I. him assure
To loue him beste of any creature
Thouhe he no more hadde þan his scherte
Lo pite renneþ sone in gentile herte
Here maye ȝe see howe excellent fraunches
In wemmen is whan þei narwe hem avise
Sum terant þere is as þere be mony one
That haþ an herte as hard as any stone
Whiche wolde haue late him sterue in þe place
Wel raþare þan haue graunted him þat grace

And hem reioysen in þeire crouel pride
And recchep nouȝt to bue an homycide
This gentil maie ful filled of al pite
Riht so of hire honde a letter maade sche
In whiche sche *grau*ntep him of hire verraie grace
Thar lakep nouht onely bot daie *and* place
Where þat sche miht to his lust suffice
For it schal bue riht as he wil deuise
And whan sche see hire tim vpon a daie
To visite þis Damyan gope þis faire maie
And sotelly þis letter doune sche þrest
Vnder his pilowe rede if him lest
Sche takep him be þe honde *and* harde him tueste
So secretely þat no whight it weste
And bad him be al hole *and* forþe sche wente
To Ianuare whan þat he for hire sente
Vp risepe Damyan þe next morwe
Al passed was his sekenes *and* his sorwe
He kembep him *and* proynep *and* pikep
He dop al þat his lady luste *and* likep
And eke to Ianuare he gope as lowe
As euere dide a doge for þe bowe
He is so plesante to euery man
Fro craft it is who þat it can
þat euery whight is feine to teche him goode
And fully in his ladie grace he stode
Thus lete .I. Damyan aboute his nede
And my tale forþe .I. wil *pro*cede
Somme clerkes halden þat felicite [leaf 138]
Stant in delite *and* þarefor he
This Noble Ianuare wiþ al his myht
In honest wise as longep to a knyht
Schope him to leue ful deliciously
His houseynge his arraie al honestly
To his degre was maked as kenges
Amonge o*þe*re of his honest þinges

He had a grardyne al walled wiþ stone
So faire a gardyne wote .I. ney where none
For oute of doute .I. verraily suppose
þat he þat wrote þe romans of þe rose
Ne coupe of it þe bewte wele deuise
Ne Priapus ne miht noȝt suffise
þouhe he be god of Gardyns for to telle
The beute of þe gardyn *and* of þe welle
That vnder a laurer alwaie grene
Ful oft time kinge Pluto *and* his queene
Preserpina. *and* aH hire fairee
Disporten hem *and* maken melodee
Abouten þat wel *and* daunced as men tolde
This noble knyht þis Ianuare þe olde
Suche deinte haþ in hit to walken *and* to pleie
That he wil suffur no wyht to be þe kaie
Saue he him self for of þe smale wiket
He bare alwaie of siluer a kleket
Wiþ þe whiche whan þat him vnschette
And whan he walde paie his wif hire dette
In somer seson þeder wolde he goo
And maie his wiff *and* no whiht bot þei tuoo
An þinges whiche þat were nouht done abedde
þei in þe Gardeine performed haue *and* spedde
And in þis wise mony a mery daie
Leued þis Ianuare *and* fressche maie
Bott werldly Ioy mai nouht alweie endure
To Ianuare ne to no werldly creture
O sodeine happe o þou fortune vnstable
.I.-lyke to þe. þe scorpion vnstable
þat flaterst wiþ þin hede whan þou wilt stinge
Thi taile. is deþ þoruhe þine enuenymynge
O brutel ioye O swete poyson queynte
O mynester þat solely can peinte
Thin ȝeftes vnder þe hewe of stedfastnesse [leaf 138, back]
þat þou deceyuedest bope more *and* lesse

Whi hast þou Ianuer þus deceyued
And haddest him for þi ful frende receyued
And now þou hast be-raft him boþ his eyen
For sorwe of whiche desireþ he to deiȝen
Alas þis noble Ianuare þat is so fre
Amydde his luste *and* his prosperite
Is waxon blinde *and* al sodanly
His deþ þere-for desireþ he vtterly
And þere-wiþ-al þe fire of Ielousye
Lest þat his [wif] schold fall in sum folye
So bernt his hert þat wolde feine
Thatt *sum*me man boþe hir *and* him had sleine
For neuer after his deþ ne in his lif
Ne wolde he þat sche were loue ne wif
Bot euer leue as a wedew in cloþes blake
Soule as a tortle doþe þat haþ lost hir make
Bot att þe last after a Moneþ or tuey
His sorwhe gan to swage soþe to sey
For whan he wiste it mai none oþer be
He paciently tok his aduersite
Saf oute of doute maie he noȝt for-gone
þat he nas Ielous euer more in one
Whiche Ielouse it was so outrageous
þat neiþere in hal ne in none oþere hous
Ne in none oþere place neuer þe mo
He nold suffre hir neyþer ride nor go
Bot if þat he hande on hire alweie
For whiche ful of wepeþ frische maye
þat loueþ Damyan so benyngly
þat sche mote eiþer deie sodanly
Or elles sche most han him att hire lust
Sche waiteþ whan hire hert wald birst
Vppon þat oþer side Damyan
Becommen is þe sorwfulhest man
þat euer was for neiþer niht ne daie
Ne myht he speke a worde to fresche maie

As to his purpos of no suche matier
Bot if þat Ianuare most it here
þat had on honde vpon hire euermoo
And neuer les be writeinge to *and* fro
An priue signes wist he what sche ment [leaf 139]
And sche knewe of þe syne of his entent
O Ianuare what myht þe availe
þouhe þou myht see as fer as schippes saile
For also good is a blynde deceyued be
As to be deceiued whan a man may se
Lo Argus whiche þat hadd. an .C. yene
For aH þat euere he couþe poure oþir prine
ȝit was he blent *and* god wote so be moo
That wenene wisly þat it is nouht soo
Passe ouer is an ese *and* seie no more
This fresche maie of whiche .I. spak of ȝore
In warme wax haþe emprintid þis cliket
þat Ianuare bare of þat smale wiket
Be whiche into his gardine oft he went
And Damyan þat knewe hire entent
The cleket counterfetid priuely
There is no more to seie bot hastely
Some wonder be his cleket scha[l] be-tide
Whiche ȝe schollen here if ȝe wollen abide
O noble Ouide soþe seist þou god woote
What sleyht is it þouhe it be longe *and* hote
That he nil finde it oute in sommo manere
By Pyramus *and* thesbe maie men lere.
Thouhe þei were kepped ful longe streite ouer al
Thei biene acorded rowneinge þoruhe a wal
There is no whight couþe han founde oute suche a sleihte
Bot nowe to purpos ar þat daies eyhte
Were passe or þe Moneþ of Iuyl befyH
þat Ianuare haþ cauht so grete a wiH
Thoruhe engine of his wife him for to pleie
In his Gardine *and* no whiht bot þei tweie

That in a mor vn-to his may seide he
Rise vp my wife my loue my lady fre
The turtlys voice is herde my doufe swete
The winter is gone wiþ al Reynes wete
Com forþe nowe wiþ þin eyȝen Columbyne
Howe feirer buen þi brestes þan is wyne
The gardine es enclosed al aboute
Com forþe my white spouse oute of doute
þou hast me wounded in myn hert o wif
No spotte in þe was in al my lif
Com forþ *and* lat vs take oure disporte [leaf 139, back]
.I. chese þe for my wif *and* my comforte
Suche olde lewde wordes vsed he
On Damya[n] a signe Maade sche
þat he scholde go be-forne wiþ his cleket
þis Damyan haþe openede þe weket
And in he sterte *and* þat in suche manere
þat no wight myht it se ne here
And stiH he sit vnder a busche anone
This Ianuare so blinde as is a stone
Wiþ Mayus in his honde *and* no whight mo
In to his frische gardein is he goo
And clapped to þe weket sodanlye
Nowe wif q*uod* he here nys bot þou *and* .I.
þat art the creature þat .I. best loue
For be þat lorde þat sitteþ vs al aboue
.I. had leuer deyȝen on a knyf
Than þe offenden my dere treue wif
For goddes sake þinke howe .I. þe ches
Nouht for no Coueites douteles
Bott onely for þe loue .I. had to þe
And þouht þat .I. be olde *and* maye nouht see
Be to me trewe *and* .I. wil tel ȝowe whie
Certes þrei þinges schal ȝe winne þere bie
Firste loue of Criste *and* to ȝowre self honour
And al myne Heritage tonne *and* toure

.I. 3eue it 3owe make charters as 3owe liste
þis schal be do to morwe ar sonne ariste
So wissely god my soule bringe in blisse
And *pray* 3owe on Couena*n*t þat 3e me kesse
And þouhe þat .I. be Ielouse wite me nowht
3e buen so depe enp*r*inted in myne þouht
þat whan þat .I. considere 3oure beute
And þere-wiþ-al þe vnlikly elde of me
.I. maie nouht sertes þouhe .I. schold deie
For-bere to be oute 3oure compaigne
For verrei loue þis is wiþ-outen doute
Nowe kisse me wif *and* lat vs rome aboute
¶ This frisshe maye whan sche þis wordes herde
Benigly to Ianuare ansewerd
Bot first & forwarde sche began to wepe
.I. haue q*uo*d sche a soule for to kepe
As wele as 3e *and* also myne hono*ur* [leaf 140]
And of my wifhede þilke tender floure
Whiche þat .I. haue assured in 3oure honde
Whan þat þe preste to 3owe my body bonde
Wharfor .I. wil ansewer in þis manere
Wiþ loue of 3oue my lorde so dere
.I. praie god þat neuer dawe þat day.
þat .I. ne sterue as foule as wo*m*man maye
3if eue*r* y do vnto my kynne þat schame
Or elles .I. enpeire so my name
þat .I. be ffalse *and* if .I. do þat lake
To s'ripe me *and* putte me in a sake
And in þe next Riuere do me drenche
.I. am a gentil wo*m*man *and* no wenche
Whi speke 3e þus but men ben euyre vntrewe
And we*m*men haue repreef of 3owe ay newe
3e can noon o þere continau*n*ce yleue
Bot speke to us as vntreste *and* in repreue
And wiþ þat worde sche sauhe wher Damyane
Satt in þe busche *and* knele he began*n*e

And wiþ hire fingers signes maade sche
þat Damyan scholde climbe vpon þe tre
þat chargede was wiþ fruyte a[n]d vpe he wente
For verraily he knewe al hir entent
And euery signe þat sche couþe make
Wele bett þan Ianuare hire owen make
For in a lettre sche had told him al
Of þis matiere houe he werche schal
And þus I lete sette in þe pire
And Ianuare *and* Mayus rouneinge ful merie
Briht was þe daie *and* bleue þe firmament
Phebus of golde doune haþ his stremes sent
To gladen euery floure wiþ his warmenesse
He was þat time in geminis as .I. gesse
Bot litul fro his declinacioun
Of Cancer Iouys exaltacioun
¶ And so be-fel in a briht morwe tide
þat in þe gardine on þat ferþire side
Pluto þat is þe kinge of faire
And mony a ladi in his companye
Folowinge his wif þe queene Proserpina
Whiche þat he rauesched oute of proserpina.
Whiles þat sche gaderd floures in a mede [leaf 140, back]
In claudian ȝe maie þe storis rede
How in his grisly carte he hire fette
This kinge of ffaire a-doune him sette
Vppon a benche of torues frische *and* grene
And riht anone seide he þus vnto his qwene
My wif quod he þat maie not seie naie
The experiens proueth it euery daie
The treson whiche þat womman doþ to man
Ten hundreþ þousand teH .I. can
Notable of ȝoure vntreuþe *and* brutelnes
Of Salomon rychest of al riches
Ful filled of Sapiens *and* of werly glorie
Ful worþi bien þi wordes to memorie

To eu*e*ry wiht þat witte *and* reson can
þus preiseþ he 3itte þe bounte of man
Amonge a .M. men 3it fonde .I. one
Bot of al we*m*men fonde .I. neuer none
þus seiþe þe kinge þat knoweþ 3oure wikkednesse
And ih*esus* filius Syrak as .I. gesse
Ne spekeþ of 3owe but seldyn reue*r*ence
A wilde fire a corrupt pestilence
So fal vpon 3oure bodies 3it to nyht
Ne see nouht þis honurable knyht
Because alas þat he is blinde *and* olde
His owen man schal make him cokewolde
Loo where he sitte þe lichoure in þe trec
Nowe wil .I. gr*a*unte of my Maiestee
Vnto þis olde blinde worþi knyht
þat he schal haue a3eine his ey3en siht
Whan þat his wif wold done him velanye
Than schal he knowe al her harlotrye
Boþe in repreue of hire *and* o*þe*re mo
3e schal q*uo*d Procerpine *and* wil 3e soo
Nowe be my Moders sire soule .I. swere
þat .I. schal 3eue hire sufficeant ansewere
And alle we*m*men after for 3oure saake
þat þouhe þei buen in any gilte ytake
Wiþ face bolde þei schollen hem self excuse
And bere hem doune þat wolde hem accuse
For lakke of ansewere non of hem schollen deyen
Al had 3e seihe a þinge wiþ boþ 3oure ey3en.
3it schollon we so visage it hit hardelye · [leaf 141]
And wepe *and* swere *and* chide subtellye
þat 3e schol buen as lewde as arne gese
What rekkeþ me of 3oure auctoritees
.I. wote wele þis Iewe þis Salomone
Fande of vs we*m*men fules many one
Bot þouhe þat he fonde no goode wo*m*man
There haþe he founde mony ano*þe*re man

[Wommen ful trew ful good ful vertuous'
Witnes on hem þat dwellen in cristes hous
Wiþ martirdom þey prouyd hir[1] constance
The romaygne Iestis maken remembrãnce
Of many a verry trewe wyff also
But sire ne be nouȝt wroth as be it soo
þouȝ þat he seide he fond no good womman
I praye ȝow take þe sentence of þe man]
He ment þus þat in souereigne bounte
Nys none bot god neyþere he ne sche
Ey for verrey god þat nys bot one
What make ȝe so muche of Salomone
What þouhe he maad a temple goddes hous
What þouhe he were riche *and* glorious
So maade he a temple of fals goddes
Who myht do a þinge þat more for-bode is
Parde als faire as ȝe his name implastre
He was a lichoure *and* a ydolastre
And in his elde he verrei god for-soke
And ȝif þat god na hadde as seiþe þe boke
yspared him for his fader saake he scholde
Haue lost his reigne saun*er* þat he wolde
.I. sett nouht of al þe velany
þat ȝe of wemmen write a botterflie
.I. am a womman nedes most .I. speke
Or elles swel til myn hert breke
For þeþins he seide þat we be Iangelers
As eu*er* mote .I. brouke boþe my tresses
I schal spare for no curtesie
to spek him harme þat wolde vs velanye
Dame q*uo*d þis pluto be no longer wroþe
.I. ȝeue it vp bot seþen .I. swore myn oþe
þat [I] wolde graunt him his silt aȝeine
My worde schal stande þat warne .I. þe certeine
.I. am a kinge it sitte me nouht to lye
And .I. q*uo*d sche a queene of fayre

[Reg. 18 C ii, *lf* 103, *back; not in Harl.* 1758, *leaf* 87; *or Harl.* 7335, *leaf* 127; *or Sloane* 1686, *leaf* 192, *back; but in Addit.* 5140, *leaf* 166, *bk; 17 D xv, leaf* 121, *bk; Sloane* 1685, *leaf* 101; *the sheet out of Harl.* 7333 (*lf* 72-73).]

[1 MS ħ]

Hire ansewar sche schal haue .I. vnder-take
Lat us no mo wordes nowe make. 2318

Explicit fabula Mercatoris.

(*As in Sloane* 1686, *and Corpus.*)

[*For the rest of the Tale* (*from Harl. MS* 1758) *see the Appendix.*]

Incipit fabula. [on leaf 79]

Att Sarray in þe londe o Tartary.
Ther dwelled a kinge þat werred Russy
þoruhe whiche þere deyed mony a douhti man.
þis nobil kinge was cleped Kambynskan
Whiche of his time whas of so grete renone
Thar.*þere* nas nouhewere *in* no Regione
So excellent a lorde in al þinge
Him lakked nouh þat longed to a kenge
As of þe secte of whiche þat he was borne [leaf 79, back]
He kepped his laye to whiche þat he was sworne
And þer-to he was harde wise *and* riche
And pytous *and* Iuste alwaie ylyche
Soþe of his worde benigne *and* hon*ur*able
Of his corage as any Centre stable .i. centrum celi. [*or circuli.*]
3onge fressche *and* stronge in armes desirous
As any bachillier of al his house
A faire p*er*son he was *and* fortunate
And kepped alwaie so wele roiale astate
þat þer nas nouhewhere suche a man
þis noble kinge þis tartaryn Cambynskan
Had tuo sonnes on Eltheta his wif
Of whiche þe eldest hiht Algarsif
The toþer was cleped Camballo
A douhte had þis worþi kinge also
þat 3ongest was *and* hiht Canace
Bot for to tell 3owe al hir beaute
It liþe nouht in my tunge ne in myne sowneinge
.I. dar nouht vnder-tak so hihe a þinge

Myn ynglisse eke is insufficient
It most bene a Rector excellent
That coupe vse colours longeinge for þat art
ȝif he schold hire discryue any *par*te
.I. am none suche .I. most speke as .I. can
And so be-fel whan þat þis Cambynskan
Haþe tuenty wynter borne his Diademe
As he was wonte fro ȝere to ȝere [I deme]
He lete þe feste of his Natiuite
Done crien þoruhe Sarray his Cite
þe last Idus of Mars after þe ȝere
Phebus þe sonne ful Ioly was *and* clere
For he was nyhe his exaltacion
In Martes face *and* his mansion
In Aries þe Colerik þe hote signe
Ful lusty was þe weder *and* benygne
For whiche þe foules a-ȝein þe sone schene
What for þe seson *and* þe ȝonge grene
Ful loude songe hire affections
Hem semed han geten hem *pro*tections
Aȝeine þe swerde of wynter kene *and* colde
This Kambynskan of whiche .I. haue ȝow tolde
In Roial vestment sitte on his dese [leaf 80]
Wiþ Dyademe ful hihe in his paleyce
And halt his feste solempne *and* so riche
þat in þis werld ne was þer none it lyche
Of whiche if .I. schal tel al þe arraye
þan wolde it Occupie a somers daie
And eke it nedeþ nouht to deuise
Of eue*ry* cours þe order of hir ser*uise*
.I. wil nouht tel of hir strange sewese
Ne of hir swannes ne of hire heronsewese
Eke in þat londe as tellen knygtes olde
þer is sum mete þat is ful deynte holde
þat in þis lande men reche bot smal
þere is no man þat maie reporten al

.I. wil nouht tarien ȝow for it is prime
For it is no fruyte bot losse of time
In to my ferst purpos .I. wil haue my recours
And so be-fel þat after þe þred cours
While þat þis kinge sitte þus in his nobley
Herkenynge his mynstralles here þinges pley
Be-forne him att þe borde deliciously
In at þe hall-dore al sodeynly
þere com a knyht vpon a stede of bras
And in his honde a brode merouré of glas
Vpon his þome he had of golde a renge
And be his side a naked swerde hanginge.
And vpe he rideþ to þe hihe borde
In all þe haH ne was *þere* spoke a worde
For merveile of þis knyht him to be-holde
FuH besily þei wayten ȝonge *and* olde
This strange knyht þat cam þus sodanly
Al armed saue his hed ful richelye
Salued þe kinge þe qwene *and* þe lordes aH
Be order as þei seten in þe haH
Wiþ so hihe reu[*er*]ence *and* obeissance
als wele in speche as in countenance
þat Gawen wiþ his olde Curtasie
Thouhe he come aȝeine oute of fayre
Ne coupe him nouht amende wiþ no worde
And after þis be-for þe hihe borde
He wiþ a manly voice seide his mesage
After þe forme vsed in his langage.
With-oute vice of sillable or letter [leaf 80, back]
And for his tale scholde seme þe better
Accordant to his wordes was his chiere
As techeþ arte of speche hem þat it lere
Albeit þat .I. ne can soune his stele
Ne can nouht cleme ouere so hihe a stele
ȝit seie .I. þis as to comen entente
þus muche amonteþ al þat euere he mente

If it so be þat .I. haue it in my mynde
He saide þe kinge of arabie *and* of ynde
My liege lorde on þis solempne daye
Saluep 3owe as he best can *and* maie
Ande sendep 3owe in honour of 3owre feste
Be me þat am redie al att 3oure heste
This stede of bras þat Esily *and* wele
Can in þe space of a daie Naturele
This is to saie in .xxiiij. houres
Where so 3owh lust in drouht or in schoures
Beren 3oure body in to euery place
To whiche 3oure herte wilneþ for to pace
Wiþ-oute wem of 3owe þoruh foule or faire
Or if 3owe liste to flie as hihe in þe Eyre
As doþ an E[g]le whan him list to sore
þis same stede schal bere 3owe euer more
Wiþ-oute harme til 3e be þere 3ow list
Thow þat 3e slepen vpon his bak or rist
And torne a3eine wiþ writhinge of a pinne
He þat it wrouht couþe ful mony a gynne
He waited mony constillacion
Or he had do þis operacion
And knewe ful mony a seale *and* mony a bonde
This Miroure eke þat .I. haue in myne honde
Haþ suche a myh[t]e þat men maie in hit se
Whan þere schal fal any aduersite
Vn-to 3oure Regne or to 3oure self also
And openly who is 3oure frende or foo
And oue al þis if any lady briht
Haþe sette hire hert on any maner whiht
If he be false [she] schal his treson see
His newe loue *and* al his subtilite
So oppenly þat þere schal no þinge hide
Where-for a3ein þis lusti somer tide
This mirrour *and* þis ringe þat 3e maie see [leaf 81]
Ha haþe sent to my ladie Canacee

ȝowre excellent douhter þat is here
The vertue of þis ringe if ȝe wil here
Is þis þat if hire list it for to were
Vpon hir þome or in hir purse it bere
There is no foule þat flieþ vnder heuen
þat sche ne shal vnder-stonde his steuen
And knowe his meneynge openly *and* pleyne
And answere him in his langage aȝeine
And euery grasse þat groweþ vpon rote
Se schal wel knowe *and* whom it wil do bote
Al be his wondes neuer so depe and wide
¶ This naked swerde þat hingeþ be my side
Suche vertue haþ þat what man so it smyte
þoruhe oute his armo*u*r it wil kerue *and* bite
Were it as þikke as is a braunched oke
And what man þat is wonded wiþ þe stroke
Schal neue*r*e be hole til þat ȝou list of grace
To stroke him wiþ þe plat in þilke place
There he is hurte þis is as muche to seine
ȝe most wiþ þe platte swerde a-ȝeine
stroke him in þe wounde *and* it wil close
This is a verrei soþe wiþ-outen glose
It faileþ nouht whiles it is in ȝoure holde
¶ And whan þis knyht haþe þus his tale tolde
He rideþe oute of þe haH *and* doune he liht
His stede which þat schone as sonne briht
Stant in þe courte stille as any stone
þis knyht is to his chambre lad anone
And is armede *and* is to þe mete y-set
The presentes bien ful richely .y-fett
This is to seine þe swerde *and* þe mirrour
And borne a-none vnto þe hihe toure
Wiþ certeine oficeres y-ordeyned þere fore
And vnto Canacee þe ringe is bore
Solemply þer sche sit att þe table
Bot sekurly wyþ-outen any fable

The hors of bras þat maye nouȝt be remewed
It stant as it were to þe grounde y-glewed
Þer maie no man oute of þe place it driue
For none engyne of windas or poliue
And cause whi for þei can nouȝt þe craft [leaf 81, back]
And þer-for in þe place þei haue it laft
Til þat þe knith haþe tauht hem þe manere
To voyden him as ȝe schal after here
Grete was þe pres þat swarmed to *and* fro
To gauren on þis hors þat stondeþ so
For it so hihe was *and* brode *and* longe
So wele *pro*porcioned for to be stronge
Riht as it were a stede of lumbardie
Ther-wiþ so horslye *and* so quik of eye
As it a gentil poileys courser were
For certes fro his taile vn-to his ere
Nature ne art kouþe him nouht mende
In no degre as al þe peple wende
Bot euer-more here most wonder it was
How þat it couþe gone *and* was of bras
It was of faire as þe peple semed
Diuerse folke diuersely haue demed
As mony hedes as mony wittes þere bene
þei mormorede as done a swarme of bene
And maden skilles after hire fantasies
Rehersinge of þe olde poetries
And seide it was like to þe pegasee .i. equs pecasus[1] [[1] *first*, pedasdus]
þe hors þat hade wenges for to flee
Or elles it was þe grekes hors Sinon
þat brouht troye to destructione
As men þis olde gestes rede
Myne herte q*uod* one is euer-more in drede
.I. trowe som men of armes bene þar inne
That schapen hem þis Cite for to wynne
It were riht good þinge þat al suche wer knowe
Anoþere rowned to his felowe lowe

And seide he lyed for it is raþer like
An apparence made be some magik
As Iogelours pleyne att þes festes grete
Of sundry þinges þus þei Iangle *and* trete
As lewed peple demeþ comunlye
Of þinges þat bene more maad soubtillye
Þan þei can in her lewdenes comprehende
Þei demen gladdely to þe badder ende
And some of hem wondren on þe myrroure
Þat borne was vpe vnto þe maister toure
Howe men miht in it suche þinges see [leaf 82]
Anoþer ansewarde *and* seide it miht wele bee
Naturaly be composicions
Of Angeles *and* of slyhe reflexions
And seide þat in Rome was suche one
Þei speke of alocen *and* vitilione
Of Aristotle þat write in hir liues
Of wheynte merorous *and* of wheynte perspectiues
As knowen þei þat hane hire bokes herde
¶ And oþer folke hane wondred on þe swerde
Þat wolde perce þoruhe euery þinge
And fel in speche of Theople þe kinge
And of Achilles for his queinte spere
For he couþe wiþ it boþe hele *and* dere
Riht in suche wise as men mai wiþ þe swerde
Of whiche riht nowe ȝe hauen ȝoure seluen herde
Þei speken of sundri hardinge of Metal
And speke of Medecines þer wiþ al
And howe *and* whan it schold harded be
Whiche is knowe algat vnto me
Tho speke þei of Canace ringe
And seyden al þat suche a wonder þinge
Of craft of ringes herde þei neuer none
Saue þat he Moyses *and* kinge Salomone
Had a name of kunynge of suche arte
Thus seine þe peple *and* drawen hem aparte

Bot naþeles sum seide þat it was
Wondre to maken of feren assche glas
And ȝit is nouȝt glas not like Aschen of ferene
Bot for þei han knoweu it so ferne
Ther-for ceseþ hir Iangelinge *and* hir wonder
As sore wonder sum of cause of þonder
On hepe on flode on gossomere *and* on myst
And al þinge til he þe causes wist
Þus Iangele þei *and* demen *and* deuise
Til þat þe kinge gan fro his borde arise
Phebus haþ laft þe angel Meredyonal
And ȝit ascendinge was þe best Royal
The gentil Lion wiþ his Aldrian
Whan þat þis Tatre kinge Kambiuskan
Ros fro his borde þer as he satt ful hihe
Be-forne him goþe þe lowde Minstralcye
Tiħ he came vnto his chambre of paramentes [leaf 82, back]
Ther as þei sownen diuers In[s]trumentes
Þat is like an heuen for to here
Nowe dauncen lusti venus childern dere
For in þe fissche her lady satt ful hihe
And lokeþ on hem wiþ a frendely eye
This noble kinge is sette vppon his trone
This strange knyht is fette to him ful sone
And on þe daunce he goþe wiþ Canacee
Here is þe reuel *and* þe Iolyte
þat is not able a dol man to deuise
He most han knowe loue *and* his seruise
And bene a festely man as fressche as maye
þat scholde ȝowe devisen suche arraye.
Who couþe tellen ȝowe þe forme of þe daunces
So vnkouþe *and* suche frisshe contenance
Suche lokeinges subtile. *and* dissimilignes
For drede of Ielowsy mennes perceyueinges
No man bot Launcelet *and* he is dede
There-for .I. pas ouer of al þis lustihede

.I. saie no more Bot in þis Iolines
.I. lete hem to men to soper hem dres
The stewarde biddeþ spices for to hibe
And eke þe wine in al þis Melodye
þe vssheres *and* þe esquiers bene y-gone
The spices *and* þe wine be come a-none
Thei ete *and* dronke *and* whan þis had an ende
In to þe temple as reson was þei wende
The *ser*uice done þei sowpen al be daye
What nedeþ 3ow rehersen hire arraye
Iche man wote wele þat att þe kinges fest
Haþ plente to þe maste *and* to þe lest
And deintepes mo þan be in my knowynge
And affte*r* soper goþ þis noble kinge
To seen þis hors of bras wyþ al a route
Of lordes *and* of ladis him aboute
Suche was þe*re* on þis hors of bras
þat sepen þe grete sege of troy was
Thar as men wonderden on an hors also
Ne was þere suche a wondrynge as was þo
Bot finaly þe kinge axeþ þis knyht
þe vertue of þis courser *and* þe myht
And pr*a*ied him to tel his gou*er*nance [leaf 83]
The hors anone began to trippe *and* daunce
Whan þat þe knyht laide honde vpon þe ryne
And seide sir þer is no mor to seine
Bot whan þe luste to ride any where
3e most triH a pinne þat stant in his ere
Whiche .I. schal tel 3ow be-twene vs tuo.
3e mot neuen him to what place also
Or to what cuntre þat 3oue lust to ride
And whan 3e come þe*re* as 3e lust to abide
Bid him descende *and* tril anoþe*re* pinne
For þe*re*-in liþe þe effect of al þe ginne
And wil doune descende *and* done 3owre wiH
And in þat place he wil abide stiH

If al þe werld had þe contrarie swore
He schal not þens be þrowe ne bore
Or if þu luste bidde him þens gone
Tril þis pinne and he wil vanessche a-none
Owte of þe siht of eu*e*ry man*er* whiht
And come aȝeine be it daie or nyht
Whan þat ȝowe lust to klepen him aȝeine
In suche a gise as .I. schal to ȝowe seïne
Betwexen ȝowe *and* me *and* þat ful sone
Ride whan ȝow luste þer is no more to done
Enformed whan þe kinge was of þe knyht
And haþe conseyued in his witte a riht
The manere *and* þe forme of aH þis þinge
Ful glad *and* bliþe þe noble douhti kinge
Repeiringe to his reuel as be-forne
The bridel is in to þe toure y-borne
And kepped amonge his Iewels leue *and* dere
The hors vanissed .I. not in what manere
Owte of her siht ȝe gette no mor of me
Bot þus .I. lete in lust *and* Iolite
þis kambynscan his lordes festinge
Til wele nyhe þe daie be-gan to springe

[*One line blank in the MS.*]

[*PART II.*]

The norice of digestion is slepe
Gan on hem winke *and* bad hem take kepe
That muche mete *and* labur wold haue rest
And wiþ a galpinge mouþe he al hem kest
And seide þat it was time to lye a-downe
For blode was in his d*omi*nacione [leaf 83, back]
Chiriseþ blode naturs frende q*uo*d he
Thei þonken him galpinge be two be þre
An eu*e*ry whiht gan drawene him to his rest
As slepe hem bad þei toke it for þe best

Hir dremes schal nouht be told for me
Ful was here heuedes of fumosite
That causeþ dreme of wiche þer is no charge
Thei slepen til it was *prime* large
The most *parte* bot it were Canace
Sche was ful mesurable as we*m*men be
For of hir fader had sche take hir leue
To go to rest sone after it was eue
Hir lust nouȝt apalled for to bue
For on þe morwe vnfestlyche for to se
And sleped hir furst slepe *and* wooke
For suche a ioye sche in hire hert toke
Boþe of hir wheynte ringe *and* of hir meroure
þat twenty times sche chaunged hir coloure
And in hir slepe riht for impressione
Of hir meroure sche hadde a visione
Where for or þat þe sonne vp gan glide
Sche cleped vpon hire Maistres hire be-side
And seide þat hir luste for to rise
Thes olde wemme þat bene gladly wise
As is her Maistres answard hire anone
And seide Madame wheder wil ȝe gone
Thus erely folke been al in rest
.I. wil q*uo*d sche arise for me lest
No longer slepe bot to walken aboute
Hire Maistres clepeþe wi*m*men a grete route
And vp þei resen wele ten or twelue
Vp riseþ ffrische Canacee hire selue
As Rody *and* briht as þeyhe þe ȝonge sonne
þat in þe ram ten degres is vp ronne
Noon hier was he whan sche redy was
And forþ sche walkeþ esili apase
Arraid afte þe lusti seson suote
Lyhtly for to pleye *and* walk on fote
Not bot .v. or .vj. of hir Meinȝe
For in a trenche fere in þe p*ar*ke goþ sche

The vapor whiche þat fro þe erþe glode
Makeþ þe sonne to seme rody *and* brode
Bot naþeles it was so faire a siht [leaf 84]
þat it maad alle hir hertes for to liht
What for þe seson *and* þe morneynge
And for þe foules þat sche herde singe
For riht anone sche wist what þei mente
Riht be hir songe *and* knowe al her entente
The knotte whi þat eu*e*ry tale·is tolde
If it be taried til lust be colde
Of hem þat han it herkened after ȝore
The sauoure passeþe eu*er* þe langer*e* more
For fulsomnesse of prolixite
And be þis same reson þenkeþ me
.I. schol vnto þe knotte condesce*n*de
And make of hir*e* walkinge sone an ende
Amydde a tree for-drie as white as chalke
As Canacee was pleyinge in hir walke
Ther sat a fawcon ou*er* hir heued ful hihe
That wiþ a pitous voice so gan to crie
That al þe woode rested of hire Crie
[And beten hadde hire self' so pitouslye] [MS Reg. 18 C ii. *leaf 87*]
wiþ boþe hir*e* wenges til þe rede blode
Ran endlonge þe tre þer as sche stode
And euer in one sche cried alweie *and* schryht
And wiþ hir beke hir*e* seluen so sch'e piht
þat þere ne was tigre ne cruel beste
þat dwelleþ eyþer in wode or in foreste
þat nolde haue wepped If þat wepe he couþe
For sorwe sche shreyht for hir alweie so lowþe
For þar nas neuer ȝit man on liue
If þat .I. couþe a faukon wele discriue
þat herd of suche anoþer of fairnes
As wele of plumage as of gentilnes
Of schap of þat þat myht rekened be
A faukon p*er*egryne þan semed sche

Of fremed londe and euer-more as sche stode
Sche swowned now *and* now for lak of blode
Til wel nyhe is sche fallen fro þe tree
This faire kinges douhter þis Canace
þat on her finger bare þe wheynte ringe
Thorwe whiche sche vnderstod wele euery þinge
þat any foule may in his leden seine
And kowde ansewere him in his leden ageine
Haþe vnderstonde þat þis faukon seide
And wel nyhe for reuþe almoste sche deide
And to þe tre sche goþe ful hastely [leaf 84, back]
And on þis faukon loked ful pitously.
And held hir lap abrode for wele sche wist
The fawkon most fal fro þe twyst
Whan þat it swoned next for lak of blode
A longe while to waite hire sche stode
Til att þe last sche spak in þis manere
Vnto þe hauke as ȝe schal after here
¶ What it þe cause if it be to telle
That ȝe bue in þis furial peine of helle
Quod Canacee vnto þis hauke aboue
Is þis for sorwe of deþe or losse of loue
For as [I] trowe þes bene causes two
þat Causen moste a gentil hert woo
Of oþer harme it redeþ not to speke
For þi ȝoureselfe vpon ȝoure self ȝowe wreke
Whiche þat proueþ wele þat eyþer ire or drede
Mot bene encheson of ȝoure crewel dede
Sen þat .I. see none oþer whiht ȝoue chace
For loue of god so do ȝowre self grace
Or what maye be ȝoure helpe for west nor este
Ne sawhe .I. neuere ar nowe no brid no beste
That ferd wiþ him self so pitously
ȝe slee me wiþ ȝoure sorwe verrayly
.I. haue of ȝowe so grete compassione
For goddes loue com fro þe tre a-downe

And as .I. am a kinges douhter trewe
If þat .I. vérrayly þe cause knewe
Of yowre disease if laie in my myht
.I. wold amend it or þat it wer nyht
As wissely helpe me grete god of kinde
And herbes schal .I. riht y-nowe finde
To hele wiþþe ȝowre hurtes hastely
Tho schright þis faukon more pitously
Than eu*er* sche dede *and* fel to grounde a-none
And lieþ on swowne dede as any stone
This Canace haþe in hir lappe hir take
Vn-to þat time sche gan of swoune a-wake
And after þat sche of swowne gan a-braide
Riht in hir haukes loden þus sche seid
That pite renneþ sone in gentil hert
Feleynge is similitude in peines smert
Is proued al daie as men maie it see [leaf 85]
As wele be werke as be auctorite
For gentil hert kepeþ gentillesse
I. see wele þat ȝe hane of me destresse
Compassione my faire Canacee
Of verrey wo*m*manly benyngnite
þat nature in ȝoure p*r*inciples haþe sett
Bot for no hope for to fare þe bett
Bot for to obeie vnto ȝoure hert fre
And for to maken o*þer*e be war be me
As be þe whelpe chastized es þe lyon
Riht for þat cause *and* for þat conclusion
While þat .I. haue a leiser *and* a space.
Myne harme .I. wil confessen ar .I. pace
And eu*er* while þat one hire sorwe tolde
þe toþer weped as sche to water wolde
Til þat þe faukon bad hir to be stiłł
And wiþ a sike þus sche seide hir tiłł
There .I. was bred alas þat ilke daie
And fosterd in a roche of Marble graie

So tenderly þat no þinge eyled me
.I. wist nouht what was aduersite
Til .I. koupe flie ful hihe vnder þe skye
Tho dwelled a tarselet me fast bỳe
þat semed wele of al gentillesse
Al were he ful of treson *and* of falsenesse
It is wrapped vnder humble charite
And vnder hiewe of trowþe *and* in suche manere
Vnde[r] plesance *and* vnder besi peine
þat no wyht couþ haue wende he couþ feyne
So depe in greine he deiede his coloures
Riht as a serpent hideþ him vnder floures
til he may se his time for to bite
Riht so þis god of loue Ipocrite
Doþe so his cerimonijs *and* obeiceances
And keped in semblant al his obseruances
And souneþ in to gentilles of loue
As in to a tombe is al þe faire a-boue
And vnder is þe cours suche as .I. wote
Swyche was þis ypocrit boþe colde *and* hoote
And in þis wise he serued his entent
þat saue þe fende no man wist what he mente
Til he so longe had wepen a[n]d compleyned [leaf 85, back]
And mony a 3ere his seruice to me feyned
Til þat myne herte to pytous *and* to nyce
Al Innoce of his crowel malice
For-fered of his deþ as þouht me
Vpon his oþes *and* his surete
Graunted him loue vpon þis condicione
þat euer mo myn honoure *and* renoune
Were saued boþ priue *and* aperte
This is to seine þat after his desert
.I. 3af him al myn herte *and* al myn þouht
God woote *and* he and oþer wise nouht
And toke his hert in chaunge of myne for aye
Bot soþe is seide gon siþen mony a daye

A trew wihte *and* a þefe þenkeþ nat one
And whan he sawe þe þinge so fer y-gone
That .I. *gr*aunted him fully my loue
In suche a gise as .I. haue seide a-boue
And ȝeuen him my trewe herte as fre
As he swore he ȝaue his hert to me
Anone þis Tigre ful of doublenesse
Fele on his knees wiþ so deuoute humblesse
With hihe reuerence and as be his chier
So like a gentil louere of manere
So rauesshed as it semed for þe Ioye
þat neuer Iason ne Paris of troye
Iason certes ne none o*þer*e man
Syn lameþ was þat alþer first be-gan
To louen two as writen folke by-forne
Ne neuer siþe þe first manne was borne
Ne couþe man be tuenty þousand *par*te
Counterfete þe sophimes of his arte
Ne war worþi to vnbokle his galoche
Ther dowblenesse or feyne*i*nge schold aproche
Ne so kouþe þonke a whight as he did me
His maner was an heuen for to see
Til any wo*m*man were sche neuer so wise
So peynted he *and* kembeþ att pinte deuise
Als wele is worde as his countenance
And .I. so loued him for his Obeissance
And for þe treuþe .I. demed in his herte
That if so were þat any þinge him smerte
Al ware it neuer so litel and .I. it wiste [leaf 86]
Me þouht .I. felt deþ att myne hert twiste
And schortly so fer forþe þis þinge went
þat my wiłł haþ his willes Instrument
This to seine my wiłł obeide his wiłł
In al þinge as fer as reson fiłł
Kepeinge þe boundes of my worschip euere
Ne neuer had .I. þinge so lefe ne leuere

As him? god woote ne neuer schal no mo
This last longer þan a ȝere or two
That .I. supposed of him no þinge bot goode
Bot finaly þus att þe laste it stode
That fortune wolde þat he most twynne
Owte of þat place whiche þat .I. was inne
Where me was woo it is no questione
.I. kan nouȝt make of hit discripcione
For o þinge dar .I. telle boldely
.I. knowe what is þe peine of depe þer-by
Suche harme .I. felte for he ne myht be-leue
So on a daye of me he toke is leue
So sorwfully eke þat .I. wende verrayly
That he had feled as muche harme as .I.
Whan þat .I. herd him speke *and* sawe his hiewe
Bot naþeles .I. þouht he was so trewe
And eke þat he repaire scholde agayne
Wiþ inne a lite while soþe to seine
And reson wolde eke þat he mot go
For his hono*ur* as oft happeþ so
þat maade vertue of necessite
And toke it wele seþþe þat it most be
As .I. best myht .I. bidde fro him my sorwe
And toke him by þe honde seint Iohū to borwe
And seid þus. lo .I. am ȝoures al
Beþe suche as .I. haue. bue to ȝowe *and* schal
What he answarde it nedeþ nouht reherse
Who can sei bet þan he whou kan do werse
Whan he haþ al wele seide þan haþ he done
Ther-for be-houeþ him a ful longe spone
þat schal eten wiþ a fende þus herd .I. seie
So att þe last he mote forþe his weye
And forþe he flyeþ til he cam where him liste
Whan it com him to purpos for to riste.
I trowe he hadde þilke text in mynde. [leaf 86, back]
þat al þinge repaireinge to his kinde

Gladeþ him selfe þus seine men as .I. gesse
Men loue of propre kinde newefangelnesse
As birdes done þat men in cage fede
For þouhe þe nyht *and* daie take of hem hede
And strewe hir cage faire *and* soft as silke
And ȝiue hem suger hony brede *and* melke
ȝit riht anone as þat his dore is huppe
He wipþe wiþ his fete wi[l] sporne doune his cuppe
And to þe wode he wil *and* wermes ete
So new fongel be þei of her mete
And louen none leueres of propre kinde
Ne gentilles of maie hem binde
So ferde þis tarselet alas þis daie
þouhe he ware gentil borne frische *and* gaie
And goodly for to see *and* humble *and* free
He sawe vp-oñ a time a kite fle
And sodanly he loued þis kite soo
þat al his loue is clene fro me goo
And haþ his trouþe falsed in þis wise
þus haþe þe kite my loue in her seruise
And .I. am lorne wiþ-oute remedie
And wiþ þat worde þis fawkon gan to crie
And swowned eft in Canace barme
Grete was þe sorwe of þat haukes harme
That Canacee *and* al hir wemmen maade
Thei nest howe þat þei myht þe faukon glade
Bot Canace home bereþ hir in lappe
And softely in plastres gan hir wrappe
þer as sche wiþe hire beke hadde hert hir selue
Nowe can nouȝt Canace bot herbes delue
Oute of þe grounde *and* maken salues newe
Of herbes precious *and* fyne of hewe
To helen wiþ þe hauke fro daie to nyht
Sche doþe hire besines and al hir myht
And be hir beddes hede sche maade a mewe
And couerd it wiþ veluetes blewe

In singne of treuþe þat is in we*m*mc[n] seene.
And al wiþe-oute þe mewe is peynted grene
In whiche war peynted as þis fals fowles
As bien þis tideues tarseletz *and* owles. 648
Riht for dispite was peinted hem by side [leaf 87]
Pyes on hem for to crie *and* Chide
Thus lete .I. Canace hir hauke kepeinge
.I. wil no more nowe speke of hire ringe 652
Til it come eft to purpos for to seine
Howe þat þis fawkon gatt hir loue aȝeine
Repentant as þe storie telleþ vs
Be Mediacion of Camballus 656
þe kinges soñ of whiche .I. ȝowe tolde
Bot hense forþe .I. wil proces holde
To speken of aventures *and* of batailes
þat ȝit was neue*r* herde so grete merveiles 660
ffirst wil .I. teH ȝowe of Cambynskan
That in his time mony a Cite wan
And after wil .I. speke of Algarsif
Howe þat he wanne Theodora to his wif 664
For whan ful oft in grete pe*r*ile he was
Ne had he bue holpen be þe hors of bras
And after wil .I. speke of Camballo
þat fauht in listes wiþ þe breþerne tuo 668
ffor Canace ar þat he my[ht] hir wynne
And þere .I. left .I. þenke aȝeine be-gynne 670
Bot .I. wil here nowe maake a knotte [8 *spurious lines*]
To þe time it come next to my lotte
For here be felawes behinde an hepe treulye
þat wolden talke ful besilye 4
And haue her sporte as wele as .I.
And þe daie passeþ fast certanly
Therefore oste takeþ nowe goode heede
Who schaH next teH *and* late him speede 8

Explicit fabula Armige*r*i.

[*THE PROEM.*]

Incipit *prologus* de le ffrankeleyne. [*on leaf* 141]

THis olde gentil bretons in hire daies
Of diuers auentures maden laies
Rimyden in hir first breton tonge
Whiche laiȩs wiþ here instrumentes þei songe. 712
Oþer elles redden hem for her plesance [leaf 141, back]
And one of hem haue .I. in rembrance
Whiche .I. schal seie wiþ as goode wil as .I. can
Bot sires be cause þat .I. am a burel man 716
Att my ginnynge first .I. ȝoue beseche
Heueþ me excused of my roode speche
.I. lernd neuer retorik certeine
þinge þat .I. speke it most . be bare *and* pleine 720
.I. slept neuer on þe mount of *Par*naso
Ne .y. neu*er*e lerid Marcus . Tullius . ne Cithero
Colours of retorike ne knewe .I. none wiþ-outen drede
Bot suche colours as growen in þe mede 724
Or elles suche as men dye or peinte
Colours of rethorik bene me to queynte
My sprite feleþ nouȝt of suche Matier
Bot if þou luste Mi tale schal .ȝe.[1] here. [1 nouht *crosst out*] 728
Explicit *prologus* Incipit fabula.

[*THE TALE.*]

THer was a knyht þat loued *and* dide his peyne 730
In Armorik þat cleped is bretaigne 729
To *ser*uen a lady in his best wise 731
And many a labour *and* mony a grete emprise

He for his lady wrouht er sche were wonne
For sche was on of þe fairest vnder sonne
And eke *þere*-to com of so hihe kinrede
þat wele vnneþis dorst þis knyht for drede
Tel hir his woo his peine *and* his distresse
Bot att þe last sche for his worþinesse
And namely for his meke obeissance
Haþ ſuche a pite cauht of his penance
þat p*r*iue sche fel of his accorde
To take him for hir husbonde *and* hir lorde
Of suche lor[d]schip as men haue ouer hire wyues
And for to lede þe more in blisse her lyues
Of his fre wil he swore hire as a knyht
þat neuer in his wil be daie ne be nyht
Ne scholde he vpon him take no maistre
Aȝeines hir wille ne kuythe hure Ielousye
Bot hire obeie *and* folowe hire wille in al
As any louer to his ladi schal
Saue þat þe name of Soue*r*eignete
That wolde he haue for schame of his degre
Sche þonkeþ him *and* wiþ ful grete humblesse
Sche seide s*ir* seþþe ȝe of ȝoure gentilesse [leaf 142]
ȝe profer me to haue als large a reyne
Ne wold neue*r*e god be-twix vs tueyne
As in my gulte ware eyþer werre or striffe
Sir .I. wil be ȝoure owen humble trewe wif
Haue here my trouþe til þat myn hert burst
Thus buen þei boþe in quiete *and* in ruste
For o þinge sires saufly dar .I. seie
þat frendes eu*er*yche oþ*er*e motte obeie
If þei wil longe hold compaigne
Loue wil nouht buen constreyned be maistre
Whan Maistre co*mm*eþ god of loue anone
Beteþ on his wenge *and* fare wele he is gone
Loue is a þinge as any spirit fre
We*mm*ene of kinde desiren liberte

And nouht to be constreined as a þraH
And so doþ men . if .I. þe soþe saie schaH
Loke who þat is most pacient in loue
He is att auantage aboue
Paciens is an hihe vertue certeigne
[ffor it venquyscheth as these clerkis seyne .] [Harl. 1758, *b* 128]
Thinges þat Rigor schol neu*e*re atteigne
For eu*e*ry worde men maie nouht chide ne pleine
Lereneþ to suffur or elles so must .I. gone
3e scholne it leren wheþer so 3e wol or none
For in þis werlde certeine no wight ne is
þat he ne doþ or seiþe sum time of mys
Or eiþer sekenes or constillacione
Wyn wo or channgeinge of complexione
Causeþ ful often to don amys or speken
On eu*e*ry wronge men maye nouht bue awreken
After þe time most be temp*e*rance
To eu*e*ry whiht þat can no gouernance
And þerfore haþe þis worþe wise knyht
To leue in ese suffrance hir be-hiht
And sche to him ful wiseli gan to swere
þat neu*e*re scholde be defaute in hire
Here maie men seen an humble wise accorde
Thus haþ sche take hire seruant *and* hir lorde
Seruant in loue *and* lorde in Mariage
þan was he boþe in lordeschipe *and* seruage
Seruage naye bot in lordeschip a-boue
Seþen þat he haþ boþe his ladi *and* his loue
His lady certes *and* his wif also [leaf 142, back]
The whiche þat lowe of loue accordeþ þarto
And whan he was in þis pros*per*ite
Home wiþ his wif he goþ to his contre
Nouht ffer fro penmarke þar as his dwellinge was
Where as he leues in blisse *and* in solas
Who couþe teH bot he had wedded bue
The . Ioye þe ese . *and* þe pros*per*ite

That is betwyx an husbonde *and* his wif
A ȝere *and* more lasted þis blisfull liff
Til þat þis kniht þe whiche .I. spak of þus
þat of kynred was cleped Arneragus
Schope him to gone *and* dwelle a ȝere or tweyne
In yngelond þat cleped eke was Bretayne
To seche in armes worschipe *and* honoure
For al his luste he sette in suche laboure
And dwelleþe þere þe boke seiþe þus
Nowe wil .I. stint of þis arnaragus
And speken .I. of Dorigen. his wif
þat loueþ hire husbond as hire hertes lif
And for his absence wepeþ sche *and* sykeþ
As done þis noble wives whan hem likeþ
Sche morneþ wake waileþ fasteþ *and* pleyneþ
Desire of his presence hir so distreineþ
That al þis wide werld sche sett att nouht
Hire frendes whiche þat knewe hir heue þouht
Comforted hire in al þat euer þei myht or maie
Thei prechen hire þei telen hire nyht *and* daie
þat causeles sche sleþe hir self alas
And euer-.I. comford possible in þis cas
þei done to hire *with* al here bisinesse
And al for to make hire lete hire heuynesse
Be proces as ȝe knowe wele eu*e*rychone
Men Maie so longe graue in þe stone
Til figure þer-inne p*r*inted be
So longe haue þei comfort hire þat sche
Receyuede haþe be hope *and* be resone
þe emprinteinge of hire constillacione
Thoruhe whiche hire grete sorwe gan eswage
Sche maie not alweie endure suche a rage
And eke Arnargus in al þis care
Haþe sent hir l*ett*res home in al þis fare.
And þat he wolde come hastely aȝeine [leaf 143]
Or elles hadde þis sorwe hire hert sleyne

Hire frendes sauhe hire hert gan to slake
And preide hire on knes for goddes sake
To come *and* to Rome in companye
Awaie to driue hire derke fantasie
And finally sche *grau*nted þat request
For wele sche sauhe it was for þe best
Now stode hir castel fast by þe see
And often wiþ hire frendes walked sche
Hir to disport on þe se banke on hihe
Where as sche many schippes *and* barges seihe
Seileinge her course where hem luste to goo
Bot 3ite was þere a percel of hir woo
For to hir selue ful often seide sche
Is þere no schippe of so mony as .I. see
Wil bringe home my lorde þan wolde myne herte
Al warisshe of þis bitter peine smarte
Anoþ*er*e time þ*er*e wil sche sitte *and* þenke
And kast hir eye donward fro þe brenke
Bot whan sche sawhe þe grisely Rokkes blake
For verrei fere so wolde hire h*er*et qwake
þat one hir feete sche myhte nouht hire susteigne
þan wolde sche sit adoune vpon þe grene
And pitously into þe see sche walde be-holde
And seine riht þus wiþ sorweful hertes colde
Eterne god þat þoruhe þi purueance
Ledest þe werlde be certein gouernance
In ydelnes as men seine 3e noþinge make
Bot lorde þis griseli fendely Rockes blake
þat semen raþer a foule confusione
Of werke þat any faire creacione
Of whiche a p*ar*fit god *and* a stable
Whi haue 3e wrouht þis werk vnresonable
For be þis werke souþe . norþe . este *and* west
þar*e* nes ifostred man ne birde ne beste
It doþe no good to my witte bot anoyeþ
Sche 3e nouht lor how mankinde it destrueþ

An hundreþ þousand bodyes of mankinde
Haue rokkes sleine *and* al be þei nouht in mynde
Whiche mankinde is so faire parte of þi werke
þat þou it madest ylike to þine handwerke. 880
Than semed it ȝe hadde a grete chierte [leaf 143, back]
To-ward mankynde bot howe þan maie it be
That ȝe suche menys make it to destroyen
Wyche menys doþ no good but euere annoyen 884
.I. woote wele clerkes woln sayn as hem lest
By argumentz þat al þinges is for þe best
They .I. ne can þe causes for soþe knowe
Bot þilke god þat maade winde to blowe 888
As kepe my lorde þis conclusioñ
To clerkis lat .I. al disputasioñ
Bot wolde god. þat al þe Rokkes blake
Ware sonken in-to hel for his sake 892
þes rokkes sleen myne hert for fere
Thus wold sche seine wiþ mony a pitous tere
Hire frendes sawe þat it nas no disporte
To Roumen be þe see bot discomfort 896
And schopen for to pleyne sum where elles
Thei leden hire be Reuers *and* be welles
And eke in oþer place delitables
Thei daunce *and* plei att chesse *and* att tables 900
So on a dai riht on þe morwe tide
Vnto a Gardeine þat was riht þere beside
In whiche þat þei had maade her ordinance
Of vitaile *and* of oþer purueance 904
Thei gone *and* pleine hem al þe longe daie
And þis was oñ þe sext morwe of maie
Whiche had peintede wiþ his soft schoures
This gardine ful of leues *and* of floures 908
And wyþ craft of mannes honde so curiously
Araide had þis gardine trialli
That neuer was þer gardine of suche prise
Bot if it were þe verrei paradise 912

The odur of floures *and* þe frisshe siht
Wolde han maade ony pensif man liht
That euer was borne bot if to grete sekenesse
Oþer to grete sorwe hilde it in distresse 916
And after dener gan þei to daunce 918
So ful it was of beute wiþ plesance 917
And singen also bot Dorigen songe alone
Sche made alweie here compleinte *and* hire mone 920
For sche ne sawhe him on þe daunce goo
þat was hir husbonde *and* hire loue also
Bot naþeles sche moste hire time a-bide [leaf 144]
And wiþ goode hope lete sche here sorwe glide 924
Vpon þis daunce amonges oþere men
Daunced a swyer to-forn Dorigen
That frisscher was *and* Ioliere of araie
As to my dome þan is þe moneþ of maie 928
He singeþ *and* daunseþ passinge any oþer man
þat is or was seþþe þis werlde be-gan
þare-wiþ he was if men schold him discryue
On of þe beste faringe men on liue 932
3onge stronge riht vertuous ryche *and* wise
And wele beloued *and* holden in grete prise
And schortly if þe soþe tellen .I. schal
Vnweteinge of þis dorigen att aH 936
This lusty swyere seruant to Venus
Whiche þat ycleped was aurelius
Had loued hire best of any creature
Two 3ere *and* more as was his aduenture 940
Bot neuer dorst he tellen hire of his greuance
Wiþ-outen cuppe he drank al his penance
He was dispeired nopinge dorst he saie
Saue in his soule sum what wolde he wraie 944
His woo as in general compleineinge
He seide he loued *and* was beloued no þinge
Of suche Matier maade he mony layes
Songes compleintes Roundeletis virrelayes 948

Howe þat he durst nouht his sorwe teH
þat languisseþ as fire doþe in heH
And deye seide he must as dide ekko
For Narsisus þat dorst nouht teH hir wô
In oþere maner þan ȝe here me seie
Ne dorst he nouht to hire his wo be-wreie
Saue *per*auentur sumtime att daunces
There ȝonge folke kepen her obse*r*uaunces
It mai wel be he loked on hir face
In suche a wise as man þat Axeþ grace
Bot no þinge wist sche of his entent
Naþeles it happed er þei þens went
Be cause þat he was hire neiȝbore
And was a mon of worsc^{h}ippe *and* honoure
And had yknowen him of[1] times ȝore [[1] *a later* t *after* of]
Thei fel in speche oft more *and* more
Vn-to his purpos drouhe Aurelius [leaf 144, back]
And whan he sauhe his time he seid þus
Madame q*uo*d he be god þat þis werld maade
So þat .I. miht ȝoure hert glade
.I. wolde þat daie þat ȝoure Arnaragus
Wente on see þat .I. Aurelius
Hadde wente þat .I. scholde neuer haue com aȝeine
For wele .I. wote my seruise is in veine
Mi guerdon nys bot bristinge of myn herte
Ma dame reweþ vpon my peines smarte
For as wiþ a sword ȝe maie me sle or saue
Here att ȝoure fote god wolde þat .I. were graue
.I. haue as nowe no leiser for to seie
Haue merci on me swete or ȝe wolne do me deye
Sche gan to loke vpon Aurelius
Is þis ȝoure wil q*uo*d sche *and* seie ȝe þus
Neu*er* eft q*uo*d sche wist .I. what ȝe ment
Bott nowe Aurely .I. know ȝoure entent
Be þilke god þat ȝaue me soule *and* lif
Ne schal .I. neuer be vntrewe wiff

In worde ne in werke as fer as .I. haue witte
.I. wil be his to whome þat .I. am knytte
Bot affter þat þou pleine þus seide sche
Tak þis for final answewer as for me
Aurely quod sche be hihe god aboue
3it wil .I. graunt 3oue to be 3oure loue
Sen þus .I. 3owe see so pitously compleigne
Loke what daie þat yngelonde is breteigne
3e remewe al þe rokkes stone be stone
þat þei let schippe ne bote to gone
.I. saie whan 3e haue maade þis coste so clene
Of Rokkes þat þer nys no stone seene
þan wil .I. loue 3owe best of any mān
Haue here my troupe in al þat euer y can
Is þere none oþer grace quod he
No be þat lorde quod sche þat maade me
For wele .I. wote þat. þat schal neuer be-tide
Late suche foly oute of 3oure hert glide
What deynte scholde man haue be his lif
For to loue a noþer mannes wif
þat haþ hir body when so þat him likeþ
Aurelius ful oft sore sikeþ
Woo was Aurely whan þat he þis herde [leaf 145]
And wiþ a sorwful hert þus answerde
Madam quod he þis were an inpossible
Than Mot .I. deie on sodeine deþe Orrible
And wiþ þat worde he torned him anone
Tho cam her oþer frendes mony one
And in þe alies romed vp *and* doune
And no þinge wist of þis conclusioune
Bot sodenlye be-gan to reuel newe
Til þat þe briht sonn lost his hewe
For þe orizonte haþ raft þe sonne his liht
This is as muche to saie as it was niht
And home þei gone in ioye *and* in solas
Saue onely wriched Aurelius alas

He to his hous is gone wiþ sorweful hert
He seiþe he maie nouht fro his deþ astert
Him semeþ he feleþ his hert colde
Vp to þe heuen his hondes gan he olde
And on his kenes bare he sett him doune
And in his raueinge seide his orisoune
For verrei woo he oute of his witte he braide
He nyst nouht what he spak bot þus he seide
Wiþ pitous hert haþe he his compleinte be-gunne
Vnto þe goddesse *and* first vnto þe sonne
He seide Apollo god *and* gouernoure
And eue*r*y planete herbe tre *and* floure
þat 3euest after þine declinacione
To iche of hem his tyme *and* his sesone
And þin hebo*ur* chaungeþ lowe *and* hihe
Lorde phebus cast þi me[r]ciable eyhe
On wriched Aureli whiche þat am for-lorne
Lo lorde my lady haþ my deþ sworne
Wiþ-outen gilte bot þine benygnite
Vppon myne dedly hert haue sum pyte
Bot wele .I. wote lorde phebus if 3ou liste
3e maie me helpe saue my ladi best
Now vouchеþ saue þat .I. maie 3oue deuise
Howe þat .I. maye be holpe *and* in what wise
3oure blisful suster lucina þe schene
þat of þe see is chife goddes *and* qwene
þouhe. neptunus haue deite in þe see
3ite empe*r*es aboue him is sche
3e knowen wele lorde riht as hir desire [leaf 145, back]
Is to be queked *and* lihteþ of 3oure fire
For whiche she folowþ 3owe ful besily
Riht so þe see desireþ naturelly
To folowen hir as sche þat is goddesse
Boþ in þe see *and* in reuers more *and* lesse
Wher-for lord Phebus þis is myn request
Do þis miracle or .I. do myne hert to brest

þat þou next att þis opposicioñ
Whiche in sīgne schal be of þe lyōn
Haþe praide hire so grete a flode to bringe
þat .v. faþom att̄ þe lest it ouer springe
The hiest rokke in Armorik bretaine
And lat his flode endure ȝeres tueyne
Than certes to my lady may .I. seie
Holdeþ þoure heste þe rokkes bene awaie
Lorde phebus do þis Miracle for me
Preie hire sche go no faster cours þan ȝe
.I. seie ȝoue þus prei ȝoure suster þat sche go
None fastere cours þan ȝe þis ȝeres tuo
þan schal sche euere be att þe foll̄ al weie
And springe lasten̄ boþ nyht *and* daie
And bot sche vowchesaue in suche manere
To graunt me my lady souereigne dere
Praie hir to sinken euery rok adoune
In-to hir owen derke regione
Vnder þe grounde þer pluto duelleþ inne
Oþer neuer more schal .I. my lady wynne
Thine temple in delphos wil .I barfote seek
Lorde Phebus seþe ȝe þe teres on my cheke
And of my pyne haue compassione
And wiþ þat worde in swoune he fel a-doune
And longe time he laie in traunce
His broþer whiche þat knewe of his penaunce
Vp cauht him *and* to bed him brouht
Despeired in his torment *and* in his þouht
Lo .I. þis woful creature lye
Chese he for me weþer he wil leue or deye
¶ Arueragus wiþ hele *and* grete honoure
As he was of þe chiualrie þe floure
Is commen home *and* oþer worþi men.
O blisfulful ert þou doregen
That haste þin lusti hūsbande in þine Armes [leaf 146]
þe frische knyht þe worþi man of armes

þat loueþ þe as his owen hertes lif
No þinge lust him to be ymaginatif
Of any wight had spoke whiles was oute
To hire of loue he maade *þere-of no doute* *1096*
He nouhte entendeþ *to none suche matiere*
Bot dauncеþ *Iustiþ and* makeþ *good chere*
As þus in ioy *and* blisse .*I. late hem dwelle*
And of þe swete aurelius wil .I. teH 1100
In langure and in furious tormentes þus
Two 3ere *and* more laie wreched Aurelius
Or ony foote on erþe he myht gone
Ne comfort in þis time had he none 1104
Saue of his broþer whiche þat was a clerke
He knewe of al þis woo *and* of al þis werke
For to none oþer creature certeine
Of þis matier ne dorst he no worde seine 1108
Vnder his brest he bare his more secre
Than euer dide Pamphilius for Galathe
His brest was hole wiþ-owten for to sene
Bot in his herte was aie þe arwe kene 1112
And wele 3e wote þat a sore savoure
In surgere ful *perilous* is þe cure
Bot man myht touche þe arwe or come *þerby*
His broþer wepeþ *and* weileþ *priuely* 1116
Til att þe last him fel in remembrance
þat whiles he was att Orliaunce in fraunce
As 3onge clerkes þat buen licorous
To reden artes þat buen curious 112
Seken in eu*ery* halke *and* in eu*ery* herne
Particulere sciens for to lerne
He him remembreþ vpon a daie
Att Orliance in stode a boke he saye 112
Of Magik naturelle whiche is felawe
þat was þat time a bacheller of lawe
Al were he *þere* to lerne anoþer crafte
An priuely vpan his deske he lafte 11

þis boke whiche spak muche of þis operacions
Toucheinge þe .xxviiij. Mancions
That longeþ to þe mone *and* suche folye
As in oure daies ne is not worþe a flye
For holy cherche seiþe in owre beleue [leaf 146, back]
Ne suffureþ none illusione vs to greue
And whan þis booke was in remembraunce
Anone for ioye he gan to daunce
And to him self seide priuely
Mi broþer schal be warisched hastely
For .I. am seker þat þere be sciencis
Be whiche men make diuers apparences
Whiche as þe subtile tregitours pleine
For oft att festes herd .I. seine
þat tregetours wiþ in an hal large
Haue maad in come water *and* a barge
And in þe hall rowe vp *and* doune
Som time haþe semed a grime lyoune
[And som tyme floures spryngin in A mede [Harl. 7333, *leaf* 84, *back, col.* 2. *Not in Harl.* 1758, *leaf* 132, *or Reg.* 17 *D xv, leaf* 183, *back.*]
Sum tyme wyne & grapis white & rede]
Som tim a castel al of lyme *and* stone
And whan him liked voide it anone
Thus semed it to euery mannes siht
Nowe þan conclude .I. þus if þat .I. myht
At orlyance some olde felawe finde
þat had þe mones mancions in mynde
Oyþer magik naturel a-boue
He scholde wele mak my broþer haue his loue
For wiþ apparens a man maie make
To mannenes siht þat al þe rokkes blake
Of B[r]eteigne were went euerychone
And þat schippes be þe brinke myht comen *and* gone
And in suche forme endure a ȝere or tuo
Then were my broþer waresched of his wo
Then most sche nedes knowe hire be-hest
Or elles he schamen hire schal att þe leste

What scholde make a longer tale of þis
Vnto his broþer bedde commen he is
And suche comfor[t] he 3af him for to gone
To Orliaunce þat vp sterte anone
And on his waie forwarde is he fare
In hope to be lessed of his care
Whan þeie were come almoste to þat Citee
Bot if were a tuo furlonge or þree
A 3onge clerke romeynge by himselfe þei · mette
Whiche þat in latine þrefteli hem grette
And after þat seide he a wonder þinge
I. knowe quod he þe cause of 3oure comynge.
An er þei forþer any foote wente
He tolde hem al þat was in her en-tent
This briton clerke him asked of felawes
The whiche þat he had knowen in olde dawes
And he anseward him þat þei dede were
For whiche he wepped ful oft mony a tere
Downe of his hors Aurelius liht anone
And furþe wiþ þis Magicien is he gone
Home to his howse *and* maade hem wele att ese
Hem lakked no vitaile þat hem myht plese
So wele araide hous as þer was one
Aurelius in his lif ne sawe he none
He schewde him ar he went to soper
Forest Parkes ful of wilde dere
[þer sawe he hertes *with* hornes hy3e / [Harl. 7333. *lf* 84, *bk*, *col* 2. *Not in Harl.* 1758, *leaf* 132, *back*. *In Reg.* 17 D xv, *leaf* 184, *back*.]
The grettest that euer were se *with* ye /
He / say of hem An hunderid slayn *with* houndes
And some *with* Arowes bled & bitter woundes
He say whan voydid were thes wylde der
þe fauconers vp on A faire rever]
And how fakons haue þe heron sleine
Than sawe he knyhtes Iusten in a pleine
And after þis he dide him suche plesance
That he him schewde his lady in a daunce

On whiche him self he daunced as him þouht
And whan þis maister þat þis magik wrouht
Sawe it was time he clapped his hondes two
And fare wele al oure reuel is do
And 3itte remewe þei neuere oute of þis house
Whiles þei sawe al þis siht meruelouse
Bot in his stodye þere as his bokes be
The[i] satten stil *and* no whight bot þei þre
To him þis maister called þan a swyere
And seide him þus is redi oure sopere
Al most an houre it is .I. vndertake
Sepens .I. 3owe badde oure soper to make
When þat þis worþi men wenten wiþ me
Vnto my stode þer as my bokes be
Sire *quod* þis Swye[r] whan it lykeþ 3oue
It is al rede þouhe 3e wolde riht nowe
Go we þan to soupe *quod* he and for þe best
þes auerous folke sum time mot haue rest
And after soper fel þei in trete
What *somme* schold þis maister guerdone be
To remoue al þe rokkes of bretaigne
And eke fro geroun to þe mouþe of seine
He maade it straunge. *and* swore so god him saue
Lesse þan a þousand pounde he nolde not haue
Ne gladly for þe *somme* ne wolde he gone [leaf 147, back]
Aurelius wiþ blisful herte anone
Onsewarde þus fy on a þousand pounde
This wide werlde þat men seine is rounde
That wold .I. 3eue if .I. were lorde of it
This Bargeyne is ful dreue for we bue knyt
3e schollene be paide treuly be my trouþe
Bot lokeþ nowe for no necligens or sleuþe
3e tary vs here no longer þan to morwe
Nay *quod* þis clerke haue here my trouþe to borwe
To bed is gone Aurelius whan him luste
And wel nyhe al þat nyht he had his ruste

That for his laboure *and* for his hope of blisse
His woful herte of penance hadde a lisse
Vpon þis mo[r]we whan þat it was daie
To bretaine toke þei þe riht weie
Aurelius *and* þis magicien be side
And buene descendit þere þei wilne a-bide
And þis was as þe bokes me remembre
The colde frosty seson of decembre
Phebus waxede olde *and* hewed ylike latoun
þat in his hote declinacioun
Schone as þe burnyd gold wiþ stremes briht
Bot nowe in scorpion a-doune he liht
Where as he schone ful pale .I. dare wel seien
The bitter frostes wiþ slete *and* reine
Destruyed haþ 3e grene in euery 3erde
Ianus sit be fire wiþ double berde
And drinkeþ of his bugle horne þe wyne.
Be-forne him stant þe braune of þe twext swyne
And a nouel crieþ eu*e*ry lusti man
Aurelius in al þat euere he can.
Doþe his maister chier *and* reu*e*rence
And pr*e*yeþ him to done his diligence
To bringen him oute of his peines smerte
Oþer wiþ a swerde þat he wold slitt his herte
That subtille clerk whiche þat reuþe hadde on þis man
þat nyht *and* daie he him spedde þat he ne lan
To waite a time of his conclusione
þis is to seie to make illucione
.I. ne can no termes of astrologie
Be whiche an apparens of Iogellery
That sche *and* eu*e*ry wight schold wene *and* seie [leaf 148]
þat of Bretaigne þe rokkes were aweie
Or elles þei were sonken vnder grounde
So att þe last whan that he his time founde
To make his Iapes *and* his wrechednesse
Of whiche a sup*e*rsticious cursedenesse

His tables colletanes forþ he brouht
Ful wele corrected for þere lakked nouht
Ne his collectes ne his expans ȝeres
Ne his rotes ne his oþere-geres
As biene is centres *and* his argumentez
And his *pro*porcione conuenientez
For his equacions in eu*e*ry þinge
And he his .viij. spere in his wirkinge
He knewe howe fer*e* alnaþe was. yschoue
From þe heued of þilke fix aries aboue
þat in þe .ix. spere considerd is
Ful subtilli he calleþ al þis
And whan he had fonde his first mancioñ
He knewe þe remenant be *pro*porcioñ
And knewe þe ariscinge of þe mone wele
And in whos face *and* terme eu*e*ry dele
And knewe ful wele þe mones mansion
Accordant to his op*e*rac*i*on
And k[n]ewe al so his oþ*e*r obs*e*ruauncez
For suche illusions *and* suche meschaunces
As eyþen folke vside þilke daies
For whiche no longer Maked he delaies
Bott þoruhe his magik for a weke or tweie
It semede þat al þe rokkes were a waie
Aurelius whiche þat despayred is
Weþer he schal haue his or fare amys
Awaiteþ nyht *and* daie of þis miracle
And whan he knewe þer was none obstacle
þat voided were þes rokkes eu*e*rychon
Doune to his maistres fete he fel a none
And seide .I. wooful wriche Aurelius
Thank ȝowe lord *and* lady myne Venus
That me haue holpe fro my .Cares colde
And to þe temple forþe his weie haþe holde
Where ke knewe he scholde his lady se
And whan he sawhe his time anone riht he

Wiþ d[r]edeful herte *and* humble chiere [leaf 148, back]
Saluyd haþ his souereigne lady dere
¶ My rihtful lady *quod* þis woful man
Whome .I. moste drede and loue as .I. best can 1312
And loþest wer of al þis werlde displese
Nere it þat .I. for 3owe haue suche disese
þat .I. muste deye here att 3oure fote anone
Bot nouht wold .I. tel howe me is wo begone 1316
Bot certes eyþer must .I. deye or pleine
3e sleine me giltles for verrei peine
Bot of my deþe 3ouhe 3e haue no reuþe
Aviseþ 3owe ar þat 3e lese 3oure treuþe 1320
Repenteþ 3owe for þilke god aboue
Or 3e me sleyne because þat .I. 3owe loue
For madame wele 3e wote þat 3e haue hiht
[Nou3t that I Chalenge ony thing of ryght] [Harl. 7333, *leaf* 85, *col.* 2]
Of 3ow souereigne ladye bot 3oure grace
Bot in a gardeine 3onde in suche a place
3e woote riht wele þat 3e be-hiht me
And in 3oure honde 3oure trouþe pliht me 1328
To loue me best god wote 3e saide so
And al be þat. þat .I. vnworþe am þerto
Madame .I. speke it for þe honoure of 3oue
More þan to saue myn herte lif riht nowe 1332
.I. haue done as 3e haue commanded me
And if 3e vouche-saf 3e maie go see
And as 3ow luste haueþ 3oure behest in mynde
For whikke or dede riht þus 3e schal me fynde 1336
In 3owe liþe al to do me lyue or deye
Bot wele .I. wote þe rokkes bene aweye
He toke his leue *and* sche astonyed stode
In al hir face *þere* nas a drope of blode *1340*
Sche wende neuer haue commen in suche a trappe
Alas *quod* sche þat euer þis scholde happe
For wend .I. neuer be possibelite
That suche a mustre or suche a merveile scholde be 1344

It is aȝeine þe *pro*cess of Nature[1] [[1] *These lines are transposed in the MS.*]
And home sche goþ a sorweful creature[1]
For verraie vnneþ maie sche go
Sche wepeþ *and* weyleþ a daie or tuo 1348
And swowneþ þat it reuþ was to see
Bot whi it was to no whight tolde sche
For oute of toune was gone Arneragus[2] [[2] *This line is repeated on top of leaf* 149]
Bot to hir selfe sche saide *and* spak þus [leaf 149] 1352
In hire compleint as ȝe schollen affter here
Wiþ face pale *and* wiþ sorwheful chiere
Alas q*uo*d sche on þe fortune .I. pleine
þat vnwar hast wrapped me in þi cheyne 1356
For whiche þe Eskape wote .I. no socoure
Saue only deþe oþir dishonoure
One of þis tuo behoueþ me to chese
Bot naþeles ȝit hadde leuere to lese 1360
Mi lif þan of my bodi to haue a schame
Oþer knowe my self fals oþ*er* lese my name
And wiþ my deþ .I. may me quyte y-wis
Haþ þ*er*e nouht mony a wif ar þis 1364
And mony a maiden ysleine hir*e* self alas
Raþer þat wiþ hir*e* bodis done trespas
And certes lo þes stories bereþ wittenesse
Whan .xxx. tyrantez ful of cursednesse 1368
Had sleyne Phidon in Athenes att þe lest
Thei co*m*maunded his douhtres to arest
And bringen hem be-forne him in despite
Al naked to ful-fil hir*e* foule delite 1372
And in here faders blode þe[i] made hem daunce
Vppon þe pament god ȝeue hem meschaunce
For whiche þes woful maidens ful of drede
Raþer þan þe[i] wolden lese here maidenhede 1376
þei p*ri*uely bene stert in-to a well
And dreinte hem self as þe bokes tell.
Thei of Mesne lete e[n]quere *and* seke
Of lacedemye .l. maydens eke 1380

On whiche þei wolden done here licherye
Bot was þere none of al þat companye
þat sche nas sleyne wiþ a gladd entent
And raþer chase to deye þan for to assent
To bien oppressed[1] of here maidenhede [1 ? *MS* ofpressed]
Whi schold .I. þan to deye buen in drede
¶ Lo eke þe tyraint Anstoclides
þat loued a maide þat hiht simphalides
Whan þat hir fader sleine was on a nyht
Vnto Dyanes temple goþe sche a-none riht
And hent þe ymage wiþ hire armes tuo
Fro whiche ymage wold sche neuer goo
No wyht myȝt of it hire hande race [leaf 149, back]
Til sche was sleine in þe selue place
Nowe seþen þat maidens hadd suche despite
To bien defouled wiþ mannes foule delite
Wele auht a wif raþer her self sle
þat to bue defouled as þenkeþ me
That schal .I. seien of Asdrubardis wiff
þat att Cartage beraft hir self here liff
For whan sche sawe þa romeine wanne þe toune
Sche toke hir children al *and* swep adoune
In to þe fire *and* chase raþer to deye
þan any Romeyne did hire velanye
Haþ nouht Lucres sleyne hire self alas
Att Rome þare sche oppressed was
Of Tarquyne for hire þouht it was a schame
To leue whan þat sche had lost hire name
The .viij. Maidens of Milesye also
Haue sleyne hem self for drede *and* woo
Raþer þan folke of Gaule schold hem oppresse
Mo þan a þousand storis as .I. gesse
Coupe .I. nowe tell as toucheinge þis matier
Whan Abradas was sleyne his wif so dere
Hire selfe slowhe *and* lete hire blode to glide
In Abradas woundes brode *and* wide

And seide my body att þe leste waye
þar schal no whight defoule it if þat .I. maie
What schold .I. mo ensamples here of sayne
Seþen þat so many haue hem selfe slayne 1420
Wele raþer þan þei wolde defouled be
.I. wil conclude what is best for me
[To sle my self thanne be defoulid thus [Harl. 7335, *leaf* 151. *Not in Harl.* 1758, *leaf* 135; *or Harl.* 7333, *leaf* 85, *bk*, *col.* 2; *or Sloane* 1686, *leaf* 285.]
I wol be trewe vn-to Arueragus]
Oþir rather sle my self in sum manere
As did Demonycious douhter dere
Because þat sche nold nouht defouled be
O cedasus. it is ful grete pite 1428
To reden howe þin douhtern deyden alas
þat slowhe hem self for suche a maner cas
As grete pite was it · or more
Theban Maiden þat fo[r] Nichasor 1432
[hir seluen slowgh̄ right for swich̄ manere wo [Harl. 7335, *lf* 151. *In Harl.* 7333, *lf* 85, *back*, *col.* 2; *not in Harl.* 1758, *leaf* 135; *or Sloane* 1686, *leaf* 285.]
An othir theban mayde dede right so]
Hire had wedded *and* dressed [*spurious*]
For one of Macedoyne had hire oppressed 1435
What scha[l] .I. seie of Nichostratifs wif
þat for suche caas beraft hire self hir lif
Howe trew was eke to Alcebiades [leaf 150]
His loue þat fo[r] to deyen chese 1440
Then for to suffren his body vmbreide be
Lo whiche a wif was Alcestem q*uod* sche
What Emore of good Penolope
Al grece knoweþ of her chastitee 1444
P*ar*de of Leodomya is wreten þus
Thate whan att troye was slayne p*ro*theselayus
No longer wolde sche leue after his daye
þe same of noble Porcia tel .I. maie 1448
Wiþ-outen brutus couþ sche nouht leue
To whome he had al hole hir herte .yȝeue
The p*ar*fyte wyfhode of Arthemesye
Honouryd is þurhe al þe barberye 1452

O Teuta queene in þine wifly chastite
To al wyves maie a merrour be
[. . . *no gap in the MS: these lines*
. . . . *known only in Ellesmere MS.*]
Thus pleyned dorigen a day or tueye
Purposed eu*er*e þat sche wolde deye
¶ Bot Naþeles on þe predde nyht
Home cam Arueragus þe worþi knyht
And axed hir*e* whi þat sche wepped so sore
And sche gan wepen euere þe longere more
Alas q*uo*d sche þat eu*er* was .I. borne
Thus haue .I. seide q*uo*d sche þus haue .I. sworne
.I. tolde him al as ȝe haue herde before
.It nedeþ nouht to rehersen it no more
This husbonde wiþ glad chere in sondre wise
Anseward *and* seide as .I. schal ȝowe deuyse
Es þer ouht elles dorigen bot þis
Nay naye q*uo*d sche god helpe me so as wis
This is to meche · and it were goddes wiH
ȝe wife q*uo*d he lat slepe þat is stiH
It maie be wele ȝit p*er*auentur to scie
Sche schol ȝoure trouþe holden be my faie
For god so wisly helpe me
.I. hadde weH leuer ystiked for to be
For verrei loue whiche þat .I. to ȝoue haue
Bot if ȝe scholde ȝoure trouþe saue
Trouþe is þe hiest þinge þat man maie kepe
Bot wiþ þat worde he brast anone to wepe
And seide .I. ȝoue for-bede vpon peyne of deþe
þat neuer whiles ȝe last lif ne breþe.
Til no wihte telle howe *þat þis matier* *[leaf 150, back]*
As .I. maye kepe .I. *wil me wo endure* *1484*
Ne make no countenance of *heuynesse*
þat folke of ȝowe maie *deme harme or gesse*
And forþe he cleped a *swyer and a maide*
Goþe forþe anone wiþ Dorogen he saide 1483

And bringeþe hir to suche a place anone
þei toke her leue *and* on þeire wei þei gone
Bot þei ne wist whie sche þedere went
He nold no whiht telle hire entent 1492
[. . . . . [*These lines known only in the Ellesmere MS.*]
. . . . . .
. . . . . .
. 1496
. . . . . .
. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]
This Swyere whiche þat hiht Aurelius
On dorigen whiche þat was so amerous 1500
Of aduenture happed . hire to mete
A-mydde þe toune riht in þe quek strete
As sche was boune to gone þe waie forþ riht
To-warde þere as sche had hiht 1504
And he was to þe Gardeine ward also
For wele he spiede whan sche wold go
Owte of hire hous to any maner place
Bot þus þei mette of aduenture or of grace 1508
And he saluyd hire wiþ glad entente
And axed of hire wheder þat sche wente
And sche ansewarde half as sche was madde
[Vnto the gardyñ as my husbonde bad] [Sloane 1683, *f* 205, *bk*]
My trouþe for to holde alas alas
Aurelius gan wonder of þis caas
And in his hert had grete compassione
Of hire *and* of hire lamentacione 1516
And of Arnaragus þe worþi knyht
þat bad hire holde al þat sche hiht
So loþe he was his wif schold breke hir trouþe
And in his herte he kest of þis grete rouþe 1520
Consideringe þe beste on eue*r*y side
þat fro his luste were him better abide
þan done so hihe a cherles wrechednesse
Aȝeines ffraunchis *and* aȝeynes al gentillesse 1524

For whiche in fewe wordes seide he þus
Madame seiþe to 3oure lorde Arneragus
þat seþin .I. see þis grete gentillesse
To 3owe. *and* eke .I. see wele 3oure destresse 1528
þan 3e to me þus scholde breke 3oure trouþe 1530
Sertes me þinkeþ it were riht grete rouþe [*spurious* 1529]
.I. haue wele leuer euer to suffre woo [leaf 151]
Then .I. dep*ar*te þe loue be-tuex 3ow tuoo 1532
.I. 3owe reles ma dame in to 3oure honde
Quyte eu*er*y surement *and* eu*er*y bonde
þat 3e haue maade to me as here be-forne
Seþyns þilke time þat 3e were borne 1536
My trouþe .I. plihte .I. schal 3owe neu*er* repreue
Of no by-heste *and* here .I. take my leue
As of þe trewest *and* þe best wif
þat eu*er*e 3it knewe .I. in al my lyf 1540
Bot eu*er* y wyht bewar of hire behest
On dorigen remembreþ att þe lest
þus can a swyer done a gentil dede
As wele as kañ a knyht wiþ outen drede 1544
Sche þonke him vppon hire knees al bare
And home vnto hire housebonde is sche fare
And told hiin aH 3e haue herde me seide
And be 3e seker he was so wele apaide 1548
þat it were impossible to write
What schold .I. longer of þis cas endite
Arueragus *and* Dorigene his wif
In seuereigne blisse leden forþe here lyfe 1552
Neuer eft ne was þere anger hem be-twene
He chiriseþ hire as þouhe sche where a quene
And sche was to him treue for eu*er* more 1555
Aurelius þat his cost haþe Al forlore 1557
Curseþ þe time þat euer he was borne 1558
For certes he seiþ .I. am for-lorne [*spurious*]
Alas q*uo*d he alas þat I be-hiht
O pured gold .a. þousand pou[n]de of wyht 1560

Vn-to þis Philofre howe schal .I. do
.I. se no more bot þat .I. am for-do
Myne heritage most .I. nedes seH
And buen a begger here may .I. no longer dweH
And schamen al þis kinrede in þis place
Bot .I. of him maie gette þe better grace
[But netheles I wolle of him assay [Harl. 7333, *leaf* 86, *col.* 2. *Also in Reg.* 17 *D* 15, *leaf* 190, *and Harl.* 1758, *leaf* 136. *Not in Sloane* 1686, *leaf* 206, *back.*]
At Certeyne yeer*is* and dayes to pay]
.I. wil þonke him of his grete curtesie
Myne trouþe wil .I. kepe .I. wil nouht lye
Wiþ hert sore he goþe vnto his cofre
And brouht golde vnto his philosofre
The valewe of .vj.^{c} pounde .I. gesse
And him besecheþ of his gentillesse
To *gr*aunt him daies of þe remenant [leaf 151, back]
And maistere .I. dare wele make au*aun*t
.I. failed neu*er* my trouþe as 3ite
For sekurly my dettes schal .I. quyte
To-warde 3owe howe eu*er* þat .I. fare
To gone abigged in my kirtel bare
Bot wold 3e vouche sauf vpon suyrte
Two 3ere oþer þre te respite me
Then ware .I. wele for elles most. I seH
Myne heritage þer nys no more to teH
Thi[s] philosophre soburly anseweRd
And seid þus whan he þes wordes herde
Haue .I. nouht holden couenant vnto þe
3is certes wele *and* treuly q*uo*d he
Hast þou not had þi lady as þe lykeþ
No no q*uo*d he *and* sorwfully he sikeþ
Whatt was þe cause tel me if þou can
Aurelius his tale a-none be-gan
And tolde him al as 3e han herde be-fore
It nedeþ nouht to rehersen no more
[He seide Arneragus/ of gentilnesse. [Harl. 1758, *leaf* 136, *back. Also in Harl.* 7333, *lf* 86, *back, col.* 1, *and Reg.* 17 *D* 15, *leaf* 136, *back.*]
Had leuyr/ dye in sorow & distresse.

Than his/ wif were of hir/ trouthe fals/. [Harl. 1758. *Not in Sloane* 1686, *leaf* 207.]
The sorow of Dorigen he tolde hym als/.
How loth hir/ was/ to ben a wickid wif.
And that sche leuyr/ had that day lost hir/ lif. 1600
And that hir/ trouthe sche swore thorogh ynnocence.
Sche neuyr/ erst/ herd speke of apparence] [Harl. *extr. ends*]
And riht as frely as he sent hire to me 1604
þat maad me haue of hire so grete pite 1603
As frely sent .I. hire to hime aȝeine
This is al *and* somme *þere* nys no more to seine
This philofre Ansewerde leue broþere
Euer-iche of ȝowe ded gentlyche to oþere 1608
þou ert a swyere *and* he is a knyht
Bot god for-bede for his blisful myht
Bot if a clerke couþe do as gentil a dede
As wele as any of ȝowe it is no drede 1612
Sire .I. reles þe þi þousand pounde
As þou riht nowe were crepe out of þe grounde
Ne neuere or nowe ne haddest knowe me
For sir .I. wil nouȝt take a peny of þe 1616
For al my craft ne nouȝt for my trauaile
þou haste y-paiede wele for my vitaile
It is ynowhe *and* fare wele *and* haue good daie
He toke his hors *and* forþe he goþe his waie 1620
//Lordinges þis question þan wald .I. ax nowe
Whyche was þe most fre as þenkeþ ȝowe
Nowe telleþ me or þat .I. forþe wende
.I. can no more my tale is att an ende. 1624

Explicit Liber / [leaf 152]

GROUP G. FRAGMENT VIII.

§. 1. THE SECOND NUN'S TALE.

LANSDOWNE MS.

[*THE PROEM.*]

[*No breake between the stanzas in the MS.*]

Incipit prologus. 2e Monyalys [leaf 132]

(1)

THe Ministre of þe Norice vn-to vices 1
Whiche þat men clepen in englisshe ydelnesse
The porter of þe gate is of delices
To eschiewe. And bu hir contrarie hire oppresse 4
That is to seine be leful besinesse
Wele ouhte we to done oure entent
Lest þat þe fende þoruhe Idelnesse vs schent 7

(2)

¶ For he þat wiþ his þousand cordes slyȝe 8
Contenuely vs wayteþ to be-clappe
Whan he maie man in Idelnesse aspiȝe
He can so lihtly cache him in his trappe 11
Til þat a man be hente riht be þe lappe
He is not waree þe fende haþe him in honde
Wele ouhte vs werche *and* ydelnesse wiþ stonde 14

(3)

¶ And þouhe men dradden neuer for to deye 15
ȝit seen men wele þe reson douteles
þat ydelnesse is rotin slogardye
Of þere comeþ neuere none encrese 18
And sepens þat slouþe hir haldeþ in a lese
Onely to slepe *and* for to ete *and* drinke
And to deuowren al þat oþer swynke 21

(4)

¶ And for to putt vs fro suche Idelnesse
þat cause is of þe grete confusione
.I. haue here done my feiþeful besinesse
After þe legent in translacione
Riht of þe glorious lif *and* passione
þou *with* þi garlonde wrouht wiþ rosus *and* lylie
The mene .I. a maide *and* Martire seint Cecile

(5)

¶ And þou þat floure of virgines art al
Of whome þat Bernarde lust so wele to write
To þe att my begynynge first .I. call
þou comfort of vs wreches do me endite
þi maydens deþ þat was þoruhe hir merite
þe eternale lif *and* of þe fende victorie
As men maie after reden in hir storie

(6)

¶ Thou maiden *and* moder dquhte of þi sonne
Thou well of Mercy sinful soules cure
In whome þat god for bounte chees to wonne
þou humble *and* hihe ouer euery creature
þat no desdeyne þe Maker had of kinde
þou noblest so fere oure nature
His sonne in blode *and* flessche to clope *and* winde [leaf 152, back]

(7)

¶ Wiþ-inne þe cloister blisfull of þi sides
Toke mannes schap eterne loue *and* pees
þat of þe trine compas lorde *and* gide es
Whome heuen *and* see *and* erþe out reles
Ay herien . *and* þou virgine wemles
Bare of þine body *and* dueldist maide pure
The creatore of euery creature

(8)

¶ Assembled is in þe magnificence
With mercy goodnesse *and* wiþ suche pite
þat þou ert þe sonne of excellence
Nouht only helpest hem þat preyen þe
But oft time of þi benignite
Ful frely er þat men þin helpe beseche
þou gost be-forne *and* ert her lyues leche

(9)

¶ Nowe help þou meke *and* blisful faire maid
Me flemed wriche in þis desert of gal
þenke on þe wommán Canan þat seide
þat whelpes eten somme of þe crommes al
þat from her lordes table buen yfal
And þouhe þat .I. þe vnworþe douhter of Eue
Be synful zit accept my be-leue

(10)

¶ And for þat seiþ is dede wiþouten werkes
So for to worchene zeue me witte *and* space
þat .I. be qwyte frome þe place þat most derke is
O þou þat art so faire *and* so ful of grace
Be myne aduocate in so hihe a place
There as wiþ outen eende is songe Osanna
Thou cristes moder *and* douhter of Anna

(11)

¶ And of þine lyht þou graunt my self haue parte
þat triblide is be þe cogitacione
[Of my body / and also by þe weyght [Harl. 7333, *if* 86, *bk, col.* 2]
Of erthely lust and fals effeccion]
O heuen o refute o saluacione
Of hem þat buen in sorwe *and* destresse
Nowe helpe for vnto my werke .I. wil me redresse

(12)

¶ Ȝet praie .I. ȝowe þat reden þat .I. write 78
For-ȝeueþ me þat .I. do no diligence
þis ilke storie subtely to endyte
For boþe haue .I. þe wordes *and* þe sentence 81
Of hem þat att þe seintes reuerence
þe stori wrote *and* folowen here legende
And praien ȝowe þat ȝe woll my werk amende 84

(13) [*THE TALE.*]

¶ ffirste will .I. ȝowe þe name of sein Cecile 85
Expounde as men maie in here stories see [leaf 153]
It is to seyen on Englisshe heuenes lylye
For pure chastenesse of virginitee 88
Oþer for sche witnesse hadde of honeste
Of grene of conscience *and* of good fame
The swete sauoure lylye was hir name 91

(14)

Oþere Cecely . is to seie þe waie to blinde 92
For sche ensample was be gode techeinge
Or elles Cicily is as .I. writen fynde
Is Ioyned be a maner conioyneinge. 95
Of heuen *and* lya . *and* hire in fygureinge
þe heuen is sette for þouht of holynesse
And lya for hire lasteinge besinesse 98

(15)

Cecile eke mai be seide in þis manere 99
Wanteynge of blindenesse for hire grete liht
Of Sapiens *and* for hire þewes clere
Or elles lo þis maydens name briht 102
[Off heuen and leos commyth ffor which bi riht] [Addit. 5140, leaf 285]
Men myht þe heuen of þe peple hir call
Ensample of goode *and* wise werkes all 105

(16)

For leos peple in ynglissle is to seie
And riht as men may in þis heuen see
The sonne *and* mone *and* þe sterres eu*e*ry weye
Riht so gostly in þis mayden fre
Seyen þe faiþe of Manificence
And eke of helþe *and* of sapiens
And sondre werkes briht of excellence

(17)

An[d] riht as þes philosofers write
þat heuen is swift rou*n*de *and* berneinge
Riht so was faire Cecile þe white
Ful sweft *and* besi euer in good workinge
And rounde *and* hole in goode p*er*seueringe
And bernede eu*er* in charite liht
Nowe haue .I. declared ȝow what sche hiht

Explicit Prologus Incipit fabula.

(18)

This maiden hiht Cecile as hire lif seiþe
Was comen of Romeyns *and* of noble kinde
And so forþe fostred vp in þe feiþe
Of Crist *and* bare his gospell in hir mynde
Sche neuer cesede as .I. wreten finde
Of hire praier *and* god to loue *and* drede
Besecheinge him to kepe hire Maidenhede

(19)

And whan þis maiden scholde vnto a man
Iwedded þe þat was ful ȝonge of Age [leaf 153, back]
Whiche þat ycleped was Waleriane
And þe daie was commen of his Mariage
Sche fel deuoute *and* homble in hire Corage
Vnder hire robe of golde þat satte ful faire
And next hire flesche yclad hire in an haire

(20)

¶ And while þe orgen' maden melodie
To god alone þus in hert songe sche
O lorde my soule *and* eke my bode gie
Vnwemed lest þat .I. confounded be
And for his loue þat deied vpon a tree
Euery secunde or þe þred daie sche fast
Aie biddi[n]ge in hir orisons ful fast

(21)

¶ The nyht came *and* to bed sche most gone
Wiþ hire husbond as often is þe manere
And priuely sche seide anone
O swete *and* wel be-loued spouse dere
þer is a counsel *and* ȝe wold it here
Whiche þat riht feine .I. wil vnto seine
So þat ȝe me assured it nouȝt to be-wreine

(22)

¶ Valerian gan fast vn to hir swere
þat fof no caas ne þinge þat miht be
He scholde for noþinge neuere be-wrien hire
And þann att erst vnto him þus seid sche
.I. haue an Angel whiche þat loueþ me
þat wiþ grete loue wheþer so y wake or slepe
Is rede ay my bode for to kepe.

(23)

// And ȝif þat he may felen oute of drede
[That ye me touche or love in vilonye [Harl. 7333, *leaf* 87, *col.* 2]
He ryȝt a-non wol slee you *with* þe dede
And in your thought þus schulle ye dye
And yf ye me in clennes gy]
He wolde ȝowe loue as me for ȝoure clennesse
And schewen ȝowe of his ioye *and* his brihtnesse

(24)

¶ Valerian correctid as god wolde
Ansewerd aȝeine if .I. schal truste to þe
Latt me þat Angel see *and* him be-holde
And if þat it a verraie Angel be
þan wil .I. dǫne as þou hast preide me
And if þou loue a noþere man for soþe
Riht wiþ þis swerde .I. wil sle ȝowe boþe

(25)

¶ Cecile ansewerd anone in þis wis
If þat ȝowe lust þat Angel schal ȝe see
So þat ȝe trowe on criste *and* ȝowe baptize
Goþe-forþe to via apia q*uo*d sche
That frome þis toune ne stant bot miles þree
And to þe pouer folkes þat þere duelle [leaf 154]
Sei hem riht þus as þat .I. schal ȝowe telle

(26)

¶ Tel hem . þat .I. Cecile ȝowe to hem sent
To schewen ȝowe þe good vrbane þe oolde
For secre nedes *and* for good entent
And whan þat ȝe seint vrban haue be-holde
Tel him þe wordes whiche þat .I. ȝowe tolde
And whan þat he haþ purged ȝowe fro sinne
Than schal ȝe se þat angel ar ȝe twinne

(27)

¶ Valerian is to þat place y-goon
And riht as him was tauht be his lerenynge
He fonde þis holy Vrban anone
Amonge þe seintes buriels lotiynge. .i. latitans
And he anone wiþ-outen tariynge
Did his Message *and* whan þat he hadde tolde
Vrban for Ioye gan his hondes vpholde

(28)

The teres from his yen lete he fall
Almihti god o ihesu Crist quod he
Sewere of Chaste counseil. *and* herde of vs all
The fruyte of þilke seed of chastite
þat þou hast sowe in Cecile take to þe
Loo ylike abuse bee wiþ oute gile
þe serueþ aye þin owen þral Cecile

(29)

¶ For þilke spouse þat sche toke bot nowe
Ful like a fers lyon sche sendeþ here
As meeke as any lombe was to 3owe
And wiþ þat worde anone þer gan apere
And old man clad wiþ white cloþes clere
And had a booke wiþ lettres of gold in honde
And gan beforne Valerian stonde

(30)

¶ Valerian as dede fel doune for drede
When he him saughe *and* him vp hent þoo
And on his booke riht þus he gan to rede
O lorde .o. feiþe .o. god wiþ owten mo
Of Cristendome *and* fader of all also
Aboue all *and* ouer al euery where
þis wordes al wiþ golde wreten were

(31)

¶ Whan þis was radde þan seide þis olde man
Leuest þou þis þinge or no sey 3e or naye
.I. leue al þis þinge [quod valerian) [Harl. 7333, *lf* 87, *bk*, *col.* 1]
ffor sother thing] þan þis .I. dare wele saye
Vnder þe heuen no whiht ne þenke maye
Tho vanysched þe olde man he nyste wher
An pope Vrbane him cristene riht þere [leaf 154, back]

(32)

Valerian goþe home *and* sein Cecile
¶ Wiþ-inne his chambur he sauhe an Aungel stande
þis Aungel hadde of Roses *and* of lyle
Corons tuo whiche he bare in hande
And first to Cecile as .I. vnderstande
He ȝaf þat one *and* after gan he take
þe tother to Valerian hire make

(33)

¶ Wiþ body clene *and* vnwemmed þouht
Kepe ay wele þis Corounes quod he
Frome paradise to ȝowe haue .I. hem brouht
Ne neuer more schoH þei roten be
Ne lese her swete sauore trusteþ me
Ne neuer whight schal seen hem wiþ his eyȝe
Bot he be chaste *and* hate velanye

(34)

¶ And þou walerian for þou sone
Assentest to good counsel alsoo
Sey what þe lust *and* þou schalt haue þi bone
.I. haue a broþer quod valerian þoo
þat in þis werd .I. loue no man soo
.I. praie ȝowe þat my broþer maie haue grace
To knowe þe trouþe as .I. do in þis place

(35)

¶ The Angel ansewarde god lykeþ ȝoure request
And boþe wiþ þe pame of Marterdome
ȝe schol com vnto þe blisful feste
And wiþ þat worde Tiburce his broþer come
And whan þat he sauoure vnder nome
Wiþ þat þe roses *and* þe lyles Caste
Wiþ inne his herte he gan to wonder fast

(36)

¶ And seide in þis time .I. wonder of þe 3ere
Whens þis suote sauour comeþ so
And Roses *and* lilys it .I. smeH here
For þouhe .I. had hem in myn hondes tuo
The sauoure in me myht no depper go
The swete smel it in myne here .I. finde
Haþe chaunged me al in anoþer kinde

(37)

¶ Valerian seide tuo corounes haue we
Snowe white *and* rose rede þat schyneþ clere
Whiche þat þine yen haue no myht to se.
And as þou smellest hem þoruhe my preiere
So schalt þou seen leue broþer dere
If it so be þat wolte wiþ oute slouþe
Beleue a riht *and* knowe verrei trouþe [leaf 155]

(38)

Tiburce answerd saist þou þus to me
In soþenesse or in dremes herken 3e þis
In dreme quod Valerian han we bue
Vnto þis time myn broþer ywisse
Bot nowe att erst oure trouþe dwellyngis
How woost þou quod Tiburs *and* in what wise
Quod Valerian þat .I. schal deuise

(39)

¶ The Aungel of god haþe me trewþ ytauht
Whiche þat þou schalt seen if þat þou wolte reneye
þe ydoles *and* be clene *and* elles nouht
And of þe miracles of þes corounes tueye
Seint Ambrose in his preface lust to seie
Solempnely þis noble doctor dere
Commendeþ it *and* seiþ in þis manere

(40)

¶ The palme of marterdome for to receyue
Sein Cecile fulfild of goddes ȝift
þe werlde *and* eke here Chambre. gan sche weyue
Wittnesse Tiburce *and* Cecilez schrift
To whiche god of his bounte ȝolde schift
Corounes tuo of floures wele smellynge
And maade þe Angel hem þe Corounes bringe

(41)

¶ The maide haþ brouhte þes men to blisse a-boue
The werlde haþ wiste what it was worþe certeyne.
Deuocione of chæstite to loue
Tho schewde him open *and* pleine
þat al ydoles nys but þinge in veine
For þei bu domme *and* perto þei bue def
And charged him his ydoles for to lef

(42)

¶ Who þat þis troueþ nouht a beste he is
Quod þo Tyburce if þat .I. schal nouht lye
Sche gan þan kisse his breste *and* þat herd þis
And was ful glad he couþe trouthe aspye
þis daie .I. take þe for myne a-lye
Seide þis blisful maide faire *and* dere
For affter þat sche seide as ȝe maye here

(43)

¶ Lo. Riht so as þe loue of crist quod sche
Maad me þi broþers wif riht in þat wyse
Anone for myne Allye here take .I. þe
Sepens þat þou wolde þin ydoles despise
Go wiþ þi broþer nowe *and* þe baptize.
And maake þe clene so þat þou maiste beholde
The aungels face of whiche þi broþer tolde [leaf 155, back]

(44)

Tiburce answerde *and* seide broþer dere
¶ First tel me wheder .I. schal *and* to what man
To whome quod he come forþe wiþ riht good chier
.I. wiH þe leede vn to þe pope vrban
To vrban broþer myne valerian
Quod þo Tiburce wil þou me þeder lede
Me þinkeþ þat it were a wonder dede

(45)

¶ Remenest þou nouht vrban quod he þo
þat is so of dampned to be dede
And wonneþ in halkes to *and* fro
And dare nouhte ones put forþe his heede
Men wolde him berne in a fire so rede
If þat he were founde *and* men miht him aspye
And we also þat bere him companye

(46)

¶ And whiles we seken þilke diuinitee
þat is hidde in heuen priuey
Algate y-brent in þis werld shol we be
To whome Cecily answeard boldely
Men myht drede wele *and* skilfully
þis lyf to lese myne owen dere broþer
If þis were leueynge only *and* none oþere

(47)

¶ Bot þere is better lif in oþer place.
þat neuer schal be lost ne drede þe nouht
Whiche godes sonne vs tolde þorwhe his grace
[þat fadres son] hathe al þing wrouȝt [Harl. 7333, *on lf* 88, *col.* 1]
And aH þat wrovte[1] is *with* a skylfuH þouȝt [[1] rov *corrected*]
þe gost that from the fadir gan procede
He souleH him *with*-oute eny drede

(48)

By worde & by myracle by goddes son [Harl. 7333] 330
When he was in this worlde declared her
þat *þer* was o*þer* lyf *þer* men may wene
To whom aunswerd tyburce o systur der 333
Ne sedest thow ryght now in þis man*er*
þer nas but O. lord god in sothefastnes
And now of thre how maist þou bere wytnes 336

(49)

þ*at* schall I tel quod sche or I goo] [Harl. 7333 *extract ends*]
Riht as a man haþ sapiens þre
Memorie engyne. *and* intellect also
Soo moo beynge of diuinite 340
þre p*er*sones riht wel þere maie bee
¶ Tho gan sche him busily p*re*che
Of cristes come *and* of his peynes teche 343

(50)

And mony poyntes of his passione 344
How goddes son in þis werld was holde
To do mankinde pleine remissione
þat was ybonde in sinne *and* cares colde 347
Al þis þinge sche vnto tyburce tolde
¶ And affter þis tiburce in good entent
To pope vrban wiþ valerian he went 350

(51)

Whiche þonked god *and* wiþ glad hert *and* liht 351
He Cristened him *and* maade him in þat place
P*ar*fite in his leueynge goddes knyht
And aftur þis Tiburce gat suche grace 354
That euery daie he sawe in time *and* space [leaf 156]
The aungel of god *and* eu*er*y maner bone
þat he god axed it was sped ful sone 357

(52)

¶ It were ful harde be order for to seyne
Howe mony wonderes ihesu for him wrouht
Bot att þe last to tel schort *and* pleine
The seriant of þe toune of Rome hem souht
And hem be-forne Almache þe prouost brouht
Whiche hem opposed *and* knewe all her entente
And to þe ymage of Iubiter he hem sente

(53)

¶ And seid who so wil nouȝt sacrifice
Swappe of his hede þis is my sentence here
Anone þes marters þat .I. ȝowe of deuise
On Maximius þat was an officere
Of þe profectes *and* of Corniculere
Hem hent *and* when he forþe þe seintes ladde
Him selfe he wope for pite þat he hadde

(54)

¶ And whan maximius hadd herd þe seintes lore
He gatte hem of þe tormentours leue
And hadde hem in his house wiþ oute more
And wiþ here precheinge ar þat it were eue
þei gon fro þe tormentours to reue
And frome maximius *and* frome his folke ichone
þe fals feiþe to trowe in god a-lone

(55)

¶ Cecele Came whan it was waxen nyht
Wiþ prestes þat hem crestened al in fere
And afterward whan daie was waxen liht
Cecile hem seide wiþ a sobre chere
Nowe cristes owen knyhtes leue *and* dere
Cast al awaye þe werkes of derknesse
And armeþ ȝowe in armure of lyhtnesse

(56)

¶ 3e haue for sothe done grete Bataile
And haþe þe victorie 3oure feiþe 3e haue confermed
Go to þe croune of lif þat maie nouht faile
þe rihtful Iugge whiche þat 3e haue serued
Wiłł bringe 3owe to his blisse þat to 3ow haþ reserued
And whan þis þinge was seide as .I. devise
Men led hem forþe to donè þe sacrifise

(57)

¶ Bot whan þei were vn-to þe place ybrouht
To telł schortly þe conclusioune
Thei nolde encense no sacrifise riht nouht
Bot on her knees þei satten hem a doune
Wiþ humble hert *and* sadde deuocion [leaf 156, back]
And losten boþe her hedes in þe place
Here soules went to þe kenge of grace

(58)

¶ This Maxinius þat sawe þis þinge be-tide
Wiþ pitous tales tolde it a-none riht
þat he her soules sawhe to heuen glide
Wiþ algels ful of clerenesse *and* of liht
And wiþ his worde conuerted mony a wyht
For whiche almachius dide him so to-bete
Wiþ whippe of leede to he his lif gan lete

(59)

Cecilie him toke *and* beried him anone
Be tiburce and valeriane softly
Wiþ inne hire heriynge place vnder a stone
And after þis Almachius hastely.
Badde his Ministres ffecchen openly
Cecile so sche myht in his presence
Do sacrifice *and* Iubite encense

(60)

¶ Bot þei conuerted þorwhe here wise lore 414
Wepten sore *and* ȝaf credence
Vnto her worde *and* cryden more *and* more
Crist god soñ w*ith* outen difference 417
Is verrey god. þis is al oure sentence
þat haþe so good a s*er*uant him to s*er*ue
þus wiþ o voice: we trowe þei we sterue 420

(61)

Almachius þat herd al þis 421
Bad fecche Cecile þat he miht hir see
And alþer ferst lo þis was his askeinge
What maner wo*m*man ert þou þo q*uo*d he 424
.I. am gentiłł wo*m*man borne q*uo*d sche
.I. ax q*uo*d he þouhe it þe greue
Of þi religion *and* of þi be-leue 427

(62)

Whi þan be-gan ȝoure questione folilye 428
q*uo*d sche þat woldest þou ansewere conclude
In o demande ȝe axed lewdly
Almachius anseward to þat similitude 431
[Of whens comthe thin Answer' so rude] [Harl. 7333, *lf* 88, *bk*]
Of whense q*uo*d sche when þat sche was refreynede
Of concience *and* of good feiþe vnfeynede 434

(63)

Almachius seide takest þou none hede 435
Of þin Ansewere *and* sche him ansewerd þus
Ȝoure myhte quod sche litel is to drede
For eu*er*y mo[r]tel manesse power ne is 438
Bot y-lyke a bledder ful of wynde y-wis
For wiþ a nedeles point whan þat is blowe [leaf 157]
Maie al þe bost of it be leid ful lowe 441

(64)

¶ Ful wrongefully began þou quod he
And ȝut in wronge is þi perseuerance
Woste þou nouht howe owre mihti princes fre
Bene þus commanded *and* maken ordinance
þat euery cristen whight scha[l] haue penance
Bot if þat he his cristendome wiþ seie
And gone al quyte if he wil it renaye

(65)

¶ ȝoure Princes erren as ȝoure noblen doþe
Quod þo Cecile *and* a woode sentence
ȝe maake us gilti *and* it is nouht soþe
Fore þat knowen wele oure Innocence
For as muche as we done a reuerence
To criste: *and* for we bere a cristen name
ȝe put on vs a crime *and* eke a blame

(66)

¶ Bot we þat knowen þelk name so
For vertuous we maie it nouȝt seie
Almachie seide chese one of þes tuo
Do sacrifice or cristendom reneye
þat þou mowe skapen be þat weie
Att whiche þe holy blisful maide
Gan for to lauhe and to þe Iuge sche saide

(67)

¶ O Iuge confuse in þi nycete
Wilt þou þat .I. reney Innocence
To maken me a wikked wyht quod sche
Lo he dissimuleþ here in audience
He stareþ *and* wodeþ in his aduertence
To whome Almachius seide o vncely wrecche
Ne wost þou not houe fer my miht mai streche

(68)

¶ Haþe nouht oure myhte prince to me yȝouen
ȝe bothe power *and* auctorite
To make folke to deyȝen or to leuen.
Whi spekest þou so proudely þan to me
.I. speke it nouȝt bot stedfastly *quod* sche
Nouht proudly for .I. saie as for my side
.I. hate dedely þilke vice of pride

(69)

¶ And ȝif þou drede nouht a soþe to here
þan wil .I. schewen al openly be riht
þat þou hast maade a ful grete leseinge here
þou seist þi princes haue ȝeue þe myht
Bothe to slene *and* for to whikke a wiht
Thou þat ne maist bot onely lif here be-reue [leaf 157, back]
Thou na haste þerto neiþer pouer ne leue

(70)

Bot þou maist seie þi Princes han þe maked
Ministre of deþe: for if þou speke of mo
þou liest for þi pouer is ful naked
Do waie þi boldenes seide Almachius þo
Or sacrifice to oure goddes or tuo
.I. reche nouht what wronge þat þou me profer
For .I. can suffre it as a philosofer

(71)

Bot þilke wronges maie .I. not endure
þat þou spekest of owre goddes here quod he
Cecile ansewerd .o. nice creature
þou seidest no word seþens þou spak to me
þat .I. ne knewe þere wiþ þi nicete
And þat þou were in euery maner wise
A lewde Officer *and* a veine Iustise

(72)

þere lakkeþ no þinge to þine vtter yȝen
þat þou nart blinde for-þinge þat wee seen aH
þat is a stone þat men wele maie aspyen
þat ilke stone a god þou wol it caH
.I. rede þe latt þine honde vpon hit faH
And tast it wele a stone þou schalt it finde
Sens þat þou sixt it not wiþ þine yȝen blinde

(73)

It is a schame þat þe peple schal
Schal scoren þe *and* lauhe att þi folye
For communly wemmen wote it wele ouere al
þat myhte goddes is in his heuenes hihe
And þes ymages wele þan maistowe aspie
To þe ne to hem self ne maie þei profit
For in hire effecte þei bue nouht worþe a myte

(74)

þus *and* suche oþere wordes seide sche
And he wex wroþe *and* badde sche scholde be ledde
Home to hire hous *and* in hir hous quod he
Birne hire riht in a fire wiþ flammes rede
And as he bad riht so was done þe dede
And in a bathe þei gan hir fast schetten
And nyht *and* daie grete fire vnder þei maden

(75)

Al þe longe niht *and* þe daie also
For al þe fire *and* eke þe baþes hete
Sche satt al colde *and* felt of it no wo
Ne maade hire nouȝt a drope *for to swete*
Bot in þat baþe hir *lif* sche *moste lete*.
For he Almachius wiþ ful wekked *entent* [leaf 158]
To sleene hir in þe baþe his sonde sent

(76)

þree strokes in þe nekke he smote hir þo
The tormento*ur* bot for no maner chaunce
He myhte nouhte smyte al here nek y tuo
And for þe*re* was þat time an ordinance
That no man schold do to man suche penance
The ferþe stroke to smyten soft or sore
þis tormento*ur* ne dorste no more

(77)

Bot half dede wiþ hire nek y-coruen þe*re*
He left hire lye *and* in his weie he wente
The cristen folke whiche abowten hire were
Wiþ schetes home ful feire here hente
þree daies leued sche in þis torment
And neuer cesed hem þe feiþe to teche
þat sche had fostred hame sche gan to p*re*che

(78)

And hem sche ȝaue here mebles *and* her þinge
And to þe Pope vrban be-toke hem þo
And seide þus axed þis of heuen kinge
To haue respite þrei daies *and* no mo
To rec*o*mmande to ȝowe er þat .I. go
þes sowles loo *and* þat .I. miht do wirche
Here of myne house p*er*petuelly a cherche

(79)

Seint vrban wiþ his dekenes p*ri*uelye
The lady fette *and* beried it be nyht
Amonge his o*þe*re seintes honestly
Here house þe cherche of seinte cecely hiht
Seinte vrban halowed it as he wel myht
In þe whiche in to þis daie in noble wise
Men done to criste *and* to his seintes seruise.

Explicit vita *sancte* Cecilie.

[*on leaf* 158] **Incipit *prologus* .Canonice.**

Whan ended was þe lif of seint Cecile
Er we had reden fulli. fiue myle
Att bouhton vnder þe ble vs gan a take
A man þat cloþed was in cloþes blake
And vnder þat he hadde a white surplis
His Hakenay þat was al pomel gris
So swete þat it wonder was to see
It semed he had *pri*ked myles þre
þe hors eke þat ȝoman rode vpone
So swet þat vnneþ myht he gone
Aboue þe paitrel stode þe fome ful hyȝe
He was of fome al flekked as a pye [leaf 158, back]
A male tweyfold on his cropur leye
It semed þat he Caride litel araye
Al liht for somere rode þis worþe man
And in myn herte wonder .I. be-gan
What þat he was til þat .I. vnder-stode
Howe þat his cloke was sewed to his hode
For whiche when .I. longe had auysed me
.I. demed him sum chanon for to be
His hatte honge doune be-hinde his be a lace
For he had ridde more þan a trote or a pace
It hadde ay *pri*ked lyke as he ware wode
A clote lef he had vnder his hode
For suote *and* for to kepe his hed from hete
Bot it was Ioy for to seen him swete
His fored dropped as a stillatorie
Where ful of pleintein *and* of *pe*ritorie

And whan he come he gan to crye
God saue quod he þis Iolie companye
Fast haue .I. prikked quod he for 3oure sake
Because þat .I. wold 3owe ouer take
To riden in þis mery companye
His 3oman eke was ful of curtasie
And sires nowe in morwe tide
Oute of 3oure Ostlery .I. sawe 3owe ride
And warned here my lorde *and* my souereine
Whiche þat to ride wiþe 3owe is ful feyne
For his disporde he loueþ daliance
Frende for þi warneyinge god 3eue þe good chaunce
Seide oure oste sertes it wolde seme
Thi lorde were wise *and* so .I. maie wele deme
He is ful Iocunde also dar .I. laie
Can he ouht telle a mery tale or tueye
Wiþ whiche he glade maie þis companye
Who sire my lord 3e 3e wiþ oute lye
He kan of merþe *and* eke of Iolyte
Not bot .I.-nowhe also *sir* tresteþ me
And 3e him knewe as wel as do .I.
3e wold wonder howe wele *and* þreftely
He couþe werke *and* þat in sundre wise
He haþ tak on him mony sundre aprise
Whiche were ful harde for any þat is here
To bringe aboute. bot þei of him it lere [leaf 159]
As homely as he rideþ amonges 3owe
If 3e him knewe. it wolde be 3oure prowe
3e nolde nouht forgone his aqueyntance
For mochel good .I. dare leie in a balance
Al þat .I. haue in myne [1]proossione [1 ? *for* possessione]
He is a man of hihe discrecione
.I. warne 3owe wele he is a passinge man
Wele quod oure oste .I. pray þe tel me þan
Is he clerk or none tel what he is
Nay he is gretter þan a clerke ywis

Seide ȝoman *and* in wordes fewe
Oste *and* of his craft sum what .I. wil ȝowe schewe
.I. sei my lorde can suche a sutelte
Bot al his craft ȝe maie nouht wite att me
And som what help .I. ȝit to his worcheinge
þat al þis grounde whiche þat we bien on rideinge
Til þat we come to Canturbury toune.
He couþe al clene torne vp so[1] doune [1 ? *MS* se]
And paue it al of siluer *and* of golde
And whan þis ȝoman hadde þus ytolde
Vnto oure hoste he seide benedicite
þis þinge is wonder meruelous to me
Seþens þat þi lorde of so hihe prudence
Be cause of whiche men scholde hem reu*e*rence
þat of his worschipe recheþ he so lite
His ouere slope is not worþe a myte
As in effecte to him so mot .I. go
It is al bawde *and* to-tore also
Whi is þi lorde so slottesche .I. þe preie
And his of pouer better cloþes to beie
If þat his dede accorde wiþ þi speche
Tel me þat. *and* þat .I. þe beseche
Whie q*uo*d þis ȝoman wherto ax ȝe me
God helpe me so for he schal neuer þe
Bot .I. wil nouht avowe þat .I. seie
And þ*e*re for kepe it secre .I. ȝowe preie
He is to wise in feiþe as .I. beleue
þat þat is ouere done it wil nouht preue
And riht as clerkes seine it is a vice
Where-fore in þat .I. holde him lewde *and* nyce
For whan a man haþ ou*e*re grete a witte
Ful oft it hapneþ to mis vsen it [leaf 159, back]
So doþe my lorde *and* þat me greueþ sore
God it amend .I. can seie nowe no more
Thare-of no force good ȝoman q*uo*d oure Oste
Seþens his co*n*nynge of þi lorde þou woste

Tel. howe he dope .I. praie þe hertelye
Seþen þat he is so craftie *and* so slye
Where dwellen ȝe it to tel be ·
In þe subbarbes of a toune *quod* he
Lurkeinge in Hirnes *and* in lanes blinde
Where þes robbers *and* þeues be kinde
Holden her *priue* fereful residence
As þei þat dare nouht schewe her *presence*
So fare we if .I. schal sey þe soþe
ȝit *quod* oure Oste lat me talke to þe
Whie ert þou discoloure in þi face
Peter *quod* he god ȝif harde grace
I am so vsed in þe fire to blow
That it haþe chaunged my colo*ur* as .I. trowe
.I. am nouht wont in no myrrour to *prie*
Bot swynke sore *and* leren to multiplie
We blondern euer *and* pouren in þe fire
And for al þat we failen of oure desire
For euere we lakken oure conclusione
To muche folke we bene bot illusione
And borwe golde be it a pounde or tuo
Or ten. or .xij. or mony su*mm*es mo
And make hem wene att þe leste weie
þat of o pou[n]de we coupe maake tweie
ȝit is it fals *and* aye we haue good hope
It forto done *and* after it we grope
Bot þat science is so fer vs be-forne
We mowe nouhte al-þouhe we had it suorne
It ouertake. it slide a-waie so faste
It wil vs make beggers att þe last
Whiles þis ȝoman was þus in þis talkeinge
This Chanon drouhe him nere *and* herd al þinge
Whiche þat þis ȝoman spak for suspecione
Of men speche euer had þis chanone
For Caton seiþe he þat giltif is
Demeþ al þinge be spoke of him ywys

Because of þat he gan so nyhe to drawe
His 3oman þat he herd al his sawe [leaf 160]
And þus he seide vnto his 3oman þo
Holde þow þi pees *and* speke wordes no mo
For if þou do þou schalt it dere abye
Tho sklanderst me here in þis compaignye
And eke diskeuerest þat þou scholdest hide
3e q*uo*d oure Oste tel one what so be-tide
Of al þis þreteinge reche þe nouht a myte
In feiþe q*uo*d he no more .I. do bot a lite
And whan þis Chanone sawe it wolde nouht be
Bot his 3oman wolde tel his p*ri*uete
He fledde awaie for verrei sorwe *and* schame
A q*uo*d þis 3oman here schal arise game
Al þat .I. can anone wil .I. telH
Seþen he is gone þe foule fende him queH
For neu*er* here after wil .I. wiþ him mete
For penye ne for pounde .I. be-hete
He þat me brouht first vnto þat game
Er þat he deie sorwe haue he *and* schame
For it ernest to me be my feiþe
þat fele .I. wele what so any man seiþe
And 3itte for al my smert *and* al my greue
For al my sorwe laboure *and* mescheue
.I. couþe neuere leue it in no wise
No wolde god my witte myht suffise
To tellen al þat longeþ for þat arte
Bot naþeles 3it wil .I. tel 3owe parte
Seþen my lorde is gone .I. wil not spare
Suche þinge as .I. knowe .I. wil declare

Explicit *p*rologus

[*THE PREAMBLE.*]

Incipit ffabula. [*on leaf* 160]

Wythe þis chanon dwelled haue .I. seuen ȝere
And of his sciẽce am .I. neuer þe nere
Al þat .I. had .I. haue .I.-lost *þere* by
And god wote so haþe mony mo þan .I.
Ther .I. was wont to be riht frissche *and* gay
Of cloþinge *and* of good arraie
Nowe may .I. were an hose vpon myn hede
And where my coloure was boþe freche *and* rede
Now it is wan *and* of a lewde hewe
Who so it vseþ sore sc[h]aH he rewe
And of my swynke ȝit blered is myne eyȝe
Lo whiche avantage is for to multepliȝe.
þat slideinge science haþ me maade so bare [leaf 160, back]
þat .I. haue no goode where þat euere y fare
And ȝite .I. am endited & endetted so þar bye
Of golde þat .I. haue borwed trewlye
þat while .I. leue .I. schal it quite neuer
þat euery man be war be me for euer
What manere man þat casteþ him þer to
If he continue .I. holde his þreft ydo
For so helpe me god þar by schal he nouht wynne
Bot empte his purce *and* make his wittes þinne
And whan he þoruhe his madnes *and* foly
Haþ lost his owen goode þorul Iopardy
þan he exciteþ oþer men þerto
To lese here gode as hem self haþ do
For vnto schrewes Ioye it is an[d] ese
To haue her felowe in peine *and* disese.

Thus was .I. lerned ones of a clerk
Of þat no charge .I. wil speke of oþer werke
Whan we bene þare as we schal exercise
Oure cluyssche craft we seme wonder wise
Oure termes buen so clergial *and* so wheinte
.I. blowe þe fire til þat myne hert feinte
What schold .I. tel of suche proporcion
Of þinges whiche þat we worche vppon
As .on. v. or .vj. vncę it maie wel be
Of siluer or of sum oþe[r] quantite
And bise me to tel ȝowe þe names
Of orpement bernt bones yren swames
þan in to pouder grounde bue ful smal
And in an erþen potte houe þat potte is al
And salt put inne *and* also papere
Be for þes pouders þat .I. speke of here
And wele ycouerd wiþ a lampe of glas
And of muche oþere þinge what þat þere was
And of þe potte *and* glas engluteinge
That of þe eyere myht passe no þing
And of the esye *and* smarte alsoo
Whiche þat was maad *and* of þe care *and* woo
þat we hadde in oure matiers sublimeinge
And amalgamynge *and* calcenynge
Of whike siluer y-cleped Marcurie crude
For aH oure sleytes we can nouht conclude
Oure orpement *and* sublimed Mercurie
Oure grounde litage eke on þe perorforie
Of yche of þes vnces a certeine
Nouȝt helpeþ vs oure laboure is in veine
Ne eke owre spirites ascencion
Ne eke oure matiers þat lien al fix adoune
Mowe in oure werkeinge noþinge vs aveile
For lost is al oure laboure *and* traueile
And al þe cost in .xx. deuel waie
Is loste also whiche we on it leie

[leaf 161]

þere is also mony anoþere þinge
þat is to oure craſte or perteineinge
þouhe .I. be order hem here ne reherse can
Because þat .I. am a lewde man
3it wil .I. tel hem al þei come to mynde
þouhe .I. ne kan sette hem in her kinde
As bole armonyac verte grece *and* borace
And sundere vessels maade of erþe *and* glasse
Oure Orinales *and* oure descensories
Viols cresletes *and* sublimatories
Cocurbites[1] *and* alembekes eke
And oþer suche dere y-nowhe a leke
Note nedeþ it to reherse hem al
Waters rubefiinge *and* boles gall
Arcenyk sal armonyak *and* bromstone
And herbes couþe .I. tel eke many one
As egremoyne valeriane *and* lunarie
And oþer suche if þat me luste to tarye
Oure lampes berneinge boþe nyht *and* daie
To bringen aboute oure craft it þat we maie
Oure forneys eke of Calcinacione
And of waters albificacione
Vnslekked lyme chalke *and* gleire *and* of an aye
Pouders diueres asshes donge pisse *and* cleie
Ceride poketes Sal peter *and* vitriol
And diuers fires maad of wode *and* cole
Sal tarter Alkaly *and* sal preparate
And combust matiers *and* coagulate
Cleye made wiþ hors here *and* oyle
Of tartre Alumglasse berme worte *and* Argoile
Resalgar *and* oþer matiers enbybeynge
And eke of oþer maters encorperinge
And of siluer citrinacione [leaf 161, back]
Oure cementinge *and* fermentacione
Oure Ingotes testes *and* mony mo
.I. wil 3owe tell as was me tauht also

[1] ? *MS* Corurbites]

The. foure spirites *and* þe bodis seuen
Be order of ofte as .I. herd my lorde neuen
þe. first spirit whiksiluer cald is
þe. secunde Orpement þe þred .I.-wis
Sal armoniac. *and* þe fourt bromstone
The bodis .vij. eke lo hem here anone
Sol. gold. is. *and* luna. siluer we þrepe
Mars. yren. Mercure. whikseluer we clepe
Saturnus lede. *and* Iubiter is tynne
And Venus coper be my fader kinne
þis cursed craft who so wil exercise
He schal no goode hane þat maie him suffise
For al þe good he spendeþ þere aboute
He lese schal þer-of haue .I. no doute
Who so þat lust to outen his folie
Lat him com forþe *and* leren to multeplie
Ande euery man þat ouht in his cofre
Lete him appere *and* wax a philosophre
Ascanse þat craft is so liht for to lere
Nay nay god it wote al be he monke or frere
Preste or chanone or any oþer wyht
þouhe he sitte att his boke boþe daie *and* nyht
In lerneynge of þis elvisshe nice lore
Al is in veine *and* parde muche more
Is to lerne a lewd man þe sotelte
For fye speke nouht þere-of for it wil nouht be
Al couþe he letterure or couþe he none
As in effect he schal finde it al one
For boþe tuo be my saluacione
Concluden in multiplicacione
I-lyche wele whan þei haul al y-do
þis is to seine þe feile boþe tuo
ȝit for þat .I. to muche rehersailł
Of waters Corosif *and* of lymayle
And of bodis mollificaciōne
And also of here induracione

Oyles ablucione *and* metale fusible.
To tellen al wald passen any bible.
That ouhwhere is where-for as for þe best [leaf 162]
Of all þis names now wiH .I. me rest
For as .I. troue .I. haue ȝowe tolde ynowhe
To Reysen a fende loke he neuer so rouhe
A nay lat be þe philosophre stone
Elixir cleped we sechen fast ychon
For had we him þan were we seker ynowhe
Bot vnto god of heuen .I. maak a vowe
For al oure craft whan we haue al y-do
And al oure sleiht he wil nouht com vs to
He haþe vs made spend muche good
For sorwe of whiche al-moste we wexen wode
Bot þat goode hope crepeþ in oure herte
Supposeinge euer þouhe we sore smert
To be releued be him afterwarde
Supposinge *and* hope is scharpe *and* harde
.I. warne ȝowe wele it is to seken eu*er*
þat futur temps haþ maad men deseuer
In trust þer-of from al þat euer þei hadde
ȝit of þat art þei couþ nouht wex sadde
For vn to hem it is a bitter swete
So semeþ it forne had þei bot a shete
Whiche þei miht wrappe in a nyht
And Abak to walken inne be daie liht
Thei wold hem sellen *and* spenden on þis craft
Thei can nouht stint til noþinge be laft
And euer more where þat euer þei gone
Men maye hem knowe be smeH of bromstone
For al þe worlde þei stinken as a gote
Hire sauoure is so rammysshe *and* so hote
That þouhe a man from hem a mile be
The sauour wil infecte trusteþ me
Lo þus be smellinge *and* be þrede bare arraie
If þat men lust þis folke þei knowe maie

And if a man wil ax him *pri*uely
Whi þei bue cloþed so vnthriftely. 893
Riht anone þei wil roune in his ere
And seie if þei espied were
Men wold hem fle be cause of hire science
Lo þus folke be-trayen Innocence 897
Passe ouer þis .I. go my tale vntoo
Er þat þe pote be on þe fire ydoo
Of Metaile wiþ a certeine quantite [leaf 162, back]
Mi lorde hem tempreþ *and* no man bot he 901
Nowe he is gone .I. dare sei boldely
For as men seine he can do craftely.
Algate .I. wote wele he haþe suche a name
And ȝitte ful ofte he renneþ in þe blame 905
And witte ȝe howe ful oft it hapneþ so
þe potte to-brekeþ *and* fare wele al is goo
þes metals been of so grete violence
Owre walles maie nouht make hem resistence 909
Bott if þei wrowht of lime *and* stone
þei p*er*cen so *and* þoruhe þe wal þei gone
And sum of hem sinken in to þe grounde
þus haue we lost be times mony a po[u]nd 913
And so*m*me erne scaterd al þe flore aboute
So*m*me lepen in to þe roof wiþþe-outen doute
þouhe þat þe fende note in oure siht he*m* schewe
.I. trow þat he wiþ vs be þat schrewe 917
In heH where þat his lorde *and* sire
Ne is þ*er*e no more woo ne angur ne Ire
Whan þat owre potte is broke as .I. haue seide
Eue*r*y man Chitte *and* halt him yuel apaide 921
Som seide it was longe on þe fire makeinge
So*m*me seide nay. it was longe on þe bloweynge
Than was .I. ferde for þat was myne office
Strawe quod þe þredde ȝe be lewde *and* nyce 925
It was nouht tempred as it ouhte to be
Nay q*uo*d þe ferþe stinte *and* herken me

Be cause oure fire was nouht maade of beche
þat is þe cause none oþer so þeeche
.I. can not telle where on it is a-longe
Bot wele .I. wote grete strife is vs amonge
What quod my lord þere is no more to done
Of þes periles .I. wil be ware eft sone
.I. am riht seker þat þe pott was crased
Be as be maye be ȝe no þinge amasud
As vsage is late swepe þe flore as swyþe
Pluke vpe ȝoure herte and be ȝe gladde and bliþe
The mollok on an hepe yswepped was
And on þe flore cast a canvas
And al þis mollok in a sif yþrowe
And ysiftide and yplucked mony a þrowe
Parde quod one summe what of oure metale
ȝitt is þere here þouhe we haue nouht al [leaf 163]
And þouhe þis þinge mishapped haþe as nowe
Anoþer time it maie be wele ynowhe
Vs most putte oure goode in aduenture
A marchant parde maie nouht aie endure
Tristneþ me wele in his prosperite
Som time is goode is drowned in þe see
And sum time it commeþ sauf vnto þe londe
Pes quod my lorde þe next time .I. wil fonde
To bringe oure crafte al in anoþere plite
And bote .I. do sires latt me haue þe wite
There was defaute in sum what wele .I. wote
An oþere seide þe fire was ouere hote
Bot be hit hote or colde .I. dar sei þis
þat we concluden euermore amys
We failen of þat whiche þat we wolde haue
And oure madnesse euer more we raue
And whan we bue to-geder euerychon
Euery man semeþ as wise as salomon
Bot al þinge whiche þat schyneþ as þe gold
Is not golde as .I. haue herde it tolde

Ne eue*r*y appel þat is faire att eyȝe
Ne is not good whatt so men clappe or crie
Riht so loo farith it amongus vs.
He þat semeþ þe wisest be ih*esus*[1] [1 MS ihc]
Is most foole whan it co*mm*eþ to þe p*r*efe
And he þat semeþ trewest is a þefe
þat schol ȝe knowe er þat .I. fro*mm*e ȝowe wende
Be þat .I. of my tale haue maade an ende

[*No break in the MS.*]

[*THE TALE.*]

THer is a chanon of religion .ij^{a}. *pars*
Amonges vs wolde enfecte al a toune 973
þouhe it as grete were as nynyue
Rome Alisander. Troy. *and* oþer þre
His sleihtes *and* his infinite falsenesse
There couþe no man writen as .I. gesse 977
þouhe þat he myht leuen a. þowsande 3ere
In al þis of fals-nesse ne is his pere
For in his termes he wil him so winde
And speke his wordes in so slyhe a kynde 981
Whan he comun schal wiþ any wiht
What he wil make him dote anone riht
Bot it þe fende be as his seluen is
Ful mony a man haþe he bigiled ar þis [leaf 163, back] 985
And wiH if þat he maie leue a while
And 3it men riden *and* gon ful mony a myle
Him for to seeke *and* haue acqueyntance
Nat knoweinge of his fals gouernance 989
And if þe luste to 3eue me audience
.I. wiH it tellen here in 3oure *pre*sence
Bot worschipful chanon religious
Ne demeþ nouht þat .I. sclander 3oure house 993
Al þouhe my tale of chanon be
Of eu*e*ry order some schrewe is p*ar*de
And god for-bede þat al a companye
Sholde rewe a singuler m*a*nnes folye 997
To sclander 3owe is not myne entente
Bot to Corretten þat mys yment

This tale was nou3t onely tolde for 3owe
Bot eke for o*þer*e mo 3e woote wele howe
*þ*at amonge cristes posteles twelue
*Þer*e nas no traytur bot Iudas him selue
Than whi scholde *þ*e remenant al haue blame
That giltles were. by 3owe say .I. *þ*e same
Sauf only *þ*is if 3e wil herken me
If any Iudas in 3oure Couent be
Remoue*þ* him be time .I. 3owe rede
If schame or losse maie causen any drede
And bu*þ*e no*þ*inge displesed .I. 3owe preie
Bot in *þ*is caas herkene*þ* what .I. wil seie

IN Londen was a preste an annuellere
*þ*at *þ*er-inne dwelled had mony a 3ere
Whiche was so plesant *and* so *ser*uisable
Vn-to *þ*e wiff where he was att table
That sche wolde suffur him no *þ*inge for to paye
For borde ne for clo*þ*einge wente he neuer so gaye.
And spendinge siluer hadde he riht ynouhe
*Þ*ere-of no force .I. wol *pro*cede as nowhe
And tel for*þ*e my tale of *þ*e Chanoñ
*þ*at brouht *þ*is prest to confusioñ
This fals chanon cam vppon a daye
Vnto *þ*e p*re*stes chambre *þ*er he laye
Besecheinge him to lene him a certeine
Of golde *and* he wolde white him a-3eine
Lene me a marke q*uo*d he bot daies *þ*re
And att my daie .I. wil it quyte *þ*e [leaf 161]
And it so be *þ*ou finde me fals
Ano*þ*er daie honge me be *þ*e hals
This p*re*ste him toke a marke *and* *þ*at als swi*þ*e
And *þ*is chanon him *þ*onked oft si*þ*e
And toke his leue *and* went for*þ*e his weie
And att *þ*e *þ*ered daie brouht his monye
And to *þ*is preste he toke *þ*is golde a3eine
There-of *þ*is prest was glad *and* feine

Certes *quod* he no þinge anoyeþ me
To lene a man a noble or tuo or þre
Or what þinge were in myn possessione
Whan he so trewe is of condicione
þat in no wise breke wil his daie
To suche a man .I. can neuer saie naye
What *quod* þis chanon schold .I. be vntrewe
Naye it were þinge fallen al of þe newe
Treuþe is a þinge þat .I. wil euer kepe
In to þe daie in whiche þat [I] schal crepe
In to my graue *and* elles god for-bede
Beleueþ þis as seker as is 3oure crede
God þonke .I. *and* in goode time be it seide
þat þer was neu*er* man 3it yuel appaide
For golde ne siluer þat he to me lent
And neuer falsed in myne herte y ment
And *sir* *quod* he nowe of my *priuete*
And seþen. 3e so goodly haue bue to me
And kiþed to me so grete gentillesse
Som whatte to whiten wiþ 3oure kindenesse
.I. wil 3owe schewe .&. if 3owe lust to lere
.I. schal it schewe to 3owe anone riht here
Howe .I. kan worchen in filosophie
Takeþ goode hede 3e scholn sene wele att ye
þat .I. wil do a maistre ar .I. goo
3e sir *quod* þe preste. 3e sire *and* wil 3e so
Mary þ*er*e-of .I. praie 3owe hertely
Att 3oure co*m*mandement sir treuly
Q*uod* þe chanon *and* elles god for-bede
Lo how þis þef couþe. his seruise bede
Ful soþe it is þat suche p*ro*ferd seruise
Stinkeþe as wittenes þis olde wyse
And þat ful sone .I. wil. it verifie
In þis chanone is rote of al trecherie [leaf 164, back]
That euermore delite haþe *and* gladnesse
Suche fendely þouhtes in his hert empresse

Howe cristes peple he maie to meschief bringe
God kepe vs fro*m*me his fals discimulinge
What wist þis p*re*ste wiþ whome he delte
Ne of his harme comynge noþinge he felte
O cele p*re*ste o celi Innocent
Wiþ Couetise anone þou schalt be blent
O graceles ful blinde is þi conceite
No þinge ert þow war of þi deceit
Whiche þat þis fox schapen haþ to þé
His wyle wrenches þou maiste nouht flyhe
Wher-fore to go to þe conclusion
þat referreþ to þi confusion
Vnhappe man anone .I. wil me hihe
To tellen þin vnwitte *and* þi folye
And eke þe falsenesse of þat oþer wreche
As ferfor as my co*n*nynge wil streche
þis chanon was my lorde ȝe wolde wene
Sir oft in faiþe *and* bue þe heuen quene
It was anoþer chanon *and* nouht he
þat can an .C. folde more sotelte
He haþ be-traied folke mony a time
Of his falsnesse it deliteþ me to rime
Euer whan .I. speke of his falsede
For schame of him my cheke waxen rede
Al gates þei be-gon for to glowe
For redenes haue .I. riht nowe wele .I. knowe
In my vẽsage for sinnes diuers
Of Metals whiche ȝe haue herd me reherce
Consumed *and* wastede haþe myne redenesse
Now takeþ hede of my chanons cursednesse
Sir q*uo*d he to þe p*re*ste lat ȝoure man gone
Fo[r] whiksilu*er* þat we is had anone
And latte him bringe vnces tuo or þre
And whan he co*m*meþ als fast schal we se
A wonder þinge whiche ȝe sawe neuer ar þis
Sir q*uo*d þe p*re*ste it schal be done ywisse

He bad his seruant fechen him his þinge.
And he al rede was at his bedynge
And went him for *and* cam anon aʒeine
Wiþ þis whike siluer schortly for to seyne [leaf 165]
And toke þes vnces þre to þe chanone
And he it leide faire *and* wele adoune
And bad þe seruant coles for to bringe
þat he anone myht go to his wirkeinge
þe coles riht anone weren yfet
And þis chanon toke oute a croselet
Of his bosome *and* schewe it þe prest
This quod he whiche þat þou sest
Take in þine hande *and* put þi self þere inne
Of þis whike siluere an vnce *and* here beginne
In þe name of crist to wex a philosofer
Ther bene ful fewe whiche þat .I. wil profer
To schewe hem þus muche of my science
For ʒe schol seen here be experience
þat þis siluer .I. wil mortifie
Riht in ʒoure siht anone wiþ oute lye
And maak it as god siluer *and* als fyne
As þer is any in ʒoure porce or in myne
And þerto als doulcete *and* malliable
And elles holde me fals *and* vn-able
Amonge folk euer to appere
.I. haue a pouder here. it cost me dere
Schal make al good for it is cause of al
Mi konnynge whiche. þat .I. ʒowe schew shall
Voideþ ʒoure man *and* lat him be þer oute
An schette þe dore whiles we bene aboute
Oure priuete þat no man vs aspie
Whiles we werken in þis philosophie
Al as he bad ffulfilled was in dede
þis ilke seruant anon riht oute ʒede
And his maister schett þe dore anone
An to her laboure spedely þei gone

þes *pr*este att þis cursed chanoñs bydynge
Vpon þe fire a-none sett þis þinge
And blewe þe fire *and* besid him ful fast
And þis chanon in to-þis croselett cast
A pouder note .I. wher-of it was
.y.-maade of chalk oþere of glas
Or sum whatte elles was nouht worþe a flie
To blinde wiþe þis preste *and* badd him hihe
þes coles for to cowchen al aboue
This Croslet for in token þat .I. þe loue [leaf 165, back]
Q*uo*d þis chanoñ þine hondes tuoo
Schal worche al þinge whiche as schal be doo
Gremercy q*uo*d þe p*r*este *and* was ful gladde
And couched coles as þe Chanon badd
And whiles he besy was þis fendely wrecche
þis fals chanoñ þe foule fende him fecche
Oute of his bosom toke a bechen cole
In whiche ful sotelly was maad an hole
And þereinne pitt was of siluer limaile
An vnce *and* stopped was wiþ oute faile
This hole wiþ wex to kepe the limal inne
An[d] vnderstondeþ þat þis false gynne
Was not maade þ*er*e bot it was maade to fore
And oþer þinges .I. schal tel more
Here after warde whiche þat he wiþ him brouht
Ar he com þere to begile him he þouht
And so he dide are he went a twynne
Til he had tornyd him kouþe he not blinne
It dulleþ me whan þat .I. of him speke
On his fals hede faine wolde .I. me awreke
If .I. wist howe bot he is here *and* þere
He is so variant he bideþ no where
Bo[t] takeþ hede nowe sires for goddes loue
He toke his cole of whiche .I. spak aboue
And in his honde he bare it p*r*iuely
And whiles þe p*r*iste couched besili

þe coles as .I. tolde 3ow er þis
þis Chanon seide frende 3e done amys
þis is nouht couched as it ouht to be
Bot sone .I. schal amend it *quod* he
Nowe lat me medel þere-wiþ bot a while
For of 3oue haue .I. pete be sein gile
3e been riht hote .I. see wele how 3e swete
Haue here a cloþe *and* wype aweie þe wete
And whan þe prest him wyped haas
This Chanon toke his cole .I. schrewe his face
And leid it vpon abouen þe Midward
Of þe croselett. And blewe wele afterward
Til þat þe Coles gan fast berne
Now 3if vs drinke *quod* þe Chanone þann
Als swiþe al schal be wele .I. vndertake.
Sit we doune *and* lete vs mery make [leaf 166]
And whann þe chanons bechen cole
Was brente al þe limal oute of the hole
Into þe croselet anone fel adoune
And so it mot nedes be resoune
Seþþen it so heuen aboue couched was
Bot *þere*-of wist no þinge þe *preste* alas
He demed al þe coles ylyche goode
For of þe sleyht no þinge he vnderstode
And whan þis Alkamistrie sauhe is time
Riseþ vp *sir prieste and* stonde be me
And for .I. wote Ingote haue 3e none
Goþe walkeþ forþe *and* bringeþ a chalke stone
For .I. wil make it of þe same schappe
þat is an Ingote if .I. maie haue happe
And bringe wiþe 3owe a bol or a panne
Ful of water *and* 3e schal see þanne
How þat oure besines schal happe *and* preue
And 3it for 3e schal haue no mysbeleue
Ne wronge conseite of me in 3oure absence
I wil nouht bue oute of 3oure *presence*

Bot go wiþ 3owe *and* com wiþ 3ow ageine
The chamber dore schortly to seine
Thei opened *and* schette *and* went forþe her waie
And forþe wiþ hem þei caried þe keie
And comen a3eine wiþ outen any delaye
What scholde .I. tary al þe longe daie
He toke · þe chalke *and* schoppe it in þat wise
Of an Ingote as .I. schal 3owe deuise
.I. seye he tok out of his owen sleue
A cheyne of siluer. yuel mot'he cheue
Whiche þat was bot an vnce of wheyht
And takeþ hede nowe of his cursede sleyht
He schop his Ingote in lengeþ *and* in brede
Of þe cheyne wiþ outen any drede
So slely þat þe *preste* it nouht aspide
And in his sleue a3eine he gan it hide
An[d] frome þe fire toke vp his matier
And in to þe yngote it putte wiþ meri chere
And in to þe water vessel he it kest
Whan þat him lust *and* badde þe *preste* as fast
Loke what *pere* is put in þine honde *and* grope
Thou schalte finde þer siluer as .I. hope [leaf 166, back]
What deuel of hel scholde it elles be
Chaueynge of siluer silue is *par*de
He putte in his honde *and* tok vp a teyne
Off siluer fyne *and* glad in euery veine
Was þis *pr*iste whan he sauhe þat it was so
Goddes blissinge *and* his moders also
And al halowes haue 3é *sir* Chanon
Seid þe *preste and* .I. here Malisoñ
Bot and 3e vouche sauf to teche me
This noble craft *and* þis soteltie
.I. wil be 3oures in al þat euer .I. maie
Quod þe chanone 3it wil .I. make asaie
þe secunde time þat 3e mowe take hede
And bee experte of þis *and* in 3oure nede

1217 *1221* *1225* 1229 1233 1237 1241 1245 1249

Anoþer daie in Mine absence
This discipline *and* þis crafte science
Lat take anoþer vnce q*uod* he þo
Of whiche siluer wiþþe outen wordes moo
And do þ*er*wiþ as ȝe haue done ar þis
Wyþe þat o*pere* whiche þat nowe silu*ere* is
This p*reste* him besieþ in al þat he can
To done as þis chanone þis cursed man
Co*m*mandeþ him. and fast blewe þe fire
For to come to þeffette of his desire
And þis chanon riht in þe mene while
Al redi was þis p*reste* oft to begile
And for a countenance in his honde bare
An holowe stikke take hede *and* be ware
In þe ende of whiche an vnce *and* no more
Of siluer lymal put was al be-fore
Was in his coule *and* stopped wiþ wax wele
for to kepe inne his lymal euereydele
And while þis p*reste* was *in* his besinesse
This chanon wiþ his stike gan him dresse
To him a-none *and* his pouder kast inne
As he dide ere þe deuel out of his kinne
Him torne .I. praie to god for his false-hede
For he was eu*er* fals in worde *and* dede
And wiþ his stikke a-boue þe croselett
That was ordeygned wiþ þat fals gett
He stireþ þe coles til relent gan
The wex aȝeine þe fire as eu*er*y man [leaf 107]
Bot it a fole be{ wote wele *and* mot nede
And al þat in þe hole was oute ȝede
And in to þe croselet hastely it fel
þe p*reste* supposed nouht bot wele
Bot busid him fast *and* was wonder feyne
Supposinge nouht bot treuþe soþe to seine
He was so glad .I. can nouht expresse
In no man*ere* his merþe *and* his gladnesse

And to þe Chanon he *pro*ferd eft sone
Body *and* goode 3e q*uod* þe chanone sone
þouhe poure .I. be crafte þou schalt me finde
.I. warne þe 3it is þ*er*e more be-hinde
Is þ*er*e any coper here inne seide he
3e s*ir* q*uod* þe p*re*ste .I. troue þ*er*e be
Elles go by sum *and* þat aswyþe
Nowe s*ir* go for þi waie *and* hyhe þe
And went his waie *and* wiþ his cop*er* he came
And þis chanon in his hode it name
And of þat coper weyde oute bot an vnce
Al to simple is my tonge to p*ro*nounce
His mostre and his witte þe doublenesse
Of þis chanone rote of Corsednesse
He semed frendly to him þat knewe him nouht
Bot he was fendely bope in werke *and* þouht
It wrieþ me to telle of his falsenesse
And neþeles 3it wil .I. it expresse
To þat entent þat men maie be war þ*er*e bye
And for none oþer cause treulye
He putte þis vnce of coper in to þe crosellet
And on þe fire also swiþe he haþe it sett
And kest in pouder *and* maade þe preste to blowe
And in his worcheinge for to stoupe lowe
As he dide erst *and* al was bott a Iape
Riht as him lust þe p*re*ste he maade his ape
And afterwarde in to þe Ingote he it kest
And in þe panne put it att þe last
Of water *and* inne he put his owen honde
And in his sleue as 3e beforne honde
Herde me teH he had a siluer cheyne
He slyhely toke is oute þis cursed hyne
Vnwetinge þis p*re*ste of his fals craft
And in þe pannes bothom he haþ it left [leaf 167, back]
And in þe water rumbleþ to *and* fro
And wonder p*ri*uely toke it vpp also

þe coper teyne nouh[t] knoweinge þe preste
And hid it *and* hent him be þe breste
And to him spak *and* þus seide he in his game
Stoupeþe adoune be god ȝe be to blame
Helpeþe me nowe as .I. dide ȝowe whilere
Put in ȝoure honde *and* loke what is þere
This preste toke vppe þis siluer teyne anone
And þan seide þe Chanon latt vs gone
Wiþ þes þre teynes whiche þat we haue wrouht
To summe gōlsmyþe and wit if it be owhte
For be my feiþe .I. nolde for myne hode
Bot if þei were siluer fine *and* gode
And þat as swyþe proued schal he be
Vnto þe goldsmythe wiþ þes teynes þre
Thei wente *and* put þes teynes in assaie
To fire *and* hamur myht no man seie naie
Bot þei were as hem ouht to be
þis soted preste who was gladder þan he
Was neuer bridde gladder aȝeines þe daie
Ne nyhtgale in þe seson of maie
Was neuere none þat lust better to singe
Ne lady lustier in Carolynge
And for to speke *and* loue *and* wommanhede
Ne knyhte in armes done an hardy dede
To stonden in grace of his ladie dere
þan hadde þis preste þis craft to lere
And to þe chanon þus he spak *and* seide
For þe loue of god þat for us al deyde
And as .I. maye deserue it vn to ȝowe
What schal þis receyte cost telleþ nowe
Be oure lady quod þis chanon. it is dere
.I. warne ȝowe bot saue .I. *and* a frere
In. yngelonde þere can no man it make
No fors quod he now *sir* for goddes saake
What schal .I. paye tel me .I. þe preye
.I.-wys quod he it is ful dere .I. seie.

Sire att o worde if þat þe list it haue
3e schal paie fourte[1] pounde so god me saue [[1] *a later* þ *added*]
And ne were þe frindeschippe þat 3e dide ar þis.
To me 3e scholde paie more ywys [leaf 168]
This preste þe sum*m*e of .xl. pounde anone
Of nobles fette. & toke hem eu*e*rychone
To þis Chanon for þis ilke receit
Al his worcheinge was fraude *and* deceite
Sire p*re*ste he seide .I. kepe for haue no los
Of my craft for .I. wolde it were kepped clos
And as 3e louepe me kepep it secre
For and men knewe al my subtilite
Be god men wolde haue so grete envie
To me be cause of my philosophie
.I. scholde be dede þ*er*e were none o þ*er*e weye
God it for-bede q*uo*d þe preste what 3e seye
3it had .I. leuer spende aH þe goode
Whiche þat .I. haue *and* elles wex .I. woode
þan þat 3e scholde faH in suche meschife
For 3oure goode wil s*ir*e haue 3e riht good prefe
Q*uo*d þe chanone wele gr*aun*t mercie
He went his waye *and* neu*er* þe priste him sihe
After þat daie *and* whan þat þis p*re*ste schold
Maken assay. att suche time as he wolde
Of þis receyte fare wele it wil nouht be
Lo þus be-Iaped and begiled was he
Thus makep he his introducc*i*on
To bringe folke to hire destrucc*i*on
¶ Considerep sires howe þat mychc astate
Be-twex men *and* golde þar is debate
So ferforþe þat vnnepes þ*er*e is one
This multepliynge blindep so mony one
þat in good feiþe I trowe þat it be
þe cause grettest of al subtilite
This Phylosophres speken so mystelye
In þis craft þat men can nouht com þer bye

For any witte þat men haue nowe a dayes
þei maie wele Chitter *and* ganglen as done þes Iayes 1397
And in her termes sett lust *and* peine
Bot to here purpos schal þei neuere atteyne
A man may lyhtlyche leren if he haue ouhte
To multeply *and* bringe his good to nouht 1401
Lo suche a locre is in þis lusty game
A mannes merþe it wil torne al to gram
And empte also grete *and* heuy porces
And make folke to purchasen curses [leaf 168, back]
Of hem þat han þere-to here good ylente 1406
O fy. for schame þei þat haue be brente
Alas Can þei nouht flye þe fires hete
3e þat it vsen .I. rede 3owe it lete 1409
Lest 3e lees al · for bet þan neuer is late
Neuer to þriue were to longe a date
þouhe 3e prolle aye 3e schol it neuer finde
3e bene als bolde as is bayer þe blynde 1413
þat blunderþ forþ *and* peril casteþ he none
He is as bolde to renne a3eine a stone
As for to go be side in þe weie
So fare 3e þat multeplie .I. seie 1417
If þat oure y3en kan not seen a riht
Lookeþ þat 3oure mynde lake nouht 3oure siht
For þouhe 3e loo|e neuere so brode *and* stare
3e schol nouht wynne a myte of þat chaffare 1421
Bot wasten al þat 3e maie rappe *and* rinne
Wiþ-drawe þe fire lest it so fast birne
Medeleþe no more wiþ þat art .I. mene
For 3if 3e done 3oure þreft. is gone ful clene 1425
And riht als swiþe .I. wil 3oue to here
What þat þe Philosophres seine in þis matiere
Lo þus seiþe Arnalde of þe Newtoune
As his rosarie makeþ Mencioune 1429
He seiþe riht þus wiþ outen any . lye
There maie no man Mercuri Mortifie

Bot if it be wiþ his broþer knowelecheinge
Howe þat he wiche þat first seide þis þinge 1443
Of philosophres fader was Ermes
Seiþe howe þat þe dragon douteles
Ne deyeþ not bot if he he sleine
Wiþ is broþer *and* þat is for to seyne 1447
Be þe dragon *Mercurie* *and* none oþer
He vnderstode þat bromston were is broþere
þat oute of sol *and* luna were ydrawe
And þerfore seide he take hede to my sawe 1451
Latt no man besy hime þis arte for to seche
Bot he þat þe entencion *and* speche
Of Philosofres vnderstonde kan
And if he doo he is a lewde man *1455*
For þis science *and* þis connynge *quod* he.
Is of secre of secretees parde [leaf 169]
Also þere was a disciple of Plato
þat on a time seide his maister to *1459*
As his booke sonier wil bere wittnesse
And þis was his demaunde in soþefastnesse
Tel me þe name of þe priue stoone
And plato ansewerd vnto him anone 1463
Take þat titanus men name
Whiche is þat quod he Magnesia is þe same
Seide Plato: ȝe sire *and* es it þus
þis is ignotum per ignocius 1467
What is magnesia good sire .I. preie
It is a water þat is maad .I. seie
Of elementes foure quod plato
Tel me þe roches good sir quod he þo 1471
Of þat water if it be ȝoure wiłł
Naie Naie quod plato certeine þat .I. nyłł
The philosophres were sworne euerychoñ
þat þei scholde discouere it to no moñ 1475
Ne in no booke it write in no manere
For vnto eriste it is so leue *and* dere

þat he wil nouȝt þat it discouerd be
Bot where so it likeþ to his deite
Man to enspire *and* eke to defende
Whome þat him lykeþ lo þis is þe ende
That conclude .I. þus seþen þat god of heuen
Ne wil not þat þe philo[so]fres neven
Howe þat a man schal com vn-to þis stone
.I. rede as for þe beste latt it gone
For who so makeþ god his aduersarie
As for to worche any þinge in contrarye
Vnto his wil certes neuer schal he þriue
Thouhe þat he multiplie terme of his liue
And þere a pointe for endid is my tale
God sende euery trewman bote of his bale
Explicit fabula.

GROUP H. FRAGMENT IX.

§ 1. THE MANCIPLE'S HEAD-LINK.

LANSDOWNE MS.

[*on leaf* 225] **Incipit *p*rologu*s* Mancipij.**

WEte ȝe nouht where þere stant a litel toune
Whiche þat cleped is Bobe•vp & doune
Vnder þe blene in Cante*r*bury weye
Ther gan oure Oste for to Iape & pleye.
And seid sires ywisse done is in þe myre
Is þe*re* no man for p*ra*yer ne for hire
þat wil awake oure felawe be-hinde
A þef myht him lyhtly Robbe & bynde
Se howe he nappeþ for kokes bones
As he wald fal fro his hors att ones
Is þat a koce of Londoñ wiþ meschau*n*ce
Do him com ford he knoweþ his penau*n*ce
For he schaH tel a tale be my feye
Al þouhe it be not worþ a botel heye
Awake þou koce q*uo*d he q*uo*d ȝif þe sorowe [leaf 225, back]
What eyleþ þe to slepe so be þe morwe
Hast þou had flene al nyht or ert þou dronke
Or hast þou wiþ sum qwene al nyht y-swonke
So þat þou maist nouht holde vp þine hede
This koc þat was ful pale & no þinge rede
Saide oure oste so god my soule blisse
As þe*re* is fal on me suche an heuynesse
.I. note whi me were leuer slepe
þat þe best galon wyne in chepe

Wele quod þe Manciple if it maie done ese
To þe sire koke: & to no wight displese
Whicho þat here rideþ in þis compaignye
And þat oure Oste wil of his curtesye
.I. wil as nowe excuse þe of þin tale
For in good feiþe þi vesage is ful pale
þin eyȝen dasoweþe soþely as me þenkeþ
And wele .I. wote þi breþe foule stinkeþ
þat scheweþ wele þou ert nouht wele disposed
Of me certeyne þou schalt not bene yglosed
See howe goþe þis dronken wight
As þouhe he wold vs swelowe anone riht
Halde close þi mouþe man be þi fader kinne
The deuel of hel sett his fote þere inne
This cursede breþe wil enfect us al
Fy stynkinge swyne fy foule motte þe faH
Takeþ hede sire of þis lusty manne
Now swete sire wil ȝe iust att þe fanne
Ther-to me þinkeþ ȝe be wel yschape
I trowe þat ȝe haue dronken wyne ape
And þat is whan men pley wiþ a strawe
And wiþ þis speke þe koce wex al wrawe
And oñ þe Manciple gan he nodde fast
For lak of speche & doune þe hors him cast
Where as he laye til men him vp toke
This was þe faire cheuache of a coke
Alas he ne hadd hold him be his ladel
And er þat he aȝeine were in his sadel
þere was grete schoueinge to & fro
To lift him vp & muche care & woo
So vnwelde was þi cely palled gost
And to þe Mancyple þan spak oure Ost
Be cause þat drinke haþe dominacione [leaf 226]
Vpon þis man be my saluacione
.I. trowe fill lewdly he wolde tel his tale
For were it wyne or olde or moyste ale

That he haþ dronke he spekeþ so in his nose
And fneseþ fast & eke he haþe þe pose
He also to done more þan .I.-nouhe
To kepen him & his capel oute of þe slowhe
And if he fal fro his Capel eft sone
þān schal we al haue. ynouhe to done
In liftynge vp his hevy dronken cors
Tel on þi tale. of him maake .I. no force
Bot ȝitte Maunciple in feiþe þou ert to nyce
Thus openly to reproue him of his vice
Anoþere daie he wil peraduenture'
Recleyme þe & bringe þe to luyre
.I. mene he speke wiłł of smale þinges
And for to speke att þine rekenynges
þat were nouht honest þouhe it cam to preue
No quod þe Manciple þat were a grete meschef
So myht he bringe me in to þe snare
ȝit hadde I leuer pay. for þe Mare
Whiche he rideþ oñ þan he schold wiþ me strive
.I. wil nouht wreþþe him so mot .I. þriue
þat att .I. spak .I. saide it in my bourde
And wyte ȝe wele þat .I. haue here in a gourde
A drauht of wyne. ȝe of a rype grape
And riht anone ȝe scholne se a good Iape
This koce schal drink þer-of if .I. maye
Vpon peine of my lif he wil not sey neye
And certanly to tellen as it was
Of þis vessel þe koce drank fast alas
Whate nedeþ it he dranke. ynowhe aforne
And whan he had poped in his horne
And to þe manciple he toke þe gourde aȝeine
And of þat drink þe koc was wonder feyne
And þonked him in suche wise as he couþe
þan gañ oure oste waxen wonder louþe
And seide .I. see wele it is necessarie
Wher þat we gone drinke wiþ vs to carye

For þat wil torne Rankoure & disese 97
To accord & loue & mony worde to pese s
O. Bachus blissed be þin name [leaf 226, back]
þat so can turne ernest in to game 100
Worschipe & þonke be to þi deite
Of þat Matier gete ȝe no more of me
Tel oñ þou Manciple .I. þe preie
Sires q*uo*d he nowe herkeneþ what .I. seye 104
Explicit p*rolog*us.

Incipit fabula Mancipij.

WHan phebus dwelled here in þis erþe adoune
As olde bokes makeþ mencioune
He was þe most lusti bacheller
Of al þis werlde & eke þe best archer
He slowe phiton þe serpent as he leye
Slepeinge a-ʒeine sonne vpon a daie
And mony anoþere worþe noble dede
He wiþ his bowe brouht as men mowe rede
Pleynge he couþe of euery mynstralcye
And singen þat it was a melodye
To heren of his clere voice þe soune
Certes þe kinge of Thebes amphione
þat wiþ his singeinge walled þat Cite
Couþe neuer singen half so wele as he
Therto he was þe semelest mañ
þat is or was seþþe þe werlde be-ganne
Whatt nedeþ it his fetures for to discryue
For in þis werld was none so faire on lyue
He was þer-wiþ fulfilled of gentillesse
Of honour & of parfite worþinesse
þis Phebus þat was floure ob Bachellarie
As wele in fredam as in Cheualrye
For disport in signe eke of victorie
Of Pheton so as telleþ vs þe storie
Was worþi to beren in his honde a bowe
Now hadde þis Phebus in his hous a crowe
Whiche in cage he fostred moni a daie
And tauht it speke as men techeþ a iaie

White was þis crowe as is a snowe white swanne
And counterfede þe speche of euery manne
He couþe whān he schold tel a tale
þere wiþ in al þis werlde no nyhtinggale
Ne couþe be an hundreþ þousand dele
Singen so wonderli mery & wele
Nowe hadde þis Phebus in his hous a wif [leaf 227]
Whiche þat he loued more þan his owen lif
And nyht & daie dide euer his diligence
Hire for to plese & done hire reuerence
Saue onely if þe soþe þat .I. schal seye
Ielowse he was & wolde haue kepped hire feyne
For him were loþe Iaped for to be
And so euery whiht in suche degre
Bot al for nouht for it a-vaileþ nouht
A good wif þat is clene of werke & þouht
Schold not be kepped in none awaite certeine
And trewly þe labour is in veyne
To kepe a schrewe for it wil nouht be
þis holde .I. for a verraie nycete
To spiH a labour for to kepe wives
Thus writen olde clerkes in her lyues
Bot nowe to purpos as .I. first begañ
þis worþi phebus doþ al þat he cañ
To plesen hire weneinge be suche plesance
And for his manhode & his gouernance
þat noman schold haue put him fro hire grace
Bot god it wote þer maie noman enbrace
As to discryue a þinge whiche þat nature
Haþe naturelly sette in a creature
Tak any birde & put it in a kage
And do al þine entente & þi Corage
To foster it tendurli wiþ mete & drinke
Of al Deynteþes þou canst be-þinke
And kepe it as clenly as þou maie
Al-þou-he his cage of golde be neuere so gaie

3it haþ þis berde be twenti þousande folde
Leuer in a forest þat is wilde & colde
gone ete wermes & suche wrechednesse
For euer þis birde wil done his besinesse
To ascape oute of his cage whan he maie
His liberte þe birde desireþ aie
Lat take a katte & foster him wele wiþ melke
And tendre flessche & make his couche of selke
And late him sene a mouse go by þe waH
And anone he weyueþ melke flesche & aH
And euery deynte þat is in þat house
Suche appetite haþ he to ete a mouse
Lo he[re] haþ lust his dampnacione
And appetite flemeþ discrecione [leaf 227, back]
As þe wolfe haþe also a veleyns kinde
þe lewdest wolf þat sche maie finde
Or lewedest of Reputacione þat wiH sche take
In time whan liir list to haue a maake
Al þes ensamples speke .I. be þis men
þat bien vntrewe & no þinge be wemmen
For men haue euere a lykerous appetite
On lower þink to performe her delite
þan on here wives bien þei neuer so faire
Ne neuere so trewe ne so debonaire
Flesche is so new fangul wiþ meschance
That we ne kunne in noþinge haue plesaunce
þat sownet in to vertew any while
This Phebus whiche þat þouht vpon no gile
Deceyved was for al his Iolyte
For under him a noþere hadde sche
A man of litel Reputacioñe
Not worþe to Phebus in comparaciõne
þe more harme is it happeþe oft soo
Of whiche þere commeþ muche harme & wo.
And so be-fel whan Phebus was absent
His wif anone haþ for hire lemman sent

Here lemman sertes þis is a knauysche speche
Forȝeuen it me & þat .I. ȝow beseche
The wise plauto seiþ as ȝe maie rede
The worde mot nede accorde wiþ þe dede
If men schal tel properly a þinge
The wordé mot Cosine be to þe worcheinge
.I. am a bustuse man riht þus seie .I.
There is no difference treuly
Be-twex a wif þat is of hihe degre
If of hir body dishonest sche be
And a pouerer wenche oþere þan þis
If it so be þei werken boþe amys
Botte þat þe gentil is in astatę aboue
Sche schal be cleped his ladi as in loue
And for þat toþer is a p[o]uere womman
Sche schal be cleped his wenche or his lemman
And god it woote myne owen dere broþere
Men leyþe þe tone as lowe as lyþe þat oþerę
Riht so be-twyx a titles tirānt
And an owtelawe & a þefe errant [leaf 228]
þe sam .I. seie þere is no difference
To Alisander was tolde þis sentence
þat for þe terant is of gretter myht
Be fors of meyne to sle doune riht
And birne hous & home and maken al pleyne
Lo þerefore he is clepe a Capiteigne
And for þe outelawe haþe bot smal menȝe
And may nouht do so grete an harme as he
Ne bringe a contre to so grete meschefe
Men klepen him an outelawe or elles an þef
Bot for .I. am a man not texed wele
.I. wil note tel of titus neuer a dele
.I. wil go to my tale as .I. beganne
Whan Phebus wif hadde sent for hir lemman
Anone þei wrouht al her lust volage
þis white crowe þat honge aye in þe cage

Be-helde her werke & seide neuere a worde
And whan þat home was commen phebus þe lorde
This Crowe sange kokkow kokkowe cokkowe
What birde quod Phebus what songe singes þou
Ne were þow wonte so merilye to singe
þat to myne herte it was a reioysinge
To here þi voice alace what songe is þis
Be god quod he .I. singe nouht amys
Phebus quod he for al þi worþinesse
For al þi beute and þi gentillesse
For al þi songe & al þi Minstralcye
For al þi wayteinge blered is þine eye
Wiþ one of luytel reputacioñ
Nouht worþ to þe as in comparisoñ
The mountance of a gnate so mot [I] priue
For on þi bedde þi wif .I. sawe him swyue
What wile ȝe more þe crowe anone him tolde
Be sadde tokenes & be wordes bolde
Howe þat his wif hadde done her lycherie
Him to grete schame & to grete velanye
And tolde him oft he sawe it wiþ his eyȝen
This Phebus gan awaiwarde for to wrien
Him þouht his sorweful herte a brast in tuo
His bowe he bente & sette þerinne a floo
And in his .Ire þan haþe he his wif sleyne
This es þe effecte þere is nomore to seine [leaf 228, back]
For sorwe of whiche he brak his mynstralcy
Bothe harpe & Lute getern & sautrie
And eke he brak his arwes & his bowe
And after þat þus spake he to þe crowe
Traytour quod he wiþ tonge of scorpione
þou hast me brouht to my confusione
Alas þat .I. was wrouht whi nere .I. dede
O dere wif o Iemme of lustihede
That were to me so sadde & eke so trewe
Nowe liest þou dede wiþ face pale of hewe

Ful giltles þat dorst [I] swere .I.-wys
O rachel hounde to done so foule amys
O trouble witte o yre recheles
þat vnavised smytest giltles
O wanne trust ful of fals suspeccioñ
Where was þi witte and þi discrecione
Of eu*e*ry mair be war of rechelnesse
Ne trowe no þinge wiþ outen stronge wittenesse
Smyte nouhte to sone ar þat þou wyt why
Ande be auisede wele & soburlye
Or ȝe do any execucioñ
Vpon ȝoure ire for suspecciõn
Alas a þousand folke haue Rachel ire
Fully for-done or brouht hem in þe myre
Alas for sorwe .I. wil my self sle
And to þe crowe o fals þef seide he
.I. wil þe qwite anone þi fals tale
þow songe whilom like a nyht gale
Nowe schalt þou fals þef þi songe for-gone
Eke þine white feþers eu*e*rychon
Ne neu*e*r in al þi lif schal þu speke
þus schal men on a traitur buen y-wreke
þou & þin hofsp*r*inge eu*e*re schal be blake
Ne neu*e*re swete noise schal ȝe maake
Bot eu*e*re Crie a-ȝeine tempest & reyne
In tokeneynge þat þoruhe þe my wif is sleyne
And to þe crowe he sterte & þat anone
And pullede his white feþers eu*e*rychone
And maad him blake & raft him al his songe
And eke his speche & oute at þe dore him slonge
Vn-to þe deuel whiche .I. him be-take
And for þis cas bene al crowes blake [leaf 229]
Lordeinges be þis ensample .I. ȝowe preye
Beþe ware & takeþ kepe what þat ȝe seye
Ne telleþ neu*e*re no man in ȝoure lif
Howe þat anoþ*e*re man haþ swyved his wif

He wil ȝowe hate mortally certeyne
Daun Salomon as wise clerkes seyne
Techeþ a man to kepe his tunge wele
Bot as .I. seide .I. am nouht text wele
Bot naþeles þus tauht me my dame
My sonne þinke on þe crowe a goddes name
My sonne kepe wele þi tonge & kepe þi frende
A wikked tonge is wers þan a fende
My sonne frome a fende men may hem blisse
My sonne god of his endles goodenesse
Walled a tonge wiþ teþe & lippes eke
For man schold him a-vise what he speke
Mi sonne ful oft for to mechel speche
Haþe mony a man be spilt as clerkes teche
Bot for litel speche avisily
Is no man schent to spek generaly
My sonne þi tonge scholdest þou restreine
Att alle time bot whan þou dost þi peine
To speke of god in honour & preyere
The first vertue sonne if þou wilt lere
Is to restreyne & kepe wel þi tonge
þus leren childern whan þe be ȝonge
My sonne of Mechel spekeinge yuel avisede
þere lasse spekeinge had .I.-nowhe suffised
Comeþ mochel harme þus was me tolde & tauht
In muchel specheþ sinne wanteþ nouht
Wostowe where-of a rachel tonge serueþ
Riht as swerde for-kotteþ & for-kerueþ
And arm a tuo. my dere sone riht so
A tunge kutteþ frenschep al a two
A Iangler is to god abhominable
Rede Salomon so wyse & honurable
Rede dauid & his psalmys rede seneke
My sone speke nouht bot wiþ þine hede þu bekke
Dissimule as þou were def if þat þou here
A Iangelere speketh of perilous matere

The flemynge seiþe & lerne ȝif þe lest
þat litel Iangelinge causeþ mechel rest [leaf 229, back]
My sone if þou no wykked worde hast seide
þe þar nouht drede for to be bewreide
Bot he þat haþ my-saide .I. dare wele seine
He may be no weye clepe his worde aȝeine
þinge þat is seide is seide & forþ it goþe
þouhe him repent or be him neuer so loþe
He is his þral to whome þat he haþ seide
A tale of whiche he is nowe yuel apaide
My sone be war & be none auctor newe
Of Tyþinges whe*þere* þei be fals or trewe
Where so þou co*mm*e amonges hihe or lowe
Kepe wele þi tonge & þinke vpon þe crowe
Explicit ffabula Mancipij .

GROUP I. FRAGMENT X.

§1. THE BLANK-PARSON LINK.

[This is really a link between some unwritten Tale and the Parson's.—It has been made into the Manciple-Parson Link (or Yeoman-Parson by the Christ-Church MS, by Chaucer's copiers, though not meant for it.]

LANSDOWNE MS.

[*on leaf* 299, *back*]

Incipit *pro*logus Rectoris.

BE þat þe manciple hadde his tale endede
The sonne fro þe souþe side is descendede
So lowe þat he was nouht to my siht,
Degrees nyne & twente as of heiht
Than of þe clokke it was so as .I. gesse
For a .xj. fote a lite more or lesse
My schadowe was at þilke time as þere
Of fusche fete as myn lengeþ *par*tide were
In sex foote equale of *pro*porocione
þere-wiþe þe mones exaltacione
.I. mene libra alweye gan ascende
As we were entrynge att þe þropes ende
For wiþ oure oste as he was wonte to guye
As in þis caas oure Ioly compaignye
Seide in þis wise lordeinges eu*e*rychone
Now lakkeþ vs no tale more þan one
Fulfilled is my sentence & my degre
Who wil nowe tel a tale latt see
Almost ffulfilled is myne ordenaunce
.I. praie to god . so ȝif him riht good chaunce
þat Telliþ þis tale to vs lustely .
Sir prist q*uo*d he ert þou a vicarie
Or ert þou a pe*r*son sei soþe be þi feye
Be what þowe be ne breke þou nouht oure pleye

For euery man saue þoue haþe told his tale
vnbukel and schewe vs what is in þi m̃ale
For treuly me þinkeþ þe þi chere
Thow scholdest knyht vpe wele a grete matier
Tel vs a fable anone for kokkes bones [leaf 230]
þis persone answerd al att ones
þou getest fable none ytolde for me
For Poule þat writeþ vn-to Timothe
Repreueþ hem þat veyfen soþefastnesse
And tellen fabels & suche wrechednesse
Whi shold .I. schewen draf out of my fest
Whan .I. may schewe whete if þat me lest
For whiche .I. saie if þat þe lust to here
Moralite & vertuous Matiere
And þan þat ȝe wil ȝef me audience
.I. wil ful feyne att cristes Reuerence
Done ȝowe plesance lefful as .I. canne
Bot trusteþ wele .I. am a soþerne manne
.I. can nouht geste. Rom Ram. Ruf be my lettre
Ne god wote Rime holde .I. bot litel better
And þerefor if ȝowe luste .I. wil not glose
.I. wil ȝowe tel a mere tale in prose
To knyte vp al þis fest & maake an ende
An ihesu for his grace witte me sende
To schew ȝow þe waye in þis viage
Of þilke parfite gloriouse pilgrenage
þat hiht Ierusalem Celestiall
And if ȝe vouche saue a-none ȝe schall
Beginne vpon my tale for whiche .I. preye
Tell ȝoure avise .I. cañ no better seye
Bot naþeles þis Meditacioñe
.I. put it alweie in correctione
Of clerkes for .I. am nouht text wele
I take bot þe sentence trusteþ wele
Thare-fore .I. maake a prodestacione
þat .I. wil stant to correctione

Vpon þis worde we haue assented sone 61
For as it semed it was for to done
To enden in som vertuous sentence
And for to ȝeue him space & audience 64
And badde oure Oste he scholde to him seye
þat al we to tell*e* his tale we preye
Oure Oste hadde þe wordes for vs aƚƚ
Sír*e* preste q*uo*d he faire mote ȝow faƚƚ 68
Saye what ȝowe lust & we schal gladly here
And wiþ þat worde he seide in þis manere.
Telleþ quod he ȝoure Meditacione [leaf 230, back]
Bot hasteþ ȝowe þe sonne wil adoune 72
Beþ fructuous & þat in litel space
And to do wele god send ȝowe his grace 74
Explicit p*ro*hemium.

THE PARSON'S TALE.

A TREATISE ON PENITENCE, IN 3 PARTS:

Part I. On **Penitence**, and its 1st requisite **Contrition (A)** (p. 593—612).
Part II. On its 2nd requisite, **Confession (B)** (p. 612—679).
Part III. On its 3rd requisite, **Satisfaction (C)** (p. 679—684), with the Writer's Leave-taking and Retractations (p. 684-85).

PART I. (p. 593—612).

ON PENITENCE, AND ITS 1ST REQUISITE, CONTRITION.

Proem on Jeremiah vi. 16. The Tale is to be on *Penitence* as a full noble way to lead folk to Christ, and is to treat of

i. 'what is Penitence' (p. 594).
ii. 'whennes it is cleped Penitence'. [*not in the Tale.*]
iii. 'in how manye maneres been the accioums or werkynges of Penitence' (p. 594-5).
iv. 'how many speces ther been of Penitence' (p. 595).
v. 'whiche thynges apertenen and bihouen to Penitence' (p. 595—682: nearly all Parts I and III, and all Part II).
vi. 'whiche thynges destourben Penitence' (at end of Part III, p. 682) (p. 593).

i. **Penitence** defined, by *a.* St Ambrose; *b.* 'som doctour'; *c.* the writer. Its requisites: 1. bewailing of sins; 2. purpose to have shrift, to do satisfaction, never to sin again, to continue in good works (p. 594).

[ii. *not given.*]

iii. The 3 actions of Penitence: 1. Baptism after sin; 2. not to do deadly sin after baptism; 3. not thus to do venial sin (p. 594-95).

iv. The 3 speces or kinds of Penitence: 1. Solemn (to be put out of church, or do open penance); 2. Common (to go naked on pilgrimage); 3. Private (p. 595).

v. The 3 necessities or requisites for Penitence (p. 596—682):
A. Contrition of heart (p. 596—612).
B. Confession of mouth (Part II, p. 612—679).
C. Satisfaction (Part III, p. 679—682).
Penitence avails against 3 things, by which we wrath Christ (p. 595).

A. Contrition is the root of Penitence, whose stem bears branches and leaves of Confession, and fruit of Satisfaction.
Contrition also bears a seed of grace, whose heat draws men to God. (Simile of the child and his nurse's milk.)
Penance is the tree of life (p. 596).
Four Points to be known about Contrition:
1. What it is; 2. the causes that move a man to it; 3. how to be contrite; 4. what it avails the soul (p. 597).
2. The 6 Causes that should move a man to Contrition:
a. Remembrance of Sins (p. 597-8).
b. Whoso does sin is the Thrall of Sin (p. 598-99).
c. Dread of the Day of Doom and the Pains of Hell (p. 599—604). These described: the Doom (p. 599-600); Job's 'lond of mysese and of derknesse' (p. 600-1); the 3 shames in hell against (1) 'Honours, (2) delices, and (3) richesses' (p. 611); poverty in 4 things: no treasure, food, clothing, or friends (p. 602); and no delights of the 5 senses. The pain shall be eternal (p. 603). Hell is orderless (p. 603-4). The 7 causes why the damnd have lost all hope (p. 604).
d. Remembrance of the good works we've left undone, and the loss of the good works done while we were in sin (p. 604-6). Deadly sin wipes out all good works formerly done (p. 605); and no good works can be done in deadly sin (p. 605-6). The new French song, *J'ai tout perdu mon temps* (also quoted in Chaucer's late poem of *Fortune*).

CONTENTS OF PARSON'S TALE. PART II.

e. Remembrance of Christ's suffering for our sins (p. 606). In man's sin, every ordinance is turnd up-so-down (p. 607). For this disorder Christ sufferd (p. 608).

f. The hope of 3 things: 1. Forgiveness of Sins, 2. the Gift of Grace to do well, 3. the Glory of Heaven (p. 609).

3. How to be contrite. Contrition must be universal and total: for sins of thought, for desires against God's law, for wicked words as well as wicked deeds (p. 610). Contrition must be angwishous and continual (p. 609-11).

4. How Contrition helps the soul. It sometimes delivers a man from sin; destroys the prison of hell; cleanses the soul; changes the son of Wrath to the son of Grace (p. 611-12).

PART II (*no.* V. *continued*).

B. CONFESSION (THE 2ND REQUISITE FOR PENITENCE) (p. 612—679).

B. Confession. § 1. (l. 317) 'what is confession' (p. 612).

§ 2. 'whether it oghte nedes be doon or noon' (p. 672-9).

§ 3. 'whiche thynges been couenable to verray Confession' (p. 674-79).

CONFESSION, § 1.

1. 'Confession is verray shewynge of synnes to the preest' (l. 318) (p. 612). We must understand too

a. (l. 321) 'whennes that synnes spryngen' (p. 612—15).

b. 'how they encreessen' (p. 615-16; 672-74).

c. 'whiche they been' (p. 616—672).

1.*a.* Sin sprang from the fall of Adam (p. 612). The legend of Adam and Eve told (p. 613). From Adam we took Original Sin, and were born sons of eternal damnation; but Baptism rescues us; though we keep liability to temptation, or Concupiscence (p. 613-14).

Concupiscence, or the nourishing and occasion of sin. St Paul and St Jerome's temptations (p. 614-15).

1.*b.* How Sin grows in a man. 1. by Concupiscence; 2. Subjection to the Devil; 3. Hesitation; 4. Doing, the Sin becoming Actual (p. 615-16).

1.*c.* Sin is *α.* venial, *β.* deadly (or mortal).

α. 1. Venial Sin defined. It skips into Deadly Sin. (Simile of the drops of water into a vessel's hold drowning the ship;) (p. 616).

β. 1. Deadly Sin defined (p. 617).

α. 2. Of divers small venial sins, hardly thought sins (p. 617-18); eating, drinking, talking, too much; using your wife too much; not visiting the sick (p. 617); talking vanities at church, &c. (p. 618). Cure of venial sins by love to Christ, prayer, confession, good works, receiving the Sacrament, holy-water, &c. (p. 618).

1.*c.* *β.* 2. *The Seven Deadly Sins.* The Chieftains, head and spring, of all other Sins (p. 619).

i. Pride (p. 619-26), and its Remedy (p. 626-8).

ii. Envy (p. 628-30), and its Remedy (p. 630-1).

iii. Ire or Anger (p. 631-42), and its Remedy (p. 642-5).

iv. Accidie or Sloth (Discontent, Ennui) (p. 645-49), and its Remedy (p. 650-1).

v. Avarice or Covetousness (p. 651-7), and its Remedy (p. 657-8).

vi. Gluttony (p. 658-9), and its Remedy (p. 660).

vii. Lechery (p. 660-8), and its Remedy (p. 668-72).

i. PRIDE (p. 619—626). Its 16 (and more) Twigs. 1. Disobedience, 2. Boasting, 3. Hypocrisy, 4. Despite, 5. Arrogance (p. 619), 6. Impudence, 7. Swelling of Heart (rejoicing in harm done), 8. Insolence, 9. Elation, 10. Impatience, 11. Contumacy, 12.

Presumption, 13. Irreverence, 14. Pertinacity, 15. Vainglory, 16. Jangling (chattering).

A private kind of pride (the Host's Wife's and Wife of Bath's[1]), wanting to go to offering first, &c. (p. 620).

Two kinds of Pride, *a.* 'within man's heart', *b.* without; *b.* being the sign of *a*, 'as the gaye leefsel atte Taverne is sign of the wyn that is in the Celer'[2] (p. 620-21), *b.* outside pride.

a. in dear clothing, 1. superfluity of it: its cost, furring, chisel-holes, dragging in the dung, waste of material (p. 621), unfitness for giving to the poor: 2. scantness of it, showing men's privy members, and buttocks (like a she-ape's rump), and the former as half-flayd, in parti-colourd hose[3]. The 'outrageous array of Women' (p. 623).

β. in horses (p. 623), and vicious grooms to tend 'em; plate-harness, &c.

γ. in household: keeping too many retainers or servants, who oppress the poor (p. 624).

δ. in table: not asking the poor to feasts; having burning and ornamented dishes[4]; too costly cups, &c., and too choice minstrelsy (p. 624).

What Pride sins are deadly, and what venial (p. 624).

The Sources of Pride (p. 624): goods of Nature, Fortune, Grace (p. 624). The Folly of Pride in any of these goods of Nature: 'we ben alle of o fader and of o mooder, and . . of o nature'[5]. The general signs of *Gentleness*. (The flies calld 'bees', and their stingless king) (p. 625); 3 gifts of Grace; 3 of Fortune. The brittleness of popular praise[6] (p. 626).

The Remedy against Pride.

Humility or Meekness, and its 3 kinds: in 1. heart, 2. mouth, 3. works. 4 kinds of each of these (p. 626-27).

ii. Envy (p. 627-30): defined by the Philosopher and St Augustine. It springs from Malice (p. 627).

Malice; 2 kinds of: 1. hardness of heart, or recklessness; 2. opposing truth (p. 627).

The 2 kinds of Envy (p. 628): 1. sorrow at other men's prosperity; 2. joy at other men's harm: whence comes

Backbiting; 5 kinds (p. 628): 1. praise with a *but* at the end; 2. turning well-meant things upside down to ill ones; 3. lessening a neighbour's goodness; 4. putting one man above another; 5. glad listening to scandal (p. 628).

Grudging or murmuring (p. 628): 1. against God (p. 629); 2. Murmuring from avarice, 3. from pride, 4. from envy; 5. among Servants, who say 'the Devil's *Paternoster*'; 6. Murmuring from ire or hate: thence, *a.* Bitterness of Heart, *b.* Discord, *c.* Scorning; *d.* Accusing (p. 629); *e.* Malignity (p. 630).

The Remedy against Envy (p. 630-31).

Love of God and one's neighbour. How a man shall love his neighbour. How an enemy is included in the name 'neighbour' (p. 630). 3 Remedies of Love, against 3 deeds of Hate (p. 631). Love is the medicine that casts out the venom of Envy from man's heart (p. 631).

iii. Ire or Anger (p. 631-42), and its 2 kinds: *a.* good Ire or Wrath (p. 632); *b.* wicked Ire, and its 2 kinds: sudden ire, and ire of malice aforethought (p. 632-33).

Three Shrews that forge in the Devil's furnace: Pride, Envy, and Contumely (p. 633).

[1] Melibe-Monk Link, B. § 11; and General Prologue, A.

[2] Chaucer's father no doubt had a sign outside his wine-shop or tavern in Thames Street, London.

[3] The outspoken and somewhat coarse abuse of the new fashions in dress is a great change from Chaucer's admirable Third-Period chaff of the moral short-comings of the monks and friars, &c., in the Prologue and middle Tales. If this is not change of man, it's change of mood.

[4] Chaucer must have seen plenty of these when he was page, valet, and squire.

[5] Compare Chaucer's *Gentleness*, &c. [6] Compare Clerk's Tale, Part VI, st. 135.

Wrath takes away a man's wit and spiritual life (p. 634).
Fruits of Wrath: 1. Hate. 2. War and wrong. 3. Manslaughter, *a.* spiritual; *b.* bodily (p. 634).
a. The 3 kinds of spiritual Manslaughter (3, calld 6 in MSS. p. 634): 1. by Hate. 2. by Backbiting. 3. Giving wicked Counsel, by Fraud (p. 634).
b. bodily Manslaughter: slaying with your tongue, giving orders or counsel to slay a man (p. 634).
Manslaughter in deed: its 4 (that is, 7) kinds (p. 635): 1. by law: a Justice condemning a man to death; 2. justifiable homicide, in defence of one's own life; 3. by misadventure: shooting an arrow, &c.; 4. a woman overlying her child; 5. a man making a woman barren by drinks, &c., killing the fœtus within her, shedding his seed in the wrong place; a woman killing the child in her womb; 6. a woman killing her child (after birth) for shame; 7. a man by lechery or blows killing a fœtus.
(Sixteen) other sins coming from Ire or Anger.
1. blaming or despising God, as hazarders do (Cp. *Pardoner's Tale*) (p. 635); and those who treat of the Sacrament of the altar irreverently (p. 636).
2. Attry anger: making angry false excuses for sin.
3. Swearing, which dismembers Christ (p. 636).
a. Of lawful Swearing, before a Judge: its 3 conditions, and its motives; *b.* God's name and Christ's, not to be taken in vain (p. 637); *c.* swearing for gentility or manliness (p. 638); *d.* swearing suddenly; *e.* of Adjuration and Conjuration by enchanters and necromancers; *f.* of Divination by Dreams, &c.; *g.* of Charms for Wounds and Maladies (p. 638).
4. Lying (p. 638), and its 6 kinds.
5. Flattering. How Flatterers are the Devil's Nurses, his Enchanters and Chaplains (p. 639).
6. Cursing that comes of irous heart: Malison.
7. Chiding and Reproach (p. 640); (specially a chiding wife[1]) (p. 640-41).
8. Scorning (p. 641).
9. Giving wicked Counsel (p. 641).
10. Sowing and making Discord (p. 642).
11. Double tongue (p. 642).
12. Betraying of Counsel (p. 642).
13. Menace.
14. Idle words.
15. Jangling (chattering) (p. 642).
16. Japing (joking) (p. 642-43).
The Remedy against Anger (p. 643-5). Debonairtee and Patience (p. 643). Four kinds of grievances, and their remedies: 1. wicked words, 2. loss of goods, 3. harm of body, 4. outrageous labour (p. 644).
Incentives to Patience. Story of the Philosopher and Child (p. 644-45). Obedience comes from Patience (p. 645).
iv. Accidie, or Sloth (Discontent, Ennui) (p. 645-49), is an enemy to the 3 states of man,—1. innocence (p. 645), 2. prayer (p. 646), 3. grace;—and to one's livelihood. Its 12 bad consequences (p. 646): 1. Sloth (and its remedy); 2. Dread to begin good works (p. 646); 3. Wanhope, or Despair (and its Remedy) (p. 647); 4. Somnolence (p. 648), and 5. Negligence, or 6. Recklessness, and the Remedy for each; 7. Idleness; 8. *Tarditas*, or tarrying before turning to God (p. 649); 9. Lachesse, or giving up a good work begun; 10. Coldness; 11. Undevotion; 12. Worldly sorrow (p. 649).
The Remedy against Accidie (p. 650-51): Fortitude or Strength, and its 5 kinds. 1. Magnanimity[2] or great Courage; 2. Faith or Hope; 3. Assurance; 4. Magnificence; 5. Constancy (p. 651).

[1] Does Chaucer here refer to his former wife?
[2] Miswritten 'Magnificence' in Ellesmere and Lansdowne MSS.

CONTENTS OF PARSON'S TALE. PART II.

v. AVARICE (p. 651-57). The difference between Avarice and Covetousness (p. 651); and between an Idolater and an avaricious man (p. 652). Of Covetousness, and lords' extortion from their bondmen: "humble folk been Cristes freendes" (p. 652-53). The Duty of lords to their thralls or churls. Of those that pillage Holy Church (p. 653-54); lords who plunder the poor are like wolves (p. 654). Of Deceit between Merchant and Merchant (p. 654). Of honest bodily Merchandise (the surplus of one country may be sent to help another) (p. 654). Of spiritual Merchandise, or Simony, and its 2 kinds (p. 655),—thieves that steal Christ's souls get livings (p. 655-56);—Hasardry or Games of Chance (p. 656). Other outcomes of Avarice (p. 656): 1. Lying, 2. Theft (bodily and spiritual) (p. 656-57), 3. False Witness, 4. False Oaths (p. 657).

The Remedy against Avarice (p. 657): Mercy and Pity, and reasonable Liberality (p. 658). Of foolish largess (p. 658).

vi. GLUTTONY (p. 658-59), and its 5 kinds (p. 659): 1. Drunkenness, or the burial of man's reason; 2. a troubled spirit; 3. bad way of eating; 4. distemperd bodily humours; 5. forgetfulness. Or, as St Gregory says, 1. eating too soon; 2. eating too delicate food; 3. taking too much; 4. troubling too much about cooking food; 5. eating greedily: these are the 5 fingers of the devil's hand (p. 659).

The Remedy against Gluttony (p. 660): Abstinence, and its fellows. Temperance, Shame, Content with plain food, Moderation, Soberness, Sparing (p. 660).

vii. LECHERY (p. 660). Its punishment in the Old Testament (p. 660). Adultery, and the desire of it (p. 661-62).

The 5 fingers of the Devil's other hand (p. 662); 1. foolish looking; 2. villainous touching; 3. foul words; 4. kissing (old dotards, and dry dogs at a rose-tree (p. 662); and how a man should love his wife); 5. the stinking deed of lechery (p. 663). Its kinds: 1. Fornication. Taking a maid's maidenhead, or 100th fruit (p. 663). 2. Adultery, defined. 3. Harms following from it: *a.* breaking of faith; *b.* theft (of the wife's body from her husband (Joseph and Potiphar's wife), and of her soul from Christ); *c.* breaking God's commandment, and defouling Christ (p. 664). Of Harlots and Bawds (p. 665). Adultery is set between Theft and Manslaughter. More kinds of Adultery: 1. by Men bound by Religious Vows, &c.; 2. those in Holy Orders (p. 665). Lecherous Priests are like a free Bull in a town, and they eat raw flesh of folk's wives and daughters (p. 666); 3. by man and wife copulating for pleasure only (p. 667); 4. copulation with kinsfolk, spiritual (or godchildren) or fleshly (blood relations). 5. the abominable unmentionable sin; 6. Pollution, of 3 kinds: 1. too rank humours; 2. weakness (p. 667); 3. evil thoughts (p. 668).

The Remedy for Lechery (p. 668): I. Chastity and Continence.

1. in Marriage. (The true effect of Marriage. One husband to have one wife (p. 668). How a man should behave to his wife (p. 669). How the wife should be subject to her husband (p. 669), and be moderate in behaviour, discreet in words, &c. (p. 669-70). The 3 causes for which man and wife may copulate (p. 670): *a.* begetting of children; *b.* to pay the mutual debt of their bodies; *c.* to avoid lechery (p. 670). The 4th cause, pleasure, is deadly sin (p. 670-71).)

2. In Widowhood; 3. Virginity (p. 671).

II. Special avoidance of causes of lechery: *a.* eating and drinking; long sleeping; *b.* the person who'd tempt you (p. 671-72). (I wish I could tell you the Ten Commandments; but it's too high doctrine (p. 672).) [End of *Confession*, § 1, *c.*]

Sin is in heart, mouth, deed, by the 5 Wits (p. 672).

§ 1.*b.* (see p. 615-16.) The 7 Circumstances that encrease or aggravate sins (p. 672). 1. the person who sins (male or female, &c.); 2. the kind of sin (fornication or homicide); 3. the place it was committed in (as in a church, by a priest) (p. 673); 4. for what motive; 5. the number of times it was committed; 6. by what temptation; 7. how it was committed; and all other circumstances (p. 674).

CONFESSION, § 2, § 3 (p. 674-79).

Profitable Confession, and its 4 (= 3) *Conditions* (p. 674):
1. sorrowful bitterness of heart (p. 674); its 5 signs: *a.* shamefastness (like the Publican's) (p. 675); *b.* humility; *c.* fulness of tears (p. 675); *d.* no hesitation (like the Magdalen) for shame; *e.* obedience to receive penance laid on you (p. 675).
2. speedy Confession (p. 676); its 4 Conditions: *f.* that it be well thought over; *g.* the greatness and number of sins must be understood; *h.* the sinner must be contrite, and *i.* avoid occasions of sins.
3. Shrift must be made to one man, not more (p. 676).

True Shrift, and its 10 *Conditions* (p. 677): 1. that it be of free will; 2. that it be lawful (both sinner and priest, Popish); 3. that it be not despairing of Christ's mercy; 4. that a man accuse himself only, and not another; 5. that it be not lying (accusing oneself of sins never committed) (p. 678); that it be by one's own mouth, and not by letter; 7. that the sin be not painted with fair words; 8. that the shrift be to a discreet priest; 9. that the shrift be not made for vain-glory, but for fear of Christ; 10. that the shrift be not made suddenly, for a joke (p. 678). You may be shriven more than once for the same sin; and should be houseld once a year (p. 679).

PART III (*no.* v. *continued, and no.* vi.).

SATISFACTION (THE 3RD REQUISITE FOR PENITENCE) (p. 679—684).

In *α*. Alms. *β*. bodily punishment.

α. Alms and its three kinds (p. 679): 1. Contrition of heart. 2. Pity for one's neighbour's faults. 3. Giving good counsel to other's souls and bodies (food, visits in prison, burial). These Alms should be done privily, if possible (p. 680).

β. Bodily Punishment (*Penance*), *of* 4 *kinds:* 1. Prayers (chiefly of the Paternoster, whose expounding I leave to Masters of Theology) (p. 680). 2. Watching, and its 3 kinds: forbearing, *a.* meat and drink, *b.* worldly jollity, and *c.* deadly sin (p. 681). 3. Fasting, and its 4 kinds: Liberality to poor folk; spiritual gladness of heart; not grudging at fasting; reasonable eating. 4. Virtuous teachings, or Discipline: *a.* by word, writing, or example; *b.* by wearing hairshirts., &c., next your skin, scourging yourself, taking evils and injuries patiently (p. 682). [End of no. v. in Part i; p. 593.]

vi. The 4 Things that disturb Penance [no. vi, or last §, of p. 593 at foot] (p. 682). 1. Dread, and its remedy. 2. Shame, and its remedy. 3. Hope: *a.* of long life, and *b.* consequent over-confidence in Christ's mercy (p. 683). 4. Wanhope, or Despair of Mercy; its 3 kinds: *x.* from great and long continued sin; *y.* from falls-back into sin; *z.* from not being able to persevere in goodness (p. 683).

The fruit of Penance (p. 683-4).

EPILOGUE.

The Author's Leave-taking, and Lament over, and Withdrawal of, his Sinful Books, &c. (p. 684-85).

[*Lansdowne* 851, *on leaf* 230, *back.*]

[*There are no paragraph-breaks in the MS, but Tyrwhitt's are kept in the print for convenience sake.*]

Incipit sermo.

Ier*emie* vj^to^. State sup*er* vias. & videte & int*er*rogate de semit*is* antiquis que sit via bona: & ambulate in ea & i*n*uenietis refrig*er*ium a*nim*ab*us* v*est*ris.

[75] O wre. swete lord god of heuen: þat no man wil p*er*isshe: but wil þat we co*m*me al to þe knowleche of him: & to þe blisful lyf þat is p*er*durable: [76] amonesteþ vs be þe p*ro*phet Iorom*ie* þat seiþe in þis wise: [77] Standeþ vpon þe weyes & seeþe & axeþ of olde paþes. þat is to seie of olde sentences: whiche is þe goode weie: [78] & walkeþ in þat weie: & ȝe schal finde refrisscheinge for ȝoure soules: &c [79] ¶ Many buen þe weyes sp*irit*uele. þat leden folk to to oure lorde ih*es*u criste & to þe regne of glorie [80] ¶ Of whiche weyes þ*er*e is a ful noble weie and ful couenable weie: whiche maye not faile to man ne to wo*m*man þat þoruhe sinne haþ mys gone fro þe riht weie of Ier*usa*lem celestial. [81] And þis weie is cleped Penitence: of whiche men scholde gladly herken & enquere wiþ al his he [82] to wit what is penance: & whan it is cleped penanc. & i*n* howe many man*er*e bene þe accionce of worchinge of penance: [83] And howe mony spices þ*er*e biene of penytence And whiche þinges app*ar*tenen: & be-houen to penitence: & whiche þinges distourben penitence

[84] ¶ Seint Ambrose seiþe þat penitence is þe pleyneinge of man for þe gilt þat he haþ done: and no more to do any þinge for whiche we ouhte to pleyne: [85] And sõm doctour seiþe: Penitence is þe weyment-ynge of man þat sorweþ for his sinne: an peyneþ him selft for he haþe mys done: [86] Penytence wiþ certeyne circumstance is verrey repentance of men þat halt him self in sorwe: And opere peyne for his giltes [87] For he schal be verreye penitent: he schaH first beweilen þe sinne þat he haþe done: And stedfastly purposen in his herte to haue schrift of mouþe And to done satisfaccione: [88] And neuer to do þinge. ffor whiche him ouht to beweile or to complene & to continue in goode werkes: or elles his repentance mai nouht availe [89] ¶ For as seint Isider seiþe. He is a Iaper & a gabbere & no verrei repentant: þat eft sone doþ þinge ffor whiche him ouht to repent [90] wepeinge: & nouht for to stinte to do sinne Maie not availe: [91] Bot naþeles men schol hope: þat at euery time þat man falleþ be it neuere so of: þat he may rise þorwhe penitence if he haue grace ¶ Bot certeinly. it is grete doute [92] for as seiþe seinte gregori. vnneþes ariseþ he oute of his sinne þat is charged wiþ þe charde of yuel vsage: [93] & þer fore repentant folke þat stinte for to sinne & for-lete sinne. er sinne for-lete him. Holy cherche holte hem seker of her sauaciõne: [94] And he þat sinneþ & verraly repenteþ him in his last ende: Holy cherche 3it hopeþ his saluacion be þe grete mercy of our lorde ihesu for his repentance: ¶ Bot takeþ þe seker weye þat is certeine:

[95] ¶ And nowe seþen .I. haue declared 3owe what þinge is penitence ¶ Now scholne 3e vnderstonde þat þere bue þre accions of Penytence: [96] The first is if a man be baptized after þat he haþe sinned [97] ¶ Seint Austine seiþe bot he be penitende for his olde sinful lif: he maie not be-ginne þe newe

clene lif: [98] For certes if he be b..ptist *with* oute penitence of his olde gilte: he receyueþ þe merke of baptime: bot not þe *grace* ne þe remission of his sinnes. til he haue repentance verreye. [99] ¶ Anoþ*er* defaut is þis: that men done dedely sinne after þat þei haue receyued Baptisme [100] ¶ þe þredde defaute is: þat men fallen in venial sinnes after her baptisme: fro daie to daie [101] ¶ Ther of seiþ seint Austine: þat penitence of goode & hu*m*ble folke is þe penitence of eue*r*y daie:

[102] ¶ The spices of penance bien þre: þat on of hem is solempne: anoþ*er* is comune. &. þ° þred is p*r*iue [103] ¶ þilke penance þat is solempne: is in tuo maners. As is to be put oute of holy cherche in lente for slauhter of childerne & suche maner þinge: [104] Anoþ*er* is whan man haþ sinned openly: of whiche sinne þe fame is openly spoken in þe contre: ¶ And þan holy cherche be iugement Distreyneþ him for to do penance open. [105] ¶ So*m*me penance is þat p*r*estes enioynen men comunly in certeine caas as for to gone *per*aduentur naked in pilgrenage or barfote. [106] ¶ Priue penaunce is þilk þat men done al daie ffor p*r*iue sinnes of whiche we schryuen vs p*r*iuely & receyuen p*r*iue penance.

[107] ¶ Nowe schalt þou vnderstande whas behoueþ: & is necessarie to verrei p*er*fit penitence: An þes standen on þre þinges [108] ¶ Contricio of hert. Confession of moupe: & satisfaccione [109] ¶ For whiche seiþ Ioh*annes* Grisostem*us*. Penytence Distreyneþ man to accepte benyngly eue*r*y peine þat is him enioyned *with* contricione of hert: & schrift of moupe & satisfacione & in wercheinge al manere humylite: [110] ¶ And þis is fruyteful penitence azein þre þinges in which we wreþþen our lorde ihesu crist: [111] þis is to seine: be delite in þinkinge: be reclischenesse in spekeinge: be wykked sinful wyrcheinge: [112] ¶ And azeines þes

wikked giltes is penitence: þat maie be likned vnto a tre.

[113] ¶ þe rote of *þis* tree is con*tri*cione þat hideþ him·in þe hert of him *þat* is verraie repentant Riht as þe rote of a tre hideþ him in þe erþe: [114] ¶ Of þe rote of con*tri*cione spri*n*geþ a stalk þat bereþ braunches & leues of confessis & fruyte of satisfaccione. [115] For whiche crist seiþe in þe gospel. Doþe digne fruyte of penite. For be þis fruyte men maye knowe þis tre: & nouht be rote þat is hide in þe herte of man: be þe braunche ne be þe leues of confessione: [116] And *þer*e for oure lorde ih*es*u crist seiþ þus: Be þe fruyte of hem schal ȝe knowe he*m* [117] ¶ Of þis rote spri*n*geþ a seede of *grace*: þe whiche sede is þe mode of sekernesse: And þis seed is egre & hote: [118] þe *grace* of þis seed spri*n*geþ of god þoruhe þe remembrance of þe daie of dome & one þe peines of helle. [119] ¶ Of þis [1]Matier seiþe Salomon. That in þe drede of god man for loteþ his sinne. [120] ¶ þe hete of þis seede is þe loue of god. & þe desire of þe Ioye *per*durable: [121] þis hete drageþ þe hert of man to god: & doþe him hate his sinne: [122] ¶ For soþely *þer*e is no þinge þat sauereþ so wele to a childe as þe myke of his norice: Ne no þi*n*ge is to him more abhomi*n*able þat þilke melk whan it is menged wiþ o*þer*e mete. [123] Riht so þe sinnful man *þat* loueþ his sinne it semeþ þat it is to him moste swete Of any þinge: [124] ¶ Bot fro þat time þat he loueþ sadly oure lorde ih*es*u criste & desireþ þe lif *per*durable: *þer*e nys to hime more abhominable: [125] ¶ For soþe þe lawe of god is þe loue of god: For whiche *dauid* þe p*r*ophete seiþe: I. haue loued þi lawe & hated wikkednesse: & hatede: He þat loueþ god kepeþ his lawe & his worde: [126] ¶ This tre sawe þe *pro*phet .Danyel. in spirit vpon þe auysion of nobugodonosor whan he counseled him to do penitence. [127] ¶ Penance is þe tre of lif to he*m* *þat* it receyvē: And he þat holdeþ him

verrey penytence is blissed after þe verrey sentence of Salomon.

[128] ¶ In þis penitence or contricion man schal vnderstonden .iiij. þinges: þat is to seine What is contricione: & whiche bien þe causes þat meuen a man to contricione & howe he schold be contrite: & what contricioun availed to þe soule: [129] þan is it þus: þat contricion is þe verrei sowe þat a man receyueþ in his hert for his sinnes with sadde purpos to schriuen him & to do penance And to do neuer more sinne: [130] ¶ And þis sorwe schal bien in þis manere As seiþe seinte Bernard. It schal be greuous & heuy & ful scharpe & poynant in herte: [131] ffirst for a man haþ gult his lord & his makere: & mor scharp & poynant: for he haþ agilte his fader celestial: [132] & 3it more scharp & poynant: For he haþe a-wreþþed & agilte him þat bouht him: þat withe his precious blode haþ deliuerd vs fro þe bandes of sinne And fro þe cruelte of þe deuel. And fro þe peynes of hell:

[133] ¶ The causes þat ouhte to meue a man to contricion bien .vj. ¶ First a man schal remembre him of his sinnes: [134] bot loke þat þat remembrance be to him no delite be no weye bot grette schame: & sorwe For his gilte. For Iob seiþe. Sinfulmen doþ werkes worþi of confession [135] ¶ And þere for seiþe Ezechiele .I. wil remembre me al þe 3eres of my lif in bitternesse of myn herte: [136] And god seiþe in þe Apocolips. Remembre 3o fro wemmes þat þue fall: For be forne þat time þat 3e sinned 3e weren þe childern of god. & lyme of þe Regne of god: [137] ¶ Bot for 3oure sinne 3e bien wax þral & foule & membres of þe fende: hate of Angeles Sclaundre of holy cherche. And foode of þe fals serpent perpetuel matiere of þe fire of hell. [138] And þat more foule & abominable for 3e trespasen so oft time: as doþe þe houndo þat torneþ to eten his spewynge: [139] And 3it

þien 3e fouler for 3oure longe continuinge in sinne: & 3oure sinful vsage: For whiche 3e be roten in 3oure sinne as a beste in his donge [140] ¶ Suche manere of þouhtes maken a man to haue schame for his sinne & no delite: As god seiþe be þe prophete Ezechiele. [141] 3e schol remembre 3owe of 3oure weies: & þei schol displesen 3owe sobely: ¶ Sinnes bien þe weies þat leden folk to helle:

[142] ¶ þe secunde cause þat auhte to make a man to haue disdeyne of sinne is þis: ¶ þat as seiþe seint Petre: Who so doþe sinne is þralle of [1] sinne: ¶ And sinne putteþ a man in grete þraldome: [143] And þere for seiþe þe prophete Ezechiele: I went sorweful in disdeine of my selfe: ¶ Certes wele ouht a man to haue disdeine of synne & wiþdrawe him fro þat þraldome & velanie: [144] And lo whatte seiþe Seneca in þis matiere: þouhe .I. wiste þat god neyþere man ne scholde neuer knowe it: 3it wolde .I. haue disdeine for to do sinne. [145] ¶ The same Seneca. seiþe .I. am borne to gretter þinges þan to be þralle to me bodye. [. . . . . *no gap in MS.* . . . .] [146] More a þralle may no man ne womman make of his bodi þan 3iue his body to sinne: [147] A were it þe foulest cherle or þe foulest womman þat leueþ & leste of value 3ite is he chaunged & moste foule & more in seruitute: [148] Euer fro þe hiere degre þat a man falleþ þe more he is þralle: And more vnto god & to þe werlde vile & abominable: [149] ¶ O good god wele ouht men haue disdeyne of sinne: seþen þat þoruhe sinne þere he was fre now is he maked bonde [150] ¶ And þere for seiþe seinte Austine. If þou haue disdeine of þi seruant if he a gilte or synne: Haue þou þan disdeine þat þou þi self scholdest do synne: [151] Take rewarde of þine value þat þou ne be to foule to þine value ne to þi self [152] ¶ Alas wele ouhten þei þan to be

seruant & þraH to sinne & sore biene aschamed of hem self: [153] þat god of his enles goodenesse haþ sette hem in hihe astate or ȝeuen hem wiþ strenkeþ of body. hele beaute. *prosperite*: [154] & bouht hem fro deþ *with* his hert blode: þat þei so vnkindely aȝcines his gentillesse whiten him so velenslye to slauhter of here owen sowles [155] ¶ O goode god. ȝe wemmen þat bien of so grete beaute: remembreþ ȝowe of þe *prouerbe* of Salomon. he seiþe [156] A faire *womman* þat is a fole of hir body: is like to a ringe of golde þat wereþ in þe groyne of a sowe [157] ¶ For riht as a sowe wroteþ in *euery* ordure: So wroteþ sche hir beaute in stinkeinge ordur of sinne

[158] ¶. The þred cause þat ouht to meue a man to contricione is þe drede of þe daie of dome & of þe orribles peynes of heH for as seint Ierom seiþe. Att *euery* time þat me remembreþ of þe daie of dome .I. quake: [160] For whan .I. ete or drink or do what so .I. do *euer* semeþ me þat þe trompe souneþ in myne ere: [161] Riseþ vpe þat bien dede & *commeþ* to þe Iugement [162] of god: ¶ Muche ouht iche man to drede suche a Iugement *þere* as we scholne buo aH as seiþ seiþe seint Poule Be forne þe strete of oure lorde ihesu crist. [163] Where as ȝe schal maake a *general* congregacio*un*: Wher as noman mai be absent: [164] For certes *þere* ne availeþ none assoyene ne excusacion: [165] And not onely þat oure fautes schal þu Iuged: bot eke þat al oure werkes schal openli be knowe: [166] And aȝ seiþe seint Bernarde. There ne schal no pledynge availe ne no sleiht: we scholne ȝeuen Rekenynge of *euery* Idel worde [167] ¶ There schal we haue a Iuge. þat maie nouht be deceyued ne corruppte: And whi for al oure þouhtes biene discouerde as to him: ne for preier ne for meede he wil not be corrupte: [168] And *þerefor* seiþe Salomon. þe wraþþe of god wol nouȝt buo corrupte: And *þerfor* seiþ Salomon: The wreche

of god ne wil nouht spare no wight for praier ne for ȝeft: And þere fore att þe daie of dome þere is none hope to escape: [169] wherefore as seiþe Anselme ¶ Ful grete anguysche [1]Scholne þe sinful folke have att þat time: [170] ¶ þere schal be þe steren & þe wroþe Iuge: site aboue: And vnder him þe orrible putte of helle open to destrey him þat mot be knowe his [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] sinnes openly be schewde be forne god & be for euery creature: [171] And one þe left side mo deueles þan hert maie þink for to harye: & to drawe þe sinful sowles to þe peine of helle: [172] and *with* inne þe hertes of folke schal be þe byteinge conscience: And wiþ oute forþ schal be þe world al berneynge [173] ¶ Wheder schal þan þe wriched sinful soule flee to hide hime. Certes he maie nouȝt hide *him*: he most *com* forþe. & schewe *him* [174] For certes as seiþ seint Ierom. The erþe schal cast him oute of *him*: & þe see also & þe eyre also þat schal be ful of þonder clappes & lyhtnynges: [175] Nowe sopely who so wil remembre of þis þinges .I. gesse þat his sinnes schal nouht turne him into delite: bote to grete sorwe for drede of peyne of helle: [176] And þere for seiþ Iob to god: ¶ Suffur lorde þat .I. maie a while be waile & wepe ar .I. go: & wepe withe outen retorneinge to þe derke lande. couered *with* þe derkenesse of deþe [177] to þe londe of Misese & of derkenesse where as is schadowe of deþe: where as is none oþer ordinance bot grisly drede þat euer schal last [178] ¶ lo here may ȝe seen þat Iob preide respite a while to be-wepe & weile his trespas. For sopely o daie of Respite is better þan al þe tresoure of þis worlde. [179] ¶ And for alsomuche as a man mai aquite him self beforne god be penitence in þis worlde & nouht be tresour: þere fore schulde he preye to god to ȝeue him respite a while to be wepen & be weilen his trespas: [180] ffor certes al. þe sorwe þat a man myht make fro þe begynynge

of þe werld is bot a luytel þinge. att þe regarde of þe sorwe of hell [181] ¶ The cause whi *þat* Iob calleþ hell þe londe of derknesse: [182] vnderstondeþ *þat* he cleopeþ it þe londe of erþe for it is stable & neu*er* schal faile dereknesse: ffor he þat is in hell haþe defaute of liht material: [183] ffor certes þe derk liht *þat* schal come oute of þe fire *þat* eu*er* schal berne schal torne him al to pine þat is in hell: ffor it schewep him to þe orrible deueles þat him torment. [184] Couerd wiþ þe derkenesse of depe [. . . . . .

. . . . . .

. . . . . [185] . . . . . .

no gap in the MS.] bien þe sinnes: þat þe wrecched man haþe do: Whiche þat distourben him to see þe face of god: riht a derke cloude be twex vs & þe sonne: [186] londe of mysese: because þat þere bue þre manere of defautes azeynes. þre þinges: þat folke in þis werlde haue in þis present lif: þat is to seie: Honours. delices. & Riches. [187] ¶ Azeines honour haue þei in hell schame: & confusione: [188] ffor wele 3e weten þat men clepen honour þe reuerence þat men don to man: Bot in hell is none honour ne reuerence: ffor certes no more reuerence schal be do to a kinge þan to a knaue: [189] ¶ For whiche go[d] seiþe be þe prophet Ieremye. Thilke folke þat me dispisen schal bue in dispite [190] ¶ Honour is eke cleped grete lodschipe: Thare schal no wight seruen opere bot of harme & turment: Honour is eke cleped grete dignite & hihenesse bot in hel schal þei be al for-troden of deuels: [191] As god [1] seiþe: Orrible deuels schal comen & gone vpon þe heuedes of dampned folk: And þis is for also muche. þe hiher þat þei were in þis present lif: þe more schal þei buen abated & defouled in hell: [192] ¶ Azeine þe riches of þis werld schal þe haue mysese of pouerte: And þis pouert schal be foure þinges. [193] in defaute of tresour of whiche

dauid seiþe. þe riche folke þat enbrasen & coueten in aH herte þe tresour of þis worlde: scholne slepe in þe slepeinge of deþe As no þinge schal þei finden in al hir handes of hire tresour [194] ¶ And more ouere þe Misese of heH schaH ben in defaute of mete & drinke: [195] ffor god seiþ þus be moyses: Thei scholne be wastede wiþ hunger & þe berdes of heH schal denouren him wiþ bitter deþ An þe gal of þe dragon [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] hir morsel: [196] And ferþer ouere hire mysese schal buen in defaute of cloþeinge: for þei schal be nake in body as in cloþinge: saue þe fire in whiche þei birne: & oþere felþes [197] & naked schal þei bien in soule of al manere of vertues: whiche þat is þe cloþeinge of soule: // Wher bue þan þe gaie Robes & þe soft schetes & þe smale schertes: [198] Lo what seiþe god of hem be þe prophet Ysaye: þat vnder hem schal be strewed mouhtes: & here couertours schal be of þe wermes of heH. [199] And ferþer ouere hire mysese schalbe in defaute of frendes: For he is nouȝt pouer þat haþe goode frendes bott þere is no frende: [200] ffor neyþere god ne creature schaH be frende to hem: And euery of hem schal haten oþere wiþ dedeli hate: [201] þe sonnes of þe douhtern schal rebellen aȝeines fader & moder & kinrede aȝeines kinrede: & chiden and dispisen iche of hem oþere boþe daie & nyght: ¶ As god seiþe be þe prophete Mechias [202] And þe loueynge childern þat whilom loued so fleschely euerych oþere wolden euerych of heni eten oþere if þei myht: [203] ffor howe schold þei louen hem to geder in þe peine of heH whan þei hateden euerych of hem oþere Eyþer in þe prosperite of þis lif [204] ¶ For truste welo here fleschely loue was dedely hate as seiþe þe prophete dauid. ¶ Wo so þat loueþ wikkednesse: he hateþ his soule: [205] And who þat hateþ his owen soule: certes he may loue none oþer wight

in no manere: [206] And perfor in heH is no frenschippe Bot euer þe more fflessly kinred þat buen in heH: þe more curseinge & þe more chideinge þe more dedely hate þere is ymonge hem: [207] And ferþerc ouere þei scholen haue defaut of al manere delices: For whi þe delites bene þe Appetites of þe five wittes: as siht: hereynge: Sauereinge: Smelinge: & toucheinge: [208] Bot in heH here siht schal be ful of derknesse & smoke: & ful of teres: And here hereinge ful of waymentynge & of grontinge of teþe As seiþ ihesu crist. [209] Her noseþrelles schal be ful of stinkinge stinke: And as seiþe ysayas þe prophete. Here Sauereinge schal be ful of bitter gall: [210] And toucheinge of hire body couerd wiþ fire. þat neuer schaH diȝen. As god seide be þo mouþe of Isaye: [211] And for alsomuche as þei schol not wene þat þei mei deyen for peyne. & be hire deþ flie fro peyne: þat maie vnder-stonde be þe worde of Iobe: þat seiþ þere [1] as is þe schadow of deþe: [212] Certes a schadowe haþe likenesse of þe þinge of whiche it is schadow: Bot þe schadowe is nouht þe same þinge of whiche it is schadowe [213] Riht so fareþ þe peyne of heH: It is like deþe for þe angwysshe orrible And whie: ffor it peyneþ hem euere as þouhe men schold dyen anone: Bot certes þei schol not deye [214] ¶ For as seiþe seint Gregorie to wrecched kaytifes schal be deþe with owten deþ: And ende wiþ outen ende: And defaute with oute faileinge: [215] ffor here deþ schal alwey lyfe: And here ende schal euermore be ginne: And here defaute schal nouht faile [216] ¶ And þere fore seiþ seint Iohn þe Euaungeliste: Thei schal folowen deþ & þei schal nouht finden him: And þei desiren to deye: And deþ schal flye fro hem: [217] And Eke Iob seiþ: þat in heH is none order of Reule: [218] ¶ And aH be it so þat god haþe created al þinge in riht ordre & noþinge with

outen order: Bot al þinges bene ordeyned & nombred: 3ete naþeles þei þat bue dampned bien no þinge in ordre ne holde no þinge in ordre. [219] ffor þe erþe schal bere hem no fruyte. [220] For as þe prophet seiþe dauid: God schal destruye þe fruyte of þe erþe as fro hem: ne water schal 3eue hem no moystur. ne þe eyer no refrissheinge: ne fire no lyht: [221] For as seiþe seint Basile: The birneinge of þe fire of þis werlde schal god gif in heH to hem þat bu dampned: [222] Bot þe liht & þe clerenesse. schal be 3ouen in to heuen to his childerne: Riht as þe good man giffeþ flesshe to his childerne and bones to his hondes: [223] And for þei schol haue none hope to escape seiþe Iobe: Att þe laste: þat þere schold orroure & grisely drede dwel wiþ outen ende: [224] Orrour is alwei drede of harme þat is to comme: And þis drede schal euer dweH in þe hertes of hem þat bu dampned ¶ And for þat haueþ þei lorne al here hope for vij. causes: [225] ffirst for god þat is hire Iuge schal bue wiþ outen mercy to hem. Ne þei may not plese him ne none of his halowes ne þei maie 3eue no þinge for hire Raunson: [226] Ne þei haue no voice to speke to him: ne þei maie not fliȝe fro peine ne þei haue no goodenesse in hem þat þei maie schew to deliuer hem fro peine: [227] ¶ And þerefore seiþe Salomon þe wykked mañ deyeþ: And whan he is dede he schal haue no hope to ascape fro peyne [228] ¶ Who so schame wiH wele vnderstonde þes peynes & be þinke him wele þat he haþe deserued þilke peynes for his sinnes: Certes he schold haue more talent to sike & to wepe: þan for to singen & to pley: [229] ¶ For as seiþ Salomon. Who so þat hadde þe science for to knowe: þe peynes þat buen þat ystablisshed for sinne: he wold maake sorwe: [230] ¶ þilke science as seiþe seinte Austine. Makeþ a man to weyment in his herte:

[231] ¶ þe ferþe point þat ouhte maake a man

haue contricion is þe sorweful remembrance of þe goode þat he haþ lost to done here *in* erþe: And eke good þat he haþ lorne: [232] Soþely þe goode werkes þat he haþ loste: eyþ*er* þei bien þe goode werkes þat he haþ wrouht er he fell in to dedely sinne. or elles þe goode werkes þat he wrouht while he laie in sinne. [233] Soþely þe gode werkes þat he dide beforne þat he fell in sinne bien al mortified & astoned: & dullede be þe oft sinynge [234] ¶ þe toþ*er* goode werke þat he wrouht whiles he ley in sinne: þei bien vtt*er*ly dede as to þe lif p*er*durable in heuen [235] ¶ þan þelke goode werke þat bien [1]mortified be oft sinynge: Whiche good werkes he dide whiles he was i*n* charite: ne mowen neu*er*e quyken aȝeine wi*th*outen p*ar*fite penitence [236] And þ*er*fore seiþe god be þe mouþe of ezechiel: That is þe rihtfulman retorne aȝeine from his rihtwisnesse & to worche wikkednesse schal he leue [237] naye ffor al þe goode werkes þat haþ wrouht ne scholne neu*er* bue in remembra*u*nce: ffor he schal deye in sinne [238] ¶ And vpon þilke chapeter seiþ seint Gregorie þus þat we scholde vnderstonde þis pr*i*ncipaly. [239] That whanne we do dedely sinne: it is for nouht þan to reherse or to drawe in to memorie þe good werkes þat we haue wrouht beforne: [240] ¶ For certes in þe worcheinge of dedely sinne: þ*er*e is no truste to no good werke þat we han done to fore: þat is to seine As for to haue þ*er*e bye: þe lif perdurable in heuen: [241] . . . . . .

. . . . . .

. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] whan we haue contr*i*cione: [242] Bott soþely þe goode werkes þat men done whiles þei bien in dedely synne: ffor as muche as þei weren done in dedely sinne þei may neu*er*e whiken aȝeine: [243] ffor certes þinge þat neu*er* hadde lif: may neu*er* qwykyne: ¶ And naþeles: Albeit þat þei aveile nouht to haue þe lif p*er*durable: ȝit aveilen

þei to a-brigge þe peyne of hell: or elles to geten *tempor*el richesse: [244] or elles þat god wol þe raþer elumyne & lyhten þe hert of þe sinfulman. to haue repentance: [245] And eke þei aveilen to vsen a man to done goode werkes þat þe fende haue þe lesse powere of his soule [246] ¶ And *þus* þe curteise lorde ihesu crist wol þat no goode werke be lost: ffor in somwhat it schal availe [247] ¶ Bot for also muche þe goode werke þat men done whiles þei bien in goode lif bien al mortified be sinne folowynge: ¶ And eke seþen þat al þe goode werkes [. . *no gap in MS.*] whiles þei bue in dedely sinne bien vtterly dede as for to haue þe lif *per*durable: [248] wele may þat man þat no goode werke dope singe þilke newe fresshe songe: Iay tout *per*duz moñ temps & moñ labour [249] ¶ For certes sinne bereueþ a man goodnesse of nature: & eke þe goodnesse of grace: [250] ¶ For soþe þe grace of þe holy gost fareþ like fire þat may not bu ydel: ffor fire faileþ anone as it fo[r]leseþ his worcheinge: [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] [251] So leseþ þe sinfulman þe goodnesse of glorie þat only is behiht to good men þat labouren & wirken: [252] wele maie he bu sorie þan þat oweþ al his lif to god as longe as he leueþ: haþe leued: And eke also longe as he schal leue: þat no goodenesse ne haþe to paye *with* his dett to god to whome he oweþ al his lif [253] ¶ For tresteþ wele he schal ȝeue acomptes as seiþ sein Bernard. of al þe goodes þat haue bu ȝouen him in þis *pre*sent lif & howe he haþe hem dispended [254] nouht so muche þat *per* schal nouht *per*ische an here of his hede ne a moment of an houre ne schal nouht *per*ische of his time þat he ne schal ȝeue of it a rekenynge:

[255] ¶ þe fifte þinge þat ouht meue a man to cont*ricioun*: is remembrance of þe passion þat oure lord ihesu crist suffred for oure sinnes: [256] ffor as seiþ seint Bernard. While þat .I. leue .I: schal haue remem-

brance of þe traveyles þat oure lorde ihesu crist suffred in precheinge: [257] his werenesse in travaileinge: his temptacions whan he fasted: his longe wakeinges whan he praide: his teres whan þat he [1]wepte for pyte of goode peple: [258] þe wor & þe schame & þe filþe þat mem seiden to him oft: þe foule spittēinge: þat men spitten on his face: of þe buffetes þat men ȝaue him: of þe foule moupes: & of þe reproues þat men to him seyden: [259] of þe nayles with þe whiche he was nailed to þe crose and of al þe remenant of his passion þat he suffred for my sinnes And nopinge for his gilte: [260] And ȝe scholne vnderstonde þat in man sinne is euery maner of order of ordinance turned vp so doune: [261] ffor it is sope: þat god.. & resoñ & sensualite & þe body of man: buen so ordeined: þat euer yche of þis foure þinges schold haue lordschipe ouer þat oþer [262] As þus: As þus God schold haue lordeschip ouer reson: & resone ouere sensualite: And sensualite ouere þe body of man: [263] But sopely whan man sinneþ al þe order of ordenance is turned vp so doune: [264] And þer fore þan for also muche as þe resoñ of man wil nouht be subiette ne obeisant to god þat is lord be riht: þere for leseþ he þe lordschip þat he scholde haue in sensualite: and eke ouere þe body of man: [265] And whie For sensualite rebelleþ aȝein reson: And þat waye leseþ reson his lordschip ouer sensualite & ouer þe body: [266] For riht as reson is rebelle to god: Riht so is bope sensualite rebel to reson. & þe man also: [267] ¶ And certes þis ordinance & þis rebellion oure lorde ihesu crist bouht vpon his preciouse body ful dere And herkeneþ in whiche wyse: [268] ffor as muche þan is reson rebel to god: þare fore is man worþi to haue sorwe: & to be dede: [269] þis suffurd oure lorde ihesu for man after þat he had be bytrayede of his disciple And distreyned &

bounde so þat þe blode braste oute att eue*r*y nayle of his handes as seiþe seint Austine [270] ¶ And forþe*r*more for as muche þat reson of man wil nouȝt daunte se*n*sualite whan it maie: þe*re*fore is ma*n* worþi to haue schame: And þus suffred oure lorde ihe*s*u criste: for ma*n*: whan þei spitten in his vesage // [271] And ferþe*re* oue*re* for as muche þan þat þe kaytif body of mañ/ is rebel boþe to reso*u*n / & sensualite: And þe*re*fore is it worþi þe deþe: [272] And þis suffurde oure lorde ihe*s*u criste for man vpo*n* þe croys where as þe*re* was no p*ar*ty of his body fre *with* owten grete pyne & bitter passion: [273] And al þis suffred oure lorde ihe*s*u criste þat neue*re* for fete

[. . . . . .

no gap in the MS.] ¶ To mechel am .I. peyned for þe same þinges þat .I. neuer dese*r*uede And to muchel defouled for frendschipe þat man is worþi to haue: [274] And þe*re*fore maie þe sinnful man wele saie. as seiþe seint Bernard: Acursed be þe butternesse: [. . . . . .

. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] [275] ffor certes after þ^e^ diu*er*se discordance of oure wikkednesse was þe passion of oure lorde ihe*s*u criste. yordeinede in diu*er*se þinges [276] as þus: ¶ Certes sinnful mannes soule by-trasede of þe deuel be couetise of tempe*r*ile pro*sper*ite and scorned be deceyte: Whan he chese*þ* fleschely delites ¶ And ȝit is he tormented be impacience of aduersite: ¶ And bespette be se*r*uage in subieccione of sinne: and att þe last it is sleyne fynaly: [277] ffor þis disordinance of sinnful man. was ihe*s*u crist first betrayde: And after þat was he bounde þat ca*m* for to [1]for to vnbynde vs of sinne & of peyne: [278] þan was he bescorned þ*at* only scholde be honoured in al þinges be al þinges. & of al þinges: [279] ¶ Than was his þat ouht be desired to be seyne of al man kinde: In whiche Angeles desiren to loken vilansly be-spitte: [280] þan was he scowrged. þat no þinge had gulte: & fynally þan was he crucified And sleyne [281] ¶ þan was he acompliced þe

wordes of Ysaye: He was wounded for oure mesdedes & defouled be oure veleynyes: [282] Nowe sepen. þat ihesu criste toke vpon him selfe þe peyne of al oure wikkednesse: Muchel ouht sinful man be-wepe & be-weile þat for his sinne goddes sonne of heuen schold al þis peine endure [283] ¶ The sext þinge þat ouht to meue a man to contricione is þe hope of þe þre þinges: þat is to seine forzeuenesse: And þe zeft of grace wele for to do: And þe glory of heuen with þe whiche god schal guerdon mān for his goode dedes: [284] ¶ And for as muche as ihesu crist: zifeþ vs þis zeftes of his largesse and of his souereyne bounte: þer for is he cleped Ihesus nazarenus rex iudeorum: [285] Ihesus ys to seyne saueour or saluatioñ on whome men scholne hope to haue forzeuenesse of sinnes whiche þat is properly saluacione of synnes: [286] And þerfor seide þe Angel to Ioseph: þou clepest his name ihesus þat schal saue his peple of her sinnes: [287] And here of seiþ seinte Peter: There nys none opere name vnde heuen þat is zoue to any man bot only [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] Ihesus [288] nazarenus. Whiche is as moche to seine As florischeinge in whiche a man schal hope: þat he þat zeueþ him remissioun of sinnes: schal zeu also him grace wele to do: ¶ For in þe floure is þe hope of fruyte in tyme cominge And in forzefnesse of sinnes hope of grace wele to do: [289] ¶ .I. was att þe dore of þine herte seiþ ihesus and cleped for to entre ¶ He þat openeþ to me schal haue for-zeuenesse of sinne: [290] I. wil entre in to him be my grace And soupe with him be þe good werkes þat he schal done: whiche werkes bene þe foode of god: & he schal soupe wiþ me: be þe gret Ioy þat schal be zoue to him: [291] Thus man hope for his werkes of penance god scholde zeue him his regnè as he behoteþ him in þe gospel:

[292] ¶ Nowe schal man vnderstonde in whiche

manere schal be his contricion: .I. say þat it schal bue vniuersale & totale: þis is. to sei a man schal be verrey repentant for al his sinnes þat he haþ done in delite of his þouht: ffor delite is ful perilous: [293] ffor þer bien tuo maners of consentynges: þat one of hem is cleped consentynge of affeccioune whan a man is meved to do synne & deliteþ him longe for to þinke on þat sinne: [294] He haþe reson þat perteyneþ wele þat it is sinne aȝeines þe lawe of god: [. . . . . no gap in the MS.] Al þouhe his reson ne consent noȝt to do þe sinne in dede: [295] ȝut seine somme doctours þat suche delite þat dwelleþ longe is ful perilouse: al be it neuer so lite: [296] And also a man scholde sorwe for al þat: þat euer he haþ desired aȝeines þe lawe of [1]god with perfite consentinge of resoun: ffor þere of is no doute þat it ne is dedely sinne: In þe consentynge [297] [. . . . . no gap in the MS.] & in to þe dede: [298] where for .I. seye þat many men ne repenten hem neuere of suche þouhtes & delices ne neuer schreuen hem of it bot onely of þe dede of grete sinnes vtwarde. [299] where for .y. saye þat suche wikked delites & wikked þouhtes bien subtile begillours of hem þat scholne be dampned: [300] More ouere man ouht to sorwen For his wikked wordes: as for his wikked dedes ¶ For certes þe repentance of a singuler sinne and nouhte repent of al his oþere sinnes: or elles repent him of al his oþere sinnes: & not of singulere sinne maye nouht aveile [301] ¶ For certes almyhti god: is al goode. And þerfor he for-ȝeueþ aH: or elles riht nouht: [302] And here of seiþe seint Augustine. I. wote certeinly [303] þat god is enmy to euery sinner: And howe þan he þat obserueþ o synne schal he haue forȝeuenesse of þe

remenant of his opere sinnes: Nay: [304] ¶ And forpere ouer. contricion scholde be woundes sorwful: And Anguisschous: and perfor 3eueþ him god pleynly his mercy And þerfor whan Mi soule was anguysshous with in me .I. had remembrance of god þat my preyer myht com to him [305] ¶ Forpere ouere contricion must be continuel: and þat men haue stedfast purpos to schriue him: & for to amend him of his lif [306] ¶ ffor sopely whiles contricion lasteþ man maie haue hope of forȝefnesse: And of þis comeþ hate of sinne þat destruyeþ sinne boþe in him selfe and eke in opere folke as his power: [307] ffor whiche seiþe dauid: ȝe þat louen god hateþ wikkednesse: For trustuþ wele to loue god: is. for to loue þat he loueþ & hate þat he hateþe

Nota bene de qui sit amor dei

[308] ¶ The last þinge þat men schal vnderstond is þis: where of availeþ contricion: I. saie þat sumtim contricion deliuerþ a man fro sinne [309] of whiche þat dauid seiþe: I. saie quod dauid þat is to saie I purposed firmly to schryue me And þou lorde relesed my sinne: [310] ¶ And riht. so as contricion ne veileþ nouȝt with oute sadd purpos of scrifte [. . . : . . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] or satisfaccione wiþoute contricione [311] ¶ And more contricion distreyeþ þe prison of heH & makeþ wayke: And febleþ þe strengeþes .of· þe deueles: And restoriþ þe ȝift .of þe holy goste: And of al vertues [312] & interclenseþ þe soule of sinne: Ande deliuereþ þe soule fro þe peyne of· heH & fro þe compaignie of þe deuel: And fro þe seruage of synne ¶ And restoreþ to al goodes espirituele in to þe compaignie communyoun of holy kirke [313] ¶ And forpere ouere: it makeþ him þat was whilom soñ of Ire. to be þe soñ of grace: And al þis þinges he preueþ be holy writte: [314] And perefor he þat wolde sett his entent to þese þinges he war ful

wise: ffor soþe he scholde nouht þan in al his .lif to haue corage to sinne ¶ Bot þan his body & al his herte to þe seruise of ihesu criste: And þere of done him homoge [315] ¶ ffor certes oure swete lorde ihesu criste haþ spare vs so debonerly in oure folyes: þat if he ne hadd pite of mannes soule a sori songe miht we al singe: **Explicit prima pars penitencie**
Incipit secunda pars. eiusdem.

[316] [1 leaf 236. *MS. repeats* 1—3 And—none]
The secunde parte of penitence: is confession þat is signe of contricione: [317] Now scholne ȝe vnder-stande: what is confessioun: And [1]And wheþer it ouhte nedes to be or none: [2] And whiche þinges bene couenable: to verrey confession:

[318] ¶ ffirst schalt þou vnderstonde þat confessioun is verreye scheweinge of sinnes to þe preste: [319] þis is to seye verraly: þat he mote confessen him of alle þe condicions þat be-longen to his sinne as ferforþ as he can: [320] Al mote be saide & noþinge excused: ne hidde ne awrapped And nouht auaunt him of his goode werkes [321] ¶ And forþere ouere it is necessarie to vnder-stande whense þat sinnes springen: and howe þei encresen: And whiche þere biene

[322] of springeinge of sinnes: As seiþe seint Poule oñ þis wise ¶ þat rihte as be a man sinne entred first in to þis werlde & þoruht þat sinne deyede: Riht so þilke deþe entreþ in to al men þat sinneden: [323] And þis man was Adam be whome þat sinne entred into þis werlde whan þat he brakke þe commandement of god [324] ¶ And þere fore he þat first was so myhti þat he scholde not haue deied be-cam suche one þat him must nedes deie: wheþer he wolde or none: & al his progenie þat is in þis werlde þat in þilke manere synnen [325] ¶ Loke þat in þe state of innocence whan Adam & Eue

nakede weren in paradise: And noþinge schame ne hadden of here nakednesse. [326] How þat þe serpent þat was most wyly of al oþere bestes þat god had maked seide to þe womman ¶ Commaunded god to 3owe 3e schold nou3t of euery tre in paradise [327] The womman answeard: Of þe fruyte quod sche of þe trees in paradyse we feden vs bot soþely of þe fruyte of þe tre þat is in þe myddel of paradise: God for-bede vs for ete ne for to touche it lest parauentour we schold deyen: [328] þ^e^ serpent seid to þe womman Nay nay: 3e schol nou3t deye of deþe: for soþe god wote þat what daie 3e eten þereof 3oure ey3en schal open And 3e scholne bue as goddes knowynge goode & harme: [329] The womman sawhe þat þ^e^ tre was good to fedeinge & faire to þe y3e & delitable to þe sihte Sche toke of þ^e^ fruyte of þe tree & ete of it: And 3af it to hir husbonde & he ete: And anone þe ey3en of hem boþe opened: [330] And when þat þei knewe þat þei weren naked: þe sowde of fige leues in manere of breches to hiden hir membres: [331] ¶ Here maye 3e see þat dedely sinne haþ furst suggestion of þe fende: As scheweþ here be Hadder: And afterward þe delite of þ^e^ flesche as schewepe here by Eua: And after þat þe consentinge of þe resoun as scheweþ be adam: [332] For. trusteþ wele þouhe so were þat þe fende tempted one: þat is to saie þe flesshe And þe flesshe hadde delite in þe beaute of þe fruyte defended: 3ite certes til þat resoun: þat is to seie: Adam consentynge to þe eteynge of þe fruyte, þat stode hihe in þ^e^ state of Innocence [333] ¶ Of þilke Adam toke we þilke sinne of originale for of him flesshely discended bu we all: and engenderd of vile & corrupte matier: [334] And whan þe soule is put in oure bodye riht anone is contracte originale sinne: And þat was erst bot onely peyne of concupiscence is afterewarde boþe peyne & sinne: [335] And þerefor be we al yborne sonnes of

wraþ^e ⁝ And of dampnacioñ p*er*durable ⁝ if it nere Baptisme þ*at* we receyuen ⁝ which̄ be-nymmeþ vs þe culpe ⁝ Bot for soþe þe peyne duelleþ w*ith* vs as þe te*m*pta[1]cione ⁝ Whiche peine hiht concupiscence [336] And þ*is* concupiscence whan it is wrongfully disposed. or ordeinte in man ⁝ it makeþ him coueyten þe couetise of flesshly sinne be siht of his eyȝen ⁝ As to erþely þinges ¶ And eke couetise of hihenesse Be p*ri*de of hert ⁝/

[337] Now as for to speke of þe firste couetise þat is concupiscence after þe lawe of owre me*m*bres þat weren lawfulli maked and be rihtful Iuggement of god [338] .I. saie for alsomuche þat man is nouhte obeissant to god þ*at* is lorde ¶ þare for is flesshe to him disobeisant þoruhe concupiscence ⁝ [. . . . . .
. . . . . .
[339] . . . . . .
. . . . *no gap in the MS.*] It is i*m*possible bot he be distemp*er*ed sum time and noyde in his flesshe to sinne [340] And þis þinge maie nouht faile ⁝ as longe as þat leueþ ⁝ It maie wele wex feble & feile be vertu of Baptime & be þe grace of god þoruhe penitence ⁝ [341] Bot fully schal it neu*er*e quenche ⁝ þat he ne schal som time be meued in himself ⁝ Bot he were al refreyned be sekenesse or be malafice of sorcerye or colde drinkes ⁝ [342] ¶ For whatte seiþ seinte poule ⁝ The flesshe couetiþe aȝeine þe spirite ⁝ And þe spirite aȝeine þe flesche. þei bien so cont*r*arie ⁝ & so striuen þ*at* a man mai nouȝt done alwei as he wolde ⁝ [343] The same seiþe seinte Poule ⁝ After his grete penance in wat*er* & in land ⁝ In water be nyht & be daye in grete p*er*ile And in grete peine i*n* lande ⁝ & in famyne & in þurst ⁝ in colde & in cloþes wantynge ⁝ And ones stormed almoste to þe deþe ⁝ [344] ȝitte seid he Alas .I. keytif man who schal deliuer me fro þe p*ri*son; of my caitif body ⁝ [345] ¶ And seint Ierom wha*n* he longe time had woned in deserte ⁝ Where as he hadd no co*m*paignie bot bestes ⁝ Where as he hadde

no mete bot erbes: & water to his drink: ne no bedde bot þe naked erþe: For whiche his flesshe was blac as an Ethiopen for hete & nyhe destruyed for colde: [346] ȝete seyde he þe birneynge of lycheri boyled in al his body [347] ¶ Where-for .I. wote wele sekurly þat þei bu desceyuede þat seine þat þei ne bien nouȝt tempted in her body: [348] wittenesse of seint Iame þe Appostle þat seiþe þat eu*er*y whihte is tempted in his owen concupiscence: þat is to seye þat eu*er*yche of vs haþe matier & occasion to be tempted of þe norissheinge of sinne þat is in his bodye [349] ¶ And þ*er*fore seiþ seinte Iohñ in þe eu*a*ungeliste: If þ*at* we seine þ*at* we be wiþ outen sinne we deceyuen oureself & treuþe is nouht in vs:

[350] ¶ Nowe scholn ȝe vnderstonde in what man*er*e sinne waxeþ & encreseþ in man: The first þinge is þilke norischeinge of sinne of whiche .I. spak be forne þilke concupiscence: [351] And after þat co*m*meþ þ^e^ suggestione of þe deuel: þis is to seie þe deueles belye þe whiche he bloweþ in man þe fire of concupiscence [352] ¶ And after þat a man beþinkeþ him whe*þer*e he wil do or none þilk þinge to whiche he is tempted: [353] And þan if þat a man wiþ-stande and weife þe firste entiseinge of his flesshe and of oþe fende: þan is it no sinne: And if so be þat he do not so þan feleþ he anone a fla*m*me of delite: [354] and þan it is goode to be ware & to kepe him wele: or elles he wil faH anone in to consentynge of sinne: And [1]þan wil he do it if he maye haue time & space: [355] And of þis matier seiþ Moyses be þe deuel in þis man*er*e: The fende fende seiþe .I. wil chace & p*ur*sewe þe man be wikked suggestiones: and .I. wil hente him be moveinge or stereinge of sinne ¶ And .I. wiH departe my prise or my preye be deliberacion & my lust schal bue complised in delice: I. wil drawe my swerde in consentinge: [356] ¶ For certes riht as as a swerde departeþ a þinge in two peces: Riht

so consentinge departeþ god fro man. ⸗ And þan wil .I. sle him *with* myne honde in deþe of sinne: þus seiþe þe fende. [357] For certes þan is a man al dede in soule: And þus is sinne complised by temptacion be delite & be consentynge: And þan is sinne cleped: a [1] uũiel: [1 auũ *for* actu]

[358] ¶ For soþe sinne is in two maner*s*: ey*þer*e it is veniale sinne or dedely sinne Soþe whan men loveþ any creature more þan ih*es*u criste oure creato*ur* þan is it dedely sinne: And venial sinne is if man loue ih*es*u crist lesse þan him ouht: [359] The dede for soþe of þis venial sinne is ful *per*ilous. For it amenuseþ þe loue þat men schold haue to god more & more: [360] ¶ And *per*for if a man charge more him self wiþ suche mony venial sinnes certes bot if it so be þat he sum tym discharge him be schrift: þei maie ful lihtly amenuse in hi*m* al þe loue þat he haþ to ih*es*u criste: [361] And in þis scippeþe venial in to dedely sinne ¶ For certes þe more þat a man chargeþ his soule wiþ venial sinnes: þe more is he enclined to fal in dedely sinne: [362] And *per*fore lat vs not be necligent to discharge vs of veniale sinnes: ffor þe pr*o*uerbe seiþe: þat mony a smale makeþ a grete: [363] An herken þis ensample: A grete wawe of þe see co*m*meþ sum time wiþ so grete a violence: þat it drencheþ þe schippe

¶ Ex*emplum* ¶ And þe same harme done som tim þe smale dropes of water: þat entreþ þoruhe a luytel creuyse in to þe þurroke & in to þe bothom of þe schippe if men bu so necligent: þ*at* men ne discharge he*m* nouht be time: [364] And *per*fore al þouhe þ*er*e bue difference betuex þes tuo causes of drencheinge: Algate þe schipe is dreinte: [365] Riht so fareþ it somtyme of dedely sinne: & of anoyous venials sinnes whan þei multiplie in a man so gretely: þat þilke worldly þinges þat þoruhe whiche He sinneþ venyaly: ys as grete in his herte as þe loue of god or more [366]

[1] And *per*e-for þe loue of eue*ry* þinge þat is not be-sette in gode: ne done p*ri*ncipale for goddes sake: Al þouhe a man loue it lasse þan god: 3it is it venial sinne: [367] And dedely sinne whan þe loue of any þinge weyeþe in þe hert of a man as muche as þe loue of god ore[1] more [368] ¶ more dedely sinne As seiþ seinte Austine: is whan man turneþ his herte fro god whiche þat is verrey souereyne bounte þat mai nouht chaunge: & 3iveþ [2] his herte to a þinge þat mai chaunge & flitte: [369] And certes þat is eue*ry* þinge saue onely god of heuene: For soþe is if þat a man 3iueþ his loue whiche þat he oweþe al to god. w*ith* al his herte vnto a creature: Certes as muche of loue as he 3eueth to whiche creature so muche bereueþ fro god: [370] And *per* for doþe he sinne: For he þat is dett*our* to god ne 3eldeþ nou3 al his dette to god þat his to seye al þe loue of his herte

[371] ¶ Nowe seþ þat a man vnderstandeþ gene*ra*ly. Whyche is venyale sinne Than is it couenable to tellen of special sinnes whiche þat a man *per*aduenture ne demeþ hem nouht sinnes ne schriueþ hem nouht of þe same þinges And 3it naþ̄les þei bue sinnes: [372] ¶ As clerkes writen soþly þis is to seye þat eue*ry* time þat a man eteþ or drinkeþ more þan sufficeþ to þe sustinance of his body: in certeine he doþe sinn [373] And eke whane he speke þ more þan it nede: it is sinne: Eke whan he herkeneþ nouht mekely þe compleinte of þe pore: [374] eke whan he is in hele of body & wol nouht fast whan o*per*e men fast wiþ outen cause resonable: Eke whenne he slepeþ more þan him nedeþ: or whan he co*m*meþ be þilk encheson late to cherche or to o*per*e werkes of charite: [375] Eke whan he vseþ his wif wiþ oute sou*er*eine desire of engendrure to þe hono*ur* of god: or for þentent to 3elde to his wif þe dette of his body: [376] Eke whan he wil not vesete þe seke: or p*ri*soners whan he maie;

[1—1] repeated in MS. at ¶ LANSDOWNE 631 (6-T. 617) [2] leaf 237, back]

eke if he loue wif or childe or any werldly þinge more þan reson requireþ: Eke if he flater or blandische more þan him ouht for any necessite: [377] Eke if he amenuseþ or wiþdraweþ þe almos of þe pore: Eke if he apparelеþ his mete mor deliciouly þan nede is or ete it to hastely be lykurusnesse: [378] eke if he tel vanitees att þe cherche or in goddes seruise: or þat he be a talker of ydel-wordes of Folye or of velanye: ffor he schal 3elde acomptes of it att þe daie of dome: [379] Eke whan he beheteþ or assureþ to done þinges þat he may not performe: Eke whan þat be lyhtenesse of foly mysvseþ or scorneþ his neyhboure [380] Eke whan he haþe any suspecione of þinge þere he ne wote of it no soþefastnesse: [381] Thes þinge & mo wiþ owten nombre buen sinnes as seiþ seinte Austine

[382] ¶ Now schol3e vnderstonde þat albeit so þat none erþely man maye eschewe al veniale sinnes: 3it maie he refreyne him be þe birneinge loue þat he haþe to oure lorde ihesu criste: And be preyers & be confession & opere good werkes: so þat it schal bot litel greue: [383] ffor as seiþe seint austyne: If a man lof god in suche manere þat al þat euere he doþe is in þe loue of god or for þe loue of god verreyly: for he birneþ in þe loue of god: [384] Loke howe muche þat a drope of water falleþ in a fornayce & fol of fire anoyeþ or greueþe: so muche a venial sinne is vnto a man þat is parfite in þe loue of ihesu crist: [385] ¶ Men maye also refreine venial sinne: be þe receyueinge of þe preciouse body of ihesu crist: [386] be receyueinge eke of holy water: be almusdede/ be general confession of þe confiteor att þe masse: Att complyne: & be blissinge of bysschopes & be prestes & by oþer good werkes:

De .7. peccatis mortalibus

De Superbia. [from the side]

[387]
[1]NOWe is it be-houely þinges to tellen whiche buen. þe .vij. de[d]ly sinne: þat is to sey chaytifnesse of sinnes Bot al þei renne in Cŏles: Bot in diuerse manere nowe bue þei cleped kaytifs: for alsomuche as þe bu chef & springen of al opere sinnes [388] of þe rote of þes frisynnes: [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] ffor if þis rote springen certeyne braunches as ire envie accidie. or sleuþe. auarice: or couetise: to comune vnder-stondeinge Glotony. & lychery: [389] And euꝛyche of þese cheue sinnes haþ his braunches & his þinges as schal be declared in here chapeter foloweynge:

[*Of the Twigs of Pride.*]

[390] And þouhe so be þat noman can telle vtterly þe nomebre of þe þinges & of þe harmes þat comeþ of pride. 3it wil .I. schewe a party of hem as 3e schol vnderstonde: [391] ¶ There is. Inobedience: Auaunteinge: Ipocrisye Despite. Arrogance. Impudence. Swelinge of hert: Insolence. Elacione: [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] Pertenacie: Veinglorie: And many a noþer þinge. þat: I. kan nouht declare: = [392] Inobedience is he þat disobeyeþ for despite to þe commaundement of god and to his souereygnes & to his gostly fadere [393] ¶ Auantour is he þat bosteþ of þe harme or of þe bounte þat he haþ done: [394] Ypocrise is he þat hideþ him to schewe him suche as he is: & scheweþ him suche as he not is: [395] ¶ Dispitous is he þat haþ disdeine of his neyhbours: þat is to seine of his euencristen: or haþe despite to do þat him ouhte to do: [396] ¶ Arrogant. is he þat þinkeþ þat he haþe þilke bountes in him þat he haþe nouht: or

weneþ þat he scholde haue hem be his desire: Or elles þat he demeþ þat he be þat he nys' note [397] ¶ Impudent is he þat for his pride haþe no schame for his sinne: [398] Swellinge of hert is he whan a man reioyseþ him of harme þat he haþ done: [399] Insolent is he þat despiseþ in his Iuggement al opere folke as to regarde of his value: & of his comuneinge. & of his spekeinge: And of his bereinge. [400] ¶ Elacione is whan þat he maie neyþer suffur tó haue Maister ne felawe: [401] ¶ Impacient is he: þat wil nouht bue ytauht ne vndernome of his vice: & bé strif werreþ troupe witingly: & mayntineþ his folye: [402] ¶ Contumace is he þat þoruhe his indignacion is aȝeines euerycne auctorite or pouer of hem þat bien his souereignes [403] ¶ Presumpcioñ is he whan a man takeþ an emprise þat him ouht not to do: or elles he maie it not do: & þat is called Surquidre: ¶ Irreuerence is whan men do nouht honoure: þere as hem ouhte to do: An wayteþ to be Reuereinset: [404] ¶ Pertinacy whan a man defendeþ his folye And truste to muche to his owen witte:=[405] veyne glorie is for to haue pompe & delite in temporile richesse: & glorifieþ hem in worldly estates: [406] Iangelynge: is whan a man spekeþe to muche to for folke An clappeþe as a mullen & takeþ no kepe what he seiþe:

[407] And ȝite is þere a priue spice of pride þat wayteþ furst to be halowed or he be salute al bue he lesse worþe þan þe toþere is peraduenture: And eke waiteþ or desireþe to site or to go aboue him in þe weie: or kisse pax or bue encensed or go to offringe to for his neyhboure [408] ¶ And suche [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] a proude desire to be magnified: & honoured be for þe peple:

[409] ¶ Nowe bene þere tuo maners [1]of pride þat on of hem is wiþinne þe herte of man: And þat

oþer is *with* owte: [410] Of whiche soþely þe forseide þinges & mo þan .I. haue seide a*par*tinent to pride: þat is in þe hert of man: ¶ And *þer* to o*þer*e spices of p*ri*de buen wiþ oute [411] Bot Naþelesse one of þ^e^ spices of pruyde is signe of þat o*þer*e: Riht as þe gay louesal att tauerners is signe of þe wyne þat is in þe seler: [412] And þis is in mony þinges. as in speche & in countenances: and in outrageous araye of cloþeinge: [413] ffor Certes if it nadde be no sinne in cloþeinge: Crist wold nouht so sone haue noted & spoke of þe cloþeinge: of þilke riche man in þe gospell [414] ¶ And as seiþe seint Gregorie: þat precious cloþe is coupable for þe derþe of it: And for his soþenesse & for his strangenesse: & for his disgisinesse: and for þe super-fluite: Or for þe ino[r]diñance scantnesse: [. . . [415]

. . . . . .

. . . . . .

. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]

[416] ¶ As to þe firste sinne þat is in *super*fluyte of cloþeinge whiche þat makeþ it so dere to harme of þe pele [417] þat onely þe cost. of enbrowdeinge: þe degise endentinge or barringe owndeynge paleinge or bendeinge: And sembla wast of cloþeinge i*n* vanite [418] ¶ Bot þer is also costlewe furringe in hi*re* gounes: so muche pounseinge of cheseles to make holes: so muchel dagynge off scheres [419] forþe wiþe þe super*fluyte* in lenkeþ of þe forsaid gownes: traylein in þe donge & in þ^e^ myre on hors & eke on fote as wele of man as of wo*m*man: þat al þilke trayleinge is verraly as in effecte wasted & consumed: þrede bare & roten wiþ donge: raþer þan it is 3ouen to þe pouer: to grete damage of þe forseide pouer folke: [420] & þat in sondre wyse ¶ þis is to seie þo more þat cloþe is wasted: þe more mot it cost to þe peple for þe scarsenesse [421] And: for*þer*e ou*er*. if it so be þat þei wolde 3eue suche pounsed &

dagged clopeinge to þe pore folke it is nouht conuenient to were for her astate: ne sufficeant to bete her necessite: to kepe hem fro þe desperacione of þe colde firmament: [422] ¶ On þat opere side to speke of þe disordinate scantnesse of clopinge: as bien þis cutted sloppes or hanslynes þat þoruh her schortnesse ne couern not þe schamful membres of a man to wykked entente: [423] Alas sum of hem: somme of hem shewen þe schappe & þe boce of þe orrible swollen membres þat semeþ ylyke to þe maladye of hyrnya in þe wrappeinge of her hoses: [424] And eke þe buttokkes of hem: þat fareþ as it war þe hinder parte of a sche ape in þe ful of þe mone: [425] And more ouer þe wreched swolne membres þat þei schewe þoruhe disgiseinge in departinge of her hoses white & rede semeþ þat halue him schamful priue membres: weren fleyne: [426] And so þe þat þei departen her hoses in opere colours as is white & blak: or white & blewe: or blakke & rede: & so forþe [427] ¶ þan ne semeþ it as be variance of colour þa halfe þe partie of his priue membres been corrupte be þe fire of seint Antonye: or be Cancre or be suche opere meschaunces [428] ¶ 3it of þe hinder parte of her buttokes: it is ful orrible for to see: ffor certes in þat partie of hir bodye þer as þei purgen her stinkinge ordure [429] þat foule partie schewe þei proudely to þe peple in despite of honeste: Whiche honeste þat ihu criste & his frendes obserued to schew in his lyf. [430] ¶ Now as to owtrageous araye of wemmen: God woote þouhe þe visages of hem semen ful chaste & debonayre. 3it notifien þei in here araye of atyre likerousnesse & pruyde [431] ¶ I say not þat honeste in clopeinge of man: & womman is vncouenable Bot certes þe superfluyte or þe disordinance scantid of clopeinge is reproueable [432] Also þe sinne of a-ornement or appareile as in þinges þat appartenen to Rideinge: As in to mony delicate horses þat be holden

for delite: þat þei bien so faire fatte & costlewe: [433] And also mony a viciouse knave ymayntende be cause of hem: And in to corious harneyse: as in sadels in cropreres. peytrelles: & bridelles couerd wiþ precious cloþe & riche Barres: & plates of gold. & of siluere: [434] For whiche god seiþe by Sacarie þe prophet: I. wil confounde þe riders of suche horses: [435] This folke taken litel rewardeinge of þe rideinge of goddes sonne of heuen and of his harneys [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] bot cloþes of his pouere disciples Ne we rede nouȝt þat euer he rode on oþere beste: [436] I speke þus of þe sinne of superfluyte: And nouht for þe resonable honeste: whan reson it requireþ: [437] ¶ And forþer ouere Certes pride is gretly notified in holdeinge of grete meigne: when þei bien of luytel profite or riht of no profite: [438] And namely whan þat meneȝe is felenous & damageous to þe people by hardynesse of hihe lordeschippe: or be way of office [439] ¶ For certes suche lordes: fullen þan her lorschipe to þe deuel of hell: whan þe susteigne þe wykkednesse of here menȝe; [440] Or elles whan þis folke of lowe degre: as þilke þat holden hosteleries: And þat is in mony maner of folke þat susteyne þeft for hire ostelers: And þat is in mony maner of disceytes: [441] þilke maner of folke bien þe flyes þat folowen þe hony. Or elle þe hundes þat þat folowen þe Careyne: Whiche for-seide folke stranglen spirituelyé her lordschippes: [442] ffor whiche þus seiþ dauid þe prophette: Wikked deþ mot comme on þilke lordeschipes: And god ȝeue þat þei mote descende adoune in to helle: ffor in hire houses bien iniquitees: And schrewnessis & not god of heuen: [443] And certes bot if þei done amendement: Riht so as god ȝaf his blissinge to pharao be þ[e s]eruice of Iacob: And to laban be þe seruice of Ioseph: Riht so god wol ȝeue his malison to suche lordeschips And to susteine þe wikkednesse of her seruantes: but þei

comme [444] proudly to þe table and appereþ eke ful oft: ffor certes riche men bu cleped to festes and, pouere folke bien putte aweie: And rebuked [445] in excesse of diuerse metes & drinkes: And namely suche maner of Baken metes [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] & of semblable waste so þat it is abusion for to þinke: [446] And eke of grete preciousenesse of vesseH: & curiosite of mynstralcie: By þe whiche a man is stered þe more to delices of luxurie: [447] If so be þat he sette his herte þe lasse on oure lorde ihesu criste: certeyne it is a sinne: And certeynly þe delices myht be so grete in þe case þat men myht lyhtly fa by hem in-to dedely sinne: [448] ¶ The espices þat sourden of pruyde: soþely whan [1] þei sourden of malice ymageniyd and avised and aforne cast: Or elles of vsage bien dedely sinnes it is no doute [449] & whan þei sourden be frelte vnavised sodanly & sodanly wiþ-drawe aʒeine al be þei greuous sinnes .I. gesse þat þei bu nouht dedelye: [450] ¶ Nowe might men ax where-of þat pride sourdeþ and springeþ: And .I. sum time it springeþ of goodes of Nature: And somme time of þe goodes of fortune And sum tim of þe goodes of grace: [451] Certes þe godes of nature standen in þe goodes of bodye or goodes of soule: [452] Certes goodes of body bene hele of bodye: strenkeþ: diliuernesse: beaute: genterye: ffraunchises: [453] Godes of Nature of þe soule bien goode wiþ scharp vndestandinge subtile engyne: vertue naturelH. goode memorie: [454] ¶ Goode of fortune bien richesse: hihe degrees of lordeschippes ¶ Preyseinges of þe peple [455] Goodes of grace biene sciences powere to suffur spyrituele: traveyle benyngnites: vertuous contemplacione withstondinge of temptacione: And semblable þinges: [456] of whiche forseide goodes certes it is a ful grete folye a man to pride him in any of hem aH [457]

¶ Nowe as for to speke of goodes of nature: god wote þat sum tyme we haue hem in nature: Als muche to oure damage as to oure profite: [458] As for to speke of hele of body: Certes it passet ful lyhtlye: And eke it is ful ofte encheson of þe sekenesse of þe soule: ffor god woote þe flesche is a ful grete enmy to þe soule: And þerfore þe more þat A body is hole: þe more be we in peril to falle: [459] Eke for to pride him in þe strenkeþ of his bodie: it is an hyhe foly: For certes þe flesche coueyteþ aȝeine þe spirit: And ay þe more stronge þe flesche is: þe sorier maie þe soule be: [460] and ouere al þis strenkeþ of body: ad werldly hardinesse causeþ oft mony men to perile & meschaunce: [461] Eke for to pride him of his gentire: ys ful grete foly: ffor oftentime þe genterye of þe soule: and [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] eke we bene al of o fader and al of o moder: And al we be of o nature roten & corrupte riche & pore: [462] ffor soþe a manere a maner of gentirie is for to preyse þat appareleþ mannes corage wiþ vertuse of moralites & makeþ him cristes childe: [463] For trusteþe wele þat ouere what man þat sinne haþe maystre he is verrey cherle to synne

[464] ¶ Nowe bien þere general þinges of gentillesse. as eschewynge of vices: or rebaudry & seruage of sinne. In worde in werke & contenance. [465] and vsinge vertue Curtasye & clennesse & to be liberal þat is to seie large be mesure: for þilke þat passe mesure is foly & synne [466] ¶ Anoþer is to remembre him of bounte þat he of oþe folke haþe receyuede: [467] Anoþere is to be benygne of his sugettet Where fore: as seiþ senec þer is no þinge more couenable to a man of hihe astate þan debonarte & seite: [468] ¶ And þer for [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] bees whan þey chese hem a kinge: þei chesen him þat haþ no þinge wiþþe to stinge: [469]

Anoþere is a man to haue a noble herte & a diligent to atteigne to hihe vertuous þinges: [470* *see after* 474 *and Hengwrt and Petworth MSS.* . . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] [471] Certes also who þat prideþ him in þe goodes of fortune he is a ful grete foole: ffor sometyme is a mān a ful grete lorde be þe morwe: þat is a wreche & a keytif ar it be nyht.[1] [472] [And sumtyme þe [. . . . . *no gap in Reg.* 18, *C.* 2] delytes of a man ben cause of þe greuous maladye þoruȝ whiche he deyetħ [473] Certes þe Comendacion of þe peple is sumtyme ful fals & ful brutel for to triste / þis day þey preise to morn [2]þey blame // [474] God woot desire to haue comendacioñ eke of peple hatħ caused dethħ to many a besy man // [*470] Now certes a man to pruyde hym in godes of grace / is eke an outragous folye // for þilke ȝyftes of grace þat schulde haue turned hym to goodnesse & to medecyne turnyth hym to venym & to confusion as saiþ seint *gregorie* / [475] Now sethins þat so is þat ȝe haue vnderstanden what is pruyde and whiche ben þe spices of hit & wēines *pride* sourdeth and *spr*ingeþ

[1 *a leaf cut out of Lansd. MS.; itare supplied from* Reg. 18, C. 2, *on lf* 249, *bk.*]

[*The Remedy against Pride.*]

[476] Now schul ȝe vndirstonde whiche is þe remedye aȝayns pruyde & þat is humylite or meknesse [477] þat is *ver*tu þurgħ whiche a man hatħ verray knowelache of hym self And haldeth of hym self no *pris* / ne deyntee as in regarde of his des*er*tis considerynge eu*er* his freelte / [478] Now ben *þere* iij man*ers* of humylyte / As humylyte in herte anoþ*er* [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] in mouth þe iij is in werkes / [479] þe humylyte in herte is in 4 man*ers* þat on is when a man holdeth hym self as nouȝt worth by forn god of heuene / Anoþ*er* is whenne he dispiseth

non oþer man // [480] þe þridde is whenne he rekkeþ not þorwȝ men holde hym nouȝt worthi // þe iiij is whenne he nys not sory of hys humilyacion [481] Also þe humylyte of mouthe is in 4 þinges // In ateemprure speche & in humble of speche And whenne he by-houythi wiþ his owen mouthi þat he is suche as hym þenkiþ þat he is in his herte Anoþer is whenne he preisiþ þe bounte of anoþer man / And noþing þerof amenusiþ [482] humylyte // Eke in werk is in 4 maners / þe firste is whenne he puttiþ oþer men biforn hym / The secunde is to chese þe loweste place ouer alt / The iij is gladly to assente to good counsel / [483] The 4 is gladly to stande to reward of Souerayn or of hym þat is heier in degre Certeyn þis is a gret werke of humylyte

Inuidia.

[484]
After pruyde wol y speke of þe foule synne of Enuye whiche þat is as by þe worde of þe philozofre Sorwe of oþer mannes prosperite and aftir þe word of Seint Austyn Hit is sorwe of oþere mennes wele And ioye of oþer mannes harme // [485] þis foule synne is platly aȝayn þe holy gost Al be hit so þat euery synne is aȝayn þe holy goste // ȝet for asmoche as bounte appertyneth properly to þe holy gost [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]

[486] ¶ Now haþ malice 2 spices þat is to seye hardnesse of herte And wickednesse or elles þe flesch of a man is so blynde þat he conciderep not þat he is in synne [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] whiche is þe hardnesse of þe deuel // [487] That other [1] spice of Enuye is whenne þat a man werreth trouthe when þat he woot þat hit is trowthe And eke when þat he werreieth þe grace of þat god hath ȝoue to his

neighbore & al þis is by Enuye [488] Certes þenne is Enuye þe worste synne þat is // ffor soothly alle oþer synnes ben somtyme ayayn o special vertu [489] ¶ But certes Enuye is ayayns alle vertues & of alle goodnesses // ffor hit is sory of alle bountes of neighebore and in þis manere hit is dyuers from alle oþer synnes // [490] ffor wel vnnethis is þer any synne þat hit ne hath som delyte in hym self safe only enuye þat euer hath in hym self anguysch and sorwe [491] ¶ The spices of enuye ben þese þer is first sorwe of oþer mennes goodnes and of her prosperite [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] is kyndly matere of ioye þenne is enuyé a synne ayayns kynde // [492] The 2e spice is ioye of oþer mennes harme [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] [493] Of þis 2e spice cometh bakbytyng [. . . . *no gap in the MS.*] or detraccion hath tweyn spices as þus / Som men preisiþ his neighboure by a wicked entent [494] for he makeþ alwey a wicked knotte at þe laste ende alwey he makeþ a butte at þe laste ende ¶ þat is digne & more blame þen worþ is alle þe plesynge // [495] The 2e spice is þat if a man be good & dooth & saith a þing to good entent / þe bacbyter wol turne alle þe goodnesse vp so doun to his schrewed entent / [496] ¶ þe .3e. is to amenuse þe bountee of his neyzbore / [497] þe 4 spice of bakbytyng is þis þat if men speke goodnesse of a man wol þe bacbyter sayn parfay suche a man zet is bettere þen he in dispreisynge of hym þat men preise / [498] þe 5. spice is for to consente gladly herkne þe harme þat men speke of oþer folk þis synne is ful gret and ay encresit after þe wicked entent of þe bacbyter [499] ¶ After bakbytynge comeþ grucchynge or mormuraunce / and somtyme hit sprungeþ of inpacyence ayayns god and somtyme ayayns man //

[500] Aȝayns [god] it is whenne a man grucchiþ aȝayn þe payne of helle or aȝayns pouer't or losse of Cateƚ or aȝayn reyne or tempest or elles gruccheþ þat schrewes han prosperite or elles þat good men han aduersyte [501] and alle þese þinges schulde men suffre paciently for þey comyn by þe riȝtful Iugement & ordinaunce of god // [502] Somtyme cometh grucchynge of auarice as Iudas grucchyd aȝayns þe magdelen when sche ennoynted þe heued of oure lord ihesu Crist wiþ here preciouse oignement [503] ¶ þis manere of mormure is suche as when men grucchen of goodnesse & þat men selue doon Or þat oþer folk doon of her owen [1] Cateƚ [504] Somtyme comyth murmur of pruyde as when Symon þe Pharisee grucchid aȝayns Magdaleyn when sche approched to ihesu crist and wepte at his fete for her synnes / [505] And somtyme hit sourdeth of Enuye when men discoueren a mannes harome þat was prynce or berith him an hand þing þat is fals [506] ¶ Murmur is eke ofte amange seruauntz þat grucched when her soueraignes bidden hem to doon leefful þinges / [507] And for asmoche as þey dar noȝt openly wiþsaye þe commaundementes of her souerayne ȝet woln þey saye harm & grucche & murmur pryuyly for verrey dispyte // [508] wiche wordes men clepe þe deuels pater noster þouȝ so be þat þe deueƚ had neuer pater noster but þat folke ȝeuen hit suche a name // [509] Somtyme hit comeþ of yre or of pryue hate þat norischeth rancour in herte / as afterward I schal declare / [510] þenne comeþ eke bitternesse of herte þurgh wiche bitternesse euery good dede of his neighbore semeþ to hym bitter and vnsauery / [511] Then comeþ discorde [2]] [3] þat vnbyndeþ almaner of frindeschepe: þat commeþ scorenynge of [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] his neyhebore al do he neuer so wele: [512] þan commeþ accuseinge: as whan a man sekeþ occasione to anoyen his

[2 Reg. 18, C 2, extract, leaf 251, ends]
[3 Lansdowne MS, 851, leaf 240]

neyhboure: Whiche þat is like þe crafte of þe deuel: þat wayteþ boþ day & nyht to accusen vs aH: [513] ¶ þan commeþ malignite þorwhe whiche a ma anoyeþ his neihbour priuely. if he maie: [514] And if he nouht ne may algates his wikked wil ne schal not wante: as for to birne his house priuely or openly: or slene his bestees: & semblable þinges:

[The Remedy against Envy.]

[515]¶ Nowe wil .I. speke of þe remedye aȝeines þis foule sinne of Envie: ffirst is þe loue of god principal & loueinge of him selfe & of his neyhbour. ffor soþely þe tone maie not be withouten þe toþere. [516] And trusteþ wele þat in þe name of þi neyhboure þou schalt vnderstande þe name of þi broþere ffor certes al we haue o fader ffleschely & o moder: þat is to seye Adam & Eue: & eke o fader spirituele þat is to seie god of heuen: [517] þine neyhbour ert þou holden for to loue & wilne him al godenesse: And þerefor seiþe god loue þine neyhbour as þi self: þat is to saluacion boþ to lyue & to soule: [518] And more ouere þou schal loue him in worde & benygne ammonesscheynge: And chastiseinge: And comfort him in his anoyes: And praye for him wiþ al þine herte: [519] And in dede þou schalt loue him in suche wise þat þou schalte done to him in charite: As þou woldest were done to þine owen persone: [520] And þerfore þou schalte note done him no damage in wykked worde ne harme in his body ne in his catel ne in his soule be entiseinge of wykked ensample. [521] þou schalt nouht desire his wyf ne none of his þinges: vnderstande eke: þat in þe name of þi neyhbour. is comprehended his enmye [522] ¶ Certes a man schal loue his enemye for þe commandementz of god: And soþely. þi frende schalt þou loue in god: [523] I. sei þin ennemye schalt þou loue for goddes saake by his commande-

ment: ffor if it were reson. þat man scholde hate his ennemye: for soþ god wol not receyue vs to his loue þat bien his enemyes [524] aȝeines þre manere of of wronges: þat his Ennemy doþe to him: He schal do þre þinges: As þus: [525] Aȝeines hate & rankour of hert: He schal loue him *in* Herte aȝeine chideinge & wikkede wordes. he schal praie for his Ennemy. ¶ Aȝeines þe wikked dede of his ennemye he schal done him bounte: [526] ¶ For Crist seiþe: loueþ ȝoure enemys And preieþ for hem þat spekeþ ȝowe harme /./ And eke for hem þat ȝowe chasen: & pursewen: And doþe bounte to hem þat ȝowe haten: =Lo þus commandeþ vs oure lorde ihesu criste to do to oure enemyes: [527] For soþely nature driues vs to loue oure frendes. And parfey oure enemys haue more nede to loue þan oure frendes: And þei þat mor nede had: to hem schal men do goodenesse [528] ¶ And certes in þilke dede haue þe remembrance of þe loue of ihesu criste þat deyed for his ennemys: [529] ¶ And in almuche þat þilke loue is þe more to performe: So muche is more þe gre merit: And perefore þe loueinge of oure Enmi: Haþ confounde þe venime of þe deuyll: [530] ffor rih as þe deuel is dis¹comfite be humilite Riht so is he woundede to to þe deþe be þe loue of oure Enmye: [531] Certes þan is loue þe medecyne þat cacheþ oute þe venym of Envye Fro mannes herte [532] ¶ þe spices of þis pas scholne bue more largely in here chapetles folowynge:

de Ira [*from the margin*]

[533] After Ennevie wil .I. declare þe sinne of Ire: For soþely who þat haþe envy vpon his neyhbour: anone comunly he wil finde him matier of wreþþe in worde or in dede aȝeines him to whome he haþ envie: [534] and as wele comeþ Ire of pride

as of envie: for sopely he þat is proude or envious: is lyhtly wroþe

[535] ¶ Þis sinne of ire after þe discriueinge of seinte Austine: Is wikked wiH to bue avengede be worde or by dede: [536] ¶ Ire after þe Philosofre. Is þe feruent blode of man. ywhiked in his hert þorwhe whiche he wil harme to him þat he hateþ: [537] ¶ For certes þe hert of man be enchaufeinge & moueinge of his blode waxeþ so trouble þat he is out of al Iuggement of Reson: [538] Bot ȝe schal vnderstonde þat Ire is in two maners: þat on of hem is goode & þat oþere is wikked [539] ¶ The good Ire is be Ielowsy of goodnesse þoruhe þe whiche a man is wroþe with wikkednesse & aȝeines wykkednesse: And þere fore seiþe þe wise man: þat ire is bett þan pleye: [540] Þis ire is wiþ debonarte: Ant it is wroþe wiþ outen bitternesse nouht wroþe aȝeines þe man. bot wroþe wiþ þe mysdede of þe man as seiþe þe prophet dauid: Irascimini & nolite peccare [541] ¶ Nowe vnderstonde þat wykked yre is in tuo maners: þat is to seine sodeine Ire wiþe outen avisement & consentinge of his reson: [542] þe meneynge & þe sense of þis: is· þat þe reson of a man consenteþ nouht to þilke sodeine Ire: & þan is venial: [543] ¶ Anoþere Iire is ful wikked þat comeþ of velany of hert avised & cast before wiþ wikked wiH to do vengeance: And þerto his Resoun consenteþ: And so sopely þis is dedely synne: [544] This Ire is so displesant to god þat it troubleþ his hous & chaseþe þe holy gost oute of mannes soule: [. . . . . .

. . . . . .

. . . . *no gap in the MS.*] [545] & put in him þe liknes of þe deuel: & be-nymmeþ þe man fro god þat is rihtful lorde [546] ¶ This ire is a ful grete plesance to þe deuel; ffor it is þe deuel forneys þat is ychaufed with þe fire of heH [547] ffor certes

as fuyre is more myhtye to distroye. erþely þinges þan anoþere Element: Riht so is ire myhty to destreye al spriruel þinges: [548] Loke howe þat fuyre of smale gledys þat bien almost dede vnder asshen wyth qwyken aȝeine whan þei whan þei bue touched with brimstone: Riht so Ire with qwykene aȝeine whan it is touched be pruide þat is couerde in mannes herte: [549] ffor certes fire may not comme out of noþinge bot if were first in þe same þinge naturelly: As fire is drawen oute of flintes wiþ stele: [550] And riht so as pride is often matire of Ire: Riht so is Rancour norische & kepere of þe wraþþe in þe mannes hert: [551] ¶ Ther' is a manere tree as seiþ seint Isodere: þat whān men makeþ fire of þilke tre And coueręþ þe coles of it wiþ asshen: Soþely þe fire of it wil lasten al a ȝere or more: [552] And riht so fareþ it of Rankoure: Whan he is ones conseyued in þe hert of siñne man: Certeyne it wil last paraduenture [1]Frōme one Hester day vnto anoþere esterdaie or more: [553] Bot certes þilke man is fer fro þe mercy of god al þilke while

[554] in þis forsaide deuels forneys where forgen· .thre schrewes: Pride þat al blowþe & encreseþ þe fire be chideinge & wykked wordes: [555] þan standeþ envye & holdeþ þe hote yren vpon þe hertes of man wiþ a peire of longe tonges of longe Rankoure: [556] And þan stant þe sinne of contumely or strif & chest: & batereþ & forgeþ be veleynes reproueynges: [557] ¶ Certes þis cursed sinne anoyeþ boþe þe man him self & eke to his neyhbour: For soþely almost al þe harme þat any man doþe to his neyhbour: commeþ of wraþ: [558] For certes outrageus wraþþe doþe al þat euer þe deuel him commandeþ: for he ne spareþ neyþere crist ne his swete moder: [559] And in his outrageous Anger & Ire Alas Alas ful ' mony one feleþ in þat time ful wikkedly

¶ Boþe of *cri*ste & of al his halowes: [560] is nouht þis acursed vice [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] his debonaire lif espirituel þat schold kepen his soule: [561] ¶ Certes it be-nymmeþ eke goddes dieu lord schippe: & þat is mannes soule & þe loue of his neybores: ¶ It striueþ eke al day ȝeines trowþe: it rẽueþ him to quiete of his herte: And subu*er*teþ his soule:

[562] ¶ Of. Ire co*mm*eþ þes stinkinge engenderoures: ffirst hate þ*at* is olde wraþþe: discorde: þoruhe whiche a man for-sakeþ his olde frende þat he haþ loued ful longe: [563] And þan co*mm*eþ werre: And eu*er*y man*er* of wronge þat man doþ to his neyhebo*ur* in body or in Catel: [564] Of þis cursed sinne of Ire co*mm*eþ manslawhter: And vnder stondeþ wele þat Omycide þat is man slauhter is in diu*er*se wyse: So*mm*e man*er*e of Omicide is spirituel: & so*mm*e is bodely: [565] Spirituel ma*nn*eslauht*er*e is in vj þinges: ffirst be hate as seiþe seinte Iohñ: þat he þ*at* hateþ his broþer his Omycide: [566] whiche is be bakbiteinge: Of whiche bakbyters seiþ Salomon: þat þei haue tuo swerdes wiþþe whiche þei slene here neyhebo*ur*s ¶ For soþely also wikked it is to be-nyme hime his goode name as his lif: [567] ¶ Homicide is eke in ȝeueinge of wikked counsel by fraude as for to ȝeue counsel to areyse wrongefully custumes & talliages [568] of whiche seiþe Salomon: Lyon Roreinge: Bere hungrye bien like to crewel lordschippes in wiþ-haldinge or abrugeinge of þe schipe or þe hire of wages: [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] Of þe almos of þe pouer folke: [569] ffor whiche þe wiseman seiþe: Fedeþ him þat almost deyeþ for hunger: ffor soþely bot þou feede him þou sleste him: And all þes bien dedely sinnes: [570] Bodely manslauhter is whan slest him *with* þi tunge ¶ In o*þe*re man*er*e as whan þou co*mm*andest to sle a man or elles ȝeuest him co*un*sell to slene a

mān. [571] ¶ Manslauhtere in dede is in .iiij. maners: þat on is be lawe: Riht as a Iustice dampneþ him þat is coupable to þe deþe: bot latte þe Iustice be warre þat he do it rihtfully: And þat he do it not for delite to spil blode bot for kepeinge of rihtwisnesse: [572] ¶ Anopere homycide is done for necessite: as whan a manne sleþe anopere in his defendant: And þat he ne maye none opere wise eschape fromme his owen deþ: [573] Bot certeynly if he maie eskape withouten slauhter of his aduersarye & sleþ him he doþ sinne: & he schal bere penance as for dedely sinne: [574] Eke if a man be cas or aduenture schete an arwe or cast a stone: with þe whiche he sleþe a man it is homycide. [575] Eke if a womman be necligence ouerelyþe hir childe in slepeinge. [1]itt is homicide & dedely sinne: [576] Eke whan a man distroubleþ þe concepcion of a childe or makeþ a womman barayne be drinkeinge of venemous herbes þoruhe whiche sche may nouht conceyue: or sleþe a childe be drinkes: or elles putteþ inne certein material þinges in hire secre places to sle þe childe [577] or elles doþe vnkinde sinne be whiche man or womman schediþ his nature in manere or in place þere as a childe maie nouht be conceyued: or elles if a womman haþe conceyued & hurteþ her self & sleeþe here childe: 3it is it homycide: [578] Whatte seye we eke of wemmen þat mordren her childern: for drede of werldly schame certes an horrible homycide: [579] Homycide is eke if a manne aprocheþ to a womman be desire be desire of lychery: be þe whiche þe child is perisched: or elles smyteþ a womman wityngly þoruhe whiche sche leseþ his childe: Al þes ben homycides: and dedely orrible sinnes: [580] ¶ 3utte commeþ þere of Ire mony mo sinnes: as wele in worde as in þouhte: and in dede: as he þat aretteþ vppon god or blameþ god of þinge of whiche he is him selfe gilty: or displeseþ god & al his halowes as done þes cursed hasadours

in diuerse contres: [581] þis cursed sinne done þei: when þei felen in her hert ful wikkedly of god & his halowes. [582] ¶ Also whan þei treten vnreuerently þe sacrament of þe auter ¶ þilke sinnes bien. so grete þat vnneþ þei maie be relest: bot þat þe mercye of god passeþ his werkes it is so grete & so benigne: [583] ¶ þan comeþ of Ire attrye angur: whān a man scharpely amonesched in his schrift for to lete sinne: [584] þan wil he hangry And answere hokerlye & angerly: or defende & excuse his sinne be vnstedfastnesse of his flesche: or elles he dide it for to holde compaignye with wyse felawes: Or elles he seiþe þe fende entised hime: [585] or elles he dide it for his 3ouþe or elles his complexion is so corageous þat he mai nouht for bere: or elles it is his destanye as he seiþe vnto a certeine age: or elles: he seiþe it commeþ him of gentilles of his auncestres and semblable þinges [586] ¶ Alł þese maner of folke so wrappen hem in her sinnes þat þei ne wol nouht deliueren he self: ffore sopely no þat excuseþ him wilfully: of his sinne: may not be deliuered of his sinne til þat he mekely be-knoweþ his sinne. [587] ¶ After þat commeþ swereinge þat is expresse a3eines þe commandement of god And þis befalleþ oft of anger & of ire: [588] God seiþe: þou schalt nouht take þe name of þine lorde god in veyne ne in ydel. Also oure lorde ihesu seiþ be þe worde of seint Mathewe [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] [589] Ne wil 3e nouht swere in al manere Neyþere be heuen for it is goddes throne. Ne by erþe for it is þe bynche of his feete Ne by iherusalem: For it is þe Cite of a grete kynge: ne be þin hede: for þou maist nou3t maake an her white ne blake: [590] Bot seiþe be 3oure 3e. 3e. & nay. naye: And what þat is more it is yuel. þus seiþe criste: [591] ffor cristes saake ne swereþ nouht so sinfully in dismembringe of criste by soule.

hert. bones. & body: ffor certes it semeþ þat 3e þenkeþ *þat* þ^e cursed Iewes dismembred him no3t ynowhe: [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] bot 3e dismembren him more: [592] ¶ And if so be þat þe lawe *com*-peH 3ow to swere: þan rewleþ 3owe after þe lawe of god in 3oure swereinge as seiþe Ier*e*mye in þ^e iiij. capitle. [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] þou schalt kepe þre condicions: þou schalt [1]swere in trouþe in dome & in rihtwisnesse: [593] þis to seine þou schalt swere soþe: for eu*e*ry leseinge is a3eines crist. For crist is verray trouþe: And þenke wele þis þat eu*e*ry grete swerer nouht co*m*pelled lawfully to swere þe wounde schal not dep*ar*te fro his house whiles he vseþ suche vnleful swereinge: [594] ¶ þou schalt swere eke in dome whan þou art constreynede by þi domes-man to wittnese þe trewþe: [595] Eke þou schalt nouht swere for envye ne for fauor ne for mede bot for rihtwisnesse for declareinge to worschipe of god: & to helpeinge of þine euen cristen: [596] And *þer*fore eu*e*ryman *þat* takeþ goddes name in ydel or falsely sweroþ wiþ his mouþe or elles takeþ on him þe name of criste to be called a cristenman: And leueþ a3eines cristes leueynge & his techeinge al þei take goddes name in ydel [597] ¶ Loke eke whate seiþe seint Peter Act*uum* .iiij^o. Non est aliud nomen sub celo: þere is non o*þer*e name seiþ seint Peter vnder heuen: y3ouen to men in whiche þei muste be saued: þat is to seye bot in þe name of ih*es*u criste [598] ¶ Tak kepe eke how þat þe *pr*ecious name of ih*es*u criste as seiþ seinte Poule ad Philipens*es*: xij^o. c^o. In no*min*e ihesu: &c. þat in þe name of ihesu eu*e*ry kne of heuenly creatures or erþely or of heH scholde bowen: ffor it is so hihe & so worschipfuH þat þe cursed fende in heH scholde tremblen to here it nemened:// [599] þan semeþ it þat men þat sweren so orrible by his

blissed name þat þei dispisen it more boldely: þan diden þ° cursed Iewes: or elles þe deuel þat tremblep whan he herep his name:

[600] Now certez sepen þat swereynge bot it be do al lawfully: is so holy defendede meche wers is forswereinge falsly: And 3utte nedeles

[601] what seie we eke of heme [. . *no gap in MS.*] in swereinge & holde it a genterye or a manly dede to swere grete opes: ¶ and of hem þat of verrei vsage. ne cesen nouht to swere grete opes: al þe cause nouht worþe a strawe: Certes þis is an orrible sinne: [602] Swerynge sodanly wiþ oute avisement is eke a sinne: [603] ¶ Nowe late vs go to þilke orrible & cursed sweringe of adiuracione & coniuracione as done þese fals enchauntours & nygromansoures: In basins ful of water or in a briht swerde in a serkle: or in a fire or in a scholderbone of a schepe: [604] I. kanne not seine bot þat þei done corsedly & dampnably ageines criste & al þe feiþe of holy chir chirche:=

[605] what seye we be hem þat leuen on deueneyles: as be flyht or be noyse of birdes or of bestes or of sorte by ygromansy: be dremes be chirkeinge of dores: be gnoweinge of rattes or crakkeynge of houses & suche maner of wrichednesse: [606] Certes al þis þinge is defended be god & holy cherche: ffor whiche þei bien acursed tiłł þei come to amendement þat on suche fulþe setten hire beleue: [607] Charmes for woundes: & Maledies of men or of bestes if þei taken any effecte it may be peraduenture þat god suffureþ it þat folke scholde 3iue þe more faiþe: and Reuerence to his name:

[608] ¶ Nowe wil .I. speke of leseinges whiche generaly is fals signifiant: of wordes en entent to deceyuen his heuen cristen: [609] Sum leseynge is of whiche þere commeþ none auauntage to no wight: And some leseinge torneþ to þese or þe profite of a man

& to damage of anoþere manere: [610] ¶ Anoþere leseinge for to [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] Anoþere leseinge commeþ of delite for to lye. In whiche delite þei wil forgen a longe tale & peynte it wiþ al circumstance: wher al þe grounde of þe tale is fals: [611] Somme leseinge commeþ for he wil susteyine his worde: And sum leseynge cometh of rechelnesse: wiþ outen avisement: & semblable þinges

[612] ¶ Lat vs now touche þe vice of flaterye whiche ne comeþ nouht gladly bot for drede or for Couetise: [613] Flatery is generally wrongeful preyseinge ¶ Flatrerres bene þe deueles norices þat norischen his childerne wiþ melke of losengrye: [614] ffor soþe seiþe Salomon: þat flatery is wers þan detraccione: ffor sum tyme detraccion makeþ an haunten mān þe more humble for he dredeþ detraccion: ¶ Bot certes flatery makeþ a man to enhante his herte and his countenance: [615] fflatery bien þe deuels enchauntour: ffor þei maake a man to wene of him self to be like þat he nys nouht lyke: [616] þei bien like to Iudas þat be-trayed [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] a man to sel him to his ennemye þat is to þe deuel [617] ¶ Flatereres bien þe deuel chapelleines þat singen euer placebo: [618] I. reken flatery in þe vices of ire: ¶ For oft time if a man be wroþe wiþ anoþere: þen wil he flatere sum wyght to susteine him in his qwereH:

[619] Speke we nowe of suche cursinge as commeþ oute of Irrous herte: Malyson may be seide generallye: euery man power of harme such cursynge bereueþ man fro þe Regne of god: As seiþe seint Poule: [620] þat suche cursinge wrongefully retourneþ oft tyme aȝeine to him þat curseþe As a birde retourneþ aȝeine vn to his owen neste: [621] And ouere alþinge men ouhte eschewe to curse her childern & ȝeue to þe deuel here engendorere as fer forþe as in hem is ¶ Certes it is a grete perile & a grete sinne:

[622] ¶ Lete vs þan speke of chideinge: And repr*o*che whiche blend grete woundes in m*a*nnes herte: for þe vnsewe þe semes of frendschippe in m*a*nnes herte: [623] ffor certes vnneþes may a man bue pleynely accorded wiþ him þ*a*t haþ him openly revilede & reproued & disclaunderde: þis is a ful grysly sinne: as criste seiþe in þe gospell: [624] And take kepe nowe þat he þat repr*o*ueþ his neyhboure: oyþ*er*e he repr*o*ueþ him be som harme of peyne þat he haþe on his body: as mesel croked harlotte or be somme sinne þ*a*t he doþe: [625] Nowe if he repr*o*ue him be harme of peyne þan torneþ þe pr*o*fete to ihesu criste: for peyne is sent be þe riht*w*ise sonde of gode: & be his suffrance: be it Meselrye or m̄ayme: ore maladye: [626] And if he repr*o*ue him vncharitablye of synne: As þou holoure: þou dronken lewde harlote: and so forþ: þan app*ar*teneþ þat to þe rejoyseinge of þe deuel þ*a*t eu*er* haþe ioye þ*a*t men doon synne: [627] And certes chidynge m̄ay not come bot of velens herte: ffor after þe abundance of þe herte spekeþe þe mouþe ful oft: [628] And ȝe scholne vnderstonde. þ*a*t loke be any. waye whan any man schal chaste anoþ*er*e anoþer þ*a*t he be war fro chideinge or repr*o*ueinge ¶ ffor trewly bot he be war he may ful lyhtly queken þe fuyre of anger: and of wraþþe: whiche þ*a*t he schold qwenche & p*er*aduentur sleþe him þ*a*t he myht chastise wiþ benyngnite: [629] ffor as seiþe Salomon the amyable tonge: is þe tree of lif: þ*a*t is to seyne of lif espirituele and a dislaue tunge sleþe þe spirites of him þ*a*t repreueþ [1]And eke of him þ*a*t is repreued: [630] Lo what seinte Austine seiþe: þ*er*e is noþinge ylyke þe deueles childe as he þ*a*t oft chideþ: Seint poule seiþe eke .I. s*er*uant of god bchoueþ nouht to chide [631] ¶ And howe þ*a*t chideinge is a veleyns þinge betwex al man*er* folke ȝit is it certes most vnkouenable be-twyx a man & his wyf: for þ*er*e is neu*er* reste:

And *per*for seiþe salomon. An house þat is vnkouerde in reyne & dropinge: & a. chideinge wif .» bene ylike: [632] a man þat is *in* in a dropinge hous in many place: þeyhe he schewe þe dropinge in o place it droppeþ in anoþ*er*e in a noþ*er*e. So fareþe it be a chideinge wyf: bot sche chide him in o place sche wil chide him in anoþ*er*e: [633] And þ*er*for is bett*er* a morsel of brede w*ith* Ioye: þan an hous ful of delices wiþ chideinge seiþe Salomon: [634] Poule seiþe O ȝe wem*m*en be ȝe soubiettes to ȝoure husbondes as be-houeþe in god: And ȝe men louen ȝoure wyves Ad Clonicenses .iij°.

[635] ¶ Afterward speke we of scorenynge whiche is a wikked sinne: And namely whan he scoreneþ a man for his goode werkes: [636] ffor certe suche scorners faren y-like þe foule tode þat mai not endure to smel þe swete sauo*ur* of þe vine when it floureþ: ¶ [637] þes scorners bien p*ar*tinge felawes w*ith* þe deuel: = for þei haue Ioy whan þe deuel wynneþ: & sorwe whan he leseþ: [638] þei bene aduersaries to oure lorde ih*es*u criste: ffor þei haten þat he loueþe þ*at* is to sei. sauacion of soule:

[639] ¶ Speke we nowe of wikked counsel ¶ For he þat wikked counsel ȝeueþ is a traito*ur*: for he distroyþe him þat trusteþ in him. vt achitofell de Absonē. But naþeles ȝit is it wikked counsel firste aȝeines him selfe [640] for as seiþe þe wiseman: Eue*r*y fals leueynge haþe þis properte in him selfe þat he þat wil anoye anoþ*er*e man first anoyeþ him self: [641] And men sçhal vndestande þat man schal nouht take his counsel of fals folke: ne of to angry folke or greuous folke: ne of folke þ*at* a loueþ specialy to muche here owen p*ro*fite: ne to muche werldly folke namely in conseleinge of soules:

[642] ¶ Nowe co*m*meþ þe sinne of hem þat maken discorde amonges folke whiche is a sinne þat

criste hateþ vtterly: And no wonder is: ffor he deyed for to maake concorde: [643] & mor schame done þei to criste: þan dide þei þat him crucified: ffor god loueþ better þat frenchepe be amonges folke: þan he dide his owen body: whiche he 3af for vnitees: þerfore beene þei likned to þe deuel þat euere is aboute to make discorde

[644] ¶ Nowe commeþ þe sinne of dowble tonge suche as speken faire befor folke: & wikkede be-hynde or elles þei maken sembland as þouhe þe spake of goode entencion or elles in game & pleye: And 3it þe speke of wikked entente:

[645] ¶ Now commeþ be-wreynge of counseile þorwhe whiche a man is defamed: vneþes maye he restoreþ þe damages:

[646] Nowe commeþ manas þat is an hopen foly: ffor he þat manasseþ: he preteþ more þan he maie do ful oft time:

[647] Nowe comeþ ydel wordes þat is wiþeouten profite of him þat speke þo wordes & eke of him þat hierkeneþ þe wordes: Or elle ydel wordes bien þo þat bien nedelesse or wiþouten entent of naturely profite: [648] And al be it þat Idel wordes somtime bien venial sinne 3it schold men doute hem: ffor we scholne 3eue reken[1]ynge of hem be-for god:

[649] Nowe commeþ Iangelynge þat may no3t come wiþeowten sinne as seiþe Salomon: It is a signe of aperte folye: [650] And þerefore: a philosophre saide: Whan a man asked hyme howe men schold plese þe peple: And he answarde: Do goode werkes: & speke fewe Iangelinges:

[651] After þis comeþ þe sinne of Iapes þat bien deuels apes ffor þei maken folke to lawhe att her Iaperye as folkes done att þe gaudes of an hape: Suche Iapes defendeþ seint Poule: [652] Loke howe þat vertuouse wordes & holy: conuerten hem

þat traueyle in þe seruice of crist: Riht so conuerten þe vilens worde & þe knakkes of þe Iapes hem þat trqveylen in þe seruise of þe deuel. [653] ¶ þes bien þ° sinne þat commeþ of þe tonge: þat commeþ of ire & of opere sinnes:

[*The Remedies against Ire*]

[654] The remedes aȝeines Ire is a vertue þat men clepen mansuetude þat is debonarte: And eke anopere vertue þat men clepen pacience: [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*]

[655] Debanarte wiþ-draweþ & refreyneþ þe stringes & þe meueynges of mannes corage in his herte: in suche maner þat þei scipe nouȝt oute be anger ne be ire: [656] Suffrance suffreþ swetly al þe anoyance þat & þe wronges þat men done to a man outewarde: [657] ¶ Seint Ierom. seiþ þus of debonarte: þat it doþe none harme to no wight ne seiþe for none harme þat men him done ne seine: He ne eschaungeþ nouȝt aȝeines his reson: [658] ¶ This vertue commeþ some time of Nature: ffor as seiþe þe Philosopher: A man is a whike þinge be nature: debonaire & tretable be goodnesse: Bot whan debonairete is enformed of grace. it is þe more worþe: //

[659] Pacience þat is anopere remedy aȝeynes ire: it is a vertue þat suffreþ swetely euery mannes goodnesse: & is nouȝt wroþe for none harme þat is done vnto her. // [660] The Philosopher seiþe þat paciens is þilke vertve þat sufferþ debonarly al þe outrage of aduersitee & euery wikked worde: [661] þis vertue makeþ a man ylyke to god: And makeþ him his owen der childe as seiþe crist: This vertue discomforþ þine Ennemye: and þerfore seiþe þe wise man. If þou wilte venqwys þin enemye. lerene to suffer: [662] And þou schalt vnder-stande þat a man sufferþ: iiij. manere

of greuance in otward þinges: Aȝeines whiche foure he mot haue foure maner of pacience

[663] þe firste greuance is of wyked wordes: þilke greuance suffred oure lorde ihesu crist wiþ outen gruccheinge ful paciently: Whan þe Iewes dispised him & reproued him: ful oft [664] suffur þou þere fore paciently: for þe wiseman eke seiþe: If þou strif wiþ a fole þouhe þe fole be wroþe or þouhe he lawhe al gate: þou schalt haue no reste [665] ¶ þe toþere greuance outeward is to haue damage of þi catel: þere aȝein suffurd criste ful paciently: whan he was dispoilede of þat he hadde in þis life & þat nas nouht bot þe cloþes [666] ¶ þan greuance is to a man haue harme in his bodye: þat suffred criste ful paciently in al his passion [667] þe ferþe greuance is an outrageous laboure in werkes. Wherfor .I. seie þat folke þat maken here seruantes to traueyle to greuouslye or oute of time as on halidayes: soþely þei done grete sinne. / [668] [1]Here aȝeine suffred criste ful paciently. And tauht vs pacience whan he bare vpon his blissed scholder þe cros vpon þe whiche he scholde suffur a spitous deþ: [669] ¶ Here maie men lerne to be pacient: for certes nouht onely cristen men bene pacient for þe loue of ihesu criste: & for guerdone of þe blisse of heuen. And of þe blisful lyf þat is perdurable: Bot certes þe olde peyneymes þat neuer were cristen commenden & vsen þe vertue of pacience:

[670] A philosofre vpon a time þat wolde haue bet his disciple for his grete trespace for whiche he was gretely ameuede: & brouhte a ȝerde to scoure þe childe: [671] And whan þe childe sawe þe ȝerde He seide to his maister what wil ȝe do: I. wil bete quod þe Maister for þi correctione. [672] For soþe sire quod þe childe ȝowe ouhte firste corecte ȝoure of þat ȝe haue lost ȝoure pacience for þe gilte of a childe: [673] For soþe quod þe Maister al wepeinge þou

seist sope: Haue þou þe 3erde my dere sone: & correcte me for myne impacience: [674] Of paciens commeþe obedience: of whiche a man is obedient to criste: & to all hem to wiche he ouhte be obedient in criste. [675] And vndestande wele þat obedience is perfite: whan men* done gladly & hastely wiþ good herte enterely al þat he schold do: [676] Obedience generaly is to performe þe doctrine of god & of his sovreygnes to whiche him ouhte to be obeissant to al rihtwisnesse

De Accidia.

[677] After þe sinnes of Enevy [. . . . *no gap in the MS.*] .I. wil speke of þe sinnes of accide: For Enevy blindeþ þe herte of a man: And ire troubleþ aman: And Accide Makeþ him hevye þouhtful & wrawe: [678] Enevy & Ire makeþ bitternes in hert: whiche bitternes is moder of accidie. & benymeþ him þe loue of al goodnesse. þan is accide þe angwysche of a trowble hert: And seinte. Austeyne seiþe: It is anoye it is anoy of goodenesse: & anoye of harme: [679] sertes þis is a dampnable sinne: ffor it doþe wronge to ihesu criste: in alsomuche þat he nymmeþ þe seruice þat men ouhte to do to ihesu criste wiþ al diligence as seiþ Salomon: [680] Bot accide doþe none suche diligence: he doþe al þinge wiþ anoye: & wrawnesse slaknesse & excusacion & wiþ dulnes & vnlust: ffor whiche þe boke seiþe acursed be he þat doþe þat doþ þe seruice of god neclygently: [681] þen is Accide Enevye to euerychе astate of man: For certes þe estate of man is in þre maners: [682] Eyþere it is þe state of Innocence as was þe state of Adam be-fore he fel in to sinne: In whiche he was holden to worche as in an hereynge: & in adourynge of god: [683] Anoþere estate is þe state of sinfulmen: in whiche estate men bien holden

to labour in preyinge to god for amendement of here [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] sinnes: [684] Anoþere estate es þe estate of grace: In whiche estate he is halden to do werkes of penitence: And certes to al þes þinges is accide Enemy & contrarie. for he loueþ no besinesse att al: [685] ¶ Nowe certes þis foulé sinne accide: is eke a ful grete enemye til þe liflode of þe body: ffor it haþe no purueance ayeine temp[or]ele necessite: for it is for-slewþed & for sloggeþ & distruyeþ al goodes temperelles be rechilnesse:

[686] ¶ þe fourte þinge is þat Accide is like hem þat bien in þe peyne of heH because of her slouþe & of her hevinesse: ffor þei þat bien dampned bien so bounde þat þei ne maye wele do: ne wele þenke: [687] Of accide commeþ first þat a man is anoyed & encombred. [1]to done any goodnesse: & makeþ þat god haþe Abomynacioun of suche as seiþ seinte Ioñ.

[688] Now commeþ sleuþe þat wil not suffre none hardenesse ne none penance: For soþe slouþe is so tender & so delicate as seiþe Salomon: þat he wil not suffre none hardenesse ne penance ¶ And þerfor he schendeþ al þat he doþe [689] ayeines his roten hercid sinne of Accide: And slouþe sholde men exercise hemself to done good werkes & manly & vertuouslye cachen corage wele to done thenkinge þat oure lorde ihesu criste quyteþe euery goode dede be it neuere so lite: [690] vsage of labour is grete a þinge: ffor it makeþ as seiþe seinte Bernard: The laborer to haue stronge harmes & hard synowes: & slowþe makeþ him febel & tendre: [691] ¶ þan commeþ drede to be-ginne for to wirke any goode werke: ¶ For certes he þat is enclined to sinne: him þinke it is so grete an emprise: for to vndertake to do werkes of goodnesse [692] [. . . . . .

. . . . . .

. . . . . .

. . . *no gap in the MS.*] as seiþe seint *Gregorie*

[693] ¶ Nowe: *com*meþ wanhope þat is dispeire of þe *mer*cie of god: þat *com*meþ *sum*e time of to myche outrageous sorwe ¶ And some time of muche drede ymagenynge: þat he haþ done so muche sinne þat it wil nouht aveile him þouhe he wold repent him: & for-saak & do goode: [694] þoruhe whiche dispeire or drede: he aboundeþ his hert to eu*er*y man*er*e sinne: As seiþe seint Auguste: [695] whiche dampnable sinne if þat it continue vn to his ende: it is cleped sinnynge in þe holy gost: [696] þis orrible sinne is so p*er*ilous þat he þat is despeired: þere ne is no sinne þat he douteþ for to do as schewde wele be Iudas: [697] Certes þan a-bouen al sinnes þan is þis sinne most displesant to crist: & most aduersarie [698] to crist // Soþely he þat dispeyreþ him: is like þe cowarde champeoun recreant: & seiþe creant: al wiþoutene nede: Alas alas nedeles is he creant: & seiþe creant nedelesse despeired: // [699] for certes þ^e^ m*er*cy of god is eu*er* redy to þe penytence: it is aboue al his werkes [700] ¶ Alas can not a m*an* be-þenke him of seint luke: 15°. where as criste seiþe þat as wele schal þ*er*e be: Ioye in heuen vpõn a sinful man þat doþe penitence: þan vpon 90 . & .19. þat [. . . . *no gap in the MS.*] nedeþ no penitente [701] ¶ Loke ferþermore *in* þe gospel: þe Ioy & þe festes of þe good man þat hadde lost his sone: whan his sone wiþ repentance was retorned to his fader: [702] Can þei nouȝt remembre hem eke: þat as seiþe seinte luc*a* 13'. c°. how þat þe þef seiþe þat was hongede be-side ihesu cristes side: Lorde remembre on me whan þou com*m*est vn to þi kingedome [703] ¶ For soþe seide crist: To daie þou schalt be *with* me *in* p*ar*adise: [704] Certes þ*er* nys none so orrible sinne of

man þat it ne maye in his lif be destreyde be penitence: þoruhe vertue of þe passion & þe deþ of criste: [705] ¶ Alas what nedeþe man to be despeired þan. seþen his mercy so redye is: An aske & haue: // [706] þan commeþ sompnolence þat is slogge slombre whiche makeþ a man heuy & dul in body: & in soule: And þis sinne commeþ of slewþe: [707] And certes þe time þat be wey of resone men schold nouȝt slepe by þe morwe bot if̄ þere were cause resonable: [708] ffor soþely in þe morwe tide is most couenable a man to seie his preyers & for to þinken on god & for to honoure god: and to ȝeuen almos þat commen[1] to þe pore þat first comen in þe name of criste: [709] Lo what seiþe Salomon: who so wil be þe morne awake to seke me he schal finde [710] ¶ þan commeþ: necligence or rechelnesse þat rekkeþ of no þinge: & howe þat ignorance is þe moder of al harme: Certes necligens is þe norische to [711] necligentes ne doþe no force whan he schal done a þinge whether he do it wele or badly:

[712] Of þe remedy of þes two sinnes as seiþ þe wisman ¶ þat he þat dredeþ god spareþ nouht to done þat him ouht to done: [713] And he þat loueþ god wyl do diligence to plese god by his werkes & abounden him self wiþ al his myht wele for to done: [714] ¶ þan comme Idelnese þat is þe ȝate of al harmes: An: ydel man is lyke to a place þat haþe no walles: þe deuel may entre on euery side: or schote att him att discouert be tempacions on euery side: [715] þis ydelnes is þe þorrok of al wikked & veleynes þouhtes: & of al Iangles trufles & al ordure: [716] Certes þe heuen is ȝouen to him þat wil laboure & nouht to ydel folke: Eke dauid seiþe þat þei ne be not in þe laboure of men: ne þei ne scholn not be whipped wiþ men: þat is to seie in purgatorie:

[717] Certes þan semeþ it þei schal be tormented wiþ þe deuel in hel: bot if þei done penytence:

[718] þan commeþ þe sinne þat men clepen tarditas: As whan a man is so latred & so tariinge ere he wil torne to god: And certes þat is a grete folye: He is like him þat falleþ in þe diche: And wil nouht arise: [719] And þis vice commeþe of fals hope; þat he þinkeþ þat he schal leue longe: bot þat hope faileþ ful oft:

[720] ¶ þan commeþ laches þat is he þat whan he beginneþ any goode werke: anone he wil for-lete it & stinte as done þei þat haue any wight to gouerne: & ne taken of him no more kepe: anone as þei finde any contrarie or anye anoye / [721] ¶ þes bene þe now scheperdes þat laten her schepe renne wyteingly to þe wolf: þat is in þe breres: or done no fors of her owen gouernance: [722] ¶ Of þis commeþ pouerte: & discripcion bot of spirituele & temporal þinges ¶ þan commeþ a manere of coldenesse: þat freseþ al þe herte of man: [723] ¶ þan commeþ vndeuocione þoruhe: whiche a man hisso blonte ¶ And as seiþe seint Bernard. He haþe suche langour in soule þat he maie neyþere rede ne singe in holy cherche Ne here ne þinke of deuocion: ne traueyle wiþ his hondes in no goode werke: þat it nys to him vnsauerye: ¶ And al apalled: [724] þan waxeth he sore & slowe & slombre: & sone wil be wroþe: And sone is enclinede to hate & to envye // [725] þane commeþ þe sinne of werldly sorwe: whiche þat is clepide tristicia: þat sleþe a man as seiþe seint Poule: [726] ffor certes suche sorwe worcheþ to þe deþe of þe soule & of þe body also ¶ For þere of commeþ þat a man is anoyed of his owen lif: [727] Where-for suche sorwe: schorteþ ful oft þe lif of a man er þat his time comme:

[*The Remedy against Accidie.*]

[728] ¶ Aȝeynes þis orrible sinne of Accide & þe braunches of þe same: þere is a vertue þat is called fortitudo: or strenkeþ þat is an affeccioun þoruhe whiche a mân dispiseþe al noyeus þinge: [729] ¶ þis vertue is so myhty: & so vigorouse þat it dar wiþ-stande myhtyly & wrestel aȝeines þe saule of the deuel: And wisely kepen him selfe frome periles þat bien wikked: [730] For it enchaunceþ & enfor[1]ceþ þe soule Riht as accide abateþ it makeþ febel // for þis fortitude may longe endure be longe suffrance: þe traveile þat bien conuenable:

[731] þis vertue haþ mony spyces: ¶ þe first is cleped magnificence: þat is to seie grete Corage: ffor certes þer behoueþ grete corage aȝeines accidie: les þat swolowe þe sowle be þe sinne of sorwe: or destruye it be wanhope: [732] ¶ þis vertu makeþ folke to vndertake harde þinges & greuouse þinges be hire owen wyll wysely & resonably: [733] And for als muche as þe deuel fihteþ aȝeines man more be queyntise & be sleyht þan be strenkeþ: ¶ þerefore a man schal with-stonde him with witte & with reson & with discrecion // [734] þen bien þere þe vertues of feiþe & hope in god: & in his seintes to acheuen & accomplise þe goode werkes: in whiche he purpose fermely to continue: [735] þan commeþ suerte or sikernesse: & þat is whan a man [. . . . . .

. . . . . .

[736]. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] doþe: & performeþ grete werkes of goodenesse þat he haþe begonne: And þat is þe ende whi þat men schold do goode werkes: ¶ ffor in þe compliseinge of goode werkes liþe þe grete guerdone [737] ¶ þan is þere constance þat is stablenesse of Corage: And þis scholde be in herte be stedfast feiþe: & in mouþe & in

bereinge: And in chere: & in dede [738] eke: ¶ þere bien mo special þinges & remedy aȝeines accide in diuerse werkes: & in consideracion of þe peyne of helle & of the Ioy of heuen: & in þe trust of þe grace of þe holy goste þat wil ȝiuen him myht to performe his entente

De Auaricia.

de avaricia

[739]

Afftter Accidie wil .I. speke of avarice: & of Couetyse // Off whiche sinne seiþ seint Paule: þat þe rote of al sinnes is couetise: Ad Thimotheum 6°. [740] ¶ For sopely whan þe herte of a man is confounded in hit selfe & trouble & þat þe soule haþe loste þe comforte of god: þan sikeþ he ane ydel solace of werldely þinges:

[741] ¶ Auarice after þe scripcione of seint Austyne; is a lykerousnes in hert to haue erþely þinges: [742] Somme oþere folk seyne þat Auarice is for to purchase mony erþely þinges: & no þinge ȝiue to hem þat haue nede [743] ¶ And vnderstand þou wele: þat auarice nys nouht onelye in lande ne in catell: bot sum time in science and in glorye And in euery manere of outrageous þinges is aueryce: & couetyse: [744] ¶ And þe difference be-tuex Auarice & couetise is þis: Couetise is for to coueyte suche þinges as þou haste nouht: = And Auarice is to wiþ-holde & kepe suche þinges as þou hast wiþ outen rihtful nede [745] ¶ Sopely þis Auarice is a sinne þat is ful dampnable: ffor al holy writte curseþ it: & speke aȝeines it: ffor it doþe wronge to ihesu criste: [746] for it be-reueþ him þe loue þat men to him owen. And turneþ it bakwarde aȝeines al reson: [747] & makeþ þat þe Auaricious man haþe more hope in his catel þan in ihesu criste: And

[. . . . . .
. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] [748] þerefor seiþe

seinte poule. Ephec*ios* 5°. þat Auarous man is þral to ydolatrie:

[749] What difference is betuex an ydolastre & an Auarous man: Bot þat an ydolatre & an Auaricious man p*ar*aduentur ne haþe bot one maumet: or two: And þe Auaricious man haþ monye: For certes e*ue*ry floreine in his copher is a mawmet: [750] And certes þe sinne of Maumatrie is þat god in þe ten co*m*mandementes: As bereþ [1]wittenesse in exodi *capitulo* .20. [751] þou schalt haue none fals goddes beforne me: Ne þou schalt make to þe no g*ra*ue þinge: þus þan is an Avaricious man þat loueþ his tresor a-forne god: And ydolatre [752] þoruhe his sinne of Auarice & of couetise: be whiche co*m*men þis harde lordeschipes þoruhe whiche mene bien streyned be talyage costomes & Cariages More þan h*ere* dewte or reson is And elles take þei of her bondemen amerciament: whiche myht more resonable be cleped extorcions þan m*er*cymentes: [753] Of whiche mercimentes And raunsons of bonde men so*m*me lorde stewardes sein þat it is rihtful: for also muche as a cherle haþe no temp*or*ele þinge þat ne is þe lordes as þei seine. [754] Bot certes þis lordeschipes done wronge þat bereueþ hir bondefolke þinges: þat þei ne 3afe hem: Aug*ustinus* de Ciui*tate* dei .li° .9. [755] Soþe is þat þe condicion of þraldome & þe first cause of þraldom is for sinne. Genes*is* .5.

[756] þus maye 3e seene þat þe gilt deserueþ þraldome Bot note nature: [757] Where-fore þes lordes schold nou3t much glorifie hem *in* here lordeschipe seþþen þat þu naturel condicion þei bien lordes ouer her þralles: Bot for þat þat þraldom cam firste be desert of sinne: = [758] And ferþere ouer: þ*er*e as þe lawe seiþe: þat temp*or*el goodes of bonde folke bien þe goodes of here lordeschipes: 3e þat is for to vnderstande þe goodes of þe Emp*er*o*ur* To defende hem in here riht: bot not to Robbe hem ne to Reue hem: [759] And þ*er*fore

soiþe Senge þi prudence schold leue benyngly *with* þi þrall ¶ [760] þilke þat þou clepest þi þrall bien cristes þeple: For humble folke bien criste frendes: þei bien contuberniale *with* þe lorde

[761] ¶ þenke eke *þat* suche sede as cherles springen: of suche seede springen lordes: as wele may þe cherle be saued as þe lorde: [762] þe same dope þat takeþ þe cherle: þe same deþ takeþe þe lorde: wherfore I rede do riht so wiþ þi cherle as þou woldest þi lorde dide *with* þe if þou were in his plite. [763] ¶ Euery sinful man is a cherle to sinne: ¶ I rede þe certes þat þou lorde þou wirche in suche wise: þat þine cherles raþer loue þe þan drede þe [764] ¶ I. wote wele *þer* is degre aboue degre as reson is: And scyht is *þat* men don here deuere *þere* as it is diewe: Bot certes extorcions & dispites of 3oure vnderlinges is dampnable:

[765] ¶ And forþere ouere vnderstond wele: þat conqueroures or tirantes maken ful ofteh: þralles of hem *þat* bien borne of as Roial blode as ben þei þat hem conqueren: [766] This name of þraldom was neuere knowe erst til þat Noe seide of his sonne Canaan scholde be þrale to his breþerne for his sinne: [767] what scy we þan of hem þat pilen And done extorcions to holy chirche ¶ Certes þe swerde þat men 3euen first to a knyhte whan he is newe dubbid: signifieþ þat he scholde defende holy chirche: & nouht rob it: And who so doþe is a traitour to criste [768] as seiþ seinte Austine: þei buen deuels wolues þat stranglen þe schepe of ihesu criste: & done wers þan wolues: [769] ¶ ffor sopely whan þe wolfe haþ ful his wombe He stinteþ to strangel schepe: Bot sopely þe piloures & distreyours of goodes of holy chirchie done not so: for þe stint neuer to pilen: [770] ¶ Now as .I. haue seide: Sepen so is *þat* sinn was first cause of þraldome: þan it is

þus þat þilke time þat al þe werld was in sinne: þan was al þis werlde in þraldome And in subiectione: = [771] Bot certes Sethins þe time of grace Cam: god ordeynde þat somme folke scholde be more hihe in Estate: & hihe degree: And somme folke more lowe: & þat eueryche schold be serued in his estate & in his degre: [772] And perfore in somme contrees þere þei be þrales: whan þei haue turned hem to þe feiþe: þei maken here þralles fre oute of þraldome: And perfore certes þe lorde oweþ to his manne þat þe man oweþ to his lorde ¶ [773] þe Pope clepeþ him self seruant of þe seruantes of god ¶ Bot for as muche as þe state of holy chirche ne myht nouht haue be kepped: Ne þe commune profit miȝt haue be kepped: ne pese & rest in erþe: bot if god hadde ordeynde þat sommen haue hier degre & som men lowere: [774] perfore was souereygnte ordeyned to kepe & mayntene: & defende here vnderlinges or her soubiectes in reson: as ferforþ as it liþe in hir pouere: And nouht to destroye hem ne as ferforþe confounden: [775] Wher for .I. saye þat þilke lordes þat bien þilke wolves: þat deuoure þe possessions or þe catel of pore folke wrongefully wiþ outen Mercye or Mesore: [776] þei schollen receyuen bue þe same mesure þat þei haue mesured to pore folke þe mercy of ihesu criste bot it bue amended: [777] ¶ Nowe commeþ disceite b[e]tuex Marchant & marchant: ¶ And þou schalt vnderstant þat Marchandise is in mony maners: þat one is bodely: & þe topere is gostlye ¶ þat one is lefful & þe topere is dishoneste & vnleful: [778] Of þilke bodely marchandise þat is leful & honest is þis: þat þere as god haþ ordeigned þat a regne or a contre is sufficeant him selfe þan is it honeste & lefull þat of þe abundance of þis contree: þat men helpe a nopere contree þat is more nedye: [779] And þere fore þere mote be marchantz to bringen fro þe to cuntre to þe topere her march-

andise: [780] þe topere Merchandise þat men haunte wiþ fraude: & trecherye & disceyte wiþe lesinges & fals oþes: is cursed & dampnable [781] ¶ Espyrituel marchandise is properely Symony: þat is ententif desire to by þinge espirituele: þat is þinge þat appartenep to þe seintuarye of god: & to cure of þe soule: [782] This desire if so be þat a man do his diligence to performe it al be it þat his desire ne take none effecte 3it is it to him dedely sinne: And if he be ordrede he is Irregulere: [783] ¶ Certes Symonye: is clepid of Simon Magus þat wolde haue bouht with þe temporele cateH þe 3eft þat god had 3ouen by þe holy goste to seinte Peter: & to þe Apostoles: [784] And perfore vnderstandep: þat bop he þat sellep & he þat byep þinges espirituels bien cleped Symonyals ¶ be it Catel: be it be procureinge: Ore be fleschely preyere of his frendes or of spirituel frendes [785] ¶ Flesschely: in tuo maners: as by kinred: or as by opere frendes or of spirituel frendes. ¶ Sopely if þei prey for him þat is not able & worþi: it is Symonye: If he take þe benefice: & if he be worþi & able: he nys none: [786] ¶ þe topere maner is whan a man or a woman preyepe: preye for folke to auaunce hem only for wikked fleschely affeccione: þat þei haue vn to þe persones: & þat is in foule Symony: [787] Bot certes in seruices for whiche men 3euen þinges espirituels vnto her seruantes: It mote bien vnderstonde þat þe seruice most be honeste & elles note: And eke þat it be wiþ outen Barganynge & þat þe persone be able: [788] ffor as seiþe seinte Damasye: Al þe sinnes [1]of þe worlde att þe regarde of þis sinne biene as a þinge of nouht: For it is þe grestest sinne þat may be: after: þe sinne of lucifer & of antecriste: [789] ffor be þis sinne gor for-lesep þe chirche & þe soule þat he bouhte wiþ his precious blode: by hem þat 3eue cherches to hem þat biene nouht digne: [790] For þei putten inn þeues þat

stelen þe soule of ihesu criste & destruyeþ his patrimoigne [791] ¶ Be. suche vndigne. prestes: & Curates haue men þe lasse Reuerence of þe sacramentz of holychirche: ¶ And suche 3euers of chirches putten oute þe childerne of criste: & putten in to þe cherche þe deueles owen sone [792] þei sellen þe soules: þe lombe þei kepen to þe wolf þat strangelleþ hem: And þerefore schol þei neuer houe parte of þe pasture of þe lombes þat is in þe blisse of heuen: [793] ¶ Nowe commeþ hasardy with his apurtenance as tables & rawfles of whiche commeþ deceyte & fals oþes chideinge: & al rauynges: blasphemyinge & reniinge of god & hate of his neybours: wasteinges of goodes myspendinge of time: And sumtyme manslawhter [794] ¶ Certes hasardours nemaye nouht be wiþ oute grete sinne whiles þei haunte þat crafte [795] ¶ Of Auarice commeþe eke leseinges þeft & false wittenesse: Fals oþes: And 3e schall vnderstonde: þat þes bien grete sinnes & expresse a3eines þe commandementes of god as I. haue seide: [796] ¶ Fals wittnesse is in worde & eke in dede. In worde as for to be-reve þi neyhbours good name By þine fals witnesinge. Or be-reue him his Catell: or his heritage þe þine fals wyttenesinge: ¶ whan þou for Ire or for meede or for envy berest fals wittenesse or accusest him or excusest him by þine fals witnesse: or elles excusest þi self falsly [797] ¶ Ware 3oue qwestmongers & notories ¶ Certes for false witnesseinge was Susanna in grete sorwe: & peyne: & mony anoþer mo [798] ¶ The sinne of þeft is eke expresse a3eines godes heste: & þat in tuo maners Corporele & spirituele [799] [Corporele] as for to take þine neyhbours Catel a3eines his will be it be force or be sleyht: be it be mette: or be mesure: [800] By steleinge eke of fals enditementes vpon him: And in borwein of þin neyhbours Catell: in entent neuere to paye: & semblable þinges [801] ¶ Espirituel þeft is sacrilege þat is to seye vrt-

ynge of holy þinges: or of þinges sacred to criste in tuo maner's by reson. of þe holy place as chirches or chirche hawes: [802] ffor euery. violence sinne þat men done in suche place may bue cleped Sacrilege: Or euery violence in þe semblable place: Also þei þat wiþ-drawen falsly þe rihtes þat longen to holy cherche: [803] And pleynely & generaly sacrilege is to 3eue holy þinge fro holy place: or. vnholy þinge oute of holy place: or holy þinge oute of vnholy place:

[*The Remedy against Avarice.*]

[804] Nowe scholne 3e vnderstonde þat þe releuynge of Auarice is misericorde & pite largely taken ¶ And me myht axen whi þat mysericorde & pite is releueinge of Auarice: [805] Certes þe Auarice man scheweþ no pite ne misericorde to þe nedful man: ffor he deliteþ him in þre kepinges of his tresoure: & not in þe restoreinge ne releueinge of his euencristen: & þerfore spek .I. first of mysericorde: [806] ¶ þan is misericord as seiþe þe philosofre a vertue bue whiche þe Corage of man is stered be þe corage of him. [1]þat is my[s]esede [807] vpon whiche misericorde foloweþ pytee in perfourmynge of charitable werkes of misericorde. [808] And certes þes meuen man to þe mysericord of ihesu criste þat him self for oure gilt suffred deþe for misericorde: & forȝaf vs oure originale sinnes: [809] & þere-by relessed vs fro þe peyne of helle; and amynuseþ þe peyne of purgatorie be penitence. And ȝeueþ grace well to do & atte þe last þe ioye of heuen: [810] ¶ The spices of mysericorde bien as for to lene & for to ȝeue: & eke for to forȝeue & relese & haue pyte in herte & to haue compassione of þe meschef of þine

euecristene: & eke chastice þere as nede is. [811] ¶ Anoþere manere of Remedie aȝeine avarice is resonable largesse: Bot soþely here be-houeþ þe consideracioun . of þe grace of ihesu criste & of his temporil goodes [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] perdurables þat crist ȝaff vs [812] and eke to haue remembrance of þe deþ þat he schal receyue he note when: and eke þat he schal for-gone al þat he haþe: [. . . . *no gap in the MS.*]

[813] Bot for as muche as summe folke bien vnmesurable men ouhten eschiewe foole largesse þat men clepen wast: [814] Certes he þat is foole large ne ȝeueþ nouht his catel bot he leseþ his catel: ¶ Soþely what þinge þat he ȝeueþ for veineglorie as to monstrals & to folke for to beren his renoune in þe werlde he haþe do synne & none almos [815] Certeȝ he leseþ foule his good: þat he ne sekeþ no þinge of his goode bot sinne [816] He is ylike to an hors þat sekeþ raþer to drinke drouy or trouble water þan of þ° clere well: [817] And for as muche as þei ȝeue þere as þei schold not ȝeue to hem appartene þilke malyson þat crist schal lyven att þe daye of dome to hem þat schal be dampned.

¶ De gula.

[818] After Auarice commeþ glotonye whiche is expresse eke aȝeines þe commandement of god: Glotonye is vnmesurable appetit to ette or to drinke. or elles to done ynouhe, to þe vnmesurable & discorde couetise to ete & to drinke: [819] ¶ þis sinne corrumpeþ al þis werlde as is wele schewde in þe sinne of Adam & of Eua ¶ lo eke what seiþe seint Poule of glotonye: [820] Mony folke of whiche

.I. haue oft seide to ȝowe: & nowe .I. seye it wepeinge: þat þei bien ennemys of þe croyce of crist of whiche þende is deþe: & of whiche here wombes is hire god & hire glorie in confusione of hem *þat* so sauer*en* erþely þinges: [821] ¶ He þat is vsant to þis sinne of glotonye he ne may no sinne wiþ-stande: He moste bue in seruage of al vices for it is þe deuels horde *þer*e he hideþ him inne & resteþ: [822] ¶ This sinne haþ mony spyces: þe first is dronkennesse *þat* is þorrible sepulcre of m*a*nnes reso*un*: And *þer*e-for whan *þat* a man is dronken he haþe lost his reson: & þis is dedely sinne [823] ¶ Bot certes whan a man is nouht wonte to straunge drinke: ne p*er*aduent*ur*e ne knoweþ not þe strenkeþ of þe drinke: or haþe feblesse in his hede: or haþe trauailede þoruhe whiche he drinkeþ þe more Al be he so sodanly cauht wiþ drinke it is no dedely sinne bot veniale: [824] The secunde spice of glotonye is *þat* þe spirit of man waxeþ al trouble for dronkenesse bereueþ him discreci*oun* of his witte: [825] ¶ þe þred spice of glotony is: Whan a man devowreþ [1]his mete & haþe no rihtful man*er*e of etynge: [826] ¶ þe ferþe is whan þorwh̄ grete abund-a*un*ce of his mete þe homours of his body bien dis-temperd [827] ¶ þe .v^e. is forȝetelnesse be to mechel drynkynge for whiche su*m*tyme amañ su*mm*e time a man for-ȝeteþ be þe morwe what he dide att eue or att þ^e nyhte be-fore:

[828] In o*þer*e man*er*e bien distinket of Spices of glotony aft*er* seint gregorye. ¶ þe first is for to ete to fortime ¶ þe. secunde is whan a man geteþ him to delicate mete [829] ¶ þ^e threde: is. whan a man takeþ to muchel ou*er*e mesure ¶ þe ferþe. is þe coriouste wiþ grete entent to maken & appareH his mete. þe fifte. is to ete to gredely: [830] þes bien þe .v. fyngres of þe deueles honde be whiche he draweþ folk to sinne

[*The Remedy against Gluttony.*]

[831] ¶ Aȝeynes glotonye is remedy. þe abstinence of his bodi: as seiþe Galienus. Bot þat hold. I. not meritorie. if þat he onely it do for þe hele of his body: ¶ Seint Austine wil þat abstinence be done for vertwe: & wiþ paciens [832] abstinens he seiþ is litel worþi bot if a man haue goode wil þere to // And bot if it be enforced be pacience & charite: & þat men do it for goddes saake & in hope to haue þe blisse of heuen:

[833] ¶ þe felawes of abstynence bien attemperance þat haldeþ þe mene in all þinges: eke schame þat escheweþ al disoneste: sufficeance þat sekeþ no Riche mete ne drinkes ne doþe no force of no owtrage apparelynge of mete [834] ¶ Mesure also þat distreyneþ bue resoun þe delavy appetite of eteinge: Sobernesse also þat restreyneþ þe outrage of drinke. [835] Sparynge also þat restreyneþ þe delicate ese to sitte att his mete softly: where-for summe folke stonden of here owen will & to eten att þe lasse layser

¶ De luxuria.

[836]

After glotony. þan commeþ lycherye for þes two sinnes bien so nyhe cosines þat often timþei wil not departe: = [837] god wote þis sinne is displesant to god: for he seiþ him selfe do no lychery: // & þere-fore he put grete peynes aȝeines þis sinne. in þe olde lawe [838] If a womman þrall were taken in þis sinne sche scholde be beten with stones to þe deþ: And if sche were a gentil womman sche scholde be sleyne with stones: And if sche wer a bischopes douhtere sche scholde be bernte be goddes commandement: [839] ¶ Forþermore be sinne of licherye god dreynte al þe werlde att þe

diluve: & after he berned .v. Cytes *with* lyht & sanke hem in to hell

[840] ¶ Now latt vs spek of þilk foule stinkynge sinne of lichery: þat men clepen aduoutre of wedded folke: þat is to sey if þat one of hem be wedded or elles boþe: [841] Seint Iohn seiþe þat þat þe advowtrers schal bien in hell in a stinkinge birneinge fire of brimstone for licherye ¶ In brimstone for þe stinkeinge of hire ordure: [842] Certes þe brinynge of þis sacrament is an horible þinge: It was maked of god him self in *par*adise & *con*fermed be ihesu criste as seiþ seinte Mathewe in þe gospell: A man schal lete fader & moder & take him to his wif. And þe scholne haue be tuo in one flesche: [843] ¶ This sacrament betokeneþ þe knyttinge to-geder of criste & of holy chirche [844] ¶ And nouht onely þat god for-badde aduoutre in bedde: Bot eke he *com*manded[1] þat þou scholdest nouht coueyte þine neyhebours wif [845] ¶ In þis hest seiþe seint Austine is forboden almanere Couetise to done lychery: Lo what seiþe seint Mathewe .v. c°. in þe gospel þat who so seþe a womman to couetise of his luste he haþe done lycherye wiþ hire in his herte: [846] Here maye ȝe see þat not onelye þe dede of his sinne is forbode bot eke þe desire to done þat sinne [847] ¶ þis cursed sinne anoyeþ hem greuously *þat* it haunteþ: & first to here soule ffor he obligeþ it to sinne: & to þe peyne of þe deþe þat is perdurable [848] ¶ Vnto þe body anoyeþ it greuously also: ffor it drieþ him & wasteþ him: & of his blode he makeþ sacrifice vn-to þe fende of hell ¶ It wasteþ eke his catel & his substance: [849] & certes if it be a foule þinge a man to wast his catell one wemmen: ȝit is it a fouler þinge whan þat for whiche ordure wemmen dispenden vpon men here catel & here substance. [850] ¶ þis sinne as seiþe þ° prophite bereueþ man & womman her goode fame & al her honour: And it is ful plesant to þe deuel: & *per*by

he wynneþ þe moste p*a*rty of þis werlde: [851] ¶ And riht as a marchant deliteþ him moste in chaffer þat he haþ most a-vantage of Riht' so deliteþ þe fende þis ordure: //

[852] þis is þe to*pere* honde of þe deuel *with* .v. fingeres þ*a*t caccheþ þe peple to his velany: [853] þe first finger is þe foole lokeynge: of þe foole man; & of þe foole wo*m*man þat sleþe Riht as þe Basilicoc sleþe folke be þe venym of his syht: ffor couetise of þe eyȝen foloweþ þe couetyse of þe hert: [854] þe to*pere* finger his þe violence toucheinge in wykked manere: And *per*for seiþ Salomon. þat who so toucheþ & handeleþ a wo*m*man: he fareþ y-lyke him þ*a*t handeleþ þe scorpion þat stingeþe: And sodanly sleþe þoruhe his envenymynge: As who so towcheþ warme piche þat fouleþ his fingers [855] ¶ þe pred is: foule wordes þat fareþ y-lyke fire þat birneþ: þat riht anone birneþ þe herte: [856] ¶ þe ferþe is kissinge: & trewly he were a grete foole þ*a*t wolde kisse þe mouþe of a birneinge houen: or of a forneys: = [857] And more fooles bien þei þat kissen in velanye: ffor þat mouþe is þe mouþe of heH: & namely þes holde dotardes hulours: ȝit wil þei kisse þouhe þei may nouȝt do & smater hem: [858] Certes þei bien ylyke to þe houndes. For an hounde whan he co*m*meþ be þe roser or be o*pere* beautees þouhe he maie nouht pisse: ȝitte wiH he lift vp his legge & make countenance to pisse. [859] ¶ And for þat: many weneþ þ*a*t þei maie nouȝt sinne for no likerous þ*a*t he doþe *with* his wif: Certeȝ þ*a*t opynioune is fals: God wote a man maie sle him self *with* his owen knyf: & maken him dronken *with* his owen tunne. [860] Certeȝ be it wif of childe or any o*per* werldely þinge þ*a*t he loueþ be-for god: it is a maumet & he is an ydolastre: [861] ¶ Man scholde loue his wif be discrecione paciently & tempo*r*alye: & þan is sche as it

were his sustere? [862] ¶ þe fift finger of þe deueles honde is þe stinkeinge dede of lycherye? [863] Certes þe .v. fingers of glotonye þe fende putteþ in þe wombe of a man? & *with* þes .v. fingers of lychery? he gripeþ him be þe reynes for to þrowe him into þe forneyse of hell [864] *þere* as þei scholne haue þe fuyre & þe wormes þat euer schal laste? & wepeinge & waileinge scharpe hunger & þurste griselynesse of deueles þat schal al to treden [1]Hem wiþ-outen respite & *with*-outen ende [865] of lychery as .I. seide sourden diu*er*se spyces? as fornicacion. þat is be-tuex man & wo*m*man þat bien not maried? & þis is dedely sinne & aȝeines nature? [866] Al þat is enemy & destrucc*i*on to nat*ur*e is aȝeines nature [867] p*ar*feye ¶ þe resone of a man telleþ him eke wele · þat it is dedely sinne for als muche as god forbad lycherye? = And seint Poule ȝeueþe him þe regne þat is dieu to no whight bot to hem þat done dedely sinne [868] ¶ Anoþ*er*e sinne of lycherye is? for to be-reven a mayden of hire maydenhede? ffor certes he þat so doþe he takeþ a maiden oute of þe hiest degre þat is *in* þis present lif? [869] & bereueþ hire þilke *pre*cious fruyte þat þe boke clepeþe þe hundreþ fruyte. I. can nouht seye it in none oþ*er*e weye in ynglische Bot in latine it hiht Centesimus fructus? [870] Certes he þat so doþe is cause of mony damage & velanyes mo þan any man kan reken ¶ Riht as he sumtyme is cause of al þe damage þat bestes done in þe felde? þat breketh þe hegge of þe closur þoruhe whiche he distroyeþ þat may not be restored? [871] ffor certes no more maye maydenhede bue restored? þan an arme þat is smeten fro þe body maye retorne aȝeine to wex? [872] Sche maye haue m*er*cye þis wote .I. wele if sche do penitence? Bot neu*er* schal it be þat sche nas corrupte? [873] ¶ And alþeit so þat .I. haue spoken sum*w*hat of aduowtre it is goode to schewen mo p*er*iles þat longen to aduoutre ¶ For to eschewe þe foule

sinne of [874] aduoutre: in latine is for to seye: Approcheinge to anoþere manes bedde: þoruhe whiche þo þat whilom were first o flesche: abawndon here body to oþere persones [875] ¶ Of þis sinne as seiþe þe wisman comeþ mony harmes: ffirste brekinge of feiþe: And certes faiþe. is kaye of cristendome: ¶ [876] And whan þat feiþe is broke & lorne: sopely cristendome stant wiþ outen fruyte: [877] ¶ þis sinne is eke a þefe: ffor þeft generaly to speke is for reue a wight his þinge azeines his wiłł: [878] Certes þis is þe fouleste þeft þat maie bue: whan a womman steleþ hir body fro her husbonde: & ziueþ it to hire holoure to defoule here & steleþ hire soule fromme criste: & zeueþ it to þe deuel. [879] þis is foulere þeft: þan for to breke & stele þe chalys: ffor þes aduoutres breken þe temple of god spyrituelly & stelen þe vessel of grace: þat is þe bodye & þe soule: ¶ For whiche criste schal destroyen hem as seiþe seinte Poule. [880] Sopely of þis þeft douted gretely Iosephe whan þat his lordes wif preide him of velanye: whan he seide: Lo my lady howe my lorde haþe take to me vnder my warde al þat he haþe in þis werlde ne nopinge of his oute of my powere bot onely ze þat bien his wyf [881]. ¶ And howe schold .I. þan do þis wikkednesse & sinne so orrible azeines god: god it for-bede. ¶ Alas al to litel is suche treuþe no wey founde: [882] ¶ þe þredde harme is þe felþe þoruhe whiche þei breken þe commandement of god. & defoulen þe autere of here matrimoygne þat is criste: [883] ¶ For certes in so muche þat þe sacrament of Mariage is so noble & so digne So muche it is þe gretter sinne for to breke it: ¶ For god maad mariage in paradise: in þestate of Innocence to multeplie mankynde to þe seruice of god: [884] & þerfore is þe brekeinge þere-of greuous: Of whiche brekeynge commeþ fals heires often time þat wrongefully occupien oþer mennes heritage: And þere fore wil criste put

hem oute of þe Regne of heven þat is þe herytage to good folke [885] Of þis brekeinge commeþe eke oft times þat folke vnware wedden or sinnen wiþ here owen kynred: & namely þil harlotes þat hanten bordels: Of þes foole wemmen þat maie bu likned to a comune gonge where as men purgen here ordure: [886] what saie we eke of poytours þat lyuen bi þe orrible sinne of puytrye And constreyned wemmen ȝe somme time his owen wif: or his childe as done þes baudes to ȝelden hem a serteine rente of her bodely putrye ¶ Certes þes bien cursed sinnes: [887] ¶ Vnderstandeþ eke þat aduoutre is sette gladly in þe ten commandementes: by-tuex þeft & manslawhter For it is þe gretest þeft þat may be: For it is þe þefte of body & soule: [888] & it is ylike homicide for it kerueþe a tuo: & brekeþ atuo hem þat first weren ymaked o flesche And þere-fore by þe olde lawe þei scholde be sleyne: [889] ¶ Bot naþeles be þe lawe of ihesu crist þat is þe lawe of pite whan he seide to þe womman þat was fou[n]den in aduoutre: and scholde haue slawe with stones after þe will of þe Iewes as was her lawe: ¶ Go quod ihesu criste & haue no more will to do sinne: or willen no more to do sinne: [890] Soþely þe vengeance of advoutre is awarded to þe peyne of heH: bot it bue distroubled be penance. [891] ¶ ȝette bien þere mo spyces of þis cursed sinne as whan þat one of hem is religious or elles boþe: Or of folke þat bien entred vnto order as subdecane & deken: or preste or hospitaleres: And euer þe hyer þat he is in ordre þe gretter is þe sinne: [892] ¶ þe þinges þat gretely agregen his sinne is þe brekeinge of his avowe of chastite whan he receyueþ ordre [893] ¶ And forþere ouere soþe is þat holy holy ordere is chef of al þe tresoure of god: & his especial sinne & merke of chastite to schewe þat þei bien Ioyned to chastite: whiche þat is þe most precious lif þat is [894] ¶ And eke þes ordred folke bien specialy titlyd to god: = & of þe

special meyne of god: = ffor whiche whan þei done dedely sinne þei bien þe special traytours of god & of his peple: for þe leven of þe peple to preie for þe peple: ¶ And while þere biene suche traitours Here preyerȝ availeþ nouht to þe peple [895] ¶ Pristes bien as aungels as by þe dignete of here mysterie: ffor soþe seint Poule seiþe: þat Sathanas transformeþe him in Angel of lihte: [896] ¶ Soþelye þe preste þat haunteþ sinne may bue lykned to þe angel of derkenesse transformed in þe Angel of lyht: ¶ He semeþ an Angel of liht: Bot for soþe he is an AngeH of derknesse [897] ¶ Suche prestes bien þe sonnes of of Belye. As schewepe in þe boke of Kynges þat þei weren þe sonnes of belial þat is þe deuel: [898] Belyall is to seyne withowten Iuge: & so faren þei hem penken þei bien fre & han none Iuge no more þan haþe a fre boH þat takeþ whiche kowe þat him likeþ in þe toune: [899] so faren þei bue wymmen: ffor riht as a fre boH is ynouhe for al a toune [1]Riht so is a wykked priste corruped ynowhe for al a parische or al a contre // [900] þes prestes as seine þe boke ne konne nouht mynisterye of prestehode to þe peple: ne god ne knoweþ hem nouht: þei ne halde hem not apaide as seiþe þe boke of soþen flesche þat was to hem offred: ¶ Bot þei toke be force þe flesche þat is rowe: [901] Certes riht so þes schrewes ne holden hem nouȝt apaiede of Roste flesche & soþen flesche wiþ þe whiche þe peple fedden hem in grete reuerence: Bot þei woH haue rowe flesche as mennes wyves & here douhtern: [902] And certes þes wemmen þat consenten to here harlotries done grete wronges to criste & to holy chirche & to aH halowes & to al sowels: ffor þei be-reven al þes him þat schold worschipen criste & holy cherche & pray fo[r] aH cristen sowles: [903] And þerfore haue suche prestes & here lemmans eke þat consenten to here lycherye þe malison of þe courte cristen til þei comme to amendement.

[904] ¶ þe þred spice of aduoutre is sumtime betwene a man & his wif & þat is whan þei taken no rewarde in here assemblynge bot onely in his ffleschely delite as seiþ seinte Ierom: [905] & ne reken of noþinge bot att þei bien assembled be cause þei bien ymaride: al is good ynouhe as þinkeþ to hem: [906] Bot in suche folk haþe þe deuel pouere as seide þe Angel Raphael to thobie. = ffor in hire assemblynge þei puten oute iheus criste of here hert & ȝaff hem self to al ordour [907] ¶ þe ferþe spice is þe assemblynge of hem þat bien of her kinrede or of hem þat bien of one affinite or elles wiþ hem: with whiche hire fadres or here kinred haþe deled wyþþe inne þe sinne of licherie: þis sinne makeþ hem like houndes þat taken no kepe of kinred: [908] ¶ And certes Parentela is in tuo maners owþer gostely: oþere flesslye: Gostly as for to delen wiþ her gossebes. [909] For riht so as he [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] is his godfader: he is his fader spirituele: For whiche a womman maie in no lesse sinne assemble wiþ hire gossib þat with hire owen ffleschely broþere: [910] ¶ þe fifte spice is þilke abhomynable sinne of whiche þat no man vnneþes ouht write or speke: ¶ Neþeles it is openly rehersed in holy writte: [911] [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] to speke of orrible sinne: certes holy writte may not bue defoulede nomore þan þe sonne þat schineþ on a mexen. [912] ¶ Anoþere sinne þat pertineþ to licherye þat commeþ in slepeinge: & þis sinne commeþ oft to hem þat biene maydens: And eke to hem þat bien corrupt ¶ & þis sinne men clepen pollucione þat commeþ in .iiij. maners: [913] somme time of a languysseinge of bodye for þe humers bien to rank & abundant in þe body of a man: Sumtyme for þe infermete for þe feblenesse of þe vertue retentif as phisik makeþ mencion: Somtim for forfete of mete & drinke: [914] And sume time for

violence þouhtes þat bien enclosed in mannes mynde whan he goþe to slepe whiche may not bue *with* outen sinne: For whiche he may noȝt kepe him wiselye: or elles maie men sinne ful greuously

[*The Remedy against Lechery.*]

[915] ¶ Nowe comeþ remedy aȝeines lycherye & þat is gen*er*aly chastite & continence: þat refreyneþ. [1]al þe disordeine meueinges þat comen of flessely talanteȝ: [916] And eu*er*e þ[e] grete merite shal he haue þat moste restreyneþ þe wykkede eschaufeinges of ordur of þis sinne: & þis is in tuo maners: *þat* is for to seyn: chastite of Mariage & chastite of wydewhede:// [917] Now schalt þou knowe þat matrimony is leful assemblynge of man & wo*m*man þat receyue be vertue of sacrament þe bande þoruhe whiche þei maie not bu departed al here lif: *þat* is to sey whiles þei leuen boþe: [918] ¶ þis is as seiþe þe boke a ful gret sacrament: God maked it as I. haue seide in p*ar*adise: & wolde him self bu borne in mariage: [919] ¶ And for to halowen mariage he was at wedynge where as he torned water vnto wyne: whiche was þe firste miracle þat he wrouhte here in erþe befor his deciples: [920] trewe effecte of Mariage clenseþ fornicacion: & replenyscheþ holy chirche of good lignage: for as þe ende of Mariage & it chaungeþ dedly sinne in to veniàle be-twex hem þat biene wedded: & makeþ þe hertes alone. [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] [921] þis is þe verrey maryage þat is ystabist be god: ere þat sinne beganne: whan natural lawe was in his riht pointe in p*ar*adise ¶ And it ordeynede þat o mān schold haue bot o wo*m*man: & o wo*m*man bott o mān: as seiþ seint Austine be mony resones:

[922] first for þat Mariage is figured betuex man &

holy chirche: And þat o*pere* is for aman is þe hede of þe wo*m*man algate be ordinance it scholde be so: [923] ¶ For if a wo*m*man had mo men þan one: þan schold sche haue mo hedes þan one: & þat were an orrible þinge to for god: ¶ An eke one wo*m*man ne myht nouht pleise to mony folke att ones: And also þe*re* ne scholde neue*r* be pes ne rest amonges he*m*: ffor eue*r*yche wold axe his owen þinge: [924] And forþer more no man schold knowe his owen engendrure ne who scholde haue his heritage: And þe wo*m*man scholde þe lasse be louede ffro þe time þat sche were comune to mony men:

[925] ¶ Nowe co*m*meþ howe þat aman scholde bere him wiþ his wif: & namely in tuo þinges þat is to seye in suffrance & in reuerence: And þat schewd first criste whan he maade first wo*m*man: [926] ffor he maad hir nouht of þ^e^ hede of Ada*m* for sche scholde nouȝt haue to grete lordschipe: [927] ffor þe*re* as þ^e^ wo*m*man haþe þe maystre sche makeþ to mekel disaraye: þe*re* nede none ensamples of þ*is* ¶ Thexpe*r*ience of þis day be day ouhte suffice [928] ¶ Also certes god ne maad noȝt wo*m*ma*n* of þe foote of Adam: ffor sche schold nouȝt be holden to lowe ffor sche cannot paciently suffur:= Bot god maad wo*m*ma*n* of þe ribbe of Adam. ffor wo*m*man scholde be felawe vnto man: [929] ¶ A man schold bere him to his wif in feiþe in trouþe & in loue: as seiþe seint Poule: þat aman schol loue his wif: As criste loueþ holy chirche þat loued it so wele þat he dyed for it: So schal aman for his wif If it were nede

[930] ¶ Nowe howe þ*at* a wo*m*ma*n* schold be soubiette to her Husbonde þ*at* telleþ seint Peter: [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] [931] And eke as seiþe þe decree. A womman as longe as sche is a wyf sche haþe non auctorite to swere ne to bere wittenesse wiþ outen leue of here husbonde þat is hire lorde it scholde be so by reson: [932] Sche scholde eke se*r*ue him *in* all

honeste & ben atempre of here [1]araye: I. wote wele þat þei scholden sette hire entente to plese her husbondes bot not by here qweyntise of araye: [933] ¶ Seint Ierom: seiþ: þat wyues þat bien appareled in silke ne mowen nouht cloþen hem in ihesu criste: [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] [934] Seint gregori· seiþ eke þat no wight sekeþ precious araye bot onely veinglorie to be honoured þe more to for þe peple: [935] ¶ It is a grete foly a womman to haue a grete araye outewarde and her self bue foule inwarde: [936] A wif scholde eke be mesurable in lokeynge & in bereinge & in lawheinge: & discrete in al here wordes & here dedes: [937] and abouen al werldly þinges sche scholde loue her housbonde wiþ al her hert: & to him be trewe of hire bodye: [938] So schold an husbond eke be trewe vnto his wif: ffor seþine þat al þe body is þe hosbondes: so schold her hertes bien: Or elles þere is be tuex hem tuo: as in þat no parfit mariage [939] ¶ þan schal aman vnderstonde þat for þre þinges aman & his wif aman & his wif mowen assemblen: ¶ þe first is in entente of engendrure of children to þe seruice of god: ¶ For certes þat is þe cause fynal of Matrymoyne: [940] Anoþere is to ȝelde euerychе of hem to oþere þe dette of his bodye: ffor neyþere of hem haþ powere of his owen bodye: The þredde is to eschiew lichery & velanye: ¶ þe ferþe forsoþe is dedly sinne: [941] ¶ As to þe first it is meritorye: = þe secunde also: ffor as seiþe þe decree. ¶ þat chasiþ merite of chastite þat ȝeldeþ to her husbonde þe dette of hire bodye: ȝe þouhe it be aȝeine hir lykeinge & þe lust of here herte: [942] ¶ þe þred manere is veniale An trewly scarcely maye any of þes bue with outen venial sinne for þe corrupcion & for þe delite: [943] ¶ þe ferþe manere is for to vnderstonde: and if þe assemble onelye for amerous loue & for none of þe forseide causes bot

for accomplice þilke birneinge delite: þei rekken neuer howe often sojely it is a dedely synne: ¶ And 3itte with sorwe som folke will peynen hem more þan her appetite suffrij:

[944] ¶ þe secunde Manere of chastie: is to be aclene wydowe & to eschewe þenbraseinge of man: & to desiren þenbrasinges of ihesu crist: [945] ¶ Thes bien þo þat haue bue wyves: & haue for gone here husbondes ¶ And eke wemmen þat haue done lycherye & bien releued by penance: [946] And certez if þat a wif coupe keper al chaste be lycence of hire husbonde so þat sche nere none occasion þat he a-gilte it were to hire a grete merite: [947] ¶ Thes manere of wemmen þat obseruen chastite moste bue clene in herte as wele as in body: & in þouht: & mesurable in clojeinge & in countenance: Abstinent in etynge & drinkeinge in spekeinge // & in dede: & þan is sche þe vessel of þe boyste of þe blissed Magdalene þat fulfilleþ holy chirche ful of good odoure: [948] ¶ þe þredde maner chastite is virginite: ¶ And it be-houeþ þat sche be holy in herte & clene of body: þan is sche spouse to ihesu crist: ¶ And sche is þe lif of Angels: [949] sche is þe preiseinge of þis werld: And sche is as þes martires in Regalite: Sche haþe in hire þat tunge may not telle: [950] virginite bare oure lorde ihesu crist & virgine was him self:

[951] ¶ Anoþere remede a3eines licherie is to wiþ draw suche þinges þat 3euen occacion to þilke velany: As ese. & eteynge & drinkeinge: ffor certez whan. [1]þe potte boyleþ strongelye þe best remedye is to with-drawe þ^e fire: [952] Slepeinge lange in grete quiete is eke a grete norische to licherye:

[953] ¶ Anoþere remedye a3eines lycherie is þat a womman or a man eschiewe compaignye of. hem be wiche he douteþ to be tempted: ffor albeit so þat þe dede be with-stande 3ite is þere grete temptacione:

[954] Soþely a white wałł alþouhe it birne nouht ffully be stykynge of a candel: ȝit is þe wal blakke of þe leyte [955] ful oft time: ¶ .I. rede þat noman truste in his owen perfeccione: bot he be st[r]onger þan Sampson. Holiere þan Dauid. wiser þan Salomon

[956] ¶ Nowe after þat .I. haue declared ȝowe as .I. can of þe vij. dedely sinnes and sume of here braunches & her remedies: Soþe if: y. couþe .I. wolde tel ȝowe þe ten. commandementes: [957] Bot so hihe a dottrine .I. lete to devines: Naþeles .I. hope to god þei bien touched in þis tretise euerycho of hem ałł

De .2ª. part' penitençie

[958] NOw for as muche as þe secunde parte of penite: stant in confessioun of mouþe: as .I. began in þe chapetre: I. seye seint Austine seiþe: [959] Sinne is euery worde & euery dede & al þat men coueyten aȝeines þe lawe of ihesu criste: and þis for to sinne in herte in mouþe & in dede. be þine .v. wittes þat bien siht hereinge smelinge tasteinge or saueringe & feleinge. [960] ¶ Nowe is it goode to vnderstond þe circumstance þat aggregen muchel euery sinne [961] ¶ þou schalt consider what þou ert þat dost þe sinne wheþere þou be male or female. ȝonge or olde. gentil or þrałł. free or seruant hole or seke: wedded or sengel. orderde or nouȝt wise or fool. Clerke or seculer: [962] if sche be of þi kinred bodely or gostely or none: If any of þi kinred haue sinned wiþ hire or none: & mony moo þinges:

[963] ¶ þe oþere circumstance is þis: wheþer it be done in fornicacione or none: Or in aduoutre: or inceste or none: Mayden or none: In manere of homicide or none orrible grete sinne or smal. An howe longe þou continued in sinne = [964] þᵉ þred circumstance is þe place where þou haste done sinne: Wheþere in oþere

mennes hous or in þine owen In felde or in cherche or in chirche hawe In chirche dedicate or none? [965] For if þe cherche were halowed and man or wo*m*man spilled his kinde in wiþ þat place be waye of sinne or be wykked temptacione þe chirche were enterdited? til it were reconsiled be þe Bischop? [966] And þe p*ri*ste scholde be ente*r*dited þat dide suche a velanye to terme of al his lif? he scholde no more singe masse? & if he dide he schold do dedely sinne? att eue*r*y time at eue*r*y time att he sange masse? [967] ¶ þe forþe circu*m*stance is be whiche mediat-o*ur*s as be messangeres or for enticement or for enticeme*n*t or for consentment to bere compaigne wiþ felawschipe? ffor mony a wrecche for to bere co*m*paigny wil go to þe deuel of heH [968] ¶ For þei þat eggen or consenten to þe sinne bien p*ar*tiners of þe sinne & of þe dampnacion of þe sinner

[969] ¶ þe .v. is? howe monye times þat he haþ sinned? & it be i*n* his mynde? & howe oft þat he haþe faH? [970] ffor he þat oft falleþ in sinne dispiceþ þe mercie of god? And encreseþ his sinne & is vnkinde to god? & he wexeþ þe more feble to wiþstonde sinne? and sinneþ þe more lyhtlyer [971] [1]and þe latt*er* ariseþ? and is þe more eschewe to schriven him & namely to him *þat* haþe bue his Confesso*ur*?// [972] ffor whiche þat folke when þei faH aʒeine in here olde folyes oft þei for-leten here confesso*ur*s al vtterlye or elles þei dep*ar*ten her scrift in diuers place? Bot soþely suche dep*ar*ted schrift deseueþ no mercy of god of his sinnes? [973] ¶ þe vj^e^. Circumstance is þis? whi þat a man sinneþ as be whiche temptacion? And if him self p*ro*cure þilk te*m*ptacione or be excitinge of o*þ*ere folke or if þou sinne wiþ a wo*m*man be force or be hir owen assent [974] or if þe wo*m*man mawgre hire hede haþe bue enforced or none *þis* schal ʒe teH? ffor couetise or for pouerte? & if it was here procureinge or none & suche ma*n*ere

harneys [975] ¶ þe .vij. circumstance is in what manere he haþ done his sinne or none or howe þat he haþ suffryd howe folke han don to hire: [976] of þe same schal þe man tel pleynely al circumstance & where he haþ sinned: with commune bordel wymmen or none [977] or done his sinne in holy times or none: in fastinge times or none or be-forne his schrift or aftere his latter schrift [978] & haþ^e par aduenture broken þere-fore his penance enioyned. by whos & whos consel. by sorcery or craft: al must be tolde [979] þes þinges after þat þei bien grete & smale Engregen þe conscience of man: & eke þe preste þat is þi Iuge may þe better bue avised of his Iugement in 3eueinge of þine penaunce: And þat is after þine contricione: [980] ¶ For vnderstandeþ wele þat after þe time þat aman haþe defouled his Baptime by sinne if he wil comme to saluacion: þere is none oþere weye bot be penytence & schrift & satisfactione. [981] And namely by þo tuo: if þere be a confessour to whiche he may schriue him ¶ And þe þred if he haue lif to performe it:

[982] þan schal man loke & consider if he wil make a trewe & profitable confessione þere moste bue foure condiciones: = [983] Firste it must be in sorwful bitternesse of hert ¶ As seiþe þe kinge ezechiel: = To god .I. wil remembre me al 3e 3eres of my lif in bitternesse of myne herte: [984] ¶ þis condicioun of bitternesse haþe .v. signes: þe first is þat confession most be schamefaste not for to kouerne ne to hiden his sinne: = bot for he haþ a-gilte his god & defouled his soule: [985] And here of seiþ seinte Austine: ¶ The hert travaileþ for schame of his sinne: & for he haþe grete schamfastnes he is digne to haue grete mercye: [986] whiche was þe confession of þe puplicane þat wolde not heue vp his eyȝen to heuen: ffor he hadde offended god of heuen: ffor whiche schamfastnesse he had anone þe mercy of god [987] ¶ And þerefore seiþ

seint Austine. þat suche schamefast folke bien next for-ȝeuenesse & remission [988] ¶ þat o*pere* signe is humilite of confessione: of whiche seiþe seint Petre. Vmbleþ ȝow vnder þe miht of of god: ¶ þe honde of god is myhti in confession: For þ*ere*by god fo[r]ȝeueþ þe sinnes: for he alon haþ þe powere: [989] & þis humylite schal be in herte & *in* signe outewarde: For riht as he haþ humylite to god *in* his herte. Riht so schold he humblen his body outwarde to þe p*re*ste þ*at* sitteþ in [1]goddes place: [990] for whiche *in* no maner seþen þ*at* crist is sou*ereigne*: & þe p*re*ste mene & mediat*our* be tuex criste & þe sinner: And þe sinner is þe last be weie of resoun: [991] þan scholde not þ^e^ sinner sitte also hilhe as his confess*our* bot knele be-forne him or att his fete bot if malady distourbe it: for he schal not take kepe who sitteþ þ*ere* bot in wos place þat he sitteþ: [992] ¶ A man þat haþ trespassed to alorde & com*me*þe to axe m*er*cye: & maken his accorde & sitte him doune anone by þe lorde: men wolde holde him outrageous & nouht worþi so sone to haue remissione ne m*er*cye: [993] ¶ þe .iij. signe is þ*at* þi schrift scholde be ful of teres if man may wepe: And if man maie not wepe wiþ his bodely eyȝen lat him wepe in his herte: [994] Suche was þe confessione of seinte Peter: ffor after þat he hadde for saake ih*es*u criste he went oute & weppet ful bitterly: [995] ¶ þe: iiij. signe is þat he let not for his schame to schewe his confessione. [996] Suche was þe confession of þe Magdaleyn for sche spared for no schame of hem þat weren att þe fest for to go to oure lorde ih*es*u criste: & be-knowe to him hire sinne [997] ¶ þe .v.^te^ signe þ*at* aman or wo*m*man be obeisant to receyue þe penance þat is him enioynede: ¶ For certes ih*es*u criste for þe giltes of o man was obediente to þe deþe

[998] ¶ þe secunde condicion of verreye confessi[on] is þat it be hastily done: For certes if aman had a dedly wounde eu*er* þe langer þ*at* he tarieþ to warische

him self: þe more wolde it corrupte: and haste him to his deþe & eke þe wounde wolde be þe wers for to hele:// [999] And riht so fareþ sinne þat longe time is in a man vnschewde: [1000] Certes aman ouht hastely to schewe his sinne for mony cause as for drede of deþe þat commeþ oft sodanly: & is in no certeine what time it schal be ne in no place: and eke þe drecchinge of o sinne draweþ ine anoþere [1001] & eke þe longer þat he tarieþ þe ferþere is he fro criste: & if he abide vnto his last daye skarsly may he schriue him or amend him for his sinnes or repent him for þe greuous malady of his deþe: [1002] ¶ And for as muche as he haþ nouhte in his lif herkened ihesu criste whan he haþe spoken vn to him: he schal crien vnto oure lorde ihesu criste att his last daye: And scarsely wil he herken him [1003] ¶ Vnder stonde þat þis condicione most haue foure þinges: þi schrift moste bien purveide be-forne & avised: = for wykked haste doþe no prophete & þat aman con schriue him. of his sinnes be it of pride eyþere of envie: An so forþe wiþ þe spices & þe circumstaunces: [1004] And þat he haue comprehended in his mynde þe nombre & þe gretnesse of his sinnes: & howe longe þat he haþ leyne in sinne [1005] & eke þat he bue contrite of his sinnes: And in stedfast purpos by þe grace of god neuere efte to fal a-ʒeine in sinne: And eke þat he drede & contrewaite him self þat he flie þe occasione of sinne to whiche he is enclined. [1006] ¶ Also þat þou schal schriue þe of al þi sinnes to oman: & nouht parcel mele to oman & parcel mele to a noþere man: þat is to vnderstonde in entent to parten þine confessione as for schame or drede: for it is bot[1] bot stranglinge of þine soule ¶ [1007] For certes ihesu criste is al goode: In him is none imperfeccione: & þerfore euer he for-ʒeueþ perfytlye or elles neuer a dele. [1008] ¶ I saye note if þou be assigned to þe penitancere of certeyne sinne þat þou ert bounden to schew him al þe remenant of þi sinnes of whiche

þou hast bue schreuen att þi Curate: bot if it like þe of þine humylite ¶ þis is no dep*ar*[t]inge of schreft: = [1009] ne .I. saye not þ*er*e as .I. speke of diuision of confessione if þat þou haue lycence for to schriue þe to a discrete & an honeste p*re*ste: & where þe likeþe // & be þe licence eke of þine curate þ*at* þou ne maiste wel schriue þe of al þi sinnes [1010] bot late no blot bue by-hinde: lete no sinne vntolde as fer as þou haste remembrance: [1011] ¶ And whan þou schalte bu schriuen of þ^{i} Curate. Tel him eke of al þe sinnes þat þou hast done: seþþe þou were last y-schryuen: as þis is þe wikked entent of deuysion of schrift

[1012] ¶ Also þe verrey schrift axeþ certeyne condiciones.= First þ*at* þou schriue þe be þi fre wyl nouht constreyned ne for schame of folke ne for malady or suche þinges: ¶ For it is reson þat he þat trespas be his fre will [. . . . *no gap in the MS.*] confesse his trespace: [1013] None op*er*e man schatel his sinne bot he him self: ne schal noȝt nay it or denye his sinne: ne wreþþe hime aȝeines þe p*re*ste for his amonyscheynge to lete sinne [1014] ¶ þe condicion is þat þi schrift be lawful: þ*at* is to sey þou þat schryueþ þe: & eke þe p*re*ste þat hereþ þ^{i} confession bien verrei in þe fayþe of holy cherche [1015] ¶ And þat aman be nouht despeirede of þe mercie of ih*es*u criste: as Kayme or Iudas [1016] ¶ And eke aman most accuse him of his owen trespas: & nouht a nop*er*e: bot he schal blame & wyten him self of his owe*n* malice of his sinne & none op*er*e [1017] Bot naþeles if anop*er*e man bue encheson or entyseþ of his sinnes: Or þat if þe state of a p*er*sone bu suche þoruhe whiche his sinne is agregede or elles þat he may not pleynely schriuen him bot he tel þe p*er*sone whiche he haþe sinned wiþ þen maye he tel it [1018] so þat is entent ne be not to bakbite þe p*er*son: bot onely to declare his confession:

[1019] þou schalt not eke make no lesinge in þi confessione: ffor humilite peraduenture to seie þat þou hast done sinnes of whiche þou were neuer gilte · [1020] ¶ For seinte seiþe: If þou because of humylite makest lesinge of þi self þouhe þou ne were nou3t in sinne a forne 3it ert þou þan in sinne þoruhe þi lessinges [1021] ¶ þou muste eke schewe þi sinne by þi propre mouþe bot þou be wax domme: & nouht be no letter: ffor þou þat hast don sinne þou schalt haue þe same confesse [1022] ¶ þou schalt nou3t eke peynte þi confession be faire & subtile wordes to keuer þe more þi sinne: ffor þan begiles þou þi self & not þe priste: þou most tel it platlye be it neuere so foule ne so orrible: [1023] þou schalt schriue þe eke to a priste þat is discrete to counseil þe: & eke þou schalt nouht schriue þe for veyne glorye ne for ypocrisye ne for no cause bott onely for þe doute of ihesu criste: & þe hele of þi soule: [1024] ¶ þou schalt not eke rinne to þe priste al sodenly to tel him þine sinne as who so telleþ a Iape or a tale: bo avysyly & wiþe grete deuocyon: [1025] & generaly schriue þe ofte. [1]if often fall of arise be confessione: [1026] & if þou schriue þe ofter þan ones of sinne of whiche þou haste bue schryuen it is þe more merite & as seiþe seint Austine: þou schalte haue þe more lyhtly relesinge & þe grace of god boþe of sinne & of peyne: [1027] An certes ones a 3ere att þe lest weye it is lawful for to bue houselde: for sobely ones al þinges renouellen:

De Satisfaccione

[1028] NOw haue .I. tolde of verrey confession þat is þe secunde parte of penitence:

[1029] ¶ þe þredde parte of penitence is satisfaccione: & þat stant generaly in almes & in bodely peyne: [1030] Nowe bien þere. prey manere of almes: contricion of hert þat a man openneþ him self to god: Anopere: is to haue pete of þe defaute of his neyhbours: ¶ þe pred is in 3eueinge good counsel & comfort gostly & bodelye where men haue nede: & namely in sustinance of mannes foode: [1031] & take kepe þat a man haþe nede of þes þinges generaly: he haþe nede of foode of clopinge of herboruhe: he haþe nede of charitable conselyng & avisetinge in prison: & maladye: & sepulture of his dede bodye: [1032] & if þou maiste not viset þe nedefoll wiþ þi persone: viset him wiþ messages & þi 3eftes:// [1033] þes bien þe general almes & werkes of charite of hem þat haþ Temperel riches or discrecion in counselinge: ¶ Of þes werkes schalt þou here of þe daie of dome:

[1034] þes almos schal þou done of þine owen propre þinges: And hastely & priuely if þou maiste [1035] ¶ Bot naþeles if þou maye nouht done hit priuelye þou schalt nouht for bere to done almos nere adel þouhe men it see: So þat it be nouht ydo for þe þonke of þe werlde: bot onely to haue þe þonke of oure lorde ihesu crist ¶ [1036] For as wittenesse seint Mathewe .5. A Cite maie not bue hidde þat is on a mowntan sette: Ne men lyhten not a lanterne: & put it vnder a buschell: bot men setteþ it on a candelstik to lyhten þe men in þe house: [1037] Riht so schal 3oure liht aforne men þat þei maie seene 3oure good werkes: and glorifien 3oure fader þat is in heuen

[1038] ¶ Nowe as to speke of bodely peine it stant in preyer. in wakeinges in fastinge & in vertuus

techeinge of orisons [1039] ¶ 3e schol vnder stonde þat orisons or preyers is for to seye a pytous wil of hert þat redresseþ in god & expresseþ be worde outewarde to remowe harmes: & to haue þinges espirituel & durable: & somtyme *temperal* þinges of whiche orisones: certez in þe orsones of þe *pater noster* haþe *ihesu* criste enclosed most þinges: [1040] Certes it is *priueleged* of þrey þinges in his dignite For whiche it is more digne þan any o*þere* preyere: ffor þat *ihesu* crist him self maked it: [1041] & it is schorte for it scholde be konde more lihtlye & for to wiþe-holde it more esily in herte: & helpen hem self þoffter' wiþ þorison: [1042] And for aman schold be þe lasse were to sey it: And for a man may nouht excusen him to leren it for it is so schort & so Esye & for it comp*re*hendiþ in it selfe al goode preyers: [1043] ¶ þe exposicio*un* of þis holy preyer þat is so excellent & digne .I. be-take to þes Maystres of Theologie saue þus muche wil .I. seyne: þat whan þou preyest. [1]þat god schold for 3euen þe þi giltes as þou for3euest ham[2] *þat* agilten þe be ful wil: war þat þou be not oute of charite: [1044] ¶ þis holy orison amenuseþ eke venyal sinne: And *þer*efor it app*er*teneþ specialy to penytence: [2 MS. h•m]

[1045] ¶ þis preyer most bu trewly seide in verray faiþe & þat men prey to god ordinately: discretely & deuoutely: ¶ Alweye aman schal put his wille to be subiecte to þe wil of god: [1046] ¶ þis orison most eke be seide *with* grete humblesse & pure honestly. & nouht to anoyance of any man: or womman. ¶ It moste eke be continued *with* þ^e^ werkes of charite: = [1047] It avayleþ eke a3eynes þe vices of þe soule: ¶ For as seiþe seint Ierom: Be fastinge bien saued þe vices of flesche: & be preiers þe vices of soule:

[1048] After þis þou schalt vnderstand þat bodely peyne stant in wakeynge: ¶ For ihesu criste seiþe: wakeþ & *prayeþ þat* 3e ne enter in wikked

temptacione. [1049] ȝe scholn vnder stand þat ffastinge stant in þre þinges: = In for þeringe of bodely mete & drinke: & in for beringe of werldly Iolytees: & *in* forberinge of dedely sinne: þis is to seye þat aman schal kepe him fro dedely sinne: wiþ al his myht:

[1050] ¶ And þou schalt vnderstand eke þat god ordeyned fastinges: And to fastinges. app*ar*tenen .iiij. þinges: [1051] largenesse to pouer folke: Gladnesse of hert espirituel: nouȝht to be angred ne to be anoyed: ne to grocche for he fasteþ: and also att resonable owre for to ete be mesure: þat is to saye þat aman schold nouht eten in vntyme ne sitte þe langer att his table for he fasteþ:

[1052] ¶ þan schalt þou vnderstand þat bodely peyne stant in discipline or techeinge be worde or be writeinge: or by ensample: Also in wereinge of heyres eyþ*ere* of Stamyne: eyþ[er]e of haberione on here naked flesshe for cristesake & suche man*ere* penaunces: [1053] Bot ware þe wele þat suche man*ere* penaunces make nouȝt þine herte bitter or angry anoyed of þine self ¶ For better is to kast awaie þine heire þan for to cast awey þe swettnes of oure lorde: ihesu criste [1054] ¶ And þ*ere*fore seiþe seinte poule: Cloþe ȝowe as þei þat bien chosen of god in hert of mysericorde debonarte: suffrance. And suche maner of cloþinge: of whiche ihesu criste is more appaied þan of heyre or of Aberion:

[1055] ¶ þan is discipline eke in knokynge on þ[i] breste: in scouregeinge *with* ȝerdes in knelyinge in tribulacions: [1056] In suffringe paciently wronges þat bien done to him: & eke in pacient suffrance of Maledies or lesinge of werldly Catel: or wyf or childe or oþ*ere* frendes:

[1057] ¶ þan schal þou vnderstande wiche þinge distourben penance: & þis is in þre maners þat is drede schame hope: & wanhope: þat is desp*er*acione: [1058] And for to speken firste of drede: for whiche he

wenep þat he may suffur no penaunce [1059] þere azeines is remedye for to þinke þat bodely penaunce is bot schort & lytel att þe regard of þe peyne of heH þat is cruel & so longe þat it lastep wip outen ende:

[1060] ¶ Now azeines þe schame þat aman hape to schryuen him: [. . . . . *no gap in the MS.*] [1061] Azeines þe schame schal a man þinke þat by þe waye of resoun þat he þat hape nouht bue aschamed to do foule þinges: Certes him ouhte not [1]bue aschamed to do faire þinges & goode þinges: & þat is confessions: [1062] Aman schold þinke þat god sepe & wote al his þouhtes & his werkes: to him maie nopinge bu hudde ne couerde: [1063] Men scholde eke remembre hem of þe schame þat is to come att þ° daie of dome to hem þat biene nouzt penitence & lif in present lif: [1064] ¶ For al þe creatures in heuen in erþe & in heH scholne seen apertely al þat hiden in þis werlde:

[1065] Nowe for to speke of þe-hope of hem þat bien so neclygent & slowe to schriuen ham it stant in tuo maners: [1066] þat on is: þat he hopep to leue longe: & for to purchase muchel riches for his delite & þan he wil schriue hime as he seiþe: he maie as him semep timely ynouhe comme to schrifte: [1067] ¶ Anopere is of þe surquydrye þat he hape in hape in cristes mercye: [1068] And azeines þe first he schal þinke þat oure lif is in no sekernesse: & eke þat al þe reches in þe werlde bien in aduenture & passinge as a schadowe on a wal [1069] ¶ And as seiþe seinte Gregorie: þat it appartenep to þe grete rihtwisnesse of god: þat neuere schal þe peine stinte of hem þat neuere wolde withdrawe hem fro sinne here þankes bot euer continue in sinne: ¶ For þilke perpetuele wil to do sinne scholne þei haue perpetuel peyne:

[1070] ¶ Whanhope is in tuo maners ¶ þe first whanhope is in þe mercye of criste: þat opere is þat þei

þenke þat þei myht nouht longe perseuerne in goodnesse: [1071] ¶ þe first wanhope commeþ of þat he demeþ þat he haþ sinned so gretely: so ofte & so longe lyggen *in* sinne þat he schal nouht be sauede: [1072] ¶ Certez aȝeines þat cursed wanhope he schold þinke þat þe passion of ihesu criste is more stronge for to vnbynde: þan sinne is for to binde: [1073] ¶ And aȝeines þe secunde wanhope: he schal þinke þat as oft as he falleþe he schal arisen be penitence: And þouhe he neuer so longe haue lyen in sinne: þe mercye of criste is alwey redy to receyuen him to mercye: [1074] ¶ Aȝeynes þe wanhope: þat he demeþ þat he schold nouht longe perseuere in goodnes: He schal þinke þat þe febelne of þe deuel may noþinge done bot men wil suffren him: [1075] ¶ And eke he schal haue streynkeþ of god & of al holy chirche & of þe proteccions of Angels if him luste:

[1076] ¶ þan schol men vndirstande what is þe fruyte of penaunce as after þe worde of ihesu criste: It is þe Endeles blisse of heuen [1077] þere Ioye haþe none contrariouste of woo ne greuance þere aH harmes bien passed of þis present lif: = þere as is þe sekernesse fro þe peyne of heH: = þere as þe blisful compaignie þat reioysen hem euermore: Euerych of oþeres Ioye: [1078] þere as þe body of man þat whilom was foule & derke: is more clere þan is þe sonne ¶ þere as whilom þe body was seeke & frele: & mortale is vnmortale: & so strange & so hole: þat þere maye no þinge empeyre it: [1079] þere as neyþere is hunger þurst ne colde: Bot euery soule replenyscheþ with þe siht of þe perfitH knoweynge of god. [1080] ¶ þis blisfuH Regne may man purchace be pouerte ospirituelH & þe glorie be lowenesse: þe plentee of Ioye be hunger & þerste: & þe reste be trauayle: & þe lyf be deþ: & mortificacione of sinne:

To þilke lif he vs bringe þat bouht vs wiþ his precious blode AmeN /

Explicit Fabula. Rectoris

Composito huius libri hic capit licenciam. suam.
[1081]

NOw preye .I. to hem aⁿ þat herken þis litel tretis or rede: þat if þere bue any þinge in it þat likeþ hem: þat þere of þei þonken oure lorde ihesu criste of whome procedeþ al wite & al goodenesse. [1082] ¶ And if þere be any þinge þat displesen hem .I. preye hem also þat þei arette it to þe defaute of myne vnkonynge: & n[ot] to my wiⁿ. þat wolde fulfeyne haue seide better. if .I. hadd konynge: [1083] For oure booke seyþe al þat is wreten is writen for oure doctrine & þat is myne entent [1084] ¶ Whare for .I. be seke 3owe mekely att þe mercye of god: þat 3e praye for me / þat criste haue mercie on me: & for3eue me my gultes: [1085] And namely of my translaciones & enditeynges of werldly vanytees ¶ þe whiche .I. reuoke in my retractions [1086] ¶ As is / þe booke of Troyles: ¶ The booke also of fame þe booke of xv ladyes ¶ þe booke of þe Duchesse: þe booke of seint valentynes day & of þe parlement of birdes ¶ þe tales of Canturbury þilke þat sounen in to sinne [1087] ¶ þe booke of þe lyon: And moni anoþere booke if þei were in myne remembraunce & mony a songe: & mony a lycherous laye: þat Criste for his grete Mercy for3eue me þe sinne [1088] ¶ Bot of þe translacioune of Boyce de Consolacione: ¶ And oþere bokes of legendis of seintis: And omelyes & moralyte: & deuocions: [1089] þat þonke .I. oure lorde iesu criste & his blissed moder & al þe seintes of heuen: [1090] besecheinge hem ¶ þat þei from hennes forþe vnto my lyues ende sende me grace to beweyle my giltes: & to stody to saluacione of my soule: And graunt me grace of verrei penance con-

fessione & satisfaccioun to done in þis present lif. [1091] þoruhe þe benigne grace of him þat is kinge of kynges. & priste of all pristes: þat bouht vs wiþ þe precious blode of his herte [1092] so þat .I. may bie one of hem att þe daye of dome þat schal be saued. to receyue þe blisse þat euere schal last wiþouten ende. Amen.

Explicit

Inc*ipit* prologus [*on leaf* 180, *back*]

BOt þan spak oure Oste vnto Maister schipmañ
Maister q*uo*d he to vs su*mm*e tale tel 3e cañ
Where-withe 3e myht glad al þis company
If it were 3oure pleseinge .I. wote wele sekurlye
Sertes q*uo*d þis Schipman a tale .I. can telł
And þe[r]-fore herkeneþ hyderward how þat .I. wil speł

Explic*it* prologus.

00042862

Digitized with financial assistance from

Government of Maharashtra

on 30 January, 2020